McGILL
UNIVER-
SITY
LIBRARY

B68-11

THE FRASER INSTITUTE FREE PUBLIC LIBRARY
MONTREAL
JE SUIS PRÊT

PRESENTED BY
Mrs. Blacklock
1917

33753 B68-11

H9
1762b

H9
1762b
v.6

H9
1762b
v.6

Tho. Hon. Lloyd

THE

HISTORY

OF

ENGLAND,

FROM

The INVASION of JULIUS CÆSAR

TO

The REVOLUTION in 1688.

IN SIX VOLUMES.

By DAVID HUME, Esq.

VOL. VI.

A NEW EDITION, Corrected.

LONDON:
Printed for A. MILLAR, in the Strand.
M DCC LXII.

THE

HISTORY

OF

ENGLAND,

FROM

THE INVASION OF JULIUS CÆSAR

TO

THE REVOLUTION IN 1688.

IN SIX VOLUMES.

BY DAVID HUME, Esq.

VOL. VI.

A NEW EDITION

LONDON:

Printed for A. Millar, in the Strand.

MDCCLXII.

v.6

CONTENTS.

The COMMONWEALTH.

CHAP. I.

State of England,——of Scotland,——of Ireland.——Levellers ſuppreſſed.——Siege of Dublin raiſed.——Tredah ſtormed.——Covenanters.——Montroſe taken priſoner,——Executed.——Covenanters.——Battle of Dunbar,——of Worceſter.——King's eſcape.——The Commonwealth.——Dutch war.——Diſſolution of the Parliament. Page 1

CHAP. II.

Cromwel's birth and private life.——Barebone's Parliament.——Cromwel made Protector.——Peace with Holland.——A new Parliament.——Inſurrection of the Royaliſts.——State of Europe.——War with Spain.——Jamaica conquered.——Succeſs and death of admiral Blake.——Domeſtic adminiſtration of Cromwel.——Humble petition and advice.——Dunkirk taken.——Sickneſs of the Protector.——His death,——and character. 45

CHAP. III.

Richard acknowledged Protector.——A Parliament.——Cabal of Wallingford Houſe.——Richard depoſed.——Long Parliament or Rump reſtored.——Conſpiracy of the Royaliſts.——Inſurrection.——Suppreſſed.——Parliament expelled.——Committee of Safety.——Foreign affairs.——General Monk.——Monk declares for the Parliament.——Parliament reſtored.——Monk enters London.——Declares for a free Parliament.——Secluded Members reſtored.——Long Parliament diſſolved.—New Parliament.—The reſtoration.—Manners and arts. 92

33753

CHARLES II.

CHAP. I.

New miniſtry.——Act of indemnity.——Settlement of the revenue.——Trial and execution of the Regicides.——Diſſolution of the convention Parliament.——Prelacy reſtored.——Inſurrection of the Millenarians.——Affairs of Scotland.——Conference at the Savoy.——Arguments for and againſt a comprehenſion.——A new Parliament.——Biſhops ſeats reſtored.——Corporation Act.——Act of uniformity.——King's marriage.——Trial of Vane,——and execution.——Preſbyterian clergy ejected.——Dunkirk ſold to the French.——Declaration of indulgence.——Decline of Clarendon's credit. 129

CHAP. II.

A new ſeſſion.——Rupture with Holland.——A new ſeſſion.——Victory of the Engliſh.——Rupture with France.——Rupture with Denmark.——New ſeſſion.——Sea-fight of four days.——Victory of the Engliſh.——Fire of London.——Advances towards peace.——Diſgrace at Chatham.——Peace of Breda.——Clarendon's fall,——and baniſhment.——State of France.——Character of Lewis XIV.——French invaſion of the Low Countries.——Negotiations.——Triple league.——Treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle.——Affairs of Scotland,——and of Ireland. 159

CHAP. III.

A Parliament.——The Cabal.——Their Characters.——Their councils.——Alliance with France.——A Parliament.——Coventry act.——Blood's crimes.——Duke declares himſelf Catholic.——Exchequer ſhut.——Declaration of indulgence.——Attack of the Smyrna fleet.——War declared

declared with Holland.——Weakneſs of the States.—— Battle of Solebay.——Sandwich killed.——Progreſs of the French.——Conſternation of the Dutch.——Prince of Orange Stadtholder.——Maſſacre of the de Wits.——Good conduct of the Prince.——A Parliament.——Declaration of indulgence recalled.——Sea-fight.——Another ſea-fight.——Another ſea-fight.——Congreſs of Cologne.——A Parliament.——Peace with Holland. 194

CHAP. IV.

Prepoſterous ſchemes of the Cabal.——Remonſtrances of Sir William Temple.——Campaign of 1674.——A Parliament.——Paſſive obedience.——A Parliament.——Campaign of 1675.——Congreſs of Nimeguen.——Campaign of 1676.——Uncertain Conduct of the King.——A Parliament.——Campaign of 1677.——Parliament's diſtruſt of the King.——Marriage of the Prince of Orange with the Lady Mary.——Plan of Peace.——Negotiations.——Campaign of 1678.——Negotiations.——Peace of Nimeguen.——State of affairs in Scotland. 236

CHAP. V.

The popiſh plot.——Oates's Narrative,——and character.——Coleman's letters.——Godfrey's murder.——General conſternation.——The Parliament.——Zeal of the Parliament.——Bedloe's narrative.——Accuſation of Danby.——His impeachment.——Diſſolution of the long Parliament.——Its character.——Trial of Coleman.——Of Ireland.——New elections.——Duke of Monmouth.——Duke of York retires to Bruſſels.——New Parliament.——Danby's impeachment.——Popiſh plot.——New council.——Limitations on a popiſh ſucceſſor.——Bill of excluſion.——Habeas corpus bill.——Prorogation and diſſolution of the Parliament.——Trial and execution of the five Jeſuits,——and of Langhorne.——Wakeman acquitted.——State of affairs in Scotland.——Battle of Bothwel-bridge.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

State of parties.——State of the miniſtry.——Meal-tub plot.——Whig and Tory.——A new Parliament.——Violence of the Commons.——Excluſion-bill.——Arguments for and againſt the Excluſion.——Excluſion-bill rejected.——Trial of Stafford.——His execution.——Violence of the Commons.——Diſſolution of the Parliament.——New Parliament at Oxford.——Fitzharris's caſe.——Parliament diſſolved.——Victory of the Royaliſts. 310

CHAP. VII.

State of affairs in Ireland.——Shafteſbury acquitted.——Argyle's trial.——State of affairs in Scotland.——State of the miniſtry in England.——New nomination of ſheriffs.——Quo warrantos——Great Power of the Crown.——A conſpiracy.——Shafteſbury retires and dies.——Rye-houſe plot.——Conſpiracy diſcovered.——Execution of the conſpirators.——Trial of lord Ruſſel,——His execution.——Trial of Algernon Sidney,——His execution.——State of the nation.——State of foreign affairs.——King's ſickneſs and death,——and character. 339

JAMES II.

CHAP. I.

King's firſt tranſactions.——A Parliament.——Argument for and againſt a revenue for life.——Oates convicted of perjury.——Monmouth's invaſion.——His defeat,——and execution.——Cruelties of Kirke,——and of Jefferies.——State of affairs in Scotland.——Argyle's invaſion,——defeat,——and execution.——A Parliament.——French perſecutions.——The diſpenſing power.——State of Ireland.——Breach between the King and the church.——Court of eccleſiaſtical commiſſion.——Sentence againſt the biſhop of London.——Suſpenſion of the penal laws.——State of Ireland.——Embaſſy to Rome.——Attempt upon Magdalen College.——Impriſonment,——trial,——and acquittal of the biſhops.——Birth of the Prince of Wales. 375

CHAP.

v.6

CONTENTS.

CHAP. II.

Conduct of the Prince of Orange.——He forms a league againſt France,——refuſes to concur with the King,——reſolves to oppoſe the King,——is applied to by the Engliſh.——Coalition of parties.——Prince's preparations.——Offers of France to the King,——rejected.——Suppoſed league with France.——General diſcontents.——The King retracts his meaſures.——Prince's declaration.——The Prince lands in England.——General commotion.——Deſertion of the army,——and of Prince George,——and of the Princeſs Anne.——King's conſternation,——and flight.——General confuſion.——King ſeized at Feverſham.——Second evaſion.——King's character.——Convention ſummoned.——Settlement of Scotland.——Engliſh convention meets.——Views of the parties.——Free conference between the Houſes.——Commons prevail.——Settlement of the Crown.——Manners and ſciences. 412

THE

v.6

THE HISTORY OF GREAT BRITAIN.

THE COMMONWEALTH.

CHAP. I.

State of England.——Of Scotland.——Of Ireland.——Levellers ſuppreſſed.——Siege of Dublin raiſed.——Tredah ſtormed.——Covenanters.——Montroſe taken priſoner.——Executed.——Covenanters.——Battle of Dunbar.——Of Worceſter.——King's eſcape.——The Commonwealth.——Dutch war.——Diſſolution of the Parliament.

THE confuſion which overſpred England after the murder of Charles I. proceeded as well from the ſpirit of refinement and innovation, which agitated the ruling party, as from the diſſolution of all that authority, both civil and eccleſiaſtical, by which the nation had ever been accuſtomed to be governed. Every man had framed the model of a republic; and, however new it was or fantaſtical, he was eager of recommending it to his fellow citizens, or even of impoſing it by force upon them. Every man had adjuſted a ſyſtem of religion, which, being derived from no traditional authority, was peculiar to himſelf; and being founded on ſuppoſed inſpiration, not on any principles of human reaſoning, had no means, beſides cant and low rhetoric, by which it could recommend itſelf to others. The Levellers inſiſted on an equal diſtribution of property

1649. State of England.

33753

Chap. I. 1649.

and power, and disclaimed all dependance and subordination. The Millenarians or Fifth-Monarchy-men required, that government itself should be abolished, and all human powers be laid in the dust, in order to pave the way for the dominion of Christ, whose second coming on earth they suddenly expected. The Antinomians even insisted, that the obligations of morality and natural law were suspended, and that the elect, guided by an internal principle, more perfect and divine, were superior to the *beggarly elements* of justice and humanity. A considerable party declaimed against tythes and a hireling priesthood, and were resolved that the magistrate should not support by power or revenue any ecclesiastical establishment. Another party inveighed against the law and its professors; and on pretence of rendering more simple the distribution of justice, were desirous of abolishing the whole system of English jurisprudence, which seemed interwoven with monarchical government. Even those among the republicans, who adopted not such extravagancies, were so intoxicated with their saintly character, that they supposed themselves possessed of peculiar privileges; and all professions, oaths, laws, and engagements had, in a great measure, lost their influence over them. The bands of society were every where loosened; and the irregular passions of men were encouraged by speculative principles, still more unsocial and irregular.

The Royalists, consisting of the nobles and more considerable gentry, being degraded from their authority and plundered of their property, were inflamed with the highest resentment and indignation against those ignoble adversaries, who had reduced them to subjection. The Presbyterians, whose credit had first supported the arms of the Parliament, were enraged to find, that, by the treachery or superior cunning of their associates, the fruits of all their successful labours were ravished from them. The former party, from inclination and principle, zealously attached themselves to the son of their unfortunate Monarch, whose memory they respected, and whose tragical death they deplored. The latter cast their eye towards the same object; but they had still many prejudic to overcome, many fears and jealousies to be allayed, ere they could cordially entertain thoughts of restoring that family, whom they had so grievously offended, and whose principles they regarded with such violent abhorrence.

The only solid support of the republican independant faction, which, tho' it formed so small a part of the nation, had violently usurped the government of the whole, was a numerous army of about fifty thousand men. But this army, formidable from its discipline and courage, as well as its numbers, was actuated by a spirit, that rendered it extremely dangerous to the assembly, which had assumed the command over it. Accustomed to indulge every chimera in politics, every

v.6

frenzy in religion, the ſoldiers knew little of the ſubordination of citizens, and had only learned, from apparent neceſſity, ſome maxims of military obedience. And while they ſtill maintained, that all thoſe enormous violations of law and equity, of which they had been guilty, were juſtified by the ſucceſs, with which providence had bleſſed them; they were ready to break out into any new diſorder, wherever they had the proſpect of a like ſanction and authority. Chap. I. 1649.

WHAT alone gave ſome poize and ſtability to all theſe unſettled humours, was the great influence, both civil and military, acquired by Oliver Cromwel. This man, ſuited to the age in which he lived, and to that alone, was equally qualified to gain the affection and confidence of men, by what was mean, vulgar, and ridiculous in his character; as to command their obedience by what was great, daring, and enterprizing. Familiar even to buffoonery with the meaneſt ſentinel, he never loſt his authority: Tranſported to a degree of madneſs with religious extaſies, he never forgot the political purpoſes, to which they might ſerve. Hating monarchy, while a ſubject; deſpiſing liberty, while a citizen; tho' he retained for a time all orders of men under a ſeeming obedience to the parliament; he was ſecretly paving the way, by artifice and courage, to his own unlimited authority.

THE Parliament, for ſo we muſt henceforth call a ſmall and inconſiderable part of the houſe of commons, having murdered their Sovereign with ſo many appearing circumſtances of ſolemnity and juſtice, and ſo much real violence and even fury, began to aſſume more the air of a civil, legal power, and to enlarge a little the narrow bottom, upon which they ſtood. A few of the excluded and abſent members, ſuch as were liable to leaſt exception, were admitted; but on condition, that they ſhould ſign an approbation of whatever had been done in their abſence with regard to the King's trial: And ſome of them were willing to acquire a ſhare of power on ſuch terms: The greateſt part diſdained to lend their authority to ſuch apparent uſurpations. They iſſued ſome writs for new elections, in places where they hoped to have intereſt enough to bring in their own friends and dependants. They named a council of ſtate to the number of thirty eight, to whom all addreſſes were made, who gave orders to all generals and admirals, who executed the laws, and who digeſted all buſineſs before it was introduced into Parliament *. They pretended to employ themſelves entirely in adjuſting the laws, forms, and methods of a new repreſentative; and ſo ſoon as they ſhould have ſettled the nation,

* Their names were, the Earls of Denbigh, Mulgrave, Pembroke, Saliſbury, Lords Grey, Fairfax, Lord Grey of Groby, Lord Liſle, Rolles, St. John, Wilde, Bradſhaw, Cromwel, Skippon, Pickering, Maſſam, Haſelrig, Harrington, Vane jun. Danvers, Armine, Mildmay, Conſtable, Pennington, Wilſon, Whitlocke, Martin, Ludlow, Stapleton, Hevininghan, Wallop, Hutchinſon, Bond, Popham, Valentine, Walton, Scot, Purefoy, Jones.

Chap. I. 1649.

they profeſſed their intention of reſtoring the power to the people, from whom, they acknowledged, they had entirely derived it.

THE Commonwealth found every thing in England compoſed into a ſeeming tranquillity by the terror of their arms. Foreign powers, occupied in wars among themſelves, had no leizure nor inclination to interpoſe in the domeſtic diſſenſions of this iſland. The young king, poor and neglected, living ſometimes in Holland, ſometimes in France, ſometimes in Jerſey, comforted himſelf, amidſt his preſent diſtreſſes, with the hopes of better fortune. The ſituation alone of Scotland and Ireland gave any immediate inquietude to the new Republic.

Of Scotland.

AFTER the ſucceſſive defeats of Montroſe and Hamilton, and the ruin of their parties, the whole authority in Scotland fell into the hands of Argyle and the rigid churchmen, that party which was moſt averſe to the intereſts of the royal family. Their enmity, however, againſt the independants, who had prevented the long wiſhed for ſettlement of Preſbyterian diſcipline in England, carried them to embrace oppoſite maxims in their political conduct. Tho' invited by the Engliſh Parliament to model their government into a republican form, they reſolved ſtill to adhere to Monarchy, which had ever prevailed in their country, and which, by the expreſs terms of their Covenant, they were obliged to defend. They conſidered beſides, that as the property of the kingdom lay chiefly in the hands of great families, it would be difficult to eſtabliſh a Commonwealth, or without ſome chief magiſtrate, inveſted with royal authority, to preſerve peace or juſtice in the community. The execution therefore, of the king, againſt which they had always proteſted, having occaſioned a vacancy of the throne, they immediately proclaimed his ſon and ſucceſſor, Charles the ſecond; but upon condition "of "his good behaviour and ſtrict obſervance of the Covenant, and his entertaining no "other perſons about him but ſuch as were godly men and faithful to that obliga-"tion." Theſe unuſual clauſes, inſerted in the very firſt acknowledgment of their prince, ſufficiently ſhewed their intention of limiting extremely his authority. And the Engliſh Commonwealth, having no pretence to interpoſe in the affairs of that kingdom, allowed the Scots, for the preſent, to take their own meaſures in ſettling their government.

Of Ireland.

THE dominion, which England claimed over Ireland, demanded more immediately their efforts for ſubduing that country. In order to convey a juſt notion of Iriſh affairs, it will be neceſſary to look backwards ſome years, and to relate briefly thoſe tranſactions, which had paſt during the memorable revolutions in England. When the late King agreed to that ceſſation of arms with the Popiſh rebels, which was become ſo requiſite, as well for the ſecurity of the Iriſh Proteſ-

tants as for promoting his intereſts in England, the Parliament, in order to blacken his conduct, reproached him with favouring that odious rebellion, and exclaimed loudly againſt the terms of the ceſſation. They even went ſo far as to declare it entirely null and invalid, becauſe finiſhed without their conſent; and to this declaration the Scots in Ulſter, and the Earl of Inchiquin, a nobleman of great authority in Munſter, profeſſed to adhere. By their means, the war was ſtill kept alive; but as the dangerous diſtractions in England hindered the Parliament from ſending any conſiderable aſſiſtance to their allies in Ireland, Inchiquin entered into an accommodation with Ormond, whom the King had created Lord-Lieutenant of that kingdom. This latter nobleman, being a native of Ireland and a perſon endowed with great prudence and virtue, formed a ſcheme for compoſing the diſorders of his country, and for engaging the rebel Iriſh to ſupport the cauſe of his royal maſter. There were many circumſtances which ſtrongly invited the Iriſh to embrace the King's party. The maxims of that Prince had always led him to give a reaſonable indulgence to the Catholics throughout all his dominions; and one principal ground of that enmity, which the Puritans profeſſed againſt him, was this tacite toleration. The Parliament, even when unprovoked, had ever menaced the Papiſts with the moſt rigid reſtraint, if not a total extirpation; and immediately after the commencement of the Iriſh rebellion, they put to ſale all the eſtates of the rebels, and had engaged the public faith for transferring them to the adventurers, who had already advanced money upon that ſecurity. The ſucceſs, therefore, which the arms of the Parliament met with at Naſeby, ſtruck a juſt terror into the Iriſh; and engaged the council of Kilkenny, compoſed of deputies from all the Catholic counties and cities, to conclude a peace with the Marqueſs of Ormond *. They profeſſed to return to their duty and allegiance, engaged to furniſh ten thouſand men for the ſupport of the King's authority in England, and were contented with ſtipulating, in return, indemnity for their rebellion and toleration of their religion.

Ormond, not doubting but a peace, ſo advantageous and even neceſſary to the Iriſh, would be ſtrictly obſerved, advanced with a ſmall body of troops to Kilkenny, in order to concert meaſures for common defence with his new allies. The Pope had ſent over to Ireland a nuncio, Rinuccini, an Italian; and this man, whoſe commiſſion empowered him to direct the ſpiritual concerns of the Iriſh, was emboldened, by their ignorance and bigotry, to aſſume the chief authority in the civil government. Foreſeeing that a general ſubmiſſion to the Lord-Lieutenant would put an end to his own influence, he conſpired with Owen Oneal, who commanded the native Iriſh in Ulſter, and who bore a great jealouſy to Preſ-

* 1646.

ton,

Chap. I. 1649. ton, the General chiefly truſted by the council of Kilkenny. By concert, theſe two malecontents ſecretly drew forces together, and were ready to fall on Ormond, who remained in ſecurity, truſting to the pacification ſo lately concluded with the rebels. He received intelligence of their treachery, made his retreat with great celerity and conduct, and ſheltered his ſmall army in Dublin and the other fortified towns, which ſtill remained in the hands of the Proteſtants.

THE nuncio, full of arrogance, levity, and ambition, was not contented with this violation of treaty. He ſummoned an aſſembly of the clergy at Waterford, and engaged them to declare againſt that pacification, which the civil council had concluded with their lawful ſovereign. He even thundered out a ſentence of excommunication againſt all thoſe who ſhould adhere to a peace, ſo prejudicial, as he pretended, to the Catholic religion; and the deluded Iriſh, terrified with his ſpiritual menaces, ranged themſelves every where on his ſide, and ſubmitted to his authority. Without ſcruple, he carried on war againſt the Lord Lieutenant, and threatened with a ſiege the Proteſtant garriſons, which were, all of them, very ill provided for defence.

MEANWHILE, the unfortunate King was neceſſitated to take ſhelter in the Scots army; and being there reduced to cloſe confinement, and ſecluded from all commerce with his friends, deſpaired, that his authority, or even his liberty, would ever be reſtored to him. He ſent orders to Ormond, if he could not defend himſelf, rather to ſubmit to the Engliſh than the Iriſh rebels; and accordingly the Lord Lieutenant, being reduced to the laſt extremity, delivered up Dublin, Tredah, Dundalk, and other garriſons, to Colonel Michael Jones, who took poſſeſſion of them in the name of the Engliſh Parliament. Ormond himſelf went over to England, was admitted to the King's preſence, received a grateful acknowlegement for his paſt ſervices, and during ſome time lived in tranquillity near London. But being baniſhed, with the other Royaliſts, to a diſtance from that city, and ſeeing every event turn out unfortunately for his royal maſter, and threaten him with a cataſtrophe ſtill more direful, he thought proper to retire into France, where he joined the Queen and the Prince of Wales.

IN Ireland, during theſe tranſactions, the authority of the nuncio prevailed without control among all the Catholics; and that prelate, by his indiſcretion and inſolence, ſoon made them repent of the power, with which they had intruſted him. Prudent men likewiſe were ſenſible of the total deſtruction, which was hanging over the nation from the Engliſh Parliament, and ſaw no reſource nor ſafety but in giving ſupport to the declining authority of the King. The Earl of Clanricarde, a nobleman of very antient family, a perſon too of merit, who had ever preſerved his loyalty, was ſenſible of the ruin which threatened his countrymen,

v.6

men, and was reſolved, if poſſible, to prevent it. He ſecretly formed a combination among the Catholics; he entered into a correſpondence with Inchiquin, who preſerved great authority over the Proteſtants in Munſter; he attacked the nuncio, whom he chaced out of the iſland; and he ſent to Paris a deputation, inviting the Lord Lieutenant to return and take poſſeſſion of his government. Chap. I. 1649.

ORMOND on his arrival in Ireland found the kingdom divided into many factions, among whom either open war or ſecret enmity prevailed. The authority of the Engliſh Parliament was eſtabliſhed in Dublin, and the other towns, which he himſelf had delivered into their hands. Oneale maintained his credit in Ulſter; and having entered into a ſecret correſpondence with the parliamentary generals, was more intent on ſchemes for his own perſonal ſafety than anxious for the preſervation of his country or religion. The other Iriſh, divided between their clergy, who were averſe to Ormond, and their nobility, who were attached to him, were very uncertain in their motions and feeble in their meaſures. The Scots in the North, enraged, as well as their other countrymen, againſt the uſurpations of the Sectarian army, profeſſed their adherence to the King; but were ſtill hindered by many prejudices from entering into a cordial union with his Lieutenant. All theſe diſtracted councils and contrary humors checked the progreſs of Ormond, and enabled the parliamentary forces in Ireland to maintain their ground againſt him. The Engliſh army, while employed in ſubduing the revolted Royaliſts, in reducing the Parliament to ſubjection, in the trial, condemnation, and execution of their ſovereign, totally neglected the ſupply of Ireland, and allowed Jones and the forces in Dublin to remain in the utmoſt weakneſs and neceſſity. But the Lord Lieutenant, having at laſt, with much difficulty, aſſembled an army of 16,000 men, advanced upon the Engliſh garriſons. Dundalk, where Monk commanded, was delivered up by the garriſon, who mutinied againſt their governor. Tredah, Neury, and other forts were taken. Dublin was threatened with a ſiege; and the affairs of the Lord Lieutenant appeared in ſo proſperous a condition, that the young King entertained thoughts of coming in perſon into Ireland.

WHEN the Engliſh Commonwealth was brought to ſome tolerable appearance of ſettlement, men began to caſt their eyes towards the neighbouring iſland. During the conteſt of the two parties, the government of Ireland had remained a great object of intrigue; and the Preſbyterians endeavoured to obtain the lieutenancy for Waller, the Independants for Lambert. After the execution of the King, Cromwel himſelf began to aſpire to a command, where ſo much glory, he ſaw, might be won, and ſo much authority acquired. In his abſence, he took care to have his name propoſed to the council of ſtate; and both friends and enemies 15th of March.

Chap. I. 1649.

mies concurred immediately to vote him into that important office: The former ſuſpected, that the matter had not been propoſed merely by chance, without his own concurrence; the latter deſired to remove him to a diſtance, and hoped, during his abſence, to gain the aſcendant over Fairfax, whom he had ſo long blinded by his hypocritical profeſſions. Cromwel himſelf, when informed of his election, feigned ſurprize, and pretended at firſt to heſitate with regard to the acceptance of the command. And Lambert, either deceived by his diſſimulation, or, in his turn, feigning to be deceived, ſtill continued, notwithſtanding this diſappointment, his friendſhip and connexions with Cromwel.

THE new Lieutenant immediately applied himſelf with his wonted vigilance to make preparations for his expedition. Many diſorders in England it behoved him previouſly to compoſe. All places were full of danger and inquietude. Tho' men, aſtoniſhed with the ſucceſſes of the army, remained in ſeeming tranquillity, ſymptoms of the higheſt diſcontent every where appeared. The Engliſh, long accuſtomed to a mild government, and unacquainted with diſſimulation, could not conform their ſpeech and countenance to the preſent neceſſity, or pretend attachment to a form of government, which they generally regarded with ſuch violent abhorrence. It was requiſite to change the magiſtracy of London, and to degrade, as well as puniſh, the mayor and ſome of the aldermen, before the proclamation for the abolition of Monarchy could be publiſhed in the city. An engagement being framed to ſupport the Commonwealth without King or Houſe of Peers, the army were with ſome difficulty brought to ſubſcribe it; but tho' it was impoſed upon the reſt of the nation under ſevere penalties, no leſs than the putting all refuſers out of the protection of law; ſuch obſtinate reluctance was obſerved in the people, that even the imperious Parliament were obliged to deſiſt from it. The ſpirit of Fanaticiſm, by which that aſſembly had at firſt been ſtrongly ſupported, was now turned, in a great meaſure, againſt them. The pulpits, being chiefly filled with Preſbyterians, or diſguiſed Royaliſts, and having been long the ſcene of news and politics, could by no penalties be reſtrained from declarations, unfavourable to the eſtabliſhed government. Numberleſs were the extravagances, which broke out among the people. Everard, a diſbanded ſoldier, having preached that the time was now come when the community of goods would be renewed among Chriſtians, led out his followers to take poſſeſſion of the land; and being carried before the general, he refuſed to ſalute him, becauſe he was but his fellow-creature *. What ſeemed more dangerous: The army itſelf was infected with like humors †.

* Whitlock.

Tho'

† The following inſtance of extravagance is given by Walker, in his Hiſtory of Independancy, art II. p. 152. About this time, there came ſix ſoldiers into the pariſh church of Walton upon Thames,

Tho' the Levellers had for a time been ſuppreſſed by the audacious ſpirit of Cromwel, they ſtill continued to propagate their doctrines among the private men and inferior officers, who pretended a right to be conſulted, as before, in the adminiſtration of the Commonwealth. They now practiſed againſt their officers the ſame leſſon, which they had been taught againſt the Parliament. They framed a remonſtrance, and ſent five agitators to preſent it to the General and council of war: Theſe were caſhiered with ignominy by ſentence of a court martial. One Lockier, having carried his ſedition farther, was ſentenced to death; but this puniſhment was ſo far from quelling the mutinous ſpirit, that above a thouſand of his companions ſhowed their adherence to him, by attending his funeral, and wearing in their hats black and ſea-green ribbons by way of favours. About four thouſand aſſembled at Burford under the command of Thomſon, a man formerly condemned for ſedition by a court-martial, but pardoned by the General. Colonel Reynolds, and afterwards Fairfax and Cromwel, fell upon them while unprepared for defence, and ſeduced by the appearance of a treaty. Four hundred were taken priſoners: Some of them capitally puniſhed: The reſt pardoned: And this tumultuous ſpirit, tho' it

Chap. I. 1649.

Levellers ſuppreſſed.

May.

Thames, near twilight; Mr. Faucet, the preacher there, not having till then ended his ſermon. One of the ſoldiers had a lanthorn in his hand, and a candle burning in it, and in the other hand four candles not lighted. He deſired the pariſhioners to ſtay a while, ſaying he had a meſſage from God unto them, and thereupon offered to go into the pulpit. But the people refuſing to give him leave ſo to do, or to ſtay in the church, he went into the church-yard, and there told them, that he had a viſion wherein he had received a command from God, to deliver his will unto them, which he was to deliver, and they to receive upon pain of damnation; conſiſting of five lights. (1) "That the ſabbath was aboliſhed as "unneceſſary, Jewiſh, and merely ceremonial. And here (quoth he) I ſhould put out the firſt light, "but the wind is ſo high I cannot kindle it. (2) That tythes are aboliſhed as Jewiſh and ceremonial, "a great burthen to the Saints of God, and a diſcouragement of induſtry and tillage. And here I "ſhould put out my ſecond light, &c. (3) That miniſters are aboliſhed as Antichriſtian, and of no "longer uſe now Chriſt himſelf deſcends into the hearts of his ſaints, and his ſpirit enlighteneth them "with revelations and inſpirations. And here I ſhould put out my third light, &c. (4) Magiſtrates "are aboliſhed as uſeleſs now that Chriſt himſelf is in purity amongſt us, and hath erected the kingdom "of the ſaints upon earth. Beſides they are tyrants, and oppreſſors of the liberty of the ſaints, and tye "them to laws and ordinances, mere human inventions: And here I ſhould put out my fourth light, "&c. (5) Then putting his hand into his pocket, and pulling out a little bible, he ſhewed it open "to the people, ſaying, Here is a book you have in great veneration, conſiſting of two parts, the old "and new Teſtament: I muſt tell you it is aboliſhed; it containeth beggarly rudiments, milk for "babes: But now Chriſt is in glory amongſt us, and imparts a farther meaſure of his ſpirit to his ſaints "than this can afford. I am commanded to burn it before your face. Then putting out the candle "he ſaid; and here my fifth light is extinguiſhed." It became a pretty common doctrine at that time, that it was unworthy of a Chriſtian man to pay rent to his fellow creatures; and landlords were obliged to uſe all the penalties of law againſt their tenants, whoſe conſcience was ſcrupulous.

Chap. I. 1649.

ſtill lurked in the army, and broke out from time to time, ſeemed for the preſent to be ſuppreſſed.

PETITIONS framed in the ſame ſpirit of oppoſition were repreſented to the parliament by lieutenant-colonel Lilburn, the perſon who, for diſperſing ſeditious pamphlets, had formerly been treated with ſuch ſeverity by the Star Chamber. His liberty was at this time as ill reliſhed by the Parliament, and he was thrown into priſon, as a promoter of ſedition and diſorder in the Commonwealth. The women applied by petition for his releaſe; but were now deſired to mind their houſehold affairs, and leave the government of the ſtate to the men. From all quarters, the Parliament were harraſſed with petitions of a very free nature, which ſtrongly ſpoke the ſenſe of the nation, and proved how ardently all men longed for the reſtoration of their laws and liberties. Even in a feaſt, which the city gave to the Parliament and Council of State, it was eſteemed a requiſite precaution, if we may credit Walker and Dugdale, to ſwear all the cooks, that they would ſerve nothing but wholeſome food to them.

THE Parliament judged it neceſſary to enlarge the laws of high-treaſon beyond thoſe narrow bounds, within which they had been confined during the monarchy. They even comprehended verbal offences, nay intentions, tho' they had never appeared in any overt act againſt the ſtate. To affirm the preſent government to be an uſurpation, to aſſert that the Parliament or Council of State were tyrannical or illegal, to endeavour the ſubverting their authority or ſtirring up ſedition againſt them; theſe offences were declared to be high treaſon. The power of impriſonment, of which the petition of right had bereaved the King, it was now found requiſite to reſtore to the Council of State; and all the jails of England were filled with men whom the jealouſies and fears of the ruling party had repreſented as dangerous *. The taxes continued by the new government, and which, being unuſual, were eſteemed heavy, encreaſed the general ill will under which it laboured. Beſides the cuſtoms and exciſe, ninety thouſand pounds a month were levied on land for the ſubſiſtence of the army. The ſequeſtrations and compoſitions of the Royaliſts, the ſale of the crown lands, and of the dean and chapter lands, tho' they yielded immenſe ſums, were not ſufficient to ſupply the vaſt expences, and, as was ſuſpected, the great depredations, of the Parliament and of their creatures.

AMIDST all theſe difficulties and diſturbances, the ſteddy mind of Cromwel, without confuſion or embaraſſment, ſtill purſued its purpoſe. While he was collecting an army of twelve thouſand men in the weſt of England, he ſent to Ireland, under Reynolds and Venables, a reinforcement of four thouſand horſe and foot,

* Hiſtory of Independancy, part II.

in order to ſtrengthen Jones, and enable him to defend himſelf againſt the marqueſs of Ormond, who lay at Finglaſs and began to threaten Dublin. Inchiquin, with a ſeparate body, having taken Tredah and Dundalk, gave a defeat to Offarrell who ſerved under Oneal, and to young Coot who commanded ſome parliamentary forces. After he had joined his troops to the main army, with whom, for ſome time, he remained united, Ormond paſſed the river Liffy, and took poſt at Rathmines two miles from Dublin, with a view of commencing the ſiege of that city. In order to cut off all farther ſupply from Jones, he had begun the reparation of an old fort, which lay at the gates of Dublin; and being exhauſted with continual fatigue for ſome days, he had retired to reſt, after leaving orders to keep his forces under arms. He was ſuddenly awaked with the noiſe of firing; and ſtarting from his bed, ſaw every thing already in tumult and confuſion. Jones, an excellent officer, formerly a lawyer, had ſallied out with the reinforcement newly arrived; and attacking the party employed in repairing the fort, he totally routed them, purſued the advantage, and fell in with the army, which had neglected Ormond's orders. Theſe he ſoon threw into diſorder; put them to flight, in ſpite of all the efforts of the Lord Lieutenant; chaced them off the field; ſeized all their tents, baggage, ammunition; and returned victorious to Dublin, after killing three thouſand men, and taking above two thouſand priſoners.

Chap. I. 1649.

2d of Auguſt.

Siege of Dublin raiſed.

This loſs, which threw ſome blemiſh on the military character of Ormond, was irreparable to the royal cauſe. That numerous army, which, with ſo much pains and difficulty, the Lord-Lieutenant had been collecting for more than a year, was diſperſed in a moment. Cromwel ſoon after arrived in Dublin, where he was welcomed with mighty ſhouts and rejoicings. He haſtened immediately to Tredah. That town was well fortified; and Ormond had thrown into it a good garriſon of three thouſand men, under Sir Arthur Aſton, an officer of reputation. He expected that Tredah, lying in the neighbourhood of Dublin, would firſt be attempted by Cromwel, and he was willing to employ the enemy ſome time in that ſiege, while he himſelf ſhould repair his broken forces. But Cromwel knew the importance of diſpatch. Having made a breach, he ordered a general aſſault. Tho' twice repulſed with great loſs, he renewed the attack, and himſelf, along with Ireton, led on his men. All oppoſition was overborne by the furious valour of the troops. The town was taken ſword in hand; and orders being iſſued to give no quarter, a cruel ſlaughter was made of the garriſon. Even a few, who were ſaved by the ſoldiers, ſatiated with blood, were next day miſerably butchered by orders from the General. One perſon alone of the whole garriſon eſcaped to be a meſſenger of this univerſal havoc and deſtruction.

September. Tredah ſtormed.

Chap. I. 1649. CROMWEL pretended by this ſevere execution to retaliate the cruelty of the Iriſh maſſacre: But he well knew, that almoſt the whole garriſon was Engliſh; and his juſtice was only a barbarous policy, in order to terrify all other garriſons from reſiſtance. His policy, however, had the deſired effect. Having led the army without delay to Wexford, he began to batter the town. The garriſon after a ſlight defence offered to capitulate; but before they obtained a ceſſation, they imprudently neglected their guards; and the Engliſh army ruſhed in upon them. The ſame ſeverity was exerciſed as at Tredah.

EVERY town, before which Cromwel preſented himſelf, now opened its gates without reſiſtance. Roſs, tho' ſtrongly garriſoned, was ſurrendered by lord Taffe.

October. Having taken Eſtionage; Cromwel threw a bridge over the Barrow, and made himſelf maſter of Paſſage and Carric. Owen Oneal ſubmitted at diſcretion, and ſoon afterwards died. The Engliſh had no difficulties to encounter but what aroſe from fatigue and the advanced ſeaſon. Fluxes and contagious diſtempers crept in among the ſoldiers, who periſhed in great numbers. Jones himſelf, the brave governor of Dublin, died at Wexford. And Cromwel had ſo far advanced with his decayed army, that he began to find it difficult, either to ſubſiſt in the enemies country, or retreat to his own garriſons. But while he was in theſe ſtraits, Corke, Kinſale, and all the Engliſh garriſons in Munſter deſerted to him, and opening

November. their gates reſolved to ſhare the fortunes of their victorious countrymen.

1650. THIS deſertion of the Engliſh put an end entirely to Ormond's authority, which was already much diminiſhed by the misfortunes at Dublin, Tredah and Wexford. The Iriſh, actuated by national and religious prejudices, could no longer be kept in obedience by a proteſtant governor, who was ſo unſucceſsful in all his enterprizes. The clergy renewed their excommunications againſt him and his adherents, and added the terrors of ſuperſtition to thoſe ariſing from a victorious enemy. Cromwel having received a reinforcement from England, again took the field early in the ſpring. After a ſiege, he made himſelf maſter of Kilkenny, the only place where he met with any vigorous reſiſtance. The whole frame of the Iriſh union being in a manner diſſolved, Ormond, ſoon after, left the iſland, and delegated his authority to Clanricarde, who found affairs ſo deſperate as to admit of no remedy. The Iriſh were glad to embrace baniſhment as a refuge. Above 40,000 men paſſed into foreign ſervice; and Cromwel, well pleaſed to free the iſland from enemies, who never could be cordially reconciled to the Engliſh, gave them full liberty and leiſure for their embarkation.

WHILE

v.6

WHILE Cromwel proceeded with ſuch uninterrupted ſucceſs in Ireland, which in the ſpace of nine months he had almoſt entirely ſubdued, fortune was preparing for him a new ſcene of victory and triumph in Scotland. Charles was at the Hague, when Sir Joſeph Douglas brought him intelligence, that he was proclaimed King by the Scots parliament. At the ſame time, Douglas informed him of the hard conditions annexed to the proclamation, and damped extremely that joy, which might ariſe from his being recognized ſovereign in one of his kingdoms. Charles too conſidered, that thoſe who pretended to acknowledge his title, were at that very time in actual rebellion againſt his family, and would be ſure to intruſt very little authority into his hands, and ſcarcely would afford him perſonal liberty and ſecurity. As the proſpect of affairs in Ireland was at that time very promiſing, he intended rather to try his fortune in that kingdom, from which he expected more dutiful ſubmiſſion and obedience.

MEAN while he found it expedient to depart from Holland. The people in the United Provinces were much attached to his intereſts. Beſides his connexion with the family of Orange, which was extremely beloved by the populace, all men regarded with compaſſion his helpleſs condition, and expreſſed the greateſt abhorrence againſt the murder of his father; a deed, to which nothing, they thought, but the rage of fanaticiſm and faction could have impelled the Parliament. But tho' the public in general bore a great favour to the King, the States were uneaſy at his preſence. They dreaded the Parliament, ſo formidable by their power, and ſo proſperous in all their enterprizes. They apprehended the moſt precipitant reſolutions from men of ſuch violent and haughty diſpoſitions. And after the murder of Doriſlaus, they found it ſtill more neceſſary to ſatisfy the Engliſh Commonwealth, by removing the King at a diſtance from them.

DORISLAUS, tho' a native of Holland, had lived long in England; and being employed as aſſiſtant to the high court of juſtice, which condemned the King, he had riſen to great credit and favour with the ruling party. They ſent him envoy into Holland; but no ſooner had he arrived at the Hague, than he was ſet upon by ſome Royaliſts, chiefly retainers to Montroſe. They ruſhed into the room, where he was ſitting with ſome company; dragged him from the table; put him to death as the firſt victim to their murdered ſovereign; very leiſurely and peaceably ſeparated themſelves; and tho' orders were iſſued by the magiſtrates to arreſt them, theſe were executed with ſuch ſlowneſs and reluctance, that the criminals had, all of them, the opportunity to make their eſcape.

CHARLES, having paſſed ſome time at Paris, where no aſſiſtance was given him, and even few civilities were paid him, made his retreat into Jerſey, where his au-

 thority

Chap. I. 1650.

thority was ſtill acknowledged. Winram, laird of Liberton, came to him as deputy from the committee of eſtates in Scotland, and informed him of the conditions, to which he muſt neceſſarily ſubmit before he could be admitted to the exerciſe of his authority. Conditions more ſevere were never impoſed by ſubjects upon their ſovereign; but as the affairs of Ireland began extremely to decline, and the King found it no longer ſafe to venture himſelf in that iſland, he gave a civil anſwer to Winram, and deſired commiſſioners to meet him at Breda, in order to enter into a treaty with regard to theſe conditions.

Covenanters.

THE earls of Caſſilis and Lothian, the lord Burley, the laird of Liberton and other commiſſioners, arrived at Breda; but without any power of treating: The King muſt ſubmit without reſerve to the terms impoſed upon him. The terms were, That he ſhould iſſue a proclamation, baniſhing from court all excommunicated perſons, that is, all thoſe who, either under Hamilton or Montroſe, had ventured their lives for his family; that no Engliſh ſubject, who had ſerved againſt the Parliament, ſhould be allowed to approach him; that he ſhould bind himſelf by his royal promiſe to take the covenant; that he ſhould ratify all acts of Parliament, by which Preſbyterian government, the directory of worſhip, confeſſion of faith and catechiſm, were enjoined; and that in civil affairs he ſhould govern himſelf entirely according to the direction of Parliament, and in eccleſiaſtical according to that of the aſſembly. Theſe propoſals, the commiſſioners, after paſſing ſome time in ſermons and prayers, in order to expreſs the more determined reſolution, very ſolemnly delivered to the King.

THE King's friends were extremely divided with regard to the part which he ſhould act in this critical conjuncture. Moſt of his Engliſh counſellors diſſuaded him from accepting conditions, ſo diſadvantageous and diſhonourable. They ſaid, that the men, who now governed Scotland, were the moſt furious and bigotted of that party, which, notwithſtanding his gentle government, had firſt excited a rebellion againſt the late King; after the moſt unlimited conceſſions, had renewed their rebellion, and ſtopt the progreſs of his victories in England; and after he had entruſted his perſon with them in his uttermoſt diſtreſs, had baſely ſold him, together with their own honour, to his barbarous enemies: That they had as yet ſhown no marks of repentance, and even in the terms, which they now propoſed, diſplayed the ſame antimonarchical principles, and the ſame jealouſy of their ſovereign, by which they had ever been actuated: That nothing could be more diſhonourable, than that the King, in his firſt enterprize, ſhould ſacrifice, merely for the empty name of royalty, thoſe principles, for which his father had died a martyr, and in which he himſelf had been ſtrictly educated: That by this hypocriſy he might loſe the Royaliſts, who alone were

ſincerely

v.6

ſincerely attached to him; but never would gain the Preſbyterians, who were averſe to his family and his cauſe, and would aſcribe his compliance merely to policy and neceſſity: That the Scots had refuſed to give him any aſſurances of their intending to reſtore him to the throne of England; and could they even be engaged to make ſuch an attempt, it had ſufficiently appeared, by the event of Hamilton's engagement, how unequal their force was to ſo great an enterprize: That on the firſt check which they ſhould receive, Argyle and his partizans would lay hold of the quickeſt expedient for reconciling themſelves to the Engliſh parliament, and would betray the King, as they had done his father, into the hands of his enemies: And that, however deſperate the royal cauſe, it muſt ſtill be regarded as highly imprudent in the King to make a ſacrifice of his honour, where the ſole purchaſe was to endanger his life or liberty.

The Earl of Laneric, now Duke of Hamilton, the Earl of Lauderdale, and others of that party, who had been baniſhed their country for the late engagement, were then with the King; and being deſirous of returning home in his retinue, they joined the opinion of the young duke of Buckingham, and very earneſtly preſſed him to accept the conditions required of him. It was urged, that nothing would more gratify the King's enemies than to ſee him fall into the ſnare laid for him, and by ſo ſcrupulous a nicety leave the poſſeſſion of his dominions to thoſe who deſired but a pretence for excluding him: That Argyle, not daring ſo far to oppoſe the bent of the nation as to throw off all allegiance to his ſovereign, had embraced this expedient, by which he hoped to make Charles dethrone himſelf, and refuſe a kingdom, which was offered him: That it was not to be doubted but the ſame national ſpirit, aſſiſted by Hamilton and his party, would ſtill riſe higher in favour of their Prince after he had intruſted himſelf to their fidelity, and would much abate the rigor of the conditions now impoſed upon him: That whatever might be the preſent intentions of the ruling party, they muſt unavoidably be engaged in a war with England, and muſt accept the aſſiſtance of the King's friends of all parties, in order to ſupport themſelves againſt a power ſo much ſuperior: That however a ſteddy, uniform conduct might have been ſuitable to the advanced age and ſtrict engagements of the late King, no one would throw any blame on a young prince for complying with conditions, which neceſſity had extorted from him: That even the rigour of thoſe principles profeſſed by his father, tho' with ſome it had exalted his character, had been extremely prejudicial to his intereſt; nor could any thing be more ſerviceable to the royal cauſe than to give all parties room to hope for more equal and more indulgent maxims of government: And that where affairs were reduced to ſo deſperate a ſituation, dangers ought little to be regarded; and the King's honour lay rather in ſhowing ſome

early

Chap. I. 1650.

early ſymptoms of courage and activity than chuſing ſtrictly a party among theological controverſies, with which, it might be ſuppoſed, he was, as yet, very little acquainted.

THESE arguments, ſeconded by the advice of the Queen and of the Prince of Orange, the King's brother in law, who both of them eſteemed it ridiculous to refuſe a kingdom, merely from regard to epiſcopacy, had great influence on Charles. But what chiefly determined him to comply was the account brought him of the fate of Montroſe, who, with all the circumſtances of rage and contumely, had been put to death by his zealous countrymen. Tho' in this inſtance the King ſaw more evidently the furious ſpirit, by which the Scots were actuated, he had now no farther reſource, and was obliged to grant whatever was demanded of him.

MONTROSE, having laid down his arms at the command of the late King, had retired into France, and, contrary to his natural diſpoſition, lived for ſome time inactive at Paris. He there became acquainted with the famous Cardinal de Retz; and that penetrating judge celebrates him in his memoirs as one of thoſe heroes, of whom there are no longer any remains in the world, and who are only to be met with in Plutarch. Deſirous of improving his martial genius, he took a journey to Germany, was careſſed by the Emperor, received the rank of Mareſchal, and propoſed to levy a regiment for the Imperial ſervice. While employed for that purpoſe in the Low Countries, he heard of the tragical death of the King; and at the ſame time received from his young maſter a renewal of his commiſſion of Captain-General in Scotland *. His ardent and daring ſpirit needed but this authority to put him in action. He gathered followers in Holland and the north of Germany, whom his great reputation allured to him. The King of Denmark and Duke of Holſtein ſent him ſome ſmall ſupplies of money: The Queen of Sweden furniſhed him with arms: The Prince of Orange with ſhips: And Montroſe, haſtening his enterprize, leſt the King's agreement with the Scots ſhould make him revoke his commiſſion, ſet out for the Orkneys with about 500 men, moſt of them Germans. Theſe were all the preparations, which he could make againſt a kingdom, ſettled in domeſtic peace, ſupported by a diſciplined army, fully apprized of his enterprize, and prepared againſt him. Some of his retainers having told him of a prophecy that *to him and him alone it was reſerved to reſtore the King's authority in all his dominions*; he lent a willing ear to ſuggeſtions, which, however ill grounded or improbable, were ſo conformable to his own magnanimous diſpoſition.

* Burnet, Clarendon.

HE

Chap. I. 1650.

He armed ſeveral of the inhabitants of the Orkneys, tho' an unwarlike people, and carried them over with him to Caithneſs; hoping, that the general affection to the King's ſervice and the fame of his former exploits, would make the Highlanders flock to his ſtandard. But all men were now harraſſed and fatigued with wars and diſorders: Many of thoſe, who formerly adhered to him, had been ſeverely puniſhed by the covenanters: And no proſpect of ſucceſs was entertained in oppoſition to ſo great a force as was drawn together againſt him. But however weak Montroſe's army, the memory of paſt events ſtruck a great terror into the committee of eſtates. They immediately ordered Leſley and Holborne to march againſt him with an army of 4000 men. Strahan was ſent before with a body of cavalry to check his progreſs. He fell unexpectedly on Montroſe, who had no horſe to bring him intelligence. The royaliſts were put to flight; all of them either killed or taken priſoners; and Montroſe himſelf, having put on the diſguiſe of a peaſant, was perfidiouſly delivered into the hands of his enemies, by a friend, to whom he had entruſted his perſon.

Montroſe taken priſoner.

All the inſolence, which ſucceſs can produce in ungenerous minds, was exerciſed by the covenanters againſt Montroſe, whom they ſo much hated and ſo much dreaded. Theological antipathy farther encreaſed their indignities towards a perſon whom they regarded as execrable on account of the excommunication, which had been pronounced againſt him. Leſley led him about for ſeveral days in the ſame low habit, under which he had diſguiſed himſelf. The vulgar, wherever he paſſed, were inſtigated to reproach and vilify him. When he came to Edinburgh, every circumſtance of elaborate rage and inſult was put in practice by order of the Parliament. At the eaſtern gate of the city, he was met by the magiſtrates, and put into a new cart, purpoſely made with a high chair or bench, where he was placed, that the people might have a full view of him. He was bound with cords, drawn over his breaſt and ſhoulders, and faſtened thro' holes made in the cart. When in this poſture, the hangman took off the hat of the noble priſoner, and rode himſelf before the cart in his livery and with his bonnet on; the other officers, who were taken priſoners with the Marqueſs, walking two and two before them.

The populace, more generous and humane, when they ſaw ſo mighty a change of fortune in this great man, ſo lately their dread and terror, into whoſe hands the magiſtrates, a few years before, had delivered on their knees the keys of the city, were ſtruck with compaſſion, and viewed him with ſilent tears and admiration. The preachers, next Sunday, exclaimed againſt theſe movements of rebel nature, as they expreſſed it; and reproached the people with their profane tenderneſs towards this capital enemy of all piety and religion.

Chap. I. 1650.

WHEN he was carried before the Parliament, which was then ſitting, Loudon, the chancellor, in a violent declamation, reproached him with the breach of the national covenant, which he had ſubſcribed; his rebellion againſt God, the King, and the Kingdom; and the many horrible murders, treaſons, and impieties, for which he was now to be brought to condign puniſhment. Montroſe in his anſwer maintained the ſame ſuperiority above his enemies, to which, by his fame and great actions, as well as by the conſcience of a good cauſe, he was juſtly entitled. He told the Parliament, that ſince the King, as he was informed, had ſo far avowed their authority as to enter into treaty with them, he now appeared uncovered before their tribunal; a reſpect, which, while they ſtood in open defiance to their ſovereign, they would in vain have required of him. That he acknowledged with infinite ſhame and remorſe the errors of his early conduct, when their plauſible pretences had ſeduced him to tread with them the paths of rebellion, and bear arms againſt his Prince and Country. That his following ſervices, he hoped, had ſufficiently teſtified his repentance, and his death would now atone for that guilt, the only one with which he could juſtly reproach himſelf. That in all his warlike enterprizes he was warranted by that commiſſion, which he had received from his and their maſter, againſt whoſe lawful authority they had erected their ſtandard. That to venture his life for his ſovereign was the leaſt part of his merit: He had even thrown down his arms in obedience to the ſacred commands of the King; and had reſigned to them the victory, which, in defiance of all their efforts, he was ſtill enabled to diſpute with them. That no blood had ever been ſhed by him but in the field of battle; and many perſons were now in his eye, many now dared to pronounce ſentence of death upon him, whoſe life, forfeited by the laws of war, he had formerly ſaved from the fury of the ſoldiers. That he was ſorry to find no better teſtimony of their return to allegiance than the murder of ſo faithful a ſubject, in whoſe death the King's commiſſion muſt be at once ſo highly injured and affronted. That as to himſelf, they had in vain endeavoured to vilify and degrade him by all their ſtudied indignities: The juſtice of his cauſe, he knew, would ennoble any fortune; nor had he other affliction than to ſee the authority of his Prince, with which he was inveſted, treated with ſo much ignominy. And that he now joyfully followed, by a like unjuſt ſentence, his late ſovereign; and ſhould be happy, if, in his future deſtiny, he could follow him to the ſame bliſsful manſions, where his piety and humane virtues had already, without doubt, ſecured him an eternal recompence.

MONTROSE's ſentence was next pronounced againſt him, "That he, James "Graham" (for this was the only name they vouchſafed to give him) "ſhould

"next

" next day be carried to Edinburgh Croſs, and there be hanged on a gibbet, Chap. I. 1650.
" thirty foot high, for the ſpace of three hours: Then be taken down, his
" head be cut off upon a ſcaffold, and affixed to the priſon: His legs and arms
" be ſtuck up on the four chief towns of the kingdom: His body be buried in
" the place appropriated for common malefactors; except the church, upon his
" repentance, ſhould take off his excommunication."

The clergy, hoping, that the terrors of immediate death had now given them an advantage over their enemy, flocked about him, and inſulted over his fallen fortunes. They pronounced his damnation, and aſſured him, that the judgment, which he was ſoon to ſuffer, would prove but an eaſy prologue to that which he muſt undergo hereafter. They next offered to pray with him: But he was too well acquainted with thoſe forms of imprecation, which they called prayers. " Lord vouchſafe yet to touch the obdurate heart of this proud incorrigible ſin-
" ner; this wicked, perjured, traiterous, and profane perſon, who refuſes to
" hearken to the voice of thy church." Such were the petitions, which he expected they would, according to cuſtom, offer up for him. He told them, that they were a miſerable deluded and deluding people; and would ſhortly bring their country under the moſt inſupportable ſervitude, to which any nation had ever been reduced. " For my part," added he, " I am much prouder to have my
" head affixed to the place, where it is ſentenced to ſtand, than to have my picture
" hang in the King's bed chamber. So far from being ſorry, that my legs and
" arms are to be ſent to four cities of the kingdom; I wiſh I had limbs enough to
" be diſperſed into all the cities of Chriſtendom, there to remain as teſtimonies
" in favour of the cauſe, for which I ſuffer." This ſentiment, that very evening, while in priſon, he threw into verſe. The poem remains; a ſignal monument of his heroic ſpirit, and no deſpicable proof of his poetical genius.

Now was led forth, amidſt the inſults of his enemies and the tears of the people, 21ſt of May.
the man of the moſt illuſtrious birth and greateſt renown of the nation, to ſuffer, for his adherence to the laws of his country and the rights of his ſovereign, the ignominious death deſtined to the meaneſt malefactor. Every attempt, which the inſolence of the governing party had made to ſubdue his gallant ſpirit, had hitherto proved fruitleſs: They made yet one effort more, in this laſt and melancholy ſcene, when all enmity, ariſing from motives merely human, is commonly ſoftened and diſarmed. The executioner brought that book, which had been publiſhed in elegant Latin of his truly heroic actions, and tied it by a cord about his neck. Montroſe ſmiled at this new inſtance of their malice. He thanked them, however, for their officious zeal; and ſaid, that he bore this teſtimony of his bravery and

Chap. I. 1650. Executed.

loyalty with more pride than he had ever worne the garter. Having aſked, whether they had any more indignities to put upon him, and renewing ſome devout ejaculations, he patiently endured the laſt act of the executioner.

THUS periſhed in the thirty eighth year of his age, the gallant marqueſs of Montroſe; the man whoſe military genius, both by valour and conduct, had ſhone forth beyond any, which, during theſe civil diſorders, had appeared in the three kingdoms. The finer arts too, in his youth, he had ſucceſsfully cultivated; and whatever was ſublime, elegant, or noble, touched his great ſoul. Nor was he inſenſible to the pleaſures either of ſociety or of love. Something, however, of the *vaſt* and *unbounded* characterized all his actions and deportment; and it was merely by an heroic effort of duty, that he brought his mind, impatient of ſuperiority and even of equality, to pay ſuch unlimited ſubmiſſion to the will of his ſovereign.

THE vengeance of the covenanters was not ſatisfied with Montroſe's execution. Urrey, whoſe inconſtancy now led him to take part with the King, ſuffered about the ſame time: Spotiſwood of Daerſie, a youth of eighteen, Sir Francis Hay of Dalgetie, and colonel Sibbald, all of them men of birth and character, underwent a like fate. Theſe were taken priſoners with Montroſe. The Marqueſs of Huntley, about a year before, had alſo fallen a victim to the ſeverity of the covenanters.

THE paſt ſcene diſplays in full light the barbarity of this theological faction: The ſequel will ſufficiently diſcover their abſurdities. The corruptions of the beſt things produce the worſt; and no wonder that the abuſes of religion ſhould of all others be the moſt odious and ridiculous. In order to convey a juſt notion of the genius of the age, we are obliged ſometimes in our narration to make uſe of the ſame cant and expreſſion, which was then ſo prevalent.

23d of June.

THE King, in conſequence of his agreement with the Scots commiſſioners, ſet ſail for Scotland; and being eſcorted by ſeven Dutch ſhips of war, who were ſent to guard the herring fiſhery, he arrived in the firth of Cromarty. Before he was permitted to land, he was required to ſign the covenant; and many ſermons and lectures were made him, exhorting him to perſevere in that holy confederacy*. Ha-

Covenanters.

milton, Lauderdale, Dumfermling, and other noblemen of that faction whom they called Engagers, were immediately ſeparated from him, and obliged to retire to their houſes, where they lived in a private manner, without truſt or authority. None of his Engliſh friends, who had ſerved his father, were allowed to remain in the kingdom. The King himſelf found, that he was conſidered as a mere pageant

* Sir Edward Walker's Hiſtorical Diſcourſes, p. 159.

of

of ſtate, and that the few remains of royalty, which he poſſeſſed, ſerved only to draw on him the greater indignities. One of the quarters of Montroſe, his faithful ſervant, who had borne his commiſſion, he found hanging at Aberdeen. The general aſſembly *, and afterwards the committee of eſtates and the army, who were entirely governed by the aſſembly, ſet forth a public declaration, in which they proteſted, "that they did not eſpouſe any malignant quarrel or party, "but fought merely on their former grounds or principles; that they diſclaimed "all the ſins and guilt of the King and of his houſe; nor would they own him or "his intereſt, otherwiſe than with a ſubordination to God, and ſo far as he "owned and proſecuted the cauſe of God, and acknowledged the ſins of his "houſe and of his former ways †." Chap. I. 1650.

THE King, lying entirely at mercy, and having no aſſurance of liberty or life, farther than was agreeable to the fancy of theſe auſtere zealots, was conſtrained to embrace a meaſure, which nothing but the neceſſity of his affairs, and his great youth and inexperience, could excuſe. He iſſued a declaration, ſuch as they required of him ‡. He there gave thanks for the merciful diſpenſations of providence, by which he was recovered out of the ſnare of evil councils, had attained a full perſuaſion of the righteouſneſs of the covenant, and was induced to caſt himſelf and his intereſt wholly upon God. He deſired to be deeply humbled and afflicted in ſpirit, becauſe of his father's following evil council, oppoſing the covenant and the work of reformation, and ſhedding the blood of God's people thro' all his dominions. He lamented the idolatry of his mother, and the toleration of it in his father's houſe; a matter of great offence, he ſaid, to all the proteſtant churches, and a great provocation to him who is a jealous God, viſiting the ſins of the father upon the children. He profeſſed, that he would have no enemies but the enemies of the covenant; and that he deteſted all popery, ſuperſtition, prelacy, hereſy, ſchiſm, and profaneneſs; and was reſolved not to tolerate, much leſs to countenance any of them in any of his dominions. He declared, that he would never love nor favour any who have ſo little conſcience as to follow his intereſts, in preference to the goſpel and the kingdom of Jeſus Chriſt. And he expreſſed his hope, that whatever ill ſucceſs his former guilt might have drawn upon his cauſe, yet now, having obtained mercy to be on God's ſide, and to acknowledge his own cauſe ſubordinate to that of God, the divine providence would crown his arms with victory. 16th of Auguſt.

STILL the covenanters and the clergy were diffident of the King's ſincerity. The facility which he diſcovered in yielding to whatever was required of him,

* Sir Edward Walker's Hiſtorical Diſcourſes, p. 160. † Id. p. 166, 167.

‡ Id. p. 170.

made

Chap. I. 1650.

made them ſuſpect that he regarded all his conceſſions merely as ridiculous farces, to which he muſt of neceſſity ſubmit. They had another trial prepared for him. Inſtead of the ſolemnity of his coronation, which was delayed, they were reſolved, that he ſhould paſs thro' a public humiliation, and do penance before the whole people. They ſent him twelve articles of repentance, which he was to acknowledge; and the King had agreed, that he would ſubmit to this indignity. The various tranſgreſſions of his father and grandfather, together with the idolatry of his mother, are again enumerated and aggravated in theſe articles; and farther declarations were inſiſted on, that he ſought the reſtitution of his rights, for the ſole advancement of religion, and in ſubordination to the kingdom of Chriſt *. In ſhort, having exalted the altar above the throne, and brought royalty under their feet, the clergy were reſolved to trample on it and vilify it, by every inſtance of contumely, which their preſent influence enabled them to impoſe upon their unhappy prince.

CHARLES in the mean time found his authority entirely annihilated, as well as his character degraded. He was conſulted in no public meaſure. He was not called to aſſiſt at any councils. His choice was ſufficient to diſcredit any pretender to office or advancement. All efforts, which he made to unite the oppoſite parties, encreaſed the ſuſpicion, which the covenanters had entertained of him, as if he was not entirely their own. Argyle, who, by ſubtilties and compliances, partly led and partly was governed by this wild faction, ſtill turned a deaf ear to all advances, which the King made to enter into confidence with him. *Malignants* and *Engagers* continued to be the objects of general hatred and perſecution; and whoever was diſagreeable to the clergy failed not to have one of theſe epithets affixed to him. The fanaticiſm which prevailed, being ſo full of ſour and angry principles, and ſo overcharged with various antipathies, had acquired a new object of abhorrence: Theſe were the *Sorcerers*. So prevalent was the opinion of witchcraft, that great numbers, accuſed of that crime, were burnt by ſentence of the magiſtrates thro' all parts of Scotland. In a village near Berwic, which contained only fourteen houſes, fourteen perſons were puniſhed by fire †; and it became a ſcience every where much ſtudied and cultivated, to diſtinguiſh a true witch by proper trials and ſymptoms ‡.

THE advance of the Engliſh army under Cromwel was not able to appeaſe or ſoften the animoſities among the Scots parties. The clergy were ſtill reſolute to exclude all but their moſt zealous adherents. So ſoon as the Engliſh Parliament found that the treaty between the King and the Scots would probably terminate in

* Sir Edward Walker's Hiſtorical Diſcourſes, p. 178. † Whitlocke, p. 434, 408.
‡ Id. p. 396, 418.

an

an accommodation, they made preparations for a war, which, they ſaw, would, in the end, prove inevitable. Cromwel having now broke the force and courage of the Iriſh, was ſent for; and he left the command of Ireland to Ireton, who governed that kingdom in the character of deputy, and with great vigilance and induſtry perſevered in the work of ſubduing and expelling the natives.

It was expected, that Fairfax, who ſtill retained the name of General, would continue to act againſt Scotland, and appear at the head of the armies; a ſtation for which he was well qualified, and where alone he made any figure. But Fairfax, tho' he had allowed the army to make uſe of his name in murdering their ſovereign, and offering violence to the Parliament, had entertained unſurmountable ſcruples againſt invading the Scots, whom he conſidered as zealous Preſbyterians, and united to England by the ſacred bands of the covenant. He was farther diſguſted at the extremities into which he had already been hurried; and was confirmed in his reſolution by the exhortations of his wife, who had great influence over him, and was herſelf much governed by the Preſbyterian clergy. A committee of Parliament was ſent to reaſon with him; and Cromwel was one of the number. In vain did they urge, that the Scots had firſt broke the covenant by their invaſion of England under duke Hamilton; and that they would ſurely renew their hoſtile attempts, if not prevented by the vigorous meaſures of the Commonwealth. Cromwel, who knew the rigid inflexibility of Fairfax, in every thing, which he regarded as matter of principle, ventured to ſolicit him with the utmoſt earneſtneſs; and he went ſo far as to ſhed tears of grief and vexation on this occaſion. No one could ſuſpect any ambition in the man, who laboured ſo zealouſly to retain his general in that high office, which, he knew, he himſelf was alone entitled to fill. The ſame warmth of temper, which made Cromwel a moſt frantic enthuſiaſt, rendered him the moſt dangerous of hypocrites; and it was to this turn of mind, as much as to his courage and capacity, that he owed all his wonderful ſucceſſes. By the contagious ferment of his zeal, he engaged every one to co-operate with him in his meaſures; and entering eaſily and affectionately into every part, which he was diſpoſed to act, he was enabled, even after multiplied deceits, to cover, under a tempeſt of paſſion, all his crooked ſchemes and profound artifices.

Fairfax having reſigned his commiſſion, it was beſtowed on Cromwel, who was declared captain-general of all the forces in England. This command, in a Commonwealth, which ſtood entirely by arms, was of the utmoſt importance; and was the chief ſtep which this ambitious politician had yet made towards ſove-

Chap. I. 1650.

reign power. He immediately marched his forces, and entered Scotland with an army of 16,000 men.

THE command of the Scots army was given to Leſley, a good officer, who formed a very proper plan for defence. He entrenched himſelf in a fortified camp between Edinburgh and Leith, and took care to remove from the counties of Merſe and the Lothians every thing which could ſerve to ſupport the Engliſh army. Cromwel advanced to the Scots camp, and endeavoured, by every expedient, to bring Leſley to a battle: The prudent Scotſman knew, that, tho' ſuperior in numbers, his army was much inferior in diſcipline and experience to the Engliſh; and he kept himſelf carefully within his entrenchments. By ſkirmiſhes and ſmall rencounters, he tried to confirm the ſpirits of his ſoldiers; and he was ſucceſsful in theſe enterprizes. His army encreaſed daily both in numbers and courage. The King came to the camp; and having exerted himſelf in an action, gained extremely on the affections of the ſoldiery, who were more deſirous of ſerving under a young Prince of ſpirit and vivacity, than under a committee of talking gownmen. The clergy were alarmed. They ordered the King immediately to leave the camp. They alſo purged it carefully of about 4000 *Malignants* and *Engagers*, whoſe zeal had led them to attend the King, and who were the ſoldiers of chief credit and experience in the nation *. They then concluded, that they had an army compoſed entirely of ſaints, and could not be beaten. They murmured extremely, not only againſt their prudent General, but alſo againſt the Lord, on account of his delays in giving them deliverance †; and they plainly told him, that, if he would not ſave them from the Engliſh ſectaries, he ſhould no longer be their God ‡. An advantage having offered itſelf on a Sunday, they hindered the General from making uſe of it, leſt he ſhould involve the nation in the guilt of ſabbath-breaking.

CROMWEL found himſelf in a very bad ſituation. He had no proviſions but what he received by ſea. He had not had the precaution to bring theſe in ſufficient quantities; and his army was reduced to difficulties. He retired to Dunbar. Leſley followed him, and encamped on the heights of Lammermure, which overlook that town. There lay many difficult paſſes between Dunbar and Berwic, and of theſe Leſley had taken poſſeſſion. The Engliſh general was brought to extremity. He had even entertained a reſolution of ſending by ſea all his foot and artillery to England, and of breaking thro', at all hazards, with his cavalry. The madneſs of the Scots eccleſiaſtics ſaved him from this loſs and diſhonour.

* Sir Ed. Walker, p. 165. † Id. p. 168. ‡ Whitlocke, p. 449.

NIGHT

NIGHT and day the miniſters had been wreſtling with the Lord in prayer, as they termed it; and they fancied, that they had at laſt obtained the victory. Revelations, they ſaid, were made them, that the ſectarian and heretical army, together with Agag, meaning Cromwel, was delivered into their hands. Upon the faith of theſe viſions, they forced their general, in ſpite of all his remonſtrances, to deſcend into the plain, with a view of attacking the Engliſh in their retreat. Cromwel, looking thro' a perſpective glaſs, ſaw the Scots camp in motion; and foretold, without the help of revelations, that the Lord had delivered his enemies into *his* hands. He gave orders immediately for an attack. In this battle it was eaſily obſerved, that nothing, in military actions, can ſupply the place of diſcipline and experience; and that, in the preſence of real danger, where men are not accuſtomed to it, the fumes of enthuſiaſm preſently diſſipate, and loſe their influence. The Scots, tho' double in number to the Engliſh, were ſoon put to flight, and purſued with great ſlaughter. The chief, if not only reſiſtance, was made by one regiment of Highlanders, that part of the army which was the leaſt infected with enthuſiaſm. No victory could be more compleat than this obtained by Cromwel. About 3000 men were ſlain, and 9000 taken priſoners. Cromwel purſued his advantage, and took poſſeſſion of Edinburgh and Leith. The remnants of the Scots army fled to Sterling. The approach of the winter ſeaſon, and an ague, which ſeized Cromwel, kept him from puſhing the victory any farther.

Chap. I. 1650. Battle of Dunbar. 3d of September.

THE clergy made great lamentations, and told the Lord, that it was little to them to ſacrifice their lives and eſtates, but to him it was a great loſs to ſuffer his elect and choſen to be deſtroyed *. They publiſhed a declaration, containing the cauſe of their late misfortunes. Theſe viſitations they aſcribed to the manifold provocations of the King's houſe, of which, they feared, he had not yet thoroughly repented; the ſecret intruſion of malignants into the King's family, and even into the camp; the leaving of a moſt malignant and profane guard of horſe, who, being ſent for to be purged, came two days before the defeat, and were allowed to fight in the army; the owning of the King's quarrel by many without ſubordination to religion and liberty; and the carnal ſelf-ſeeking of ſome, together with the neglect of family prayers in others.

CROMWEL having been ſo ſucceſsful in the war of the ſword, took up the pen againſt the Scots eccleſiaſtics. He wrote them ſome polemical letters, in which he maintained the chief points of the independent theology. He took care likewiſe to retort on them their favourite argument of providence, and aſked them

* Sir Edward Walker.

Chap. I. 1650. whether the Lord had not declared againſt them. But the miniſters thought, that the ſame events, which to their enemies were judgements, to them were but trials; and they replied, that the Lord had only hid his face, for a time, from Jacob. But Cromwel inſiſted, that the appeal had been made to God in the moſt expreſs and ſolemn manner, and that in the fields of Dunbar an irrevocable deciſion had been awarded in favour of the Engliſh army *.

1651. THE defeat of the Scots was regarded by the King as a very fortunate event. The armies, which fought on both ſides, were almoſt equally his enemies; and the vanquiſhed were now obliged to give him ſome more authority, and apply to him for ſupport. The parliament was ſummoned to meet at St. Johnſtone. Hamilton, Lauderdale, and all the Engagers, were admitted into court and camp, on condition of doing public penance, and expreſſing repentance for their late tranſgreſſions. Some Malignants alſo crept in under various pretences. The intended humiliation or penance of the King was changed into the ceremony of 1ſt of January. his coronation, which was performed at Scone with great pomp and ſolemnity. But amidſt all this appearance of reſpect, Charles remained in the hands of the moſt rigid Covenanters: and tho' treated with civility and courteſy by Argyle, a man of parts and addreſs, he was little better than a priſoner, and was ſtill expoſed to all the rudeneſs and pedantry of the eccleſiaſtics.

THIS young prince was in a ſituation, which very ill ſuited his temper and diſpoſition. All thoſe good qualities which he poſſeſſed, his affability, his wit, his gaiety, his gentlemanly, diſengaged behaviour, were here ſo many vices; and his love of eaſe, liberty, and pleaſure, was regarded as the higheſt enormity. Tho' artful in the practice of courtly diſſimulation, the ſanctified ſtyle was utterly unknown to him; and he never could mould his deportment into that ſtarched grimace,

* This is the beſt of Cromwel's wretched compoſitions that remain, and we ſhall here extract a paſſage out of it. "You ſay you have not ſo learned Chriſt as to hang the equity of your cauſe upon "events. We could wiſh that blindneſs had not been upon your eyes to all thoſe marvellous diſpen-"ſations, which God hath wrought lately in England. But did not you ſolemnly appeal and pray? "Did not we do ſo too? And ought not we and you to think, with fear and trembling, of the hand of "the great God, in this mighty and ſtrange appearance of his, but can ſlightly call it an event? Were "not both your and our expectations renewed from time to time, while we waited on God, to ſee "which way he would manifeſt himſelf upon our appeals? And ſhall we, after all theſe our prayers, "faſtings, tears, expectations and ſolemn appeals, call theſe mere events? The Lord pity you. "Surely we fear, becauſe it has been a merciful and a gracious deliverance to us.

"I beſeech you in the bowels of Chriſt, ſearch after the mind of the Lord in it towards you, and "we ſhall help you by your prayers that you may find it. For yet, if we know our heart at all, our "bowels do in Chriſt yearn after the godly in Scotland." Thurloe, Vol. I. p. 158.

which

which the Covenanters required as the infallible mark of converſion. The duke of Buckingham was the only Engliſh courtier allowed to attend him; and by his ingenious talent of ridicule, he had rendered himſelf extremely agreeable to his maſter. While ſo many objects of deriſion ſurrounded them, it was difficult to be altogether inſenſible to the temptation, and wholly to ſuppreſs the laugh. Obliged to attend from morning to night at prayers and ſermons, they betrayed evident ſymptoms of wearineſs or contempt. The clergy never could eſteem the King ſufficiently regenerated: And by continued exhortations, remonſtrances, and reprimands, they ſtill endeavoured to bring him to a juſter ſenſe of his ſpiritual duty. Chap. I. 1651.

The King's paſſion for the fair could not altogether be reſtrained. He had once been obſerved uſing ſome familiarities with a young woman; and a committee of miniſters was appointed to reprove him for a behaviour ſo unbecoming a covenanted monarch. The ſpokeſman of the committee, one Douglaſs, began with a ſevere aſpect, informed the King that great ſcandal had been given to the godly, enlarged on the heinous nature of ſin, and concluded with exhorting his Majeſty, whenever he was diſpoſed to amuſe himſelf, to be more careful, for the future, in ſhutting his windows. This delicacy, ſo unuſual to the place and to the character of the man, was remarked by the King; and he never forgot the obligation.

The King, ſhocked with all the indignities, and, perhaps, ſtill more tired with all the formalities, to which he was obliged to ſubmit, made an attempt to regain his liberty. General Middleton, at the head of ſome Royaliſts, being proſcribed by the Covenanters, kept in the mountains, expecting ſome opportunity of ſerving his maſter. The King reſolved to join this body. He ſecretly made his eſcape from Argyle, and fled towards the Highlands. Colonel Montgomery, with a troop of horſe, was ſent in purſuit of him. He overtook the King, and perſuaded him to return. The Royaliſts being too weak to ſupport him, Charles was the more eaſily induced to comply. This incident procured him afterwards better treatment and more authority; the Covenanters being afraid of driving him by their rigours to ſome deſperate reſolution. Argyle renewed his courtſhip to the King, and the King, with equal diſſimulation, pretended to repoſe great confidence in Argyle. He even went ſo far as to drop hints of his intention to marry that nobleman's daughter: But he had to do with a man too wiſe to be ſeduced by ſuch groſs artifices.

So ſoon as the ſeaſon would permit, the Scots army was aſſembled under Hamilton and Leſley; and the King was allowed to join the camp. The forces of the weſtern counties, notwithſtanding the imminent danger which threatened their country, were reſolved not to unite their cauſe with that of an army, which admitted any Engagers or Malignants among them; and they kept in a body apart

Chap. I. 1651.

under Ker. They called themſelves the *Proteſters*; and their frantic clergy declaimed equally againſt the King and Cromwel. The other party were denominated *Reſolutioners*; and theſe diſtinctions continued long after to divide and agitate the kingdom.

CHARLES encamped at the Torwood; and his generals reſolved to conduct themſelves by the ſame cautious maxims, which, ſo long as they were embraced, had been ſucceſsful during the former campaign. The town of Stirling lay at his back, and the whole north ſupplied him with proviſions. Strong entrenchments defended his front; and it was in vain that Cromwel made every attempt to bring him to an engagement. After loſing much time, the Engliſh general ſent Lambert over the firth into Fife, with an intention of cutting off the proviſions of the Scots army. Lambert fell upon Holborne and Brown, who commanded a party of the Scots, and put them to rout with great ſlaughter. Cromwel alſo paſſed over with his whole army, and lying at the back of the King, made it impoſſible for him to keep his poſt any longer.

CHARLES, reduced to deſpair, embraced a reſolution worthy a young prince contending for empire. Having the way open to England, he reſolved immediately to march into that country, where he expected, that all his friends and all thoſe diſcontented with the preſent government would flock to his ſtandard. He perſuaded the generals to enter into the ſame views; and with one conſent the army, to the number of 14,000 men, roſe from their camp, and advanced by great journies towards the ſouth.

CROMWEL was ſurprized at the movements of the Scots army. Wholly intent on offending his enemy, he had expoſed his friends to the moſt imminent danger, and ſaw the King with a large army marching into England, where his preſence, from the general hatred which prevailed againſt the Parliament, was capable of operating ſome great revolution. But if this conduct was an overſight in Cromwel, he quickly repaired it by his vigilance and activity. He diſpatched letters to the Parliament, exhorting them not to be terrified at the approach of the Scots: He ſent orders every where for aſſembling forces to oppoſe the King: He ordered Lambert with a body of cavalry to hang upon the rear of the royal army, and infeſt their march: And he himſelf, leaving Monk with 7000 men to compleat the reduction of Scotland, followed the King with all the expedition poſſible.

CHARLES found himſelf diſappointed in his expectations of encreaſing his army. The Scots, terrified at the proſpect of ſo hazardous an enterprize, fell off in great numbers. The Engliſh Preſbyterians, having no warning given them of the King's approach, were not prepared to join him. To the Royaliſts, this meaſure was equally unexpected; and they were farther deterred from joining the Scots army

army by the orders which the committee of miniſters had iſſued, not to admit any, even in this deſperate extremity, who would not ſubſcribe the covenant. The earl of Derby, leaving the iſle of Man, where he had hitherto maintained his independance on the Parliament, was employed in levying forces in Cheſhire and Lancaſhire; but was ſoon ſuppreſſed by a party of the parliamentary army. And the King, when he arrived at Worceſter, found, that his forces, extremely harraſſed by a haſty and fatiguing march, were not more numerous, than when he roſe from his camp in the Torwood. Chap. I. 1651.

SUCH is the influence of eſtabliſhed government, that the Commonwealth, tho' founded in uſurpation the moſt unjuſt and unpopular, had authority ſufficient to raiſe every where the militia of the counties; and theſe, united with the regular forces, bent all their efforts againſt the King. With an army of above 40,000 men, Cromwel fell upon Worceſter; and attacking it on all ſides, and meeting with little reſiſtance except from Duke Hamilton and General Middleton, broke in upon the diſordered Royaliſts. The ſtreets of the city were ſtrowed with the dead. Hamilton, a nobleman of great bravery and honour, was mortally wounded; Maſſey wounded and taken priſoner; the King himſelf, having given many proofs of perſonal valour, was obliged to fly. The whole Scots army were either killed or taken priſoners. The country people, inflamed with national antipathy, inhumanly put to death the few who eſcaped from the field of battle. 3d of September. Battle of Worceſter.

THE King left Worceſter at ſix o'clock in the afternoon, and without halting, travelled about twenty-ſix miles, in company with fifty or ſixty of his friends. To provide for his ſecurity, he thought it beſt to ſeparate himſelf from his companions; and he left them without communicating his intentions to any of them. By the earl of Derby's directions, he went to Boſcobel, a lone houſe in the borders of Staffordſhire, inhabited by one Penderell, a farmer. To this man Charles entruſted himſelf. The man had dignity of ſentiments much above his condition; and tho' death was denounced againſt all who concealed the King, and a great reward promiſed to any one who ſhould betray him, he profeſſed and maintained unſhaken fidelity. He took the aſſiſtance of his four brothers, equally honourable with himſelf; and having cloathed the King in a garb like their own, they led him into the neighbouring wood, put a bill into his hand, and pretended to employ themſelves in cutting faggots. Some nights he lay upon ſtraw in the houſe, and fed upon ſuch homely fare as it afforded. For a better concealment, he mounted upon an oak, where he ſheltered himſelf among the leaves and branches for twenty-four hours. He ſaw ſeveral ſoldiers paſs by. All of them were intent in ſearch of the King; and many expreſſed in his hearing their earneſt wiſhes of ſeizing him. This tree was afterwards denominated the *Royal Oak*; The King's eſcape.

and

Chap. I. 1651.

and for many years was regarded by the whole neighbourhood with great veneration.

CHARLES was in the middle of the kingdom, and could neither ſtay in his retreat, nor ſtir a ſtep from it, without the moſt imminent danger. Fears, hopes, and party zeal intereſted multitudes to diſcover him; and even the ſmalleſt indiſcretion of his friends might prove fatal. Having joined lord Wilmot, who was ſkulking in the neighbourhood, they agreed to put themſelves into the hands of colonel Lane, a zealous Royaliſt, who lived at Bentley, not many miles diſtant. The King's feet were ſo hurt by walking about in heavy boots or countrymen's ſhoes which did not fit him, that he was obliged to mount on horſeback; and he travelled in this ſituation to Bentley, attended by the five Penderells, who had been ſo faithful to him. Lane formed a ſcheme for his journey to Briſtol, where, it was hoped, he would find a ſhip, in which he might tranſport himſelf. He had a near kinſwoman, Mrs. Norton, who lived within three miles of that city, and was with child, very near the time of her delivery. He obtained a paſs (for during thoſe times of confuſion this precaution was requiſite) for his ſiſter Jane Lane and a ſervant, to travel towards Briſtol, under pretence of viſiting and attending her relation. The King rode before the lady, and perſonated the ſervant: Wilmot, carrying a hawk on his hand, paſſed for a ſtranger, who had accidentally joined them.

WHEN they arrived at Norton's, Mrs. Lane pretended, that ſhe had brought with her, as her ſervant, a poor lad, a neighbouring farmer's ſon, who was ill of an ague; and ſhe begged a private room for him, where he might be quiet. Tho' Charles kept himſelf retired in this chamber, the butler, one Pope, ſoon knew him; and throwing himſelf on his knees, prayed for his Majeſty's life and preſervation. The King was alarmed, but made the butler promiſe that he would keep the ſecret from every mortal, even from his maſter; and he was faithful to his engagement.

No ſhip, it was found, would, for a month, ſet ſail from Briſtol, either for France or Spain; and the King was obliged to go elſewhere for a paſſage. He entruſted himſelf to colonel Windham of Dorſetſhire, an affectionate partizan of the royal family. The natural effect of the long civil wars and of the furious rage, to which all men were wrought up in their different factions, was, that every one's inclinations and affections were thoroughly known, and even the courage and fidelity of moſt men, by the variety of incidents, had been put to trial. The Royaliſts too had, many of them, been obliged to contrive concealments in their houſes for themſelves, their friends, or moſt valuable effects; and the arts of eluding the enemy had been often practiſed. All theſe circumſtances proved favourable

able to the King in the preſent exigency. As he paſſed often thro' the hands of Catholics, the *Prieſt's hole*, as they called it, the place, where they were obliged to conceal their perſecuted prieſts, was ſometimes employed for ſheltering their diſtreſſed ſovereign. Chap. I. 1651.

WINDHAM, before he received the King, aſked leave to entruſt the important ſecret to his mother, his wife, and four ſervants, on whoſe fidelity he could entirely depend. Of all theſe perſons, no one proved wanting either in honour or diſcretion. The venerable old matron, on the reception of her royal gueſt, expreſſed the utmoſt joy, that, having loſt, without regret, three ſons and one grandchild in defence of his father, ſhe was now reſerved, in her declining years, to be inſtrumental in the preſervation of himſelf. Windham told the King, that Sir Thomas, his father, in the year 1636, a few days before his death, called to him his five ſons. "My children," ſaid he, "we have hitherto ſeen ſerene and "quiet times under our three laſt ſovereigns: But I muſt now warn you to pre- "pare for clouds and ſtorms. Factions ariſe on every ſide, and threaten the tran- "quillity of your native country. But whatever happen, do you faithfully honour "and obey your Prince, and adhere to the Crown. I charge you never to forſake "the Crown, tho' it ſhould hang upon a buſh." "Theſe laſt words," added Windham, "made ſuch impreſſions on all our breaſts, that the many afflictions "of theſe ſad times could never efface their indelible characters." From innumerable inſtances it appears how deep rooted in the minds of the Engliſh gentry of that age was the principle of loyalty to their ſovereign; that noble and generous principle, inferior only in excellence to the more enlarged and more inlightened affection towards a legal conſtitution. But during thoſe times of military uſurpation, theſe paſſions were the ſame.

THE King continued nineteen days in Windham's houſe; and all his friends in Britain and in every part of Europe, remained in the moſt anxious ſuſpence with regard to his fortune: No one could conjecture whether he was dead or alive; and the report of his death, being generally believed, happily relaxed the vigilant ſearch of his enemies. Trials were made to procure a veſſel for his eſcape; but he ſtill met with diſappointments. Having left Windham's houſe, he was obliged again to return to it. He paſſed thro' many other adventures; aſſumed different diſguiſes; in every ſtep was expoſed to imminent perils; and received daily proofs of uncorrupted fidelity and attachment. The ſagacity of a ſmith, who remarked, that his horſe's ſhoes had been made in the north, not in the weſt, as he pretended, once detected him; and he narrowly eſcaped. At Shoreham in Suſſex a veſſel was at laſt found, in which he embarked. He had been known to ſo many, that, if he had not ſet ſail in that critical moment, it had been impoſſible for him to eſcape.

Chap. I. 1651.

After one and forty days concealment, he arrived ſafely at Feſcamp in Normandy. No leſs than forty men and women had at different times been privy to his eſcape *.

THE battle of Worceſter afforded Cromwel what he called his *crowning mercy*. So elated was he, that he intended to have knighted in the field two of his generals, Lambert and Fleetwood; but was diſſuaded by his friends from exerting this act of regal authority. His power and ambition were too great to brook ſubjection to the empty name of a Republic, which ſtood chiefly by his influence and was ſupported by his victories. How early he entertained thoughts of taking into his hand the reins of government, is uncertain. We are only aſſured, that he now diſcovered to his intimate friends theſe aſpiring views; and even expreſſed a deſire of aſſuming the rank of King, which he had contributed, with ſuch ſeeming zeal, to aboliſh †.

The Commonwealth.

THE little popularity and credit, acquired by the Republicans, farther ſtimulated the ambition of this enterprizing politician. Theſe men had not that large thought nor thoſe comprehenſive views, which might qualify them for acting the part of legiſlators: Selfiſh aims and bigotry chiefly engroſſed their attention. They carried their rigid auſterity ſo far as to enact laws, declaring fornication, after the firſt act, to be felony, without benefit of clergy ‡. They made ſmall progreſs in that important work, which they profeſſed to have ſo much at heart, the ſettling a new model of repreſentation, and fixing a plan of government. The nation began to apprehend, that they intended to eſtabliſh themſelves as a perpetual legiſlature, and to confine the whole power to 60 or 70 perſons, who called themſelves the Parliament of the Commonwealth of England. And while they pretended to beſtow new liberties upon the nation, they found themſelves obliged to infringe even the moſt valuable of thoſe, which, thro' time immemorial, had been tranſmitted from their anceſtors. Not daring to entruſt the trials of treaſon to juries, who, being choſen indifferently from among the people, would have been little favourable to the Commonwealth, and would have formed their verdict upon the antient laws, they eluded that noble inſtitution, by which the government of this iſland has ever been ſo much diſtinguiſhed. They had ſeen evidently in the trial of Lilburn what they could expect from juries. This man, the moſt turbulent, but the moſt upright and courageous of human kind, was tried for a tranſgreſſion of the new ſtatute of treaſons: But tho' he was plainly guilty, he was acquitted, to the infinite joy of the people. Weſtminſter Hall, nay the whole city, rang with ſhouts and acclamations. Never did any eſtabliſhed power receive ſo ſtrong a declaration of its uſurpation and invalidity; and from no other inſtitu-

* Heathe's Chronicle, p. 301. † Whitelocke, p. 523. ‡ Scobel, p. 121.

tion, beſides the admirable one of juries, could be expected this magnanimous effort. Chap. I. 1651.

That they might not for the future be expoſed to affronts, which ſo much leſſened their authority, the Parliament erected a high court of juſtice, who were to receive indictments from the council of ſtate. This court was compoſed entirely of men, devoted to the ruling party, without name or character, determined to ſacrifice every thing to their own ſafety or ambition. Colonel Euſebius Andrews, and colonel Walter Slingſby were tried by this court for conſpiracies, and condemned to death. They were Royaliſts, and refuſed to plead before ſo illegal a juriſdiction. Love, Gibbons, and other preſbyterians, having entered into a plot againſt the Republic, were alſo tried and executed. The earl of Derby, Sir Timothy Fetherſtone, Bemboe, being taken priſoners after the battle of Worceſter, were put to death by ſentence of a court martial: A method of proceeding declared unlawful by that very petition of right, for which a former parliament had ſo ſtrenuouſly contended, and which, after great efforts, they had extorted from the King.

Excepting their principles of toleration, the maxims, by which the Republicans regulated eccleſiaſtical affairs, no more prognoſticated any durable ſettlement, than thoſe by which they conducted their civil concerns. The preſbyterian model of congregations, claſſes, and aſſemblies was not allowed to be finiſhed: It ſeemed even the attention of many leaders in the Parliament to admit of no eſtabliſhed church, and to leave every one, without any guidance of the magiſtrate, to embrace whatever ſect and to ſupport whatever clergy were moſt agreeable to him. It was not perceived, that by this policy the enthuſiaſtic ſpirit muſt of neceſſity, from a concurrence of the emulation and intereſted views of the eccleſiaſtics, be raiſed to ſuch a height as to elude all the tyes of civil and moral duty.

The Parliament went ſo far as to make ſome approaches, in one province, to their independant model. Almoſt all the clergy of Wales being ejected as malignants, itinerant preachers with a ſmall ſalary were ſettled, not above four or five in each county; and theſe, being furniſhed with horſes at the public charge, hurried from place to place, and carried, as they expreſſed themſelves, the glad tidings of the goſpel *. They were all of them men of the loweſt birth and education, who had deſerted mechanical trades, in order to follow this new profeſſion: And in this particular, as well as in their wandering life, they pretended to be more truly apoſtolical.

The Republicans, both by the turn of their diſpoſition, and by the nature of the inſtruments, which they employed, were better qualified for acts of force and

* Dr. John Walker's Attempt, p. 147, & ſeq.

Chap. I. 1651.

vigour than for the ſlow and deliberate work of legiſlation. Notwithſtanding the late wars and bloodſhed and the preſent factions, the power of England had never, in any period, been ſo formidable to the neighbouring kingdoms as at this time it appeared in the hands of the Commonwealth. A numerous army ſerved equally to retain every one, in implicite ſubjection to eſtabliſhed authority, and to ſtrike a terror into foreign nations. The power of peace and war was lodged in the ſame hands with that of impoſing taxes; and no difference of views, among the ſeveral members of the legiſlature, could any longer be apprehended. The preſent impoſitions, tho' much ſuperior to what had ever formerly been experienced, were in reality very moderate, and what a nation, ſo opulent, could eaſily bear. The military genius of the people, by the civil conteſts, had been rouzed from its former lethargy; and excellent officers were formed in every branch of ſervice. The confuſion into which all things had been thrown, had given opportunity to men of low ſtations to break thro' their obſcurity, and to raiſe themſelves by their courage to commands, which they were well qualified to exerciſe, but to which their birth could never have entitled them. And while ſo great power was lodged in ſuch active hands, no wonder the Republic was ſucceſsful in all its enterprizes.

BLAKE, a man of heroic courage and a generous diſpoſition, the ſame perſon, who had defended Lyme and Taunton with ſuch unſhaken obſtinacy againſt the King, was made an admiral; and tho' he had hitherto been accuſtomed only to land ſervice, into which too he had not entered till paſt fifty years of age, he ſoon raiſed the naval glory of the nation to a higher pitch than it had ever attained in any former period. A fleet was committed to him, and he received orders to purſue Prince Rupert, to whom the King had given the command of that ſquadron, which had deſerted to him. Rupert took ſhelter in Kinſale; and eſcaping thence, fled towards the coaſt of Portugal. Blake purſued, and chaced him into the Tagus, where he intended to attack that Prince. But the King of Portugal, moved by the favour, which, throughout all Europe, attended the royal cauſe, refuſed Blake admittance, and aided Prince Rupert in making his eſcape. To be revenged of this partiality, the Engliſh admiral made prize of twenty Portugueſe ſhips richly laden, and threatened ſtill farther vengeance. The King of Portugal, dreading ſo dangerous a foe to his new acquired dominion, and ſenſible of the unequal conteſt, in which he was engaged, made all poſſible ſubmiſſions to the haughty Republic, and was at laſt admitted to negotiate the renewal of his alliance with England. Prince Rupert, having loſt a great part of his ſquadron on the coaſt of Spain, made ſail towards the Weſt-Indies. His brother, Prince Maurice, was there ſhipwrecked in a hurricane. Every where, this ſquadron ſubſiſted by privateering, ſome-

times on Engliſh, ſometimes on Spaniſh veſſels. And Rupert at laſt returned to France, where he diſpoſed of the remnants of his fleet, together with all his prizes. Chap. I. 1651.

All the ſettlements in America, except New England, which had been planted entirely by the Puritans, adhered to the royal party, even after the ſettlement of the Republic; and Sir George Ayſcue was ſent with a ſquadron to reduce them to obedience. Bermudas, Antigua, Virginia were ſoon ſubdued. Barbadoes, commanded by Lord Willoughby of Parham, made ſome reſiſtance; but was at laſt obliged to ſubmit.

With equal eaſe were Jerſey, Guerneſey, Scilly, and the Iſle of Man brought under ſubjection to the Republic; and the ſea, which had been much infeſted by privateers from theſe Iſlands, was rendered entirely ſafe to the Engliſh commerce. The Counteſs of Derby defended the Iſle of Man; and with great reluctance yielded to the neceſſity of ſurrendering to the enemy. This lady, a daughter of the illuſtrious houſe of Trimoüille in France, had, during the civil wars, diſplayed a manly courage by her obſtinate defence of Latham-Houſe againſt the parliamentary forces; and ſhe retained the glory of being the laſt perſon in the three kingdoms and in all their dependant dominions, who ſubmitted to the victorious Commonwealth *.

Ireland and Scotland were now entirely ſubjected and reduced to tranquillity. Ireton, the new deputy of Ireland, commanding a numerous army of 30,000 men, proſecuted the work of ſubduing the revolted Iriſh; and he defeated them in many rencounters, which, tho' in themſelves of no great moment, proved fatal to their declining cauſe. He puniſhed without mercy all the priſoners who had any hand in the maſſacres. Sir Phelim Oneale, among the reſt, was, ſome time afterwards, brought to the gibbet, and ſuffered an ignominious death, which he had ſo well merited by his inhuman cruelties. Limeric, a conſiderable town, ſtill remained in the hands of the Iriſh; and Ireton, after a vigorous ſiege, made himſelf maſter of it. He was here infected with the plague, and ſhortly after died; a very memorable perſonage, much celebrated for his vigilance, induſtry,

* When the earl of Derby was alive, he had been ſummoned by Ireton to ſurrender the Iſle of Man; and he return'd this ſpirited and memorable anſwer. "I received your letter with indignation, and "with ſcorn return you this anſwer; that I cannot but wonder whence you ſhould gather any hopes, "that I ſhould prove like you, treacherous to my ſovereign; ſince you cannot be ignorant of my for- "mer actings in his late Majeſty's ſervice, from which principles of loyalty I am no whit departed. I "ſcorn your proffers; I diſdain your favour; I abhor your treaſon; and am ſo far from delivering up "this iſland to your advantage, that I ſhall keep it to the utmoſt of my power to your deſtruction. "Take this for your final anſwer, and forbear any farther ſollicitations: for if you trouble me with "any more meſſages of this nature, I will burn the paper, and hang up the bearer. This is the im- "mutable reſolution, and ſhall be the undoubted practice of him, who accounts it his chiefeſt glory "to be his Majeſty's moſt loyal and obedient ſubject, DERBY."

Chap. I. 1651. capacity, even for the ſtrict execution of juſtice in that unlimited command, which he poſſeſſed in Ireland. He was obſerved to be inflexible in all his purpoſes; and it was believed by many, that he was animated with a ſincere and paſſionate love for liberty, and never could have been induced, by any motive, to ſubmit to the ſmalleſt appearance of regal government. Cromwel appeared to be much affected by his death; and the Republicans, who repoſed great confidence in him, were inconſoleable. To ſhow their regard for his merit and ſervices, they beſtowed an eſtate of two thouſand pounds a year on his family, and honoured him with a magnificent funeral at the public charge. Tho' the eſtabliſhed government was but the mere ſhadow of a Commonwealth, yet was it beginning by proper arts to encourage that public ſpirit, which no other ſpecies of civil polity is ever able fully to inſpire.

THE command of the army in Ireland devolved on lieutenant-general Ludlow. The civil government of the iſland was entruſted to commiſſioners. Ludlow continued to puſh the advantages againſt the Iriſh, and every where obtained an eaſy victory. That unhappy people, diſguſted with the King on account of thoſe violent declarations againſt them and their religion, which had been extorted by the Scots, applied to the King of Spain, to the duke of Lorraine; and found aſſiſtance no where. Clanricarde, unable to reſiſt the prevailing power, made ſubmiſſions to the Parliament, and retired into England, where he ſoon after died. He was a ſteady catholic; but a man much reſpected by all parties.

THE ſucceſſes, which attended Monk in Scotland, were no leſs deciſive. That able general laid ſiege to Stirling caſtle; and tho' it was well provided for defence, it was ſoon ſurrendered to him. He there became maſter of all the records of the kingdom; and he ſent them to England. The earl of Leven, the earl of Crawford, lord Ogilvy, and other noblemen, having met near Perth, in order to concert means for raiſing a new army, were ſuddenly ſet upon by colonel Alured, and moſt of them taken priſoners. Sir Philip Muſgrave, with ſome Scots, being engaged at Dumfries in a like enterprize, met with the ſame fate. Dundee was a town well fortified, ſupplied with a good garriſon under Lumiſden, and full of all the rich furniture, the plate and money of the kingdom, which had been ſent thither as to a place of ſafety. Monk appeared before it; and having made a breach gave a general aſſault. He carried the town; and following the example and inſtructions of Cromwel, put the whole inhabitants to the ſword, in order to ſtrike a general terror into the kingdom. Warned by this example, Aberdeen, St. Andrews, Inverneſs, and other towns and forts, of their own accord, yielded to the enemy. Argyle made his ſubmiſſions to the Engliſh Commonwealth; and excepting a few Royaliſts, who remained ſome time in the mountains,

tains, under the earl of Glencairn, lord Balcarras, and general Middleton, that kingdom, which had hitherto, thro' all ages, by means of its ſituation, poverty, and valour, maintained its independance, was reduced to a total ſubjection. Chap. I. 1651.

THE Engliſh Parliament ſent Sir Harry Vane, St. John, and other commiſſioners, to ſettle Scotland. Theſe men, who poſſeſſed little of the real ſpirit of liberty, knew how to maintain all the appearances of it; and they required the voluntary conſent of all the counties and towns of this conquered kingdom, before they would unite them into the ſame Commonwealth with England. The clergy proteſted; becauſe, they ſaid, this incorporation would draw along with it a ſubordination of the church to the ſtate in the things of Chriſt *. Engliſh judges, joined to ſome Scots, were appointed to determine all cauſes; juſtice was ſtrictly executed; order and peace maintained; and the Scots being freed from the tyranny of the eccleſiaſtics, were not much diſſatisfied with the preſent government †. The prudent conduct of Monk, a man who poſſeſſed a good capacity for the arts both of peace and war, ſerved much to reconcile the minds of men, and to allay their prejudices.

BY the total reduction and pacification of the Britiſh dominions, the Parliament had leiſure to look abroad, and to exert their vigour in foreign enterprizes. The Dutch were the firſt who felt the weight of their arms. 1652. Dutch war.

DURING the life of Frederic Henry, Prince of Orange, the States had maintained an exact neutrality in the civil wars of England, and had never interpoſed,

* Whitlocke, p. 496.

† It had been an uſual policy of the preſbyterian eccleſiaſtics to ſettle a chaplain in the great families, who acted as a ſpy upon his maſter, and gave them intelligence of the moſt private tranſactions and diſcourſes of the family. A ſignal inſtance of prieſtly tyranny, and the ſubjection of the nobility! They even obliged the ſervants to give intelligence againſt their maſters. Whitlocke, p. 502. The ſame author, p. 512, tells the following ſtory. The ſynod meeting at Perth, and citing the miniſters and people, who had expreſſed a diſlike of *their heavenly government*, the men being out of the way, their wives reſolved to anſwer for them. And on the day of appearance, 120 women with good clubs in their hands came and beſieged the church, where the reverend miniſters ſat. They ſent one of their number to treat with the females, and he threatening excommunication, they baſted him for his labour, kept him priſoner, and ſent a party of 60, who routed the reſt of the clergy, bruiſed their bodies ſorely, took all their baggage and 12 horſes. One of the miniſters, after a mile's running, taking all creatures for his foes, meeting with a ſoldier fell on his knees, who knowing nothing of the matter, aſked the blackcoat what he meant. The female conquerors, having laid hold on the ſynod clerk, beat him till he forſwore his office. Thirteen miniſters rallied about four miles from the place, and voted that this village ſhould never more have a ſynod in it, but be accurſed; and that tho' in the years 1638 and 39, the godly women were cried up for ſtoning the biſhops, yet now the whole ſex ſhould be eſteemed wicked.

except

Chap. I. 1652.

except by their good offices, between the contending parties. When William, who had married an Engliſh Princeſs, ſucceeded to his father's commands and authority †, the States, both before and after the execution of the late King, were accuſed of taking ſteps more favourable to the royal cauſe, and of betraying a great prejudice againſt the cauſe of the Parliament. It was long before the envoy of the Engliſh Commonwealth could obtain an audience of the States-General. The murderers of Doriſlaus were not purſued with ſuch vigour as the Parliament expected. And much regard had been paid the King, and many good offices performed to him, both by the public and by men of all ranks, in the United Provinces.

AFTER the death of William, prince of Orange ‡, which was attended with the depreſſion of his party and the triumph of the Republicans, the Parliament thought, that the time was now come of cementing a cloſer confederacy with the United Provinces. St. John, lord chief juſtice, who was ſent over to the Hague, had entertained the idea of forming a kind of coalition between the two Republics, which would have rendered their intereſts totally inſeparable; but fearing that ſo extraordinary a project would not be reliſhed, he contented himſelf with dropping ſome hints of it, and openly went no farther than to propoſe a ſtrict defenſive alliance between England and the States, ſuch as has now, for near ſeventy years, taken place between theſe friendly powers *. But the States, who were unwilling to form a nearer confederacy with a government, whoſe meaſures were ſo obnoxious, and whoſe ſituation ſeemed ſo precarious, offered only to renew the former alliances with England. And the haughty St. John, diſguſted with this refuſal, as well as incenſed at many affronts, which had been offered him with impunity, by the retainers of the Palatine and Orange families, and indeed by the populace in general, returned into England, and endeavoured to excite a quarrel between the two Republics.

THE movements of great ſtates are often directed by as ſlender ſprings as thoſe of individuals. Tho' war with ſo conſiderable a naval power as the Dutch, who were in peace with all their other neighbours, might ſeem dangerous to the yet unſettled Commonwealth, there were ſeveral motives, which at this time induced the Engliſh Parliament to embrace hoſtile meaſures. Many of the members thought, that a foreign war would ſerve as a pretence for continuing the ſame Parliament, and delaying the new model of a repreſentative, with which the nation had ſo long been flattered. Others hoped, that the war would furniſh a reaſon for maintaining, ſome time longer, that numerous mercenary army, which

† In 1647.

‡ In October 17, 1650.

* Thurloe, vol. I. p. 182.

was

was so much complained of *. On the other hand, some, who dreaded the increasing power of Cromwel, expected, that the great expence of naval armaments would prove a motive for diminishing the military establishment. To divert the attention of the public from domestic quarrels towards foreign transactions, seemed, in the present disposition of mens minds, to be good policy. The superior power of the English Commonwealth, together with the advantages of situation, promised it success; and the parliamentary leaders hoped to gain many rich prizes from the Dutch, to distress and sink their flourishing commerce, and by victories to throw a lustre on their establishment, which was so new and unpopular. All these views, enforced by the violent spirit of St. John, who had a great influence over Cromwel, determined the Parliament to change the proposed alliance into a furious war against the United Provinces. Chap. I. 1652.

To cover these hostile intentions, the Parliament, under pretence of providing for the interests of commerce, embraced such measures as, they knew, would give disgust to the States. They framed the famous act of navigation, which prohibited all nations to import into England in their bottoms, any commodity which was not the growth and manufacture of their own country. By this law, tho' the terms, in which it was conceived, were general, the Dutch were principally hurt; because their country produces few commodities, and they subsist chiefly by being the general carriers and factors of the world. Letters of reprizal were granted to several merchants, who complained of injuries, which, as they pretended, they had received from the States; and above eighty Dutch ships fell into their hands and were made prize of. The cruelties practised on the English at Amboyna, which were certainly enormous, but which seemed to be buried in oblivion by a thirty years silence, were again made the grounds of complaint. And the allowing the murderers of Dorislaus to escape, and the conniving at the insults to which St. John had been exposed, were represented as symptoms of an unfriendly, if not a hostile, disposition in the States.

The States, alarmed at all these steps, sent over orders to their ambassadors to endeavour the renewal of the treaty of alliance, which had been broke off by the abrupt departure of St. John. Not to be unprepared, they equipped a fleet of a hundred and fifty sail, and took care, by their ministers at London, to inform the council of state of that armament. This intelligence, instead of striking terror into the English Republic, was considered as a menace, and farther confirmed the Parliament in their hostile resolutions. The minds of men, in both states, were every day more and more irritated against each other; and it was not long before these malignant humours broke forth into action.

* We are told in the life of Sir Harry Vane, that that famous republican opposed the Dutch war, and that it was the military gentlemen chiefly who supported that measure.

Tromp,

Chap. I. 1652.

TROMP, an admiral of great renown, received from the States the command of a fleet of forty-two ſail, in order to protect the Dutch navigation againſt the privateers of the Engliſh. He was forced by ſtreſs of weather, as he alledged, to take ſhelter in the road of Dover, where he met with Blake, who commanded an Engliſh fleet much inferior in number. Who was the aggreſſor in the action, which enſued between theſe two admirals, both of them men of ſuch prompt and fiery diſpoſitions, it is not eaſy to determine; ſince each of them ſent to his own ſtate a relation totally oppoſite in all its circumſtances to that of the other, and yet ſupported by the teſtimony of every captain in his fleet. Blake pretended, that, having given a ſignal to the Dutch admiral to ſtrike, Tromp, inſtead of complying, fired a broad-ſide at him. Tromp aſſerted, that he was preparing to ſtrike, and that the Engliſh admiral, nevertheleſs, began hoſtilities. It is certain, that the admiralty of Holland, who are diſtinct from the council of ſtate, had given Tromp no orders to ſtrike, but had left him to his own diſcretion with regard to that vain, but much conteſted ceremonial. They ſeemed willing to introduce the claim of an equality with the new Commonwealth, and to interpret the former reſpect, which they had ever paid the Engliſh flag, as a deference due only to the Monarchy. This circumſtance forms a ſtrong preſumption againſt the narrative of the Dutch admiral. The whole Orange party, it muſt be remarked, to which Tromp was ſuſpected to adhere, were deſirous of a war with England.

BLAKE, tho' his ſquadron conſiſted only of fifteen veſſels, reinforced, after the battle began, by eight under captain Bourne, maintained the fight with great bravery for five hours, and ſunk one ſhip of the enemy and took another. Night parted the combatants, and the Dutch fleet retired towards the coaſt of Holland. The populace of London were enraged, and would have inſulted the Dutch ambaſſadors, who lived at Chelſea, had not the council of State ſent guards to protect them.

WHEN the States heard of this action, of which the fatal conſequences were eaſily foreſeen, they were in the utmoſt conſternation. They immediately diſpatched Paw, penſionary of Holland, as their ambaſſador extraordinary to London, and ordered him to lay before the Parliament the narrative which Tromp had ſent of the late rencounter. They entreated them, by all the bands of their common religion, and common liberties, not to precipitate themſelves into hoſtile meaſures, but to appoint commiſſioners, who ſhould examine every circumſtance of the action, and clear up the truth, which lay in obſcurity. And they pretended, that they had given no orders to their admiral to offer any violence to the Engliſh, but would ſeverely puniſh him, if they found, upon enquiry, that he had been guilty of an action which they ſo much diſapproved. The imperious Parliament would hearken

to

to none of these reasons or remonstrances. Elated with the numerous successes, which they had obtained over their domestic enemies, they thought, that every thing must yield to their fortunate arms; and they gladly seized the opportunity, which they sought, of making war upon the States. They demanded, that, without any farther delay or enquiry, reparation should be made for all the damages, which the English had sustained. And when this demand was not complied with, they dispatched orders for commencing war against the United Provinces. Chap. I. 1652.

BLAKE sailed northwards with a numerous fleet, and fell upon the herring busses, which were escorted by twelve men of war. All these he either took or dispersed. Tromp followed him with a fleet of above a hundred sail. When these two admirals were within sight of each other, and preparing for battle, a furious storm attacked them. Blake took shelter in the English harbours. The Dutch fleet was dispersed and received great damage.

SIR GEORGE AYSCUE, tho' he commanded only forty ships according to the English accounts, engaged near Plymouth the famous de Ruiter, who had under him fifty ships of war, with thirty merchant-men. The Dutch ships were indeed of inferior force to the English. De Ruiter, the only admiral in Europe, who has attained a renown equal to that of the greatest general, defended himself so well, that Ayscue gained no advantage over him. Night parted them in the greatest heat of the action. De Ruiter next day sailed off with his convoy. The English had been so shattered in the fight, that they were not able to pursue. 16th of August.

NEAR the coast of Kent, Blake, seconded by Bourne and Pen, met the Dutch fleet, nearly equal in number, commanded by de Witte and de Ruiter. A battle was fought much to the disadvantage of the Dutch. Their rear-admiral was boarded and taken. Two other vessels were sunk and one blown up. The Dutch fleet next day made sail towards Holland. 28th of October.

THE English were not so successful in the Mediterranean. Van Galen with much superior force attacked captain Badily, and defeated him. He bought, however, his victory with the loss of his life.

SEA-FIGHTS are seldom so decisive as to disable the vanquished from making head in a little time against the victors. Tromp, seconded by de Ruiter, met near the Goodwins, with Blake, whose fleet was inferior to the Dutch, but who was resolved not to decline the combat. A furious battle commenced, where the admirals on both sides, as well as the inferior officers and seamen, exerted extraordinary bravery. In this action, the Dutch had the advantage. Blake himself was wounded. The Garland and Bonaventure were taken. Two ships were burned and one sunk; and night came very opportunely to save the English fleet. After this victory, 29th of November.

Chap. I. 1652. Tromp in a bravado fixed a broom to his main-maſt; as if he were reſolved to ſweep the ſea entirely of all Engliſh veſſels.

1653. GREAT preparations were made in England, in order to wipe off this diſgrace. A gallant fleet of eighty ſail was fitted out. Blake commanded, and Dean under him, together with Monk, who had been ſent for from Scotland. When the Engliſh lay off Portland, they deſcried near break of day the Dutch fleet of ſeventy-ſix veſſels, ſailing up the Channel, along with a convoy of 300 merchant-men, who had received orders to wait at the Iſle of Rhé, till the fleet ſhould arrive to eſcort them. Tromp and de Ruiter commanded the Dutch. This battle was the moſt furious which had yet been fought, between theſe warlike and rival nations. Three days was the battle continued with the utmoſt rage and obſtinacy; and Blake, who was victor, gained not more honour than Tromp, who was vanquiſhed. The Dutch admiral made a ſkilful retreat, and ſaved all the merchant ſhips, except thirty. He loſt however eleven ſhips of war, had 2000 men ſlain, and near 1500 taken priſoners. The Engliſh, tho' many of their ſhips were extremely ſhattered, had but one ſunk. Their ſlain were not much inferior in number to thoſe of the enemy.

18th of February.

ALL theſe ſucceſſes of the Engliſh were chiefly owing to the ſuperior ſize of their veſſels; an advantage which all the ſkill and bravery of the Dutch admirals could not compenſate. By means of ſhip-money, an impoſition which had been ſo much complained of, and in ſome reſpects with reaſon, the late King had put the navy into a ſituation, which it had never attained in any former reign; and he ventured to build ſhips of a ſize, which was then unuſual. But the misfortunes, which the Dutch met with in battle, were ſmall in compariſon of thoſe, which their trade ſuſtained from the Engliſh. Their whole commerce by the Channel was cut off: Even that to the Baltic was much infeſted by the Engliſh privateers. Their fiſheries were totally ſuſpended. A great number of their ſhips, above 1600, had fallen into the enemies hands. And all this diſtreſs they ſuffered, not for any national intereſt or neceſſity; but from vain points of honour and perſonal reſentments, of which it was difficult to give a ſatisfactory account to the public. They reſolved therefore to gratify the pride of the Parliament, and to make ſome advances towards a peace. Their reception, however, was not favourable; and it was not without pleaſure, that they learned the diſſolution of that haughty aſſembly by the violence of Cromwel; an event from which they expected a more proſperous turn to their affairs.

THE zealous Republicans in the Parliament had not been the chief or firſt promoters of the war; but when it was once entered upon, they endeavoured to draw from it every poſſible advantage. On all occaſions, they ſet up the fleet in oppoſition

to

to the army, and celebrated the glory and ſucceſſes of their naval armaments. They inſiſted on the intolerable expence to which the nation was ſubjected, and urged the neceſſity of diminiſhing it by a reduction of their land forces. They had ordered ſome regiments to ſerve on board the fleet in the quality of marines: And Cromwel, by the whole train of their proceedings, evidently ſaw, that they had entertained a jealouſy of his power and ambition, and were reſolved to bring him to a ſubordination under their authority. Without ſcruple or delay he reſolved to prevent them.

Diſſolution of the Parliament.

On ſuch firm foundations was built the credit of this extraordinary man, that, tho' a great maſter of fraud and diſſimulation, he judged it ſuperfluous to employ any diſguiſe in conducting that bold enterprize. He ſummoned a general council of officers; and immediately found, that they were diſpoſed to receive whatever impreſſions he was pleaſed to give them. Moſt of them were his creatures, had owed their advancement to his favour, and relied entirely upon him for their future preferment. The breach being already made, between the military and civil powers, when the late King was ſeized at Holmby; the general officers regarded the Parliament as at once their creature and their rival; and thought that they themſelves were entitled to ſhare among them thoſe offices and riches, of which its members had ſo long kept poſſeſſion. Harriſon, Rich, Overton, and a few others, who retained ſome principle, were guided by notions ſo extravagant, that they were eaſily deluded into meaſures the moſt violent and moſt criminal. And the whole army had already been guilty of ſuch illegal and atrocious actions, that they could entertain no farther ſcruples with regard to any enterprize, which might ſerve their ſelfiſh or fanatical purpoſes.

In the council of officers it was preſently voted to frame a remonſtrance to the Parliament. After complaining of the arrears, which were due to the army, they there deſired the Parliament to remember how many years they had ſat, and what profeſſions they had formerly made of their intentions to new model the repreſentative, and eſtabliſh ſucceſſive Parliaments, who might bear that burthen of national affairs, from which they themſelves would gladly, after ſo much danger and fatigue, be at laſt relieved. They confeſſed, that the Parliament had atchieved great enterprizes, and had ſurmounted mighty difficulties; yet was it an injury, they ſaid, to the reſt of the nation to be excluded from bearing any part in the ſervice of their country. It was now full time for them to give place to others; and they therefore deſired them, after ſettling a council, who might execute the laws during the interval, to ſummon a new Parliament, and eſtabliſh that free and equal government, which they had ſo long promiſed to the people.

Chap. I. 1653.

THE Parliament took this remonſtrance in very ill part, and made a ſharp reply to the council of officers. The officers inſiſted on their advice; and by mutual altercation and oppoſition, the breach became ſtill wider between the army and the Commonwealth. Cromwel, finding matters ripe for his purpoſe, called a council of officers, in order to come to a determination with regard to the public ſettlement. As he had here many friends, ſo had he alſo ſome opponents. Harriſon having aſſured the council, that the General ſought only to pave the way for the government of Jeſus and his ſaints, Major Streater briſkly replied, that Jeſus ought then to come quickly: For if he delayed it till after Chriſtmas, he would come too late; he would find his place occupied. While the officers were in debate, colonel Ingoldſby informs Cromwel, that the Parliament were ſitting, and had come to a reſolution not to diſſolve themſelves, but to fill up the houſe by new elections; and were at that very time engaged in deliberations with regard to this expedient. Cromwel in a rage immediately haſtens to the houſe, and carries a body of 300 ſoldiers along with him. Some of them he placed at the door, ſome in the lobby, ſome on the ſtairs. He firſt addreſſed himſelf to his friend St. John, and told him, that he had come with a purpoſe of doing what grieved him to the very ſoul, and what he had earneſtly with tears prayed the Lord not to impoſe upon him: But there was a neceſſity, in order to the glory of God and good of the nation. He ſat down for ſome time, and heard the debates. He beckoned Harriſon, and told him, that he now judged the Parliament ripe for a diſſolution. "Sir," ſaid Harriſon, "the work is very great and dangerous; I "deſire you ſeriouſly to conſider, before you engage in it." "You ſay well," replied the General; and thereupon ſat ſtill about a quarter of an hour. When the queſtion was ready to be put, he ſaid again to Harriſon, "This is the time: I "muſt do it." And ſuddenly ſtarting up, he loaded the Parliament with the vileſt reproaches, for their tyranny, ambition, oppreſſion, and robbery of the public. Then ſtamping with his foot, which was the ſignal for the ſoldiers to enter, "For "ſhame," ſaid he to the Parliament, "get you gone: Give place to honeſter "men; to thoſe who will more faithfully diſcharge their truſt. You are no longer "a Parliament: I tell you, you are no longer a Parliament. The Lord has done "with you: He has choſen other inſtruments for carrying on his work." Sir Harry Vane exclaiming againſt this procedure, he cried with a loud voice, "O! "Sir Harry Vane, Sir Harry Vane! The Lord deliver me from Sir Harry Vane!" Taking hold of Martin by the cloke, "Thou art a whoremaſter," ſaid he. To another, "Thou art an adulterer." To a third, "Thou art a drunkard and a "glutton:" "And thou an extortioner," to a fourth. He commanded a ſoldier to ſeize the mace. "What ſhall we do with this bauble? Here take it away. It is "you,"

20th of April,

"you," ſaid he addreſſing himſelf to the Houſe, "that have forced me upon "this. I have ſought the Lord, night and day, that he would rather ſlay me "than put me upon this work." Having commanded the ſoldiers to clear the hall, he himſelf went out the laſt, and ordering the doors to be locked, departed to his lodgings in Whitehall.

In this furious manner, which ſo well denotes his genuine character, did Cromwel, without the leaſt oppoſition, or even murmur, annihilate that famous aſſembly, which had filled all Europe with the renown of its actions, and with aſtoniſhment at its crimes, and whoſe commencement was not more ardently deſired by the people than was its final diſſolution. All parties now reaped ſucceſſively the diſmal pleaſure of ſeeing the injuries, which they had ſuffered, revenged on their enemies; and that too by the ſame arts, which had been practiſed againſt them. The King had ſtretched his prerogative beyond its juſt bounds; and aided by the church, had well nigh put an end to all the liberties and privileges of the nation. The Preſbyterians checked the progreſs of the court and clergy, and excited, by cant and hypocriſy, the populace firſt to tumults, then to war, againſt the King, the Peers, and all the Royaliſts. No ſooner had they reached the pinnacle of grandeur, than the Independants, under the appearance of ſtill greater ſanctity, inſtigated the army againſt them, and reduced them to ſubjection. The Independants, amidſt their empty dreams of liberty, or rather of dominion, were oppreſſed by the rebellion of their own ſervants, and found themſelves at once expoſed to the inſults of power and hatred of the people. By recent, as well as all antient example, it was become evident, that illegal violence, with whatever pretences it may be covered, and whatever object it may purſue, muſt inevitably end at laſt in the arbitrary and deſpotic government of a ſingle perſon.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

Cromwel's birth and private life.——Barebone's Parliament.——Cromwel made Protector.——Peace with Holland.——A new Parliament.——Inſurrection of the Royaliſts.——State of Europe.——War with Spain.——Jamaica conquered.——Succeſs and death of admiral Blake.——Domeſtic adminiſtration of Cromwel.——Humble Petition and Advice.——Dunkirk taken.——Sickneſs of the Protector.——His death——And Character.

1653. Cromwel's birth and private life.

OLIVER CROMWEL, in whoſe hands the diſſolution of the Parliament had left the whole power, civil and military, of three kingdoms, was born at Huntingdon, the laſt year of the former century, of a very good family; tho' he himſelf, being the ſon of a ſecond brother, inherited but a ſmall eſtate from his father. In the courſe of his education he had been ſent to the univerſity; but his genius was found little fitted for the calm and elegant occupations of learning; and he made ſmall proficiency in his ſtudies. He even threw himſelf into a very diſſolute and diſorderly courſe of life; and he conſumed, in gaming, drinking, debauchery, and country riots, the more early years of his youth, and diſſipated part of his patrimony. All of a ſudden, the ſpirit of reformation ſeized him; he married, affected a grave and compoſed behaviour, entered into all the zeal and rigour of the puritanical party, and offered to reſtore to every one whatever ſums he had formerly gained by gaming. The ſame vehemence of temper, which had tranſported him into the extremes of pleaſure, now diſtinguiſhed his religious habits. His houſe was the reſort of all the zealous clergy of the party; and his hoſpitality, as well as his liberalities to the ſilenced and deprived miniſters, proved as chargeable as his former debaucheries. Tho' he had acquired a tolerable fortune by a maternal uncle, he found his affairs ſo injured by his expences, that he was obliged to take a farm at St. Ives, and apply himſelf, for ſome years, to agriculture as a profeſſion. But this expedient ſerved rather to involve him in farther debts and difficulties. The long prayers which he ſaid to his family in the morning, and again in the afternoon, conſumed his own time and that of his ploughmen; and he reſerved no leizure for the care of his temporal affairs. His active mind, ſuperior to the low occupations, to which he was condemned, preyed upon itſelf; and he indulged his imagination

imagination in viſions, illuminations, revelations; the great nouriſhment of that hypocondriacal temper, to which he was ever ſubject. Urged by his wants and his devotions, he had formed a party with Hambden, his near kinſman, who was preſſed only by the latter motive, to tranſport himſelf into New England, now become the retreat of the more zealous among the puritanical party; and it was an order of council, which obliged them to diſembark and remain in England. The earl of Bedford, who poſſeſſed a large eſtate in the Fen Country, near the iſle of Ely, having undertaken to drain theſe moraſſes, was obliged to apply to the King; and by the powers of the prerogative, he got commiſſioners appointed, who conducted that work, and divided the new acquired land among the ſeveral proprietors. He met with oppoſition from many, among whom Cromwel diſtinguiſhed himſelf; and this was the firſt public opportunity, which he had met with, of diſcovering the factious zeal and obſtinacy of his character.

From accident and intrigue, he was choſen by the town of Cambridge member of the long Parliament. His domeſtic affairs were then in great diſorder; and he ſeemed not to poſſeſs any talents, which could qualify him to riſe in that public ſphere, into which he was now at laſt entered. His perſon was ungraceful, his dreſs ſlovenly, his voice untuneable, his elocution homely, tedious, obſcure, and embarraſſed. The fervour of his ſpirit frequently prompted him to riſe in the houſe; but he was not heard with attention: His name, for above two years, is not to be found oftener than twice in any committee; and thoſe committees, into which he was admitted, were choſen for affairs, which would more intereſt the zealots than the men of buſineſs. In compariſon of the eloquent ſpeakers and fine gentlemen of the houſe, he was entirely overlooked; and his friend Hambden alone was acquainted with the depth of his genius, and foretold, that if a civil war ſhould enſue, he would ſoon riſe to eminence and diſtinction.

Cromwel himſelf ſeems to have been conſcious where his ſtrength lay; and partly from that motive, partly from the uncontroleable fury of his zeal, he always joined that party, which puſhed every thing to extremity againſt the King. He was very active for the famous remonſtrance, which was the ſignal for all the enſuing commotions; and when, after a long debate, it was carried by a ſmall majority, he told lord Falkland, that, if the queſtion had been loſt, he was reſolved next day to have converted into ready money the remains of his fortune, and immediately to have left the kingdom. Nor was this reſolution, he ſaid, peculiar to himſelf: Many others of his party he knew to be equally determined.

He was no leſs than forty-three years of age, when he firſt embraced the military profeſſion; and by force of genius, without any maſter, he ſoon became an excellent officer; tho' perhaps he never reached the fame of a conſummate commander.

Chap. II. 1653.

mander. He raiſed a troop of horſe, fixed his quarters in Cambridge, exerted great ſeverity towards that univerſity, which zealouſly adhered to the royal party; and ſhowed himſelf a man who would go all lengths in favour of that cauſe, which he had eſpouſed. He would not allow his ſoldiers to perplex their heads with thoſe ſubtilties of fighting by the King's authority againſt his perſon, and of obeying his Majeſty's orders ſignified by both houſes of Parliament: He plainly told them, that, if he met the King in battle, he would fire a piſtol in his face as readily as againſt any other man. His troop of horſe he ſoon augmented to a regiment, and he firſt inſtituted that diſcipline and inſpired that ſpirit, which rendered the parliamentary armies in the end victorious. "Your troops," ſaid he to Hambden, according to his own account *, "are moſt of them old decayed "ſerving men and tapſters, and ſuch kind of fellows; the King's forces are com-"poſed of gentlemen's younger ſons and perſons of good quality. And do you "think, that the mean ſpirits of ſuch baſe and low fellows as ours will ever "be able to encounter gentlemen, that have honour and courage, and reſolution in "them? You muſt get men of ſpirit; and take it not ill that I ſay, of a ſpirit, "that is likely to go as far as gentlemen will go, or elſe I am ſure you will ſtill be "beaten, as you have hitherto been, in every rencounter." He did as he propoſed. He inliſted freeholders and farmers ſons. He carefully invited into his regiment all the zealous fanatics throughout England. When collected in a body, their enthuſiaſtic ſpirit ſtill roſe to a higher pitch. Their colonel, from his own natural character, as much as from policy, was ſufficiently inclined to encreaſe the flame. He preached, he prayed, he fought, he puniſhed, he rewarded. The wild enthuſiaſm, together with valour and diſcipline, ſtill propagated itſelf; and all men caſt their eyes on ſo pious and ſo ſucceſsful a leader. From low commands, he roſe with great rapidity to be really the firſt, tho' in appearance only the ſecond, in the army. By fraud and violence, he ſoon rendered himſelf the firſt in the ſtate. In proportion to the encreaſe of his authority, his talents ſeemed always to expand themſelves; and he diſplayed every day new abilities, which had lain dormant till the very emergence, by which they were called forth into action. All Europe ſtood aſtoniſhed to ſee a nation, ſo turbulent and unruly, who, for ſome encroachments on their privileges, had dethroned and murdered an excellent Prince, deſcended from a long line of monarchs, now at laſt ſubdued and reduced to ſlavery by one, who, a few years before, was no better than a private gentleman, whoſe name was not known in the nation, and who was very little regarded even in that low ſphere, to which he had always been confined.

* Conference held at Whitehall.

THE

THE indignation, entertained by the people, againſt an authority founded on ſuch manifeſt uſurpation, was not ſo violent as might naturally be expected. Congratulatory addreſſes, the firſt of the kind, were made to Cromwel by the fleet, the army, even many of the chief corporations and counties of England; but eſpecially by the ſeveral congregations of pretended ſaints, diſperſed throughout the kingdom *. The Royaliſts, tho' they could not love the man, who had embrued his hands in the blood of their ſovereign, expected more lenity from him, than from the jealous and imperious Republicans, who had hitherto governed. The preſbyterians were pleaſed to ſee thoſe men, by whom they had been outwitted and expelled, now in the end expelled and outwitted by their own ſervant; and they applauded him for this laſt act of violence upon the Parliament. Theſe two parties compoſed the bulk of the nation, and kept the people in ſome tolerable temper. All men, likewiſe, harraſſed with wars and factions, were glad to ſee any proſpect of juſtice and ſettlement. And they deemed it leſs ignominious to ſubmit to a perſon of ſuch admirable talents and capacity than to a few ignoble enthuſiaſtic hypocrites, who, under the name of a Republic, had reduced them to a cruel ſubjection.

THE Republicans being dethroned by Cromwel, were the party whoſe reſentment he had the greateſt reaſon to apprehend. That party, beſides the independants, contained two ſets of men, who are ſeemingly of the moſt oppoſite principles, but who were then united by a ſimilitude of genius and of character. The firſt and moſt numerous were the Millenarians or Fifty Monarchy men, who inſiſted, that, dominion being founded in grace, all diſtinction of magiſtracy muſt be aboliſhed, except what aroſe from piety and holineſs; who expected ſuddenly the ſecond coming of Chriſt upon earth; and who pretended, that the ſaints in the mean while, that is, themſelves, were alone entitled to govern. The ſecond were the Deiſts, who had no other object than political liberty, who denied entirely the truth of revelation, and inſinuated, that all the various ſects, ſo heated againſt each other, were alike founded in folly and in error. Men of ſuch daring geniuſes were not contented with the eſtabliſhed forms of civil government; but challenged a degree of freedom beyond what they expected ever to enjoy under any Monarchy. Martin, Challoner, Harrington, Sidney, Wildman, Nevil, were eſteemed the heads of this ſmall diviſion.

THE Deiſts were perfectly hated by Cromwel, becauſe he had no hold of enthuſiaſm by which he could govern or over-reach them; he therefore treated

* See Milton's State papers.

Chap. II. 1653.

them with great rigor and diſdain, and uſually denominated them the *Heathens*. As the Millenarians had a great intereſt in the army, it was much more important for him to gain their confidence; and their ſize of underſtanding afforded him great facility in deceiving them. Of late years, it had been ſo uſual a topic of converſation to diſcourſe of Parliaments and Councils and Senates, and the ſoldiers themſelves had been ſo much accuſtomed to enter into that ſpirit, that Cromwel thought it requiſite to eſtabliſh ſomething which might bear the face of a Commonwealth. He ſuppoſed, that God, in his providence, had thrown the whole right as well as power of government into his hands; and without any more ceremony, by the advice of his council of officers, he ſent ſummons to a hundred and twenty eight perſons of different towns and counties of England, to five of Scotland, to ſix of Ireland. He pretended, by his ſole act and deed, to devolve upon theſe perſons the whole authority of the ſtate. This legiſlative power they were to exerciſe during fifteen months; and they were afterwards to chooſe the ſame number of perſons, who might ſucceed them in that high and important office.

Barebone's Parliament.

THERE were great numbers at that time, always diſpoſed to adhere to the power, which was uppermoſt, and to ſupport the eſtabliſhed government. This maxim is not peculiar to the people of that age; but what may be eſteemed peculiar to them, is, that there prevailed an hypocritical phraſe for expreſſing ſo prudential a conduct: It was called a waiting upon providence. When providence, therefore, was ſo kind as to beſtow on theſe perſons, now aſſembled together, the ſupreme authority, they muſt have been very ungrateful, if, in their turn, they had been wanting in complaiſance towards it. They immediately voted themſelves a Parliament; and having their own conſent, as well as that of Oliver Cromwel, for their legiſlative authority, they now proceeded very gravely to the exerciſe of it.

4th of July.

IN this notable aſſembly were ſome perſons of the rank of gentlemen; but the far greateſt part were low mechanics; Fifth Monarchy men, Anabaptiſts, Antinomians, Independants; the very dregs of the fanatics. They began with ſeeking God by prayer. This office was performed by eight or ten *gifted* men of the aſſembly; and with ſo much ſucceſs, that, according to the confeſſion of all, they had never before, in any of their devout exerciſes, enjoyed ſo much of the holy ſpirit as was then communicated to them. Their hearts were no doubt, dilated when they conſidered the high dignity, to which they ſuppoſed themſelves exalted. They had been told by Cromwel in his firſt diſcourſe, that he never looked

looked to see such a day, when Christ should be so owned *: They thought it therefore their duty to proceed to a thorough reformation, and to pave the way for the reign of the Redeemer, and for that great work, which, it was expected, the Lord was to bring forth among them. All fanatics, being consecrated by their own fond imaginations, naturally bear an antipathy to the clergy, who claim a peculiar sanctity, derived merely from their office and priestly character. This Parliament took into consideration the abolition of the clerical function, as savouring of popery; and the taking away tythes, which they called a relict of Judaism. Learning also and the universities they deemed heathenish and unnecessary: The common law they denominated a badge of the conquest and of Norman slavery; and threatened the lawyers with a total abrogation of their profession. Some steps were even taken towards an abolition of the chancery †, the highest court of judicature in the kingdom; and the Mosaical law was intended to be established as the sole system of English jurisprudence ‡. Chap. II. 1653.

Of all the extraordinary schemes, adopted by these legislators, they had not leizure to finish any, except that which established the legal solemnization of marriage by the civil magistrate alone, without the interposition of the clergy. They found themselves exposed to the derision of the public. Among the fanatics of the house, there was a very active member, much noted for long prayers, sermons, and harangues. He was a leather-seller in London: His name *Praise-god Barebone*. This ridiculous name, which seems to have been chosen by some poet or allegorist to suit so ridiculous a personage, struck the fancy of the peo-

* These are his expressions. "Indeed, I have but one word more to say to you, tho' in that perhaps I shall show my weakness: It is by way of encouragement to you in this work; give me leave to begin thus: I confess I never looked to have seen such a day as this, it may be nor you neither, when Jesus Christ should be so owned as he is at this day and in this work. Jesus Christ is owned this day by your call, and you own him by your willingness to appear for him, and you manifest this (as far as poor creatures can do) to be a day of the power of Christ. I know you well remember that scripture, *he makes his people willing in the day of his power*. God manifests it to be the day of the power of Christ, having thro' so much blood and so much trial as has been upon this nation, he makes this one of the greatest mercies, next to his own son, to have his people called to the supreme authority. God hath owned his son, and hath owned you, and hath made you to own him. I confess, I never looked to have seen such a day: I did not." I suppose at this passage he cried: For he was very much given to weeping, and could at any time shed abundance of tears. The rest of the speech may be seen among Milton's State Papers, page 106. It is very curious, and full of the same obscurity, confusion, embarrassment and absurdity, which appears in almost all Oliver's productions.

† Whitelocke, p. 543, 548.

‡ Conference held at Whitehall.

Chap. II. 1653.

ple; and they commonly affixed to this aſſembly the denomination of Barebone's Parliament *.

The Dutch ambaſſadors endeavoured to enter into negotiation with this Parliament; but tho' proteſtants and even preſbyterians, they met with a very bad reception from thoſe who pretended to a ſanctity ſo much ſuperior. The Hollanders were regarded as worldly minded men, intent only on commerce and induſtry; whom it was fitting the ſaints ſhould firſt eradicate, ere they undertook that great work, to which they believed themſelves deſtined by providence, of ſubduing Antichriſt, the man of ſin, and extending to the uttermoſt bounds of the earth the kingdom of the Redeemer †. The ambaſſadors, finding themſelves proſcribed, not as enemies of England, but of Chriſt, remained in aſtoniſhment, and knew not which was moſt to be admired, the implacable ſpirit or egregious folly of theſe pretended ſaints.

Cromwel began to be aſhamed of his legiſlature. If he ever had any other deſign in ſummoning ſo prepoſterous an aſſembly beyond amuſing the populace and the army; he had intended to alarm the clergy and lawyers; and he had ſo far ſucceeded as to make them deſire any other government, which might ſecure their profeſſions, now brought in danger by theſe deſperate fanatics. Cromwel himſelf was diſſatisfied, that the Parliament, tho' they had received all their authority from him, began to pretend power from the Lord ‡, and to inſiſt already on their divine commiſſion. He had carefully ſummoned in his writs ſeveral perſons entirely devoted

* It was uſual for the pretended ſaints at that time to change their names from Henry, Edward, Anthony, William, which they regarded as heatheniſh, into others more ſanctified and godly: Even the New Teſtament names, James, Andrew, John, Peter, were not held in ſuch regard as thoſe borrowed from the Old Teſtament, Hezekiah, Habbakuk, Joſhua, Zerobabel. Sometimes, a whole godly ſentence was adopted as a name. Here are the names of a jury ſaid to be encloſed in the county of Suſſex about that time.

Accepted, Trevor of Norſham.
Redeemed, Compton of Battle.
Faint not, Hewit of Heathfield.
Make peace, Heaton of Hare.
God Reward, Smart of Fivehurſt.
Stand faſt on high, Stringer of Cowhurſt.
Earth, Adams of Warbleton.
Called, Lower of the ſame.
Kill Sin, Pimple of Witham.
Return, Spelman of Watling.
Be Faithful, Joiner of Britling.
Fly Debate, Roberts of the ſame.
Fight the good Fight of Faith, White of Emer.
More Fruit, Fowler of Eaſt Hadley.
Hope for, Bending of the ſame.
Graceful, Harding of Lewes.
Weep not, Billing of the ſame.
Meek, Brewer of Okeham.

See Brome's Travels into England, p. 279. "Cromwel," ſays an anonymous author of thoſe times, "hath beat up his drums clean thro' the Old Teſtament. You may learn the genealogy of our Saviour by the names of his regiment. The muſter-maſter has no other liſt, than the firſt chapter of St. Matthew."

† Thurloe, vol. I. p. 273, 591. Alſo Stubbe, p. 91, 92.

‡ Thurloe, vol. I. p. 393.

voted to him. By concert, these met early; and it was mentioned by some among them, that the sitting of this Parliament any longer would be of no service to the nation. They hastened therefore, to Cromwel, along with Rouse, their speaker; and by a formal deed or assignment, resigned back into his hands that supreme authority, which they had so lately received from him. General Harrison and about twenty more remained in the house; and that they might prevent the reign of the saints from coming to an untimely end, they placed one Moyer in the chair, and began to draw up protests. They were soon interrupted by colonel White, with a party of soldiers. He asked them what they did there? "We are seeking the "Lord," said they. "Then you may go elsewhere," replied he: "For to "my certain knowledge, he has not been here these several years." Chap. II. 1653. 12th of December.

The military being now in appearance, as well as in reality, the sole power which prevailed in the nation, Cromwel thought fit to indulge a new fancy: For he seems not to have had any concerted plan in all these alterations. Lambert, his creature, who, under the appearance of obsequiousness to him, indulged a most unbounded ambition, proposed in a council of officers to adopt another scheme of government, and to temper the liberty of a Commonwealth by the authority of a single person, who should be known by the appellation of Protector. Without delay, he prepared what was called the Instrument of Government, containing the plan of this new legislature; and as it was supposed to be agreeable to the general, it was immediately voted by the council of officers. Cromwel was declared Protector; and with great solemnity installed in that high office. Cromwel made Protector.

So little were these men endowed with the spirit of legislation, that they confessed or rather boasted, that they had employed only four days in drawing this instrument, by which the whole government of the three kingdoms, was pretended to be regulated and adjusted, for all succeeding generations. There appears no difficulty in believing them; when it is considered how crude and undigested a system of civil polity they endeavoured to establish. The chief articles of the Instrument are these: A council was appointed, which was not to exceed twenty one, nor be less than thirteen persons. These were to enjoy their office during life or good behaviour; and in case of a vacancy, the remaining members named three, of whom the Protector chose one. The Protector was appointed the supreme magistrate of the Commonwealth: In his name was all justice administered; from him were all magistracy and all honours derived; he had the power of pardoning all crimes, excepting murder and treason; to him the benefit of all forfeitures devolved. The right of peace, war, and alliance, rested in him; but in these particulars he was to act entirely by the advice and with the consent of his council.

The

Chap. II. 1653.

The power of the ſword was veſted in the Protector, jointly with the Parliament, while it was ſitting, or with the council of ſtate in the intervals. He was obliged to ſummon a Parliament every three years, and allow them to ſit five months, without adjournment, prorogation, or diſſolution. The bills, which they enacted, were to be preſented to the Protector for his conſent; but if within twenty days, it was not obtained, they were to paſs into laws by the authority alone of the Parliament. A ſtanding army for Britain and Ireland was eſtabliſhed, of 20,000 foot and 10,000 horſe; and funds were aſſigned for their ſupport. Theſe were not to be diminiſhed without conſent of the Protector; and in this article alone he aſſumed a negative. During the intervals of Parliament, the Protector and council had the power of enacting laws, which were valid till the firſt meeting of Parliament. The chancellor, treaſurer, admiral, chief governors of Ireland and Scotland, and the chief juſtices of both the benches muſt be choſen with the approbation of Parliament; and in the intervals, with the approbation of the council, to be afterwards ratified by Parliament. The Protector enjoyed his office during life; and on his death, the place was immediately to be ſupplied by the council. This was the inſtrument of government enacted by the council of officers, and ſolemnly ſworn to by Oliver Cromwel. The council of ſtate named by the Inſtrument were fifteen; men entirely devoted to the Protector, and not likely, by reaſon of the oppoſition among themſelves in party and principles, ever to combine againſt him.

CROMWEL ſaid, that he accepted the dignity of Protector, merely that he might exert the duty of a conſtable, and preſerve peace in the nation. Affairs indeed were brought to that paſs, by the furious animoſities of the ſeveral factions, that the extenſive authority and even arbitrary power of ſome firſt magiſtrate was become a neceſſary evil, in order to keep the people from relapſing into blood and confuſion. The Independants were too ſmall a party ever to eſtabliſh a popular government, or entruſt the nation, where they had ſo little intereſt, with the free choice of its own repreſentatives. The Preſbyterians had adopted the violent maxims of perſecution; incompatible at all times with the peace of ſociety, much more with the wild zeal of thoſe numerous ſects, which prevailed among the people. The Royaliſts were ſo much enraged by the injuries, which they had ſuffered, that the other prevailing parties would never ſubmit to them, who, they knew, were enabled, merely by the execution of the antient laws, to take ſuch ſevere revenge upon them. Had Cromwel been guilty of no crime but this temporary uſurpation, the plea of neceſſity and public good, which he alleged, might be allowed, in every view, a very reaſonable excuſe for his conduct.

DURING the variety of ridiculous and diſtracted ſcenes, which the civil government preſented in England, the military force was exerted with the utmoſt vigor, conduct, and unanimity; and never did the kingdom appear more formidable to all foreign nations. The Engliſh fleet, conſiſting of an hundred ſail, and commanded by Monk and Dean, and under them by Pen and Lauſon, met, near the coaſt of Flanders, with the Dutch fleet, equally numerous, and commanded by Tromp. The two republics were not inflamed by any national antipathy, and their intereſts very little interfered: Yet few battles have been fought with more fierce and obſtinate courage than were thoſe many naval combats, which occurred during this ſhort, but violent war. The deſire of remaining ſole lords of the ocean animated theſe ſtates to an honourable emulation againſt each other. After a battle of two days, in the firſt of which Dean was killed, the Dutch, inferior in the ſize of their ſhips, were obliged, with great loſs, to retire into their harbours. Blake, towards the end of the fight, joined his countrymen with 18 ſail. The Engliſh fleet lay off the coaſt of Holland, and totally interrupted the commerce of that republic. 3d of June.

THE ambaſſadors, whom the Dutch had ſent into England, gave them hopes of peace. But as they could obtain no ceſſation of hoſtilities, the ſtates, unwilling to ſuffer any longer the loſs and diſgrace of being blockaded by their enemy, made the utmoſt efforts to recover their injured honour. Never on any occaſion did the power and vigor of that ſtate appear in a more conſpicuous light. In a few weeks, they had repaired and manned their fleet; and they equipped ſome ſhips of a larger ſize, than any which they had hitherto ſet to ſea. Tromp iſſued out, determined again to fight the victors, and to die rather than to yield the conteſt. He met with the enemy, commanded by Monk; and both ſides immediately ruſhed into the combat. Tromp gallantly animating his men, with his ſword drawn, was ſhot thro' the heart with a muſquet ball. This event alone decided the battle in favour of the Engliſh. Tho' near thirty ſhips of the Dutch were ſunk and taken, they little regarded this loſs compared with that of their brave admiral. 29th of July.

MEANWHILE the negotiations of peace were continually advancing. The ſtates, overwhelmed with the expences of the war, terrified by their loſſes, and mortified by their defeats, were infinitely deſirous of an accommodation with an enemy whom they found, by experience, to be too powerful for them. The King having ſhown a deſire to ſerve on board their fleet; tho' they expreſſed their ſenſe of the honour intended them, they declined an offer, which might enflame the quarrel with the Engliſh Commonwealth. The great obſtacle to the peace was found not to be any animoſity in the Engliſh: but on the contrary, a deſire too earneſt of union and confederacy. Cromwel had revived the chimerical ſcheme of a coalition

Chap. II. 1653. 1654. 15th April. Peace with Holland.

coalition with the United Provinces; a total conjunction of government, privileges, intereſts, and councils. This project appeared ſo wild to the States General, that they wondered any man of ſenſe could ever entertain it; and they refuſed to enter into conferences with regard to a propoſal, which could ſerve only to delay any practicable ſcheme of accommodation. The peace was at laſt ſigned by Cromwel, now inveſted with the dignity of Protector; and it proves ſufficiently, that the war had been very impolitic, ſince after the moſt ſignal victories, no terms more advantageous could be obtained. A defenſive league was made between the two republics. They agreed, each of them, to baniſh the enemies of the other; thoſe concerned in the maſſacre of Amboyna were to be puniſhed, if any remained alive; the honour of the flag was yielded to the Engliſh; eighty five thouſand pounds were ſtipulated to be paid by the Dutch Eaſt India company for loſſes, which the Engliſh company had ſuſtained; and the iſland of Polerone in the Eaſt Indies was promiſed to be yielded to the latter.

CROMWEL, jealous of the connexions between the royal family and that of Orange, inſiſted on a ſeparate article; that neither the young Prince nor any of his family ſhould ever be inveſted with the dignity of Stadholder. The province of Holland, ſtrongly prejudiced againſt that office, which they eſteemed dangerous to liberty, ſecretly ratified this article. The Protector, knowing that the other provinces would never be induced to make ſuch a conceſſion, was ſatisfied with that ſecurity.

THE Dutch war, being ſucceſsful, and the peace reaſonable, brought credit to Cromwel's adminiſtration. An act of juſtice, which he exerciſed at home, gave likewiſe ſatisfaction to the people; tho' the regularity of it may perhaps appear ſomewhat doubtful. Don Pantaleon Sa, brother to the Portugueſe ambaſſador, and joined with him in the ſame commiſſion *, fancying himſelf inſulted in London, came into the Exchange, armed and attended with ſeveral ſervants. By miſtake, he fell upon a gentleman, whom he took for the perſon that had given him the offence, and having butchered him with many wounds, he and all his accomplices took ſhelter in the houſe of the Portugueſe ambaſſador, who had connived at this baſe enterprize †. The populace ſurrounded the houſe, and threatened to ſet it on fire. Cromwel ſent a guard, who ſeized all the criminals. They were brought to trial: And notwithſtanding the oppoſition of the ambaſſador, who pleaded the privilege of his office, Don Pantaleon was executed on Tower-hill. The laws of nations were here plainly violated: But the crime committed by the Portugueſe gentleman was to the laſt degree atrocious; and the vigorous chaſtiſement of it, ſuiting ſo well the undaunted character of Cromwel, was univerſally approved at home and admired

* Thurloe, Vol. II. p. 429. † Id. Vol. I. p. 616.

among

among foreign nations. The ſituation of Portugal obliged that court to acquieſce; and the ambaſſador ſoon after ſigned with the Protector a treaty of peace and alliance, which was very advantageous to the Engliſh commerce. Chap. II. 1654.

ANOTHER act of ſeverity, but neceſſary in his ſituation, was, at the very ſame time, exerciſed by the Protector, in the capital puniſhment of Gerard and Vowel, two Royaliſts, who were accuſed of conſpiring againſt his life. He had erected a high court of juſtice for their trial; an infringement of the antient laws, which at this time was become familiar, but one to which no cuſtom or precedent could reconcile the nation. Juries were found altogether unmanageable. The reſtleſs Lilburn, for new offences, had been brought to a new trial; and had been acquitted with new triumph and exultation. If no other method of conviction had been deviſed during this illegal and unpopular government, all its enemies were aſſured of entire impunity.

THE Protector had occaſion to obſerve the prejudices, entertained againſt his government, by the diſpoſition of the Parliament, which he ſummoned on the third of September, that day of the year, on which he gained his two great victories of Dunbar and Worceſter, and which he always regarded as fortunate for him. It muſt be confeſſed, that, if we are left to gather Cromwel's intentions from his inſtrument of government, it is ſuch a motley piece, that we cannot eaſily conjecture, whether he ſeriouſly meant to eſtabliſh a tyranny or a republic. On the one hand, a firſt magiſtrate, in ſo extenſive a government, ſeemed requiſite both for the dignity and tranquillity of the ſtate; and the authority, which he aſſumed as Protector, was, in ſome reſpects, inferior to the prerogatives, which the laws entruſted and ſtill entruſt to the King. On the other hand, the legiſlative power, which he reſerved to himſelf and council, together with ſo great an army, independant of the parliament, were bad prognoſtics of his intention to ſubmit to a civil and legal conſtitution. But if this was not his intention, the method, in which he diſtributed and conducted the elections, being ſo favourable to liberty, form an inconſiſtency which is not eaſily accounted for. He deprived of their right of election all the ſmall burroughs, places much expoſed to influence and corruption. Of 400 members, which repreſented England, 270 were choſen by the counties. The reſt were elected by London and the more conſiderable corporations. The lower populace too, ſo eaſily guided or deceived, were excluded from the elections: An eſtate of 200 pounds value was requiſite to entitle any one to a vote. The elections of this Parliament were conducted with perfect freedom; and, excepting that ſuch of the Royaliſts as had borne arms againſt the Parliament and all their ſons were excluded, a more fair repreſentation of the people could not be deſired nor expected. Thirty members were returned from Scotland; as many from Ireland. 3d September. A new Parliament.

Chap. II. 1654.

THE Protector ſeems to have been diſappointed, when he found, that all theſe precautions, which were probably nothing but covers to his ambition, had not procured him the confidence of the public. Tho' Cromwel's adminiſtration was leſs odious to every party than that of any other party, yet was it entirely acceptable to none of them. The Royaliſts had been inſtructed by the King to remain quiet, and to cover themſelves under the appearance of Republicans; and they found in this latter faction ſuch inveterate hatred againſt the Protector, that they could not wiſh for more zealous adverſaries to his authority. It was maintained by them, that the pretence of liberty and popular election was but a new artifice of this grand deceiver, in order to lay aſleep the deluded nation, and give himſelf leizure to rivet their chains more ſecurely upon them: That in the inſtrument of government he openly declared his intention of ſtill retaining the ſame mercenary army, by whoſe aſſiſtance he had ſubdued the antient, eſtabliſhed government, and who would with leſs ſcruple obey him, in overturning, whenever he ſhould pleaſe to order them, that new ſyſtem, which he himſelf had been pleaſed to model: That being ſenſible of the danger and uncertainty of all military government, he endeavoured to intermix ſome appearance, and but an appearance, of civil adminiſtration, and to ballance the army by a ſeeming conſent of the people: That the abſurd trial, which he had made of a Parliament, elected by himſelf, appointed perpetually to elect their ſucceſſors, plainly proved, that he aimed at nothing but temporary expedients, was totally averſe to a free republican government, and poſſeſſed not that mature and deliberate reflection, which could qualify him to act the part of a legiſlator: That his imperious character, which had betrayed itſelf in ſo many incidents, would never ſeriouſly ſubmit to legal limitations; nor would the very image of popular government be longer upheld than while it was conformable to his arbitrary will and pleaſure: And that the beſt policy was to oblige him to take off the maſk at once; and either ſubmit entirely to that Parliament which he had ſummoned, or by totally rejecting its authority, leaving himſelf no reſource but his ſeditious and enthuſiaſtic army.

IN proſecution of theſe views, the Parliament, having heard the Protector's ſpeech three hours long *, and having choſen Lenthal for their ſpeaker, immediately entered into a diſcuſſion of the pretended inſtrument of government, and of that authority, which Cromwel, under the title of Protector, had aſſumed over the nation. The greateſt liberty was uſed in arraigning this new dignity; and even the perſonal character and conduct of Cromwel eſcaped not altogether without cenſure. The utmoſt, which could be obtained by the officers and by the court party, for ſo they were called, was, to protract the debate, by arguments and long ſpeeches, and

* Thurloe, vol. ii. p. 588.

prevent

prevent the deciſion of a queſtion, which, they were ſenſible, would be carried againſt them by a great majority. The Protector, ſurpriſed and enraged at this refractory ſpirit in the Parliament, which however he had ſo much reaſon to expect, ſent for them to the Painted Chamber, and with an air of great authority inveighed againſt their conduct. He told them, that nothing could be more abſurd than for them to diſpute his title; ſince the ſame inſtrument of government, which made them a Parliament, had inveſted him with the Protectorſhip; that ſome points in the new conſtitution were ſuppoſed to be fundamentals, and were not, on any pretence, to be altered or diſputed; that among theſe were the government of the nation by one perſon and a Parliament, their joint authority over the army and militia, the ſucceſſion of new Parliaments, and liberty of conſcience; and that, with regard to theſe particulars, there was reſerved to him a negative voice, to which, in the other circumſtances of government, he confeſſed himſelf nowiſe intitled. Chap. II. 1654.

The Protector now found himſelf neceſſitated to exact a ſecurity, which, had he foreſeen the ſpirit of the houſe, he would with much better grace have required at their firſt meeting *. He obliged the members to ſign a recognition of his authority, and an engagement not to propoſe or conſent to any alteration of the government, as it was ſettled in one ſingle perſon and a Parliament; and he placed guards at the door of the houſe, who allowed none but ſubſcribers to enter. Moſt of the members, after ſome heſitation, ſubmitted to this condition; but retained the ſame refractory ſpirit, which they had diſcovered in their firſt debates. The inſtrument of government was taken in pieces, and examined, one article after another, with the moſt ſcrupulous accuracy: Very free topics were advanced with the general approbation of the houſe: And during the whole courſe of their tranſactions, they neither ſent up one law to the Protector, nor took any notice of him. Being informed, that conſpiracies were entered into between the members and ſome malecontent officers of the army; he haſtened to a diſſolution of ſo dangerous an aſſembly. By the inſtrument of government, to which he had ſworn, no Parliament could be diſſolved, till it had ſate five months; but Cromwel pretended, that a month contained only twenty-eight days, according to the method of computation practiſed in paying the fleet and army. The full time, therefore, according to this reckoning, being elapſed; the Parliament was ordered to attend the Protector, where he made them a tedious, confuſed, angry harangue, and diſmiſſed them. Were we to judge of Cromwel's capacity by this, and indeed by all his other compoſitions, we ſhould be apt to entertain no very favourable idea of it. But in the great variety of human geniuſes, there are ſome, 1655. 22d of January.

* Thurloe, vol. ii. p. 620.

Chap. II. 1655.

which, tho' they ſee their object clearly and diſtinctly in general; yet, when they come to unfold its parts by diſcourſe or writing, loſe that luminous conception, which they had before attained. All accounts agree in aſcribing to Cromwel a tireſome, dark, unintelligible elocution, even when he had no intention to diſguiſe his meaning: Yet no man's actions were ever, in ſuch a variety of difficult incidents, more deciſive and judicious.

THE electing a diſcontented Parliament is a ſure proof of a diſcontented nation: The angry and abrupt diſſolution of that Parliament is ſure always to encreaſe the general diſcontent. The members of this aſſembly, returning to their counties, propagated that ſpirit of mutiny, which they had exerted in the houſe. Sir Harry Vane and the old Republicans, who maintained the indiſſoluble authority of the long Parliament, encouraged the murmurs againſt the preſent uſurpation; tho' they acted ſo cautiouſly as to give the Protector no handle againſt them. Wildman and ſome others of that party carried ſtill farther their conſpiracies againſt the Protector's authority. The Royaliſts, obſerving this general ill will towards the eſtabliſhment, could no longer be retained in ſubjection; but fancied, that every one, who was diſſatisfied like them, had alſo embraced the ſame views and inclinations. They did not conſider, that all the old parliamentary party, tho' many of them were diſpleaſed with Cromwel, who had diſpoſſeſſed them of their power, were ſtill more apprehenſive of any ſucceſs to the royal cauſe; whence, beſides a certain proſpect of the ſame inconvenience, they had ſo much reaſon to dread the ſevereſt vengeance for their paſt tranſgreſſions.

Inſurrection of the Royaliſts.

IN concert with the King a conſpiracy was entered into by the Royaliſts throughout England, and a day of general riſing appointed. Information of this deſign was conveyed to Cromwel. The Protector's adminiſtration was extremely vigilant. Thurloe, his ſecretary, had ſpies every where. Manning, who had acceſs to the King's family, kept a regular correſpondence with him. And it was not difficult to obtain intelligence of a confederacy, ſo generally diffuſed among a party, who valued themſelves more on zeal and courage, than on ſecrecy and ſobriety. Many of the Royaliſts were thrown into priſon. Others, on the approach of the day, were terrified with the danger of the undertaking, and remained at home. In one place alone the conſpiracy broke out into action. Penruddoc, Groves, Jones, and other gentlemen of the weſt, entered Saliſbury with about 200 horſe; at the very time when the ſheriff and judges were holding the aſſizes. Theſe they made priſoners; and they proclaimed the king. Contrary to their expectations, they received no acceſſion of force; ſo prevalent was the terror of the eſtabliſhed government. Having in vain wandered about for ſome time, they were totally diſcouraged; and one troop of horſe was able at laſt to ſuppreſs them. The leaders of the conſpiracy,

11th of March.

being taken priſoners, were capitally puniſhed. The reſt were ſold for ſlaves, and tranſported to Barbadoes. Chap. II. 1655.

The eaſy ſubduing this inſurrection, which, by the boldneſs of the undertaking, ſtruck at firſt an infinite terror into the nation, was a ſingular felicity to the Protector, who could not, without danger, have brought together any conſiderable body of his mutinous army, in order to ſuppreſs it. The very inſurrection itſelf he regarded as a fortunate event; ſince it proved the reality of thoſe conſpiracies, which his enemies, on every occaſion, repreſented as mere fictions, invented to colour his jealous ſeverities. He reſolved to keep no longer any terms with the Royaliſts, who, tho' they were not perhaps the moſt implacable of his enemies, were thoſe whom he could oppreſs under the moſt plauſible pretences, and who met with leaſt countenance and protection from his adherents. He iſſued an edict, with the conſent of his council, for exacting the tenth penny from that whole party; in order, as he pretended, to make them pay the expences, to which their mutinous diſpoſition continually expoſed the public. Without regard to compoſitions, articles of capitulation, or acts of indemnity, all the Royaliſts, however haraſſed with former expences and oppreſſions, were obliged anew to redeem themſelves by great ſums of money; and many of them were reduced by theſe multiplied diſaſters to extreme poverty. Whoever was known to be diſaffected, or even lay under any ſuſpicion, tho' no guilt could be proved againſt him, was expoſed to this exaction.

In order to raiſe an impoſition, ſo oppreſſive and iniquitous, the Protector inſtituted ten * major-generals; and divided the whole kingdom of England into ſo many military juriſdictions. Theſe men, aſſiſted by commiſſioners, had power to ſubject whom they pleaſed to decimation, to levy all the taxes impoſed by the Protector and his council, and to impriſon any perſon who ſhould be expoſed to their jealouſy or ſuſpicion; nor was there any appeal from them but to the Protector himſelf and his council. Under colour of theſe powers, which were ſufficiently exorbitant, the major-generals exerciſed an authority ſtill more arbitrary, and acted as if abſolute maſters of the property and perſon of every ſubject. All reaſonable men now concluded, that the very maſk of liberty was thrown aſide, and that the nation was for ever ſubjected to military and deſpotic government, exerciſed not in the legal manner of European nations, but according to the maxims of eaſtern tyranny. Not only the ſupreme magiſtrate owed his authority to illegal force and uſurpation: He had parcelled out the people into ſo many ſubdiviſions

* Thurloe, vol. iv. p. 88. Moſt hiſtorians ſay, that the major-generals were eleven: Dugdale and Bates fourteen.

of

Chap. II. 1655.

of ſlavery, and had delegated to his inferior miniſters the ſame unlimited authority, which he himſelf had ſo violently aſſumed.

A GOVERNMENT, totally military and deſpotic, is ſure, after ſome time, to fall into impotence and languor: But when it immediately ſucceeds a legal conſtitution, it may, at firſt, to foreign nations appear very vigorous and active, and exert with more unanimity that power, ſpirit, and riches, which had been acquired under a better form of government. It ſeems now proper, after ſo long an interval, to look abroad to the general ſtate of Europe, and to conſider the meaſures, which England, at this time, embraced in its negotiations with the neighbouring princes. The moderate temper and unwarlike genius of the two laſt princes, the extreme difficulties under which they laboured at home, and the great ſecurity which they enjoyed from foreign enemies, had rendered them very negligent of the tranſactions of the continent; and England, during their reigns, had been in a manner overlooked in the general ſyſtem of Europe. The bold and reſtleſs genius of the Protector led him to extend his alliances and enterprizes to every corner of Chriſtendom; and partly from the aſcendant of his magnanimous ſpirit, partly from the ſituation of foreign kingdoms, the weight of England, even under its moſt legal and braveſt princes, was never more ſenſibly felt than during this unjuſt and violent uſurpation.

State of Europe.

A WAR of thirty years, the moſt ſignal and moſt deſtructive which had appeared in modern annals, was at laſt finiſhed in Germany *; and by the treaty of Weſtphalia, were compoſed thoſe fatal quarrels, which had been excited by the Palatine's precipitant acceptance of the crown of Bohemia. The young Palatine was reſtored to a part of his dignities and of his dominions: The rights, privileges, and authority of the ſeveral members of the Germanic body were fixed and aſcertained: Sovereign Princes and free States were in ſome degree reduced to obedience under laws: And by the valour of the heroic Guſtavus, the enterprizes of the active Richelieu, the intrigues of the artful Mazarine, was in part effectuated, after an infinite expence of blood and treaſure, what had been expected and demanded from the feeble efforts of the pacific James, ſeconded by the ſcanty ſupplies of his jealous Parliaments.

SWEDEN, which had acquired by conqueſt very large dominions in the north of Germany, was engaged in enterprizes, which promiſed her, from her ſucceſs and valour, ſtill more extenſive acquiſitions on the ſide both of Poland and of Denmark. Charles the tenth, who had mounted the throne of that Kingdom after the voluntary reſignation of Chriſtina, being ſtimulated by the fame of the great Guſtavus as well as by his own martial diſpoſition, carried his conquering arms to the ſouth of

* In 1648.

the Baltic, and gained the celebrated victory of Warſaw, which had been obſti- Chap. II.
nately conteſted during the ſpace of three days. The Protector, at the time his 1655.
alliance was courted by every power in Europe, anxiouſly courted the alliance of Sweden; and he was fond of forming a confederacy with a proteſtant power of ſuch renown, even though it threatened the whole north with conqueſt and ſubjection.

The tranſactions of the Parliament and Protector with France had been various and complicated. The emiſſaries of Richelieu had furniſhed fuel to the flame of rebellion, when it firſt broke out in Scotland; but after the conflagration had diffuſed itſelf, the French court, obſerving the materials to be of themſelves ſufficiently combuſtible, found it unneceſſary any longer to animate the Britiſh malecontents to an oppoſition of their ſovereign. On the contrary, they offered their mediation for compoſing theſe inteſtine diſorders; and their ambaſſadors, from decency, pretended to act in concert with the court of England, and to receive directions from a prince, with whom their maſter was connected by ſo near an affinity. Mean while, Richelieu died, and ſoon after him, the French King, Louis the thirteenth; leaving his ſon an infant four years old, and his widow, Anne of Auſtria, regent of the kingdom. Cardinal Mazarine ſucceeded Richelieu in the miniſtry; and the ſame general plan of adminiſtration, tho' by men of ſuch oppoſite characters, was ſtill continued in the French councils. The eſtabliſhment of royal authority, the reduction of the Auſtrian family, were purſued with ardor and ſucceſs; and every year brought an acceſſion of force and grandeur to the French monarchy. Not only battles were gained, towns and fortreſſes taken; the genius too of the nation ſeemed gradually to improve, and to compoſe itſelf to the ſpirit of dutiful obedience and of ſteddy enterprize. A Condé, a Turenne were formed; and the troops animated by their valour, and guided by their diſcipline, acquired every day a greater aſcendant over the Spaniards. All of a ſudden, from ſome intrigues of the court, and ſome diſcontents in the courts of judicature, inteſtine commotions were excited, and every thing relapſed into confuſion. But theſe rebellions of the French, neither ennobled by the ſpirit of liberty, nor diſgraced by the fanatical extravagancies, which diſtinguiſhed the Britiſh civil wars, were conducted with little bloodſhed, and made but ſmall impreſſion on the minds of the people. Tho' ſeconded by the force of Spain, and conducted by the heroic Condé, the malecontents, in a little time, were either expelled or ſubdued; and the French monarchy, having loſt a few of its conqueſts, returned again, with freſh vigor, to the acquiſition of new dominion.

The

Chap. II. 1655.

THE Queen of England and her ſon, Charles, during theſe commotions, paſſed moſt of their time at Paris; and notwithſtanding their near connexion of blood, received but few civilities, and ſtill leſs ſupport, from the French court. Had the Queen regent been ever ſo much inclined to aſſiſt the Engliſh Prince, the diſorders of her own affairs, for a long time, would have rendered ſuch intentions abſolutely impracticable. The baniſhed Queen had a moderate penſion aſſigned her; but it was ſo ill paid, and her credit ran ſo low, that, one morning, when the Cardinal de Retz waited on her, ſhe informed him, that her daughter, the Princeſs Henrietta, was obliged to lie abed, for want of a fire to warm her. To ſuch a condition was reduced, in the midſt of Paris, a Queen of England, and daughter of Henry the fourth of France!

THE Engliſh Parliament, however, having aſſumed the ſovereignty of the State, reſented the countenance, cold as it was, which the French court gave to the unfortunate Monarch. On pretence of injuries, of which the Engliſh merchants complained, they iſſued letters of reprizal upon the French; and Blake went ſo far as to attack and ſeize a whole ſquadron of ſhips, which were carrying ſupplies to Dunkirk, then cloſely beſieged by the Spaniards. That town, diſappointed of theſe ſupplies, fell into the enemies hands. The court of France ſoon found it requiſite to change their meaſures. They treated Charles with ſuch affected indifference, that he thought it more decent to withdraw, and to ſave himſelf the ſhame of being deſired to leave the kingdom. He went firſt to Spaw, thence he retired to Cologne; where he lived two years, on a ſmall penſion, about 6000 pounds a year, paid him by the French Monarch, and on ſome contributions ſent him by his friends in England. In the management of his family, he diſcovered a diſpoſition to order and oeconomy; and his temper, cheerful, careleſs, and ſociable, was more than a ſufficient compenſation for that empire, of which his enemies had bereaved him. Sir Edward Hyde, created lord chancellor, and the Marqueſs of Ormond, were his chief friends and confidents.

IF the French miniſtry had thought it prudent to bend under the Engliſh Parliament, they deemed it ſtill more neceſſary to pay deference to the Protector, when he aſſumed the reins of government. Cardinal Mazarine, by whom all the French councils were directed, was artful and vigilant, ſupple and patient, falſe and intriguing; deſirous rather to prevail by dexterity than violence, and placing his honour more in the final ſucceſs of his meaſures than in the ſplendor and magnanimity of the means which he employed. Cromwel, by his imperious character, rather than by the advantage of his ſituation, acquired an aſcendant over this man; and each propoſal made by the Protector, however unreaſonable

in

in itſelf and urged with whatever inſolence, met with a ready compliance from the politic and timid cardinal. Bourdeaux was ſent over to England as miniſter; and every circumſtance of reſpect was paid to the daring uſurper, who had embrued his hands in the blood of his ſovereign, a prince ſo nearly related to the crown of France. With indefatigable patience did Bourdeaux conduct this negotiation, which Cromwel ſeemed entirely to neglect; and tho' privateers with Engliſh commiſſions, committed daily ravages on the French commerce, Mazarine was contented, in hopes of a fortunate iſſue, ſtill to ſubmit to theſe indignities *. Chap. II. 1655.

THE court of Spain, leſs connected with the unfortunate royal family, and reduced to greater diſtreſs than the French monarchy, had been ſtill more forward in their advances to the proſperous Parliament and Protector. Don Alonzo de Cardenas, the Spaniſh envoy, was the firſt public miniſter, who recognized the authority of the new Republic; and in return of this civility, Aſcham was ſent envoy into Spain by the Parliament. No ſooner had this miniſter arrived in Madrid, than ſome of the baniſhed Royaliſts, inflamed by that inveterate hatred, which animated the Engliſh factions, broke into his chamber, and murdered him together with his ſecretary. Immediately, they took ſanctuary in the churches; and aſſiſted by the general favour, which every where attended the royal cauſe, were enabled, moſt of them, to make their eſcape. Only one of the criminals ſuffered death; and the parliament ſeemed to reſt contented with this atonement.

SPAIN, at this time, aſſailed every where by vigorous enemies from without, and labouring under many internal diſorders, retained nothing of her former grandeur, except the haughty pride of her councils, and the hatred and jealouſy of all her neighbours. Portugal had revolted, and eſtabliſhed its monarchy in the houſe of Braganza: Catalonia, complaining of violated privileges, had delivered itſelf over to France: Naples was ſhook with popular convulſions: The Low Countries were invaded with ſuperior forces, and ſeemed ready to change their maſter: The Spaniſh infantry, antiently ſo formidable, had been annihilated by Condé in the fields of Rocroy: And tho' the ſame Prince, baniſhed France, ſuſtained, by his activity and valour, the falling fortunes of Spain, he could only hope to protract, not prevent, the ruin, with which that monarchy was viſibly threatned.

* Thurloe, Vol. iii. p. 103, 619, 653. In the treaty, which was ſigned after long negotiation, the Protector's name was inſerted before the King's in that copy which remained in England. Thurloe, Vol. vi. p. 116. See farther, Vol. vii. p. 178.

Chap. II. 1655.

HAD Cromwel underſtood and regarded the intereſts of his country, he would have ſupported the declining condition of Spain againſt the dangerous ambition of France, and preſerved that ballance of power, on which the greatneſs and ſecurity of England ſo much depends. Had he ſtudied only his own intereſts, he would have maintained an exact neutrality between thoſe two great monarchies; nor would he ever have hazarded his ill acquired and unſettled power, by provoking foreign enemies, who might lend aſſiſtance to domeſtic faction, and overturn his tottering throne. But his magnanimity undervalued danger: His active diſpoſition and avidity of extenſive glory, made him incapable of repoſe: And as the policy of men is continually warped by their temper, no ſooner was peace made with Holland, than he began to deliberate what new enemy he ſhould invade with his victorious arms.

War with Spain.

THE extenſive dominion and yet extreme weakneſs of Spain in the Weſt Indies; the vigorous courage and great naval power of England; were circumſtances which, when compared, excited the ambition of the enterprizing Protector, and made him hope, that he might, by ſome gainful conqueſt, render for ever illuſtrious that dominion, which he had aſſumed over his country. Should he fail of theſe durable acquiſitions, the Indian treaſures, which muſt every year croſs the ocean to reach Spain, were, he thought, a ſure prey to the Engliſh navy, and would ſupport his military force, without laying new burthens on the diſcontented people. From France a vigorous reſiſtance muſt be expected: No plunder, no conqueſt could be hoped for. The progreſs of his arms, even if attended with ſucceſs, muſt there be ſlow and gradual; and the advantages acquired, however real, would be leſs ſtriking to the ignorant multitude, whom it was his intereſt to allure. The royal family, ſo cloſely connected with the French Monarch, might receive great aſſiſtance from that neighbouring kingdom; and an army of French Proteſtants, landed in England, would be able, he dreaded, to unite the moſt oppoſite factions againſt the preſent uſurpation *.

THESE motives of policy were probably ſeconded by his bigotted prejudices; as no human mind ever contained ſo ſtrange a mixture of ſagacity and abſurdity as that of this extraordinary perſonage. The Swediſh alliance, though much contrary to the intereſts of England, he had contracted merely from his zeal for Proteſtantiſm †; and Sweden being cloſely connected with France, he could

* See the account of the negociations with France and Spain by Thurloe, Vol. i. p. 759.

† He propoſed to Sweden a general league and confederacy of all the Proteſtants. Whitlocke, p. 620. Thurloe, Vol. vii. p. 1. In order to judge of the maxims, by which he conducted his foreign politics, ſee farther Thurloe, Vol. iv. p. 295, 343, 443. Vol. vii. p. 174.

not

not hope to maintain that confederacy, in which he ſo much prided himſelf, ſhould a rupture enſue between England and this latter kingdom *. The Hugonots, he expected, would meet with better treatment, while he engaged in a cloſe union with their ſovereign †. And as the Spaniards were much more Papiſts than the French, were much more expoſed to the old puritanical hatred ‡, and had even erected the bloody tribunal of the inquiſition, whoſe rigors they had refuſed to mitigate, on Cromwel's ſollicitation §; he hoped that a holy and meritorious war with ſuch idolaters could not fail of protection from heaven ‖. A preacher likewiſe, inſpired, as was ſuppoſed, by a prophetic ſpirit, bid him *go and proſper*; calling him *a ſtone cut out of the mountains without hands, that ſhould break the pride of the Spaniard, cruſh Antichriſt, and make way for the purity of the Goſpel over the whole world* †.

ACTUATED equally by thoſe bigotted, thoſe ambitious, and thoſe intereſted motives, the Protector equipped two conſiderable ſquadrons; and while he was making theſe preparations, all the neighbouring nations, ignorant of his intentions, remained in ſuſpence, and looked with anxious expectation on what ſide the ſtorm would diſcharge itſelf. One of the ſquadrons, conſiſting of thirty capital ſhips, was ſent into the Mediterranean under Blake, whoſe fame was now ſpread over all Europe. No Engliſh fleet, except during the Croiſades, had ever before ſailed thoſe ſeas; and from one extremity to the other, there was no naval force, Chriſtian or Mahometan, able to reſiſt them. The Roman pontiff, whoſe weakneſs and whoſe pride, equally provoke attacks, dreaded invaſion from a power, which profeſſed the moſt inveterate enmity againſt him, and which ſo little regulated its movements by the common motives of intereſt and prudence. Blake, caſting anchor before Leghorn, demanded and obtained of the Duke of Tuſcany ſatisfaction for ſome loſſes, which the Engliſh commerce had formerly ſuſtained from him. He next ſailed to Algiers, and compelled the Dey to make peace, and to reſtrain his pyratical ſubjects from all farther violences on the Engliſh. He preſented himſelf before Tunis, and having made the ſame demands, the Dey of that republic bade him look to the caſtles of Porto-Farino and Goletta, and do his utmoſt. Blake needed not to be rouzed by ſuch a bravado: He drew his ſhips cloſe up to the caſtles, and tore them in pieces with his artillery. He ſent a numerous detachment of ſeamen in their long boats into the harbour, and burned every ſhip which lay there. This bold action, which its very temerity,

* Thurloe, Vol. i. p. 759. † Id. Ibid. ‡ Id. Ibid.

§ Id. Ibid. Don Alonzo ſaid, that the Indian trade and the inquiſition were his maſter's two eyes, and the Protector inſiſted upon the putting out both of them at once.

‖ Carington, p. 191. † Bates.

Chap. II. 1655.

perhaps, rendered ſafe, was executed with very little loſs, and filled all that part of the world with the renown of Engliſh valour.

Jamaica conquered.

THE other ſquadron was not equally ſucceſsful. It was commanded by Pen, and carried on board 4000 men, under the command of Venables. About 5000 more joined them from Barbadoes and St. Chriſtophers. Both theſe officers were inclined to the King's ſervice *; and it is pretended, that Cromwel was obliged to hurry the ſoldiers on board, in order to prevent the execution of a conſpiracy, which had been formed among them, in favour of the exiled family †. The ill ſucceſs of this enterprize, may juſtly be aſcribed, as much to the injudicious contrivance of the Protector, who planned it, as to the bad execution of the officers, by whom it was conducted. The ſoldiers were the refuſe of the whole army: The forces inliſted in the Weſt-Indies were the moſt profligate of mankind: Pen and Venables were of very incompatible tempers: The troops were not furniſhed with arms fit for ſuch an expedition: Their proviſions were very defective both in quantity and quality: All hopes of pillage, the beſt incentive to valour among ſuch men, were refuſed the ſoldiers and ſeamen: No directions nor intelligence were given to conduct the officers in their enterprize: And at the ſame time, they were tied down to follow the advice of commiſſioners, who extremely diſconcerted them in all their projects ‡.

13th of April.

IT was agreed by the admiral and general to attempt St. Domingo, the only place of ſtrength in the iſland of Hiſpaniola. On the approach of the Engliſh, the Spaniards in a fright deſerted their houſes and fled into the woods. Contrary to the opinion of Venables, the ſoldiers were diſembarked without guides ten leagues diſtant from the town. They wandered four days thro' the woods without proviſions, and what was ſtill more intolerable in that ſultry climate, without water. The Spaniards gathered courage, and attacked them. The Engliſh, diſcouraged with the bad conduct of their officers, and ſcarce alive from hunger, thirſt, and fatigue, had no ſpirit to reſiſt. A very inconſiderable number of the enemy put the whole army to rout, killed 600 of them, and chaced the reſt on board their veſſels.

THE Engliſh commanders, in order to atone, if poſſible, for this unproſperous attempt, bent their courſe to Jamaica, which was ſurrendered to them without a blow. Pen and Venables returned to England, and were both of them ſent to the Tower by the Protector, who, tho' commonly maſter of his fiery temper, was thrown into a violent paſſion at this diſappointment. He had made a con-

* Clarendon. † Vita D. Berwici, p. 124.

‡ Burchet's Naval Hiſtory. See alſo Carte's Collection, Vol. ii. p. 46, 47. Thurloe, Vol. iii. p. 505.

queſt of much greater importance, than he was himſelf at that time aware of; yet was it much inferior to the vaſt projects which he had formed. He gave orders, however, to ſupport it by men and money; and that iſland has ever ſince remained in the hands of the Engliſh; the chief acquiſition which they owe to the enterprizing ſpirit of Cromwel. Chap. II. 1655.

As ſoon as the news of this enterprize, which was a moſt unwarrantable violation of treaty, arrived in Europe, the Spaniards declared war againſt England, and ſeized all the ſhips and goods of Engliſh merchants, of which they could make themſelves maſters. The Spaniſh commerce, ſo profitable to the nation, was cut off; and near 1500 veſſels, it is computed *, fell in a few years into the hands of the enemy. Blake, to whom Montague was now joined in command, after receiving new orders, prepared himſelf for hoſtilities againſt the Spaniards. 1656.

Several ſea officers, having entertained ſcruples of conſcience with regard to the juſtice of the Spaniſh war, threw up their commiſſions, and retired home †. No command, they thought, of their ſuperiors could juſtify a war, which was contrary to the principles of natural equity, and which the civil magiſtrate had no right to order. Individuals, they maintained, in reſigning to the public their natural liberty, could beſtow on it only what they themſelves were poſſeſſed of, a right of performing lawful actions, and could inveſt it with no authority of commanding what is contrary to the decrees of heaven. Such maxims, tho' they ſeem reaſonable, are perhaps too perfect for human nature, and muſt be regarded as one effect, tho' of the moſt innocent and even honourable kind, of that ſpirit, partly fanatical, partly republican, which predominated in England.

Blake lay ſome time off Cadiz, in expectation of intercepting the Plate fleet, but was at laſt obliged, for want of water, to make ſail towards Portugal. Captain Stayner, whom he had left on the coaſt with a ſquadron of ſeven veſſels, came in ſight of the galleons, and immediately ſet ſail to purſue them. The Spaniſh admiral ran his ſhip aſhore: Two others followed his example: The Engliſh took two ſhips valued at near two millions of pieces of eight. Two galleons were ſet on fire; and the marqueſs of Bajadox, Viceroy of Peru, with his wife and his daughter, betrothed to the young duke of Medina-Celi, were deſtroyed in them. The Marqueſs himſelf might have eſcaped; but ſeeing theſe Succeſs. September.

* Thurloe, Vol. iv. p. 135. World's Miſtake in Oliver Cromwel, in the Harl. Miſcel. Vol. i.

† Thurloe, Vol. iv. p. 570, 589.

unfor-

Chap. II. 1656.

unfortunate women, aſtoniſhed with the danger, fall in a ſwoon and periſh in the flames, he choſe rather to die with them than drag out a life, embittered with the remembrance of theſe diſmal ſcenes *. When the treaſures, gained by this enterprize, arrived at Portſmouth, the Protector, from a ſpirit of oſtentation, ordered them to be tranſported by land to London.

THE next action againſt the Spaniards was more glorious, tho' leſs profitable to the nation. Blake, having heard that a Spaniſh fleet of ſixteen ſhips, much richer than the former, had taken ſhelter in the Canaries, immediately made ſail towards them. He found them in the bay of Santa Cruz, diſpoſed in a moſt formidable poſture. The bay was ſecured with a ſtrong caſtle, well fortified with cannon, beſides ſeven forts in ſeveral parts of it, all united by a line of communication, manned with muſqueteers. Don Diego Diagues, the Spaniſh admiral, ordered all his ſmaller veſſels to moor cloſe to the ſhore, and poſted the larger galleons farther off, at anchor, with their broadſides to the ſea.

BLAKE was rather animated than daunted with this appearance. The wind ſeconded his courage, and blowing full into the bay, in a moment brought him among the thickeſt of his enemies. After a reſiſtance of four hours, the Spaniards yielded to the Engliſh valour, and abandoned their ſhips, which were ſet on fire, and conſumed with all their treaſures. The greateſt danger ſtill remained to the Engliſh. They lay under the fire of the caſtles and all the forts, which muſt, in a little time, have torn them in pieces. But the wind ſuddenly ſhifting, carried them out of the bay; where they left the Spaniards in aſtoniſhment at the happy temerity of their audacious victors.

and death of admiral Blake.

THIS was the laſt and greateſt action of the gallant Blake. He was conſumed with a dropſy and ſcurvy, and haſtened home, that he might yield up his laſt breath in his native country, which he ſo paſſionately loved, and which he had ſo much adorned by his valour. As he came within ſight of land, he expired †. Never man, ſo zealous for a faction, was ſo much reſpected and eſteemed even by the oppoſite factions. He was by principle, an inflexible Republican; and the late uſurpations, amidſt all the truſt and careſſes which he received from the ruling powers, were thought to be very little grateful to him. *It is ſtill our duty*, he ſaid to the ſeamen, *to fight for our country, into whatever hands the government may fall.* Diſintereſted, generous, liberal; ambitious only of true glory, dreadful only to his avowed enemies; he forms one of the moſt perfect characters of that age, and the leaſt ſtained with thoſe errors and violences, which were then ſo predominant. The Protector ordered him a pompous

* Thurloe, Vol. v. p. 433.

† 20th of April, 1657.

funeral

funeral at the public charge: But the tears of his countrymen were the moſt honourable panegyric on his memory. Chap. II. 1656.

THE conduct of the Protector in foreign affairs, tho' imprudent and impolitic, was full of vigour and enterprize, and drew a conſideration to his country, which, ſince the reign of Elizabeth, it ſeemed to have totally loſt. The great mind of this ſucceſsful uſurper was intent on ſpreading the renown of the Engliſh name; and while he ſtruck mankind with aſtoniſhment at his extraordinary fortune, he ſeemed to ennoble, inſtead of debaſing, that people, whom he had reduced to ſubjection. It was his boaſt, that he would render the name of an Engliſhman as much feared and revered as ever was that of a Roman; and as his countrymen found ſome reality in theſe pretenſions, their national vanity being gratified, made them bear with the more patience all the indignities and calamities under which they laboured.

IT muſt alſo be acknowleged, that the Protector, in his civil and domeſtic adminiſtration, diſplayed as great regard both to juſtice and clemency, as his uſurped authority, derived from no law, and founded only on the ſword, could poſſibly permit. All the chief offices in the courts of judicature were filled with men of integrity: Amidſt the virulence of faction, the decrees of the judges were upright and impartial: And to every man but himſelf, and to himſelf, except where neceſſity required the contrary, the law was the great rule of conduct and behaviour. Vane and Lilburn, whoſe credit with the Republicans and Levellers he dreaded, were indeed for ſome time confined to priſon: Cony, who refuſed to pay illegal taxes, was obliged by menaces to depart from his obſtinacy: High courts of juſtice were erected to try thoſe who had engaged in conſpiracies and inſurrections againſt the Protector's authority, and whom he could not ſafely commit to the verdict of juries. But theſe irregularities were deemed inevitable conſequences of his illegal authority. And tho' often urged by his officers, as is pretended *, to attempt a general maſſacre of the Royaliſts, he always with horror rejected ſuch ſanguinary councils. Domeſtic adminiſtration of Cromwel.

IN the army was laid the ſole baſis of the Protector's power; and in managing them conſiſted the chief art and delicacy of his government. The ſoldiers were held in the moſt exact diſcipline; a policy, which both accuſtomed them to obedience, and made them leſs hateful and burthenſome to the people. He augmented their pay; tho' the public neceſſities ſometimes obliged him to run in arrears to them. Their intereſts, they were ſenſible, were cloſely united with thoſe of their General and Protector. And he entirely commanded their affectionate regard, by his ability and ſucceſs in almoſt every enterprize, which he had hitherto

* Clarendon, Life of Dr. Berwick, &c.

undertaken.

Chap. II. 1656.

undertaken. But all military government is precarious; much more where it ſtands in oppoſition to civil eſtabliſhments; and ſtill more, where it encounters religious prejudices. By the wild fanaticiſm, which he had nouriſhed in the ſoldiers, he had ſeduced them into meaſures, for which, if openly propoſed to them, they would have entertained the utmoſt averſion. But this ſame ſpirit rendered them more difficult to be governed, and made their caprices terrible even to that hand which directed their movements. So often taught, that the office of King was an uſurpation upon Chriſt, they were apt to ſuſpect a Protector not to be altogether compatible with that divine authority. Harriſon, tho' raiſed to the higheſt dignity, and poſſeſſed entirely of Cromwel's confidence, became his moſt inveterate enemy as ſoon as he eſtabliſhed the authority of a ſingle perſon, againſt which he had always made ſuch violent proteſtations. Overton, Rich, Okey, officers of great rank in the army, were actuated with like principles; and Cromwel was obliged to deprive them of their commiſſions. Their influence, which was before thought unbounded among the troops, ſeemed from that moment to be totally annihilated.

THE more effectually to curb the enthuſiaſtic and ſeditious ſpirit of the troops' Cromwel eſtabliſhed a kind of militia in the ſeveral counties. Companies of infantry and cavalry were enliſted under proper officers, regular pay diſtributed among them, and a reſource by that means provided both againſt the inſurrections of the Royaliſts, and mutiny of the army.

RELIGION can never be deemed a point of ſmall conſequence in civil government: But during this period, it may be regarded as the great ſpring of men's actions and determinations. Tho' tranſported, himſelf, with the moſt frantic whimſies, Cromwel had adopted a ſcheme for regulating this principle in others, which was ſagacious and politic. Being reſolved to maintain a national church, and yet determined neither to admit Epiſcopacy nor Preſbytery, he eſtabliſhed a number of commiſſioners, under the name of *Tryers*, partly laymen, partly eccleſiaſtics, ſome Preſbyterians, ſome Independants. Theſe preſented to all livings, which were formerly in the gift of the crown; they examined and admitted ſuch perſons as received holy orders; and they inſpected the lives, doctrine, and behaviour of all the clergy. Inſtead of ſupporting that union between learning and theology, which has ſo long been maintained in Europe, theſe Tryers embraced the latter principle in its full purity, and made it the ſole object of their examinations. The candidates were no more perplexed with queſtions concerning their progreſs in Greek and Roman erudition; concerning their talent for profane arts and ſciences: The chief object of ſcrutiny regarded their advances in grace, and fixing the critical moment of their converſion.

WITH

Chap. II. 1656.

WITH the pretended ſaints of all denominations Cromwel was familiar and eaſy. Laying aſide the ſtate of Protector, which, on other occaſions, he well knew how to maintain, he inſinuated to them that nothing but neceſſity could ever induce him to inveſt himſelf with it. He talked ſpiritually to them; he ſighed, he weeped, he canted, he prayed. He even entered with them into an emulation of ghoſtly gifts; and theſe men, inſtead of grieving to be outdone in their own way, were proud, that his highneſs, by his princely example, had dignified thoſe practices in which they themſelves were daily occupied *.

IF Cromwel could be ſaid to adhere to any particular form of religion, they were the Independants who could chiefly boaſt of his favour; and it may be affirmed, that ſuch paſtors of that ſect, as were not paſſionately addicted to civil liberty, were all of them devoted to him. The Preſbyterians alſo, being ſaved from the ravages of the Anabaptiſts and Millenarians, and enjoying their eſtabliſhments and tythes, were not averſe to his government; tho' he ſtill entertained a great jealouſy of that ambitious and reſtleſs ſpirit, by which they were actuated. He granted an unbounded liberty of conſcience, to all but Catholics and Prelatiſts; and by that means, he both attached the wild ſectaries to his own perſon, and employed them in curbing the domineering ſpirit of the Preſbyterians. "I am the "only man," he was often heard to ſay, "who has known how to ſubdue that "inſolent ſect, which can ſuffer none but itſelf."

THE proteſtant zeal, which poſſeſſed the Preſbyterians and Independants, was highly gratified by the haughty manner, in which the Protector ſo ſucceſsfully ſupported the perſecuted Proteſtants throughout all Europe. Even the duke of Savoy, ſo remote a Prince, and ſo little expoſed to the naval power of England, was obliged, by the authority of France, to comply with his mediation, and to tolerate the Proteſtants of the Vallies, againſt whom that Prince had commenced a furious perſecution. France itſelf was conſtrained to bear, not only with the religion, but even in ſome inſtances, with the ſeditious inſolence of the Hugonots; and when that court applied for a reciprocal toleration of the Catholic religion in England, the Protector, who arrogated in every thing the ſuperiority, would hearken to no ſuch propoſal. He had entertained a project of inſtituting a col-

* Cromwel followed, tho' but in part, the advice which he received from general Harriſon, at the time when the intimacy and endearment moſt ſtrongly ſubſiſted betwixt them. "Let the waiting upon "Jehovah," ſaid that military ſaint, "be the greateſt and moſt conſiderable buſineſs you have every "day: Reckon it ſo, more than to eat, ſleep, and council together. Run aſide ſometimes from "your company, and get a word with the Lord. Why ſhould not you have three or four precious "ſouls always ſtanding at your elbow, with whom you might now and then turn into a corner? I "have found refreſhment and mercy in ſuch a way." Milton's State Papers, p. 12.

Chap. II. 1656.

lege in imitation of that at Rome, for the propagation of the faith; and his apoſtles, in zeal, tho' not in unanimity, had certainly been a full match for the Catholics.

CROMWEL retained the church of England in conſtraint; tho' he permitted its clergy a little more liberty than the republican Parliament had formerly allowed. He was pleaſed, that the ſuperior lenity of his adminiſtration ſhould in every thing be remarked. He bridled the Royaliſts, both by the mercenary army which he retained, and by thoſe ſecret ſpies, which he found means to intermix in all their counſels. Manning being diſcovered and puniſhed with death, he corrupted Sir Richard Willis, who was much truſted by chancellor Hyde and all the Royaliſts; and by means of that man he was let into every deſign and conſpiracy of the party. He could diſconcert any project, by confining the perſons who were the actors in it; and as he reſtored them afterwards to liberty, his ſeverity paſſed only for the reſult of general jealouſy and ſuſpicion. The ſecret ſource of his intelligence remained ſtill unknown and unſuſpected.

CONSPIRACIES for an aſſaſſination he was chiefly afraid of; theſe being deſigns, which no prudence nor vigilance could evade. Colonel Titus, under the name of Allen, had wrote a very ſpirited diſcourſe, exhorting every one to embrace this method of vengeance; and Cromwel knew, that the inflamed minds of the royal party were ſufficiently diſpoſed to put this doctrine in practice againſt him. He openly told them, that aſſaſſinations were baſe and odious, and he never would commence hoſtilities by ſo ſhameful an expedient; but if the firſt attempt or provocation came from them, he would retaliate to the uttermoſt. He had inſtruments, he ſaid, whom he could employ; and he never would deſiſt, till he had totally exterminated the royal family. This menace, more than all his guards, contributed to the ſecurity of his perſon *.

THERE was no point about which the Protector was more ſollicitous than to procure intelligence. This article alone, 'tis ſaid, coſt him ſixty thouſand pounds a year. Poſtmaſters, both at home and abroad, were, many of them, in his pay: Carriers were ſearched or bribed: Secretaries and clerks were corrupted: The greateſt zealots in all parties were often thoſe who conveyed private information to him:

* About this time an accident had almoſt robbed the Protector of his life, and ſaved his enemies the trouble of all their machinations. Having got ſix fine Frieſland coach-horſes as a preſent from the count of Oldenburg, he undertook for his amuſement to drive them about Hyde-park; his ſecretary Thurloe being in the coach. The horſes were ſtartled and ran away: He was unable to command them, or keep the box. He fell upon the pole, was dragged upon the ground for ſome time; a piſtol, which he carried in his pocket, went off; and by that ſingular good fortune, which ever attended him, he was taken up without any conſiderable hurt or bruiſe.

And

And nothing could escape his vigilant enquiry. Such at least is the representation made by historians of Cromwel's administration: But it must be confessed, that, if we may judge by those volumes of Thurloe's papers, which have been lately published, this affair, like many others, has been greatly magnified. We scarce find by that collection, that any secret councils of foreign states, except those of Holland, which are not expected to be concealed, were known to the Protector.

The general behaviour and deportment of this man, who had been raised from a very private station, who had passed most of his youth in the country, and who was still constrained so much to frequent bad company, was such as might befit the greatest monarch. He maintained a dignity without either affectation or ostentation; and supported with all strangers that high idea, with which his great exploits and prodigious fortune had impressed them. Among his antient friends, he could relax himself; and by trifling and amusement, jesting and making verses, he feared not the exposing himself to their most familiar approaches †. With others, he sometimes pushed matters to the length of rustic buffoonery; and he would amuse himself by putting burning coals into the boots and hose of the officers, who attended him ‡. Before the King's trial, a meeting was agreed on between the chiefs of the republican party and the general officers, in order to concert the model of that free government, which they were to substitute, in place of the monarchical constitution, now totally subverted. After debates on this subject, the most important, which could fall under the discussion of human creatures, Ludlow tells us, that Cromwel, by way of frolic, threw a cushion at his head; and when Ludlow took up another cushion in order to return the compliment, the General ran down stairs, and had almost broke his bones in the hurry. When the High Court of Justice was signing the King's sentence, a matter, if possible, still more serious, Cromwel taking the pen in his hand, before he subscribed his name, bedaubed with ink the face of Martin, who sat next him. And the pen being delivered to Martin, he practised the same frolic upon Cromwel ‖. He frequently gave feasts to his inferior officers; and when the meat was set upon the table, a signal was given; the soldiers rushed in upon them; and with much noise, tumult, and confusion, ran away with all the dishes, and disappointed the officers of their expected meal §.

Amidst all the unguarded play and buffoonery of this extraordinary personage, he took the opportunity of remarking the characters, designs, and weaknesses of

† Whitelocke, p. 647. ‡ Bates. ‖ Trial of the Regicides. § Bates.

Chap. II. 1656.

men; and he would ſometimes puſh them, by an indulgence in wine, to open to him the moſt ſecret receſſes of their boſom. Great regularity, however, and even auſterity of manners were always maintained in his court; and he was careful never by any liberties to give offence to the moſt rigid of the godly. Some ſtate was upheld; but with little expence, and without any ſplendor. The nobility, tho' courted by him, kept at a diſtance, and diſdained to intermix themſelves with thoſe mean perſons, who were the inſtruments of his government. Without departing from oeconomy, he was generous to thoſe who ſerved him; and he knew how to find out and engage in his intereſts every man poſſeſſed of thoſe talents, which any particular employment demanded. His generals, his admirals, his judges, his ambaſſadors, were perſons, who contributed, all of them, in their ſeveral ſpheres, to the ſecurity of the Protector and to the honour and intereſt of the nation.

UNDER pretence of uniting Scotland and Ireland in one Commonwealth with England, he had reduced theſe kingdoms to a total ſubjection; and he treated them entirely as conquered provinces. The civil adminiſtration of Scotland was placed in a council, conſiſting moſtly of Engliſh, of which lord Broghill was preſident. Juſtice was adminiſtred by ſeven judges, four of whom were Engliſh. In order to curb the tyrannical nobility, he both aboliſhed all vaſſalage ‡, and revived the office of juſtices of peace, which King James had introduced, but was not able to ſupport ‖. A long line of forts and garriſons were maintained throughout the kingdom. An army of 10,000 men § kept every thing in peace and obedience, and neither the banditti of the mountains, nor the bigots of the low countries, could indulge their inclinations to turbulence and diſorder. He courted the Preſbyterian clergy; tho' he nouriſhed that inteſtine enmity which prevailed between the Reſolutioners and Proteſtors; and he found, that very little policy was requiſite to foſter quarrels among Theologians. He permitted no church aſſemblies, being ſenſible that from thence had proceeded many of the paſt miſchiefs. And in the main, the Scots were obliged to acknowlege, that never before, while they enjoyed their irregular factious liberty, had they attained ſo much happineſs as at preſent, when reduced to ſubjection under a foreign nation.

THE Protector's adminiſtration of Ireland was much more ſevere and violent. The government of that iſland was firſt entruſted to Fleetwood, a notorious fanatic, who had married Ireton's widow; then to Henry Cromwel, ſecond ſon to the Protector, a young man of an amiable mild diſpoſition, and not deſtitute of viguor

‡ Whitelocke, p. 570. ‖ Thurloe, vol. iv. p. 57. § Id. vol. vi. p. 557.

and capacity. Five millions of acres, forfeited either by the Popiſh rebellion or by the adherents of the King, were divided, partly among the adventurers, who had advanced money to the Parliament, partly among the Engliſh ſoldiers, who had arrears due to them. Examples of a more ſudden and violent change of property are ſcarce to be found in any hiſtory. An order even paſſed to confine all the native Iriſh to the province of Connaught, where they would be ſhut up by rivers, lakes, and mountains, and could not, it was hoped, be any longer dangerous to the Engliſh government: But this barbarous and abſurd policy, which, from an impatience of attaining immediate ſecurity, muſt have depopulated all the other provinces, and rendered the Engliſh eſtates of no value, it was ſoon found impoſſible to reduce to practice. Chap. II. 1656.

CROMWEL began to hope, that by his adminiſtration, attended with ſo much luſtre and ſucceſs abroad, ſo much order and tranquillity at home, he had now acquired ſuch authority as would enable him to meet the repreſentatives of the nation, and would aſſure him of their dutiful compliance with his government. He therefore ſummoned a Parliament; but not truſting altogether to the good will of the people, he uſed every art, which his new model of repreſentation allowed him to employ, in order to influence the elections and fill the houſe with his own creatures. Ireland, being entirely in the hands of the army, choſe none but ſuch officers as were moſt acceptable to him. Scotland ſhowed the ſame compliance; and as the nobility and gentry of that kingdom regarded their attendance on Engliſh Parliaments as an ignominious badge of ſlavery, it was, on that account, more eaſy for the officers to prevail in the elections. Notwithſtanding all theſe precautions, the Protector ſtill found, that the majority would not be favourable to him. He ſet guards, therefore, on the door, who permitted none to enter but ſuch as produced a warrant from his council; and the council rejected about a hundred, who either refuſed a recognition of the Protector's government, or were on other accounts obnoxious to him. Theſe proteſted againſt ſo egregious a violence, ſubverſive of all liberty; but every application for redreſs was neglected both by the council and the Parliament. New Parliament. 17th of September.

THE majority of the Parliament, by means of theſe arts and violences, were now at laſt either friendly to the Protector, or reſolved, by their compliance, to adjuſt, if poſſible, this military government to their laws and liberties. They voted a renounciation of all title in Charles Stuart or any of his family; and this was the firſt act, dignified with the appearance of national conſent, which had ever had that tendency. Colonel Jephſon, in order to ſound the inclinations of the houſe, ventured to move, that the Parliament ſhould beſtow the crown on Cromwel; and no ſurprize nor reluctance was diſcovered on that occaſion. When Cromwel afterwards

Chap. II. 1656.

afterwards aſked Jephſon what induced him to make ſuch a motion, "As long," ſaid Jephſon, "as I have the honour to ſit in Parliament, I muſt follow the dictates of my own conſcience, whatever offence I may be ſo unfortunate as to give you." "Get thee gone," ſaid Cromwel, giving him a gentle blow on the ſhoulder, "get thee gone for a mad fellow as thou art."

In order to pave the way to this advancement, for which he ſo ardently longed, Cromwel reſolved to ſacrifice his major-generals, whom he knew to be extremely odious to the nation. That meaſure was alſo become neceſſary for his own ſecurity. All government, purely military, fluctuates perpetually between a deſpotic monarchy and a deſpotic ariſtocracy, according as the authority of the chief commander prevails, or that of the officers next him in rank and dignity. The major-generals, being poſſeſſed of ſo much diſtinct juriſdiction, began to eſtabliſh a ſeparate title to power, and had rendered themſelves formidable to the Protector himſelf; and for this inconvenience, tho' he had not foreſeen it, he well knew, before it was too late, to provide a proper remedy. Claypole, his ſon in law, who poſſeſſed entirely his confidence, abandoned them to the pleaſure of the houſe; and tho' the name was ſtill retained, it was agreed to abridge, or rather entirely annihilate, the power of the major-generals.

At laſt, a more formal motion was made by alderman Pack, one of the city members, for inveſting the Protector with the dignity of King. This motion, at firſt, excited great diſorder, and divided the whole houſe into parties. The chief oppoſition came from the uſual adherents of the Protector, the major-generals and ſuch officers as depended on them. Lambert, a man of deep intrigue and of great intereſt in the army, had long entertained the ambition of ſucceeding Cromwel in the Protectorſhip; and he foreſaw, if the Monarchy was reſtored, that hereditary right would alſo be eſtabliſhed, and the crown be tranſmitted to the poſterity of the prince firſt elected. He pleaded, therefore, conſcience; and exciting all thoſe civil and religious jealouſies againſt kingly government, which had been ſo induſtriouſly encouraged among the ſoldiers, and which ſerved them as a pretence for ſo many violences, he formed a numerous and a ſtill more formidable party againſt the motion.

On the other hand, the motion was ſupported by every one, who was more particularly devoted to the Protector, and who hoped, by ſo acceptable a meaſure, to pay court to the prevailing authority. Many perſons alſo, attached to their country, deſpaired of ever being able to ſubvert the preſent illegal eſtabliſhment, and were deſirous, by fixing it on antient foundations, to induce the Protector, from views of his own ſafety, to pay a regard to the antient laws and liberties of the kingdom.

kingdom. Even the Royaliſts imprudently joined in the ſame meaſure; and hoped, that, when the queſtion regarded only perſons, not forms of government, no one would any longer ballance between the antient royal family, and an ignoble uſurper, who, by blood, treaſon and perfidy, had made his way to the throne. The bill was voted by a conſiderable majority; and a committee was appointed to reaſon with the Protector, and to overcome thoſe ſcruples, which he pretended againſt accepting ſo liberal an offer. Chap. II. 1657. Crown offered to Cromwel.

THE conference laſted for ſeveral days. The committee urged, that all the ſtatutes and cuſtoms of England were founded on the ſuppoſition of regal authority, and could not, without extreme violence, be adjuſted to any other form of government: That a Protector, except during the minority of a King, was a name utterly unknown to the laws; and no man was acquainted with the extent or limits of his authority: That if it was attempted to define every part of his juriſdiction, many years, if not ages, would be required for the execution of ſo complicated a work; if the whole power of the King were at once transferred to him, the queſtion was plainly about a name, and the preference was undiſputably due to the antient title: That the Engliſh conſtitution was more anxious concerning the form of government than concerning the birthright of the firſt magiſtrate, and had provided, by an expreſs law of Henry VII. for the ſecurity of thoſe who act in defence of the King in being, by whatever means he might have acquired poſſeſſion: That it was extremely the intereſt of all his Highneſs's friends to ſeek the ſhelter of this ſtatute; and even the people in general were deſirous of ſuch a ſettlement, and in all juries were with great difficulty induced to give their verdict in favour of a Protector: That the great ſource of all the late commotions, had been the jealouſy of liberty; and that a Republic, together with a Protector, had been eſtabliſhed in order to provide farther ſecurities for the freedom of the Conſtitution; but that by experience the remedy had been found inſufficient, even dangerous and pernicious; ſince every undeterminate power, ſuch as that of a Protector, muſt be arbitrary; and the more arbitrary, as it was contrary to the genius and inclination of the people. 9th of April.

THE difficulty conſiſted not in perſwading Cromwel. He was ſufficiently convinced of the ſolidity of theſe reaſonings; and his inclination, as well as judgement, was entirely on the ſide of the committee. But how to bring over the army to the ſame way of thinking was the queſtion. The office of King had been painted to them in ſuch horrible colours, that there were no hopes of reconciling them ſuddenly to it, even tho' beſtowed upon their general, to whom they were ſo much devoted. A contradiction, open and direct, to all paſt profeſſions, would make them paſs, in the eyes of the whole nation, for the moſt ſhameleſs hypocrites,

Chap. II. 1657.

crites, inliſted by no other than mercenary motives in the cauſe of the moſt perfidious traitor. Principles, ſuch as they were, had been encouraged in them by every conſideration human and divine; and tho' it was eaſy, where intereſt concurred, to deceive them by the thinneſt diſguiſes, it might be found dangerous at once to pull off the maſque, and ſhow them in a full light the whole crime and deformity of their conduct. Suſpended between theſe fears and his own moſt ardent deſires, Cromwel protracted the time, and ſeemed ſtill to oppoſe the reaſonings of the committee; in hopes, that by artifice he might be able to reconcile the refractory minds of the ſoldiers to his new dignity.

WHILE the Protector argued ſo much in contradiction both to his judgment and inclination, it is no wonder, that his elocution, always confuſed, embarraſſed, and unintelligible, ſhould be involved in tenfold darkneſs, and diſcover no glimmering of common ſenſe or reaſon. An exact account of this conference remains, and may be regarded as a great curioſity. The members of the committee, in their reaſonings, diſcover judgment, knowledge, elocution: Lord Broghill in particular exerts himſelf on this memorable occaſion. But what a contraſte when we paſs to the Protector's replies! After ſo ſingular a manner does nature diſtribute her talents, that, in a nation abounding with ſenſe and learning, a man, who, by ſuperior perſonal merit alone, had made his way to ſupreme dignity, and had even obliged the Parliament to make him an offer of the crown, was yet incapable of expreſſing himſelf on this occaſion, but in a manner which a peaſant of the moſt ordinary capacity would juſtly be aſhamed of *.

THE

* We ſhall produce any paſſage at random: For his diſcourſe is all of a piece. "I confeſs, for it "behoves me to deal plainly with you, I muſt confeſs, I would ſay, I hope, I may be underſtood in "this, for indeed I muſt be tender what I ſay to ſuch an audience as this; I ſay, I would be underſtood, that in this argument I do not make parallel between men of a different mind and a Parliament, which ſhall have their deſires. I know there is no compariſon, nor can it be urged upon "me, that my words have the leaſt colour that way, becauſe the Parliament ſeems to give liberty to "me to ſay any thing to you; as that, that is a tender of my humble reaſons and judgment and "opinion to them; and if I think they are ſuch and will be ſuch to them, and are faithful ſervants "and will be ſo to the ſupreme authority, and the legiſlative whereſoever it is: If I ſay, I ſhould not "tell you, knowing their minds to be ſo, I ſhould not be faithful, if I ſhould not tell you ſo, to the "end you may report it to the Parliament: I ſhall ſay ſomething for myſelf, for my own mind, I "do profeſs it, I am not a man ſcrupulous about words or names of ſuch things I have not: But as I "have the word of God, and I hope I ſhall ever have it, for the rule of my conſcience, for my informations; ſo truly men that have been led in dark paths, thro' the providence and diſpenſation of "God; why ſurely it is not to be objected to a man; for who can love to walk in the dark? But

"providence

Chap. II. 1657.

THE oppoſition, which Cromwel dreaded, was not that which came from Lambert and his adherents, whom he now regarded as his capital enemies, and whom he was reſolved, on the firſt occaſion, to deprive of all power and authority: It was that which he met with in his own family, and from men, who, by intereſt as well as inclination, were the moſt devoted to him. Fleetwood had married his daughter: Deſborough his ſiſter: Yet theſe perſons, actuated by principle alone, could, by no perſwaſion, artifice, or entreaty, be induced to conſent that their friend and patron ſhould be inveſted with regal dignity. They told him, that, if he accepted of the crown, they would inſtantly throw up their commiſſions, and never afterwards would have it in their power to ſerve him *. Colonel Pride procured a petition againſt the office of King ſigned by a majority of the officers, who were in London and the neighbourhood. Several perſons, it was ſaid, had entered into an engagement to murder the Protector within a few hours after he ſhould have accepted the offer of the parliament. Some ſudden mutiny in the army was juſtly dreaded. And upon the whole, Cromwel, after the agony and perplexity of long doubt, was at laſt obliged to refuſe that crown, which the repreſentatives of the nation, in the moſt ſolemn manner, had tendered to him. Moſt hiſtorians are inclined to blame his choice; but he muſt be allowed to be the beſt judge of his own ſituation. And in ſuch complicated ſubjects, the alteration of a very minute circumſtance, unknown to the ſpectator, will often be ſufficient to caſt the ballance, and render a determination, which, in itſelf, may be uneligible, very prudent, or even abſolutely neceſſary to the actor.

He rejects it.

A DREAM or prophecy, lord Clarendon mentions, which, he affirms, (and he muſt have known the truth) was univerſally talked of almoſt from the beginning of the civil wars, and long before Cromwel was ſo conſiderable a perſon as to beſtow upon it any degree of probability. In this prophecy it was foretold, that Cromwel ſhould be the greateſt man in England, and would nearly, but never would fully, mount the throne. Such a prepoſſeſſion probably aroſe from the heated imagination either of himſelf or of his followers; and as it might be one cauſe of the great

" providence does ſo diſpoſe. And tho' a man may impute his own folly and blindneſs to providence " ſinfully, yet it muſt be at my peril; the caſe may be that it is the providence of God, that doth lead " men in darkneſs: I muſt needs ſay, that I have had a great deal of experience of providence, and " tho' it has no rule without or againſt the word, yet it is a very good expoſitor of the word in many " caſes." *Conference at Whitehall.* The great defect in Oliver's ſpeeches conſiſts not in his want of elocution, but in his want of ideas. The ſagacity of his actions, and the abſurdity of his diſcourſe, form the moſt prodigious contraſte that ever was known. The collection of all his ſpeeches, letters, ſermons, (for he alſo wrote ſermons) would make a great curioſity, and with a few exceptions might juſtly paſs for one of the moſt nonſenſical books in the world.

* Thurloe, Vol. vi. p. 261.

Chap. II. 1657.

great progreſs, which he had already made, it is not an unlikely reaſon, which may be aſſigned for his refuſing at this time any farther elevation.

THE Parliament, when the regal dignity was rejected by Cromwel, found themſelves obliged to retain the name of a Commonwealth and Protector; and as the government was hitherto a manifeſt uſurpation, it was thought proper to ſanctify it by a ſeeming choice of the people and of their repreſentatives. Inſtead of the inſtrument of government, which was the work of the general officers alone, an humble petition and advice was framed, and offered to the Protector by the Parliament. This was repreſented as the great baſis of the Republican eſtabliſhment, regulating and limiting the powers of each member of the conſtitution, and ſecuring the liberty of the people to the moſt remote poſterity. By this deed, the authority of Protector was in ſome particulars enlarged: In others, it was conſiderably diminiſhed. He had the power of nominating his ſucceſſor; he had a perpetual revenue aſſigned him, a million a year for the fleet and army, three hundred thouſand pounds for the civil government; and he had the authority to name another houſe, who ſhould enjoy their ſeats during life, and exerciſe ſome functions of the former houſe of Peers. But he abandoned the power aſſumed in the intervals of Parliament, of framing laws with the conſent of his council; and he agreed, that no members of either houſe ſhould be excluded but by the conſent of that houſe, of which they were members. The other articles were in the main the ſame as in the inſtrument of government.

Humble petition and advice.

THE inſtrument of government Cromwel had formerly extolled as the moſt perfect work of human invention: He now repreſented it as a rotten plank, upon which no man could truſt himſelf without ſinking. Even the Humble Petition and Advice, which he extolled in its turn, appeared ſo lame and imperfect, that it was found requiſite, this very ſeſſion, to mend it by a ſupplement; and after all, it may be regarded as a very crude and undigeſted model of government. It was, however, accepted for the deed of the whole people in the three united nations; and Cromwel, as if his power had juſt commenced from this popular conſent, was anew inaugurated in Weſtminſter-Hall, after the moſt ſolemn and moſt pompous manner.

26th of June.

THE Parliament having adjourned itſelf, the Protector deprived Lambert of all his commiſſions; but ſtill allowed him a conſiderable penſion, of 2000 pounds a year, as a bribe for his future, peaceable deportment. Lambert's authority in the army, to the great ſurprize of every body, was found immediately to expire with the loſs of his commiſſion. Packer and ſome other officers, whom Cromwel ſuſpected, were alſo diſplaced.

RICHARD,

Richard, eldeſt ſon to the Protector, was brought to court, introduced into public buſineſs, and henceforth regarded by many as his heir in the Protectorſhip; tho' Cromwel ſometimes employed the groſs artifice of flattering others with the hopes of the ſucceſſion. Richard was a perſon poſſeſſed of the moſt peaceable, inoffenſive, unambitious character; and had hitherto lived contentedly in the country on a ſmall eſtate, which his wife had brought him. The little activity, which he diſcovered, was always exerted to beneficent purpoſes: At the time of the King's trial, he had fallen on his knees before his father, and had conjured him, by all the ties of duty and humanity, to ſpare the life of that Monarch. Chap. II. 1657.

Cromwel had two daughters unmarried: One of them he now gave to the grandſon and heir of his great friend, the earl of Warwick, with whom he had, in every fortune, preſerved an uninterrupted intimacy and correſpondence: The other he married to the viſcount Falconbrige, of a family, formerly devoted to the royal party. He was very ambitious of forming connexions with the nobility; and it was one chief motive of his deſiring the title of King, that he might replace every thing in its natural order, and reſtore to the antient families, that truſt and honour, of which he now found himſelf obliged, for his own preſervation, to deprive them.

The Parliament was again aſſembled; conſiſting, as in the times of monarchy, of two houſes, the commons and the other houſe. Cromwel, during the interval, had ſent writs to his houſe of peers, which conſiſted of ſixty members. They were compoſed of five or ſix antient peers, of ſeveral gentlemen of fortune and diſtinction, and of ſome officers who had riſen from the meaneſt profeſſions. None of the antient peers, however, would deign to accept a ſeat, which they muſt ſhare with ſuch companions as were aſſigned them. The Protector endeavoured at firſt to maintain the appearance of a legal magiſtrate. He removed the guards from the door of both houſes: But ſoon found how incompatible liberty is with military uſurpations. By bringing ſo great a number of his friends and adherents into the other houſe, he had loſt the majority among the national repreſentatives. In conſequence of a clauſe in the Humble Petition and Advice, the commons aſſumed a power of re-admitting thoſe members, whom the council had formerly excluded. Sir Arthur Hazelrig and ſome others, whom Cromwel had created lords, rather choſe to take their ſeats with the commons. An unconteſtable majority now declared themſelves againſt the Protector; and they refuſed to acknowledge the juriſdiction of that other houſe, which he had eſtabliſhed. Even the validity of the Humble Petition and Advice was queſtioned; as being voted by a Parliament, which lay under force, and which was deprived by military violence 1658. 20th of January.

Chap. II. 1658.

of a conſiderable number of its members. The Protector, dreading combinations between the Parliament and the malecontents in the army, was reſolved to allow no leiſure for the forming any conſpiracy againſt him; and with great expreſſions of anger and diſpleaſure, he diſſolved the Parliament. When urged by Fleetwood and others of his friends not to precipitate himſelf into this raſh meaſure, he ſwore by the living God, that they ſhould not ſit a moment longer.

4th of February.

THESE diſtractions at home were not able to take off the Protector's attention from foreign affairs; and in all his meaſures he proceeded with equal vigour and enterprize, as if ſecure of the duty and attachment of all the three kingdoms. His alliance with Sweden he ſtill ſupported; and he endeavoured to aſſiſt that crown in its ſucceſsful enterprizes, for reducing all its neighbours to ſubjection, and rendering itſelf abſolutely maſter of the Baltic. As ſoon as Spain declared war againſt him, he concluded a peace and an alliance with France, and united himſelf in all his councils with that potent and ambitious kingdom. Spain, having long courted in vain the friendſhip of the ſucceſsful uſurper, was reduced at laſt to apply to the unfortunate Prince. Charles formed a league with Philip, removed his ſmall court to Bruges in the Low Countries, and raiſed four regiments of his own ſubjects, whom he employed in the Spaniſh ſervice. The Duke of York, who had, with great applauſe, ſerved ſome campaigns in the French army, and who had merited the particular eſteem of Marſhal Turenne, now joined his brother, and continued to ſeek military experience under Don John of Auſtria and the Prince of Condé.

THE ſcheme of foreign politics, adopted by the Protector, was highly imprudent, but was ſuitable to that magnanimity and enterprize, with which he was ſo ſignally endowed. He was particularly deſirous of conqueſt and dominion on the Continent *; and he ſent over into Flanders ſix thouſand men under Reynolds, who joined the French army commanded by Turenne. In the former campaign, Mardyke was taken, and put into their hands. Early this campaign, ſiege was laid to Dunkirk; and when the Spaniſh army advanced to relieve it, the combined armies of France and England marched out of their trenches, and fought the battle of the Dunes, where the Spaniards were totally defeated †. The

* He aſpired to get poſſeſſion of Elſinore and the paſſage of the Sound. See *World's Miſtake in Oliver Cromwel.* He alſo endeavoured to get poſſeſſion of Bremen. Thurloe, Vol. vi. p. 478.

† It was remarked by the pretended ſaints of that time, that the battle was fought on a day which was held for a faſt in London, ſo that as Fleetwood ſaid (Thurloe, Vol. vii. p. 159.) while we were praying, they were fighting; and the Lord hath given a ſignal anſwer. The Lord has not only owned us in our work there, but in our waiting upon him in a way of prayer, which is indeed our old experienced approved way in all ſtreights and difficulties. Cromwel's letter to Blake and Montague, his brave

1658. Dunkirk taken.

The valour of the Engliſh was much remarked on this occaſion. Dunkirk, being ſoon after ſurrendered, was by agreement delivered to Cromwel. He committed the government of that important place to Lockart, a Scotſman of ability, who had married his niece, and was his ambaſſador in the court of France.

This acquiſition was regarded by the Protector as the means only of obtaining farther advantages. He was reſolved to concert meaſures with the French court for the final conqueſt and partition of the Low Countries *. Had he lived much longer, and maintained his authority in England, ſo chimerical or rather ſo dangerous a project, would certainly have been reduced to execution. And this firſt and principal ſtep towards Univerſal Monarchy, which France, during a whole century, has never yet been able, by an infinite expence of blood and treaſure, fully to effectuate, had at once been accompliſhed by the enterprizing, tho' unſkilful politics of Cromwel.

During theſe tranſactions, great demonſtrations of mutual friendſhip and regard paſſed between the French King and the Protector. Lord Falconbrige, Cromwel's ſon-in-law, was ſent over to Louis, then in the camp before Dunkirk; and was received with the ſame regard, which is uſually paid to foreign princes by the French court †. Mazarine ſent to London his nephew, Mancini, along with the Duke of Crequi; and expreſſed his regret, that his urgent affairs ſhould deprive him of the honour, which he had long wiſhed for, of paying, in perſon, his reſpects to the greateſt man in the world ‡.

The Protector reaped little ſatisfaction from the ſucceſs of his arms abroad: The ſituation in which he ſtood at home kept him in perpetual uneaſineſs and inquietude. His adminiſtration, ſo expenſive both by military enterprizes and ſe-

brave admirals, is remarkable for the ſame ſpirit. Thurloe, Vol. iv. p. 744. You have, ſays he, as I verily believe and am perſuaded, a plentiful ſtock of prayers going for you daily, ſent up by the ſobereſt and moſt approved miniſters and chriſtians in this nation, and, notwithſtanding ſome diſcouragements, very much wreſtling of faith for you, which are to us, and I truſt will be to you, matter of great encouragement. But notwithſtanding all this, it will be good for you and us to deliver up ourſelves and all our affairs to the diſpoſition of our all-wiſe Father, who not only out of prerogative, but becauſe of his goodneſs, wiſdom and truth, ought to be reſigned unto by his creatures, eſpecially thoſe who are children of his begetting thro' the ſpirit, &c.

* Thurloe, Vol. i. p. 762.

† Thurloe, Vol. vii. p. 151, 158.

‡ In reality the cardinal had not entertained ſo high an idea of Cromwel. He uſed to ſay, that he was a fortunate madman. Vie de Cromwel par Raguenet. See alſo Carte's Collection, Vol. ii. p. 81. Gumble's Life of Monk, p. 93. World's miſtake in O. Cromwel.

cret

Chap. II. 1658.

cret intelligence, had exhauſted his revenue, and involved him in a conſiderable debt. The Royaliſts, he heard, had renewed their conſpiracies, for a general inſurrection; and Ormond was ſecretly come over with a view of concerting meaſures for the execution of this project. Lord Fairfax, Sir William Waller, and many heads of the Preſbyterians, had ſecretly entered into the engagement. Even the army was infected with the general ſpirit of diſcontent, and ſome ſudden and dangerous eruption was every moment to be dreaded from them. No hopes remained, after his violent breach with the laſt Parliament, that he would ever be able to eſtabliſh, with general conſent, a legal ſettlement, or temper the military with the mixture of any civil authority. All his arts and policy were exhauſted; and having ſo often, by fraud and falſe pretences, deceived every party, and almoſt every individual, he could no longer hope, by repeating the ſame profeſſions, to meet with equal confidence and regard.

HOWEVER zealous the Royaliſts, their conſpiracy took not effect: Willis diſcovered the whole to the Protector. Ormond was obliged to fly, and he deemed himſelf fortunate to have eſcaped ſo vigilant an adminiſtration. Great numbers were thrown into priſon. An high court of juſtice was anew erected for the trial of ſuch of the criminals, whoſe guilt was moſt apparent. Notwithſtanding the recognition of his authority by the laſt Parliament, the Protector could not, as yet, truſt to an unbyaſſed jury. Sir Henry Slingſby, Dr. Hewet, were condemned and beheaded. Mordaunt, brother to the earl of Peterborow, very narrowly eſcaped. The numbers for his condemnation and his acquital were equal; and juſt as the ſentence was pronounced in his favour, colonel Pride, who was reſolved to condemn him, came into the court. Aſhton, Storey, and Beſtley were hanged in different ſtreets of the city.

THE conſpiracy of the Millenarians in the army ſtruck Cromwel with ſtill greater apprehenſions. Harriſon and the other diſcarded officers of that party could not remain at reſt. Stimulated equally by revenge, by ambition, and by conſcience, they ſtill harboured in their mind ſome deſperate project; and there wanted not officers in the army, who, from like motives, were diſpoſed to ſecond all their undertakings. The Levellers and Agitators had been encouraged by Cromwel to interpoſe with their advice in all political deliberations; and he had even pretended to honour many of them with his moſt intimate friendſhip, while he conducted his daring enterprizes againſt the King and the Parliament. It was an uſual practice with him, in order to familiarize himſelf the more with the Agitators, who were commonly corporals or ſerjeants, to take them to bed with him, and there, after prayers and exhortations, to diſcuſs together their projects and principles, political as

well as religious. Having assumed the dignity of Protector, he excluded them from all his councils, and had neither leisure nor inclination to indulge them any farther in their wonted familiarities. Among those who were enraged at this alteration was Sexby; an active Agitator, who now employed against him all that restless industry which had formerly been exerted in his favour. He even went so far as to enter into a negotiation with Spain; and Cromwel, who knew the distempers of the army, was justly afraid of some mutiny, to which a day, an hour, an instant, might provide leaders. Chap. II. 1658.

Of assassinations likewise he was apprehensive, from the zealous spirit, which actuated the soldiers. Sindercome had undertaken to murder him; and by the most unaccountable accidents had hitherto been prevented from executing his bloody purpose. His design was discovered; but the Protector could never find the bottom of the enterprize, nor detect any of his accomplices. He was tried by a jury; and notwithstanding the general odium attending that crime, notwithstanding the clear and full proof of his guilt, so little conviction prevailed of the Protector's right to the supreme government, it was with the utmost difficulty† that this conspirator was condemned. When every thing was prepared for his execution, he was found dead; from poison, as is supposed, which he had voluntarily taken.

The Protector might better have supported those fears and apprehensions, which the public distempers occasioned, had he enjoyed any domestic satisfaction, or possessed any cordial friend of his own family, in whose bosom he could safely have unloaded his anxious and corroding cares. But Fleetwood, his son-in-law, actuated with the wildest zeal, began to estrange himself from him; and was enraged to discover, that Cromwel, in all his enterprizes, had entertained views of promoting his own grandeur, more than of encouraging piety and religion, of which he made such fervent professions. His eldest daughter, married to Fleetwood, had adopted republican principles so vehement, that she could not with patience behold power lodged in a single person, even in her indulgent father. His other daughters were no less prejudiced in favour of the royal cause, and regretted the violences and iniquities, into which, they thought, their family had so unhappily been transported. But above all, the sickness of Mrs. Claypole, his peculiar favourite, a lady endued with every humane virtue and amiable accomplishment, depressed his anxious mind, and poisoned all his enjoyments. She had entertained an high regard for Dr. Heuet, lately executed; and being refused his pardon, the melancholy of her temper, encreased by her distempered body, had

† Thurloe, Vol. iv. p. 53.

prompted

Chap. II. 1658.

prompted her to lament to her father all his ſanguinary meaſures, and urge him to compunction for thoſe heinous crimes, into which his fatal ambition had betrayed him. Her death, which followed ſoon after, gave new edge to every word, which ſhe had uttered.

All compoſure of mind was now for ever fled from the Protector: He found, that the grandeur, which he had attained, with ſo much guilt and courage, could not enſure him that tranquillity, which it belongs to virtue alone and moderation fully to aſcertain. Overwhelmed with the load of public affairs, dreading perpetually ſome fatal accident in his diſtempered government, ſeeing nothing around him but treacherous friends or enraged enemies, poſſeſſing the confidence of no party, reſting his title on no principle, civil or religious, his power he found to depend on ſo delicate a poize of factions and intereſts, as the ſmalleſt event was able, without any preparation, in a moment to overturn. Death too, which, with ſuch ſignal intrepidity, he had braved in the field, being inceſſantly threatened by the poniards of fanatical or intereſted aſſaſſins, was ever preſent to his terrified apprehenſions, and haunted him in every ſcene of buſineſs or repoſe. Each action of his life betrayed the terrors under which he laboured. The aſpect of ſtrangers was uneaſy to him: With a piercing and anxious eye he ſurveyed every face, to which he was not daily accuſtomed. He never moved a ſtep without ſtrong guards attending him: He wore armour under his cloaths, and farther ſecured himſelf by offenſive weapons, a ſword, falchion, and piſtols, which he always carried about him. He returned from no place by the direct road, or by the ſame way which he went. Every journey he performed with hurry and precipitation. Seldom he ſlept above three nights together in the ſame chamber: And he never let it be known beforehand what chamber he intended to chooſe, nor entruſted himſelf in any, which was not provided with backdoors, at which ſentinels were carefully placed. Society terrified him, while he reflected on his numerous, unknown, and implacable enemies: Solitude aſtoniſhed him, by withdrawing that protection, which he found ſo neceſſary for his ſecurity.

Sickneſs of the Protector.

His body alſo, from the contagion of his anxious mind, began to be affected; and his health ſeemed very ſenſibly to decline. He was ſeized with a ſlow fever, which changed into a tertian ague. For the ſpace of a week, no dangerous ſymptoms appeared; and in the intervals of the fits he was able to walk abroad. At length, the fever encreaſed, and he himſelf began to entertain ſome thoughts of death, and to caſt his eye towards that future exiſtence, whoſe idea had once been intimately preſent to him; tho' ſince, in the hurry of affairs and the ſhock of wars and factions, it had, no doubt, been conſiderably obliterated. He aſked Goodwin,

one of his preachers, if the doctrine was true, that the elect could never fall or suffer a final reprobation. "Nothing more certain," replied the preacher. "Then am I safe," said the Protector: "For I am sure that once I was in a "state of grace." Chap. II. 1658.

His physicians were sensible of the perilous condition, to which his distemper had reduced him: But his chaplains, by their prayers, visions, and revelations, so buoyed up his hopes, that he began to believe his life out of all danger. A favourable answer, it was pretended, had been returned by heaven to the petitions of all the godly; and he relied on their asseverations much more than on the opinion of the most experienced physicians. "I tell you," he cried with confidence to the latter, "I shall not die of this distemper: I am well assured of my recovery. It "is promised by the Lord, not only to my supplications, but also to that of men "who hold a stricter commerce and more intimate correspondence with him. Ye "may have skill in your profession; but nature can do more than all the physicians "in the world, and God is far above nature †." Nay, to such a degree of madness did their enthusiastic assurances mount, that upon a fast day, which was observed, on his account, both at Hampton Court and at Whitehall, they did not so much pray for his health, as give thanks for the undoubted pledges, which they had received of his recovery. He himself was overheard offering up his addresses to heaven; and so far had the illusions of fanaticism prevailed over the plainest dictates of natural morality, that he assumed more the character of a mediator, in interceding for his people, than that of a criminal, whose atrocious violation of social duty had, from every tribunal, human and divine, merited the severest vengeance.

Meanwhile all the symptoms began to wear a more fatal aspect; and the physicians were obliged to break silence, and to declare that the Protector could not survive the next fit, with which he was threatened. The council was alarmed. A deputation was sent to know his will with regard to his successor. His senses were gone, and he could not now express his intentions. They asked him whether he did not mean, that his eldest son, Richard, should succeed him in the Protectorship. A simple affirmative was, or seemed to be extorted from him. Soon after, on the 3d of September, that very day, which he had always considered as the most fortunate to him, he expired. A violent tempest, which immediately succeeded his death, served as a subject of discourse to the vulgar. His partizans, as well as his opponents, were fond of remarking this event; and each of them endeavoured, by forced inferences, to interpret it as confirmation of their particular prejudices. His death,

The writers, attached to the memory of this wonderful person, make his character, with regard to abilities, bear the air of the most extravagant panegyric: His enemies form such a representation of his moral qualities as resembles the most and character.

† Bates: See also Thurloe, Vol. vii. p. 355, 416.

Chap. II. 1658.

virulent invective. Both of them, it muſt be confeſſed, are ſupported by ſuch ſtriking circumſtances in his conduct and fortune as beſtow on their repreſentation a great air of probability. "What can be more extraordinary," it is ſaid*, "than that a perſon, "of private birth and education, no fortune, no eminent qualities of body, which "have ſometimes, nor ſhining talents of mind, which have often raiſed men to the "higheſt dignities, ſhould have the courage to attempt and the abilities to execute "ſo extraordinary a deſign, as the ſubverting one of the moſt antient and beſt eſtab-"liſhed Monarchies in the world? That he ſhould have the power and boldneſs to "put his Prince and maſter to an open and infamous death? Should baniſh that nu-"merous and ſtrongly allied family? Cover all theſe temerities under a ſeeming obe-"dience to a Parliament, in whoſe ſervice he pretended to be retained? Trample "too upon that Parliament in their turn, and ſcornfully expel them ſo ſoon as they "gave him ground of diſſatisfaction? Erect in their place the dominion of the "ſaints, and gave reality to the moſt viſionary idea, which the heated imagination "of any fanatic was ever able to entertain? Suppreſs again that monſter in its in-"fancy, and openly ſet up himſelf above all things that ever were called ſovereign "in England? Overcome firſt all his enemies by arms, and all his friends after-"wards by artifice? Serve all parties patiently for a while, and command them "victoriouſly at laſt? Over-run each corner of the three nations, and ſubdue with "equal felicity, both the riches of the ſouth, and the poverty of the north? Be "feared and courted by all foreign Princes, and be adopted a brother to the gods "of the earth? Call together Parliaments with a word of his pen, and ſcatter "them again with the breath of his mouth? Reduce to ſubjection a warlike and "diſcontented nation, by means of a mutinous army? Command a mutinous army "by means of ſeditious and factious officers? Be humbly and daily petitioned, "that he would be pleaſed, at the rate of millions a year, to be hired as maſter of "thoſe who had hired him before to be their ſervant? Have the eſtates and lives "of three nations as much at his diſpoſal as was once the little inheritance of his "father, and be as noble and liberal in the ſpending of them? And laſtly (for "there is no end of enumerating every particular of his glory) with one word be-"queath all this power and ſplendor to his poſterity? Dye poſſeſſed of peace at "home and triumph abroad? Be buried among kings, and with more than re-"gal ſolemnity? And leave a name behind him not to be extinguiſhed but with "the whole world; which as it was too little for his praiſe, ſo might it have "been for his conqueſts, if the ſhort line of his mortal life could have ſtretched "out to the extent of his immortal deſigns?"

My intention is not to diſfigure this picture, drawn by ſo maſterly a hand: I ſhall only endeavour to remove from it ſomewhat of the marvellous; a circum-

* Cowley's Diſcourſes: This paſſage is altered in ſome particulars from the original.

ſtance which, on all occaſions, gives much ground for doubt and ſuſpicion. It ſeems to me, that the circumſtance of Cromwel's life, in which his abilities are principally diſcovered, is his riſing from a private ſtation, in oppoſition to ſo many rivals, ſo much advanced before him, to a high command and authority in the army. His great courage, his ſignal military talents, his eminent dexterity and addreſs were all requiſite for this important acquiſition. Yet will not this promotion appear the effect of ſupernatural abilities, when we conſider, that Fairfax himſelf, a private gentleman, who had not the advantage of a ſeat in Parliament, had, thro' the ſame ſteps, attained even a ſuperior rank, and, if endued with common capacity and penetration, had been able to retain it. To incite ſuch an army to rebellion againſt the Parliament, required no uncommon art or induſtry: To have kept them in obedience had been the more difficult enterprize. When the breach was once formed between the military and civil powers, a ſupreme and abſolute authority, from that moment, is devolved on the general; and if he is afterwards pleaſed to employ artifice or policy, it may be regarded, on moſt occaſions, as great condeſcenſion, if not as a ſuperfluous caution. That Comwel was ever able really to blind or over-reach, either the King or the Republicans, does not appear: As they poſſeſſed no means of reſiſting the force under his command, they were glad to temporize with him, and, by ſeeming to be deceived, wait for opportunities of freeing themſelves from his dominion. If he ſeduced the military fanatics, it is to be conſidered, that their intereſt and his evidently concurred, that their ignorance and low education expoſed them to the groſſeſt impoſition, and that he himſelf was at bottom as frantic an enthuſiaſt as the worſt of them, and, in order to obtain their confidence, needed but to diſplay thoſe vulgar and ridiculous habits, which he had early acquired, and on which he ſet ſo high a value. An army is ſo forcible, and at the ſame time ſo coarſe a weapon, that any hand which wields it, may, without much dexterity, perform any operation, and attain any aſcendant in human ſociety.

THE domeſtic adminiſtration of Cromwel, tho' it diſcovers great ability, was conducted without any plan either of liberty or arbitrary power: Perhaps, his difficult ſituation admitted of neither. His foreign enterprizes, tho' full of intrepidity, were pernicious to national intereſt, and ſeem more the reſult of impetuous fury or narrow prejudices, than of cool foreſight and deliberation. An eminent perſonage, however, he was in many reſpects, and even a ſuperior genius; but unequal and irregular in his operations. And tho' not defective in any talent, except that of elocution, the abilities, which in him were moſt admirable, and which moſt contributed to his marvellous ſucceſs, were the magnanimous reſolution of his enterprizes, and his peculiar dexterity in diſcovering the characters, and practiſing on the weakneſſes of mankind.

Chap. II. 1658.

If we ſurvey the moral character of Cromwel with that indulgence, which is due to the blindneſs and infirmities of the human ſpecies, we ſhall not be inclined to load his memory with ſuch violent reproaches as thoſe which his enemies uſually throw upon it. Amidſt the paſſion and prejudices of that time, that he ſhould prefer the parliamentary to the royal cauſe, will not appear very extraordinary; ſince, even at preſent, many men of ſenſe and knowledge are diſpoſed to think, that the queſtion with regard to the juſtice of the quarrel may be regarded as very doubtful and ambiguous. The murder of the King, the moſt atrocious of all his actions, was to him covered under a mighty cloud of republican and fanatical illuſions; and it is not impoſſible, that he might believe it, as many others did, the moſt meritorious action, which he could perform. His ſubſequent uſurpation was the effect of neceſſity, as well as of ambition; nor is it eaſy to ſee, how the various factions could at that time have been reſtrained, without a mixture of military and arbitrary authority. The private deportment of Cromwel, as a ſon, a huſband, a father, a friend, is expoſed to no conſiderable cenſure, if it does not rather merit praiſe. And upon the whole, his character does not appear more extraordinary and unuſual by the mixture of ſo much abſurdity with ſo much penetration, than by his tempering ſuch violent ambition and ſuch enraged fanaticiſm with ſo much regard to juſtice and humanity.

Cromwel was in the fifty-ninth year of his age when he died. He was of a robuſt frame of body, and of a manly, tho' not an agreeable aſpect. He left only two ſons, Richard and Henry; and three daughters; one married to general Fleetwood, another to lord Falconbrige, a third to lord Rich. His father died when he was young. His mother lived till after he was Protector; and, contrary to her orders, he buried her with great pomp in Weſtminſter Abbey. She could not be perſuaded, that his power or perſon was ever in ſecurity. At every noiſe, which ſhe heard, ſhe exclaimed, that her ſon was murdered; and was never ſatisfied that he was alive, if ſhe did not receive frequent viſits from him. She was a decent woman; and by her frugality and induſtry had raiſed and educated a numerous family upon a ſmall fortune. She had even been obliged to ſet up a brewery at Huntington, which ſhe managed to good advantage. Hence Cromwel, in the invectives of that age, is often ſtigmatized with the name of the Brewer. Ludlow, by way of inſult, mentions the great acceſſion, which he would receive to his royal revenues upon his mother's death, who poſſeſſed a jointure of ſixty pounds a year upon his eſtate. She was of a good family, of the name of Stuart; remotely allied, as is by ſome ſuppoſed, to the royal family.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

Richard acknowleged Protector.——A Parliament.——Cabal of Wallingford Houſe.——Richard depoſed.——Long Parliament or Rump reſtored.——Conſpiracy of the Royaliſts.——Inſurrection.——Suppreſſed.——Parliament expelled.——Committee of ſafety.——Foreign Affairs.——General Monk.——Monk declares for the Parliament.——Parliament reſtored.——Monk enters London.——Declares for a free Parliament.——Secluded Members reſtored.——Long Parliament diſſolved.——New Parliament.——The Reſtoration.——Manners and Arts.

ALL the arts of Cromwel's policy had been ſo often practiſed, that they began to loſe their effect; and his authority inſtead of being confirmed by time and ſucceſs, ſeemed every day to become more uncertain and precarious. His friends the moſt cloſely connected with him[illegible] his counſellors the moſt truſted, were entering into cabals againſt his au[illegible]ith all his penetration into the characters of men, he could not f[illegible]ters, on whom he could rely. Men of ſtrict probity and honour, [illegible]ld not ſubmit to be inſtruments of an uſurpation, violent and illega[illegible]who were free from the reſtraint of principle, might betray, for intereſt, that [illegible], in which, from no better motives, they had inliſted themſelves. Even thoſe, on whom he conferred any favour, never eſteemed the recompence ſufficient for the ſacrifices, which they made to obtain it: Whoever was refuſed any demand, juſtified his anger by the ſpecious colours of conſcience and of duty. Such difficulties ſurrounded the Protector, that his dying at ſo critical a time, is deemed by many the moſt fortunate circumſtance that ever attended him; and it was thought, that all his courage and dexterity could not much longer have extended his uſurped adminiſtration. 1658.

BUT when that potent hand was removed, which conducted the government, every one expected a ſudden diſſolution of the unweildy and ill-jointed fabric. Richard, a young man of no experience, educated in the country, accuſtomed to a retired life, unacquainted with the officers and unknown to them, recommended by no military exploits, endeared by no familiarities, could not long, it was thought, maintain that authority, which his father had acquired by ſo many valor-

Chap. III. 1658.

ous atchievements, and ſuch ſignal ſucceſſes. And when it was obſerved, that he poſſeſſed only the virtues of private life, which in his ſituation were ſo many vices; that indolence, incapacity, irreſolution attended his facility and good nature; the various hope of men were excited by the expectation of ſome great event or revolution. For ſome time, however, the public was diſappointed in this opinion. The council recognized the ſucceſſion of Richard: Fleetwood, in whoſe favour, it was ſuppoſed, Cromwel had formerly made a will, renounced all claim or pretenſion to the Protectorſhip: Henry, Richard's brother, who governed Ireland with great popularity, enſured him the obedience of that kingdom: Monk, whoſe authority was well eſtabliſhed in Scotland, being much attached to his family, immediately proclaimed the new Protector: The army, every where, the fleet, acknowleged his title: Above ninety addreſſes, from the counties and moſt conſiderable corporations, congratulated him on his acceſſion, in all the terms of dutiful allegiance: Foreign miniſters were forward in paying him the uſual compliments: And Richard, whoſe moderate, unambitious character, never would have led him to contend for empire, was tempted to accept of ſo rich a ſucceſſion, which ſeemed to be tendered to him, by the conſent of all mankind.

Richard acknowleged Protector.

IT was found neceſſary to call a Parliament, in order to furniſh ſupplies, both for the ordinary adminiſtration, and for fulfilling thoſe engagements with foreign Princes, particularly Sweden, into which the laſt Protector had entered. In hopes of obtaining great influence on elections, the antient right was reſtored to all the ſmall burroughs; and the counties were allowed no more than their accuſtomed members. The Houſe of Peers or the other Houſe conſiſted of the ſame perſons, who had been nominated by Oliver.

A Parliament.

1659.

ALL the Commons, at firſt, ſigned without heſitation an engagement not to alter the preſent government. They next proceeded to examine the Humble Petition and Advice; and after great oppoſition and many vehement diſputes, it was, at laſt, with much difficulty, carried by the court-party to confirm it. An acknowlegement too of the authority of the other Houſe was extorted from them; tho' it was reſolved not to treat this houſe of Peers with any greater reſpect than they ſhould return to the Commons. A declaration was alſo made, that the eſtabliſhment of the other Houſe ſhould no way prejudice the right of ſuch of the antient peers as had, from the beginning of the war, adhered to the Parliament. In all parliamentary tranſactions, the oppoſition among the commons was ſo conſiderable, and the debates were ſo prolonged, as much retarded all buſineſs, and gave great alarm to the partizans of the young Protector.

7th of January.

BUT there was another quarter from which greater dangers were juſtly apprehended. The moſt conſiderable officers of the army, and even Fleetwood, brother

ther in law to the Protector, were entering into cabals againſt him. No character in human ſociety is more dangerous than that of the Fanatic; becauſe, if attended with weak judgment, he is expoſed to the ſuggeſtions of others; if ſupported by more diſcernment, he is entirely governed by his own illuſions, which ſanctify his moſt ſelfiſh views and paſſions. Fleetwood was of the former ſpecies; and being extremely addicted to a Republic and even to the Fifth Monarchy or dominion of the ſaints, it was eaſy for thoſe, who had inſinuated themſelves into his confidence, to inſtil diſguſts againſt the dignity of Protector. The whole Republican party in the army, which were ſtill conſiderable, Fitz, Maſon, Moſs, Farley, united themſelves to that general. The officers too of the ſame party, whom Cromwel had diſcarded, Overton, Ludlow, Rich, Okey, Alured, began to appear, and to recover that authority, which had been only for a time ſuſpended. A party likewiſe, who found themſelves eclipſed in Richard's favour, Sydenham, Kelſey, Berry, Haines, joined the cabal of the others. Even Deſborow, the Protector's uncle, lent his authority to that faction. But above all, the intrigues of Lambert, who was now rouzed from his retreat, inflamed all theſe dangerous humours, and threatened the nation with ſome great convulſion. All the diſcontented officers eſtabliſhed their meetings at Fleetwood's lodgings; and becauſe he dwelt in Wallingford houſe, the party received a denomination from that place. Chap. III. 1659. Cabal of Wallingford Houſe.

Richard, who poſſeſſed neither reſolution nor penetration, was prevailed with to give an unguarded conſent for calling a council of general officers, who might make him propoſals, as they pretended, for the good of the army. No ſooner were they aſſembled than they voted a Remonſtrance. They there lamented, that *the good old cauſe*, as they termed it, that is, the cauſe, for which they had engaged againſt the King, was entirely neglected; and they propoſed as a remedy, that the whole military power, the command of the armies, ſhould be entruſted to ſome perſon, in whom they might all confide. The city militia, influenced by two aldermen, Tichburn and Ireton, expreſſed the ſame reſolution of adhering to *the good old cauſe*.

The Protector was very juſtly alarmed at thoſe movements among the officers. The perſons, in whom he chiefly confided, were all of them, excepting Broghill, men of civil characters and profeſſions; Fiennes, Thurloe, Whitlocke, Wolſeley; who could only aſſiſt him with their advice and opinion. He poſſeſſed none of thoſe arts, which were proper to gain an enthuſiaſtic army. Murmurs being thrown out againſt ſome promotions, which he had made, *Would you have me*, ſaid he, *prefer none but the godly? Here is Dick Ingoldſby*, continued he, *who*

can

Chap. III. 1659.

can neither pray nor preach; yet will I truſt him before ye all *. This imprudence gave great offence to the pretended ſaints. The other qualities of the Protector were laudable: He was of a gentle, humane, and generous diſpoſition. Some of his party offering to put an end to theſe intrigues by the death of Lambert, if he would give them authority, he declared, that he would not purchaſe power or dominion by ſuch ſanguinary meaſures.

THE Parliament was no leſs alarmed at the military cabals. They voted, that there ſhould be no meeting or general council of officers without the Protector's conſent, or by his orders. This vote brought affairs immediately to a rupture. The officers haſtened to Richard, and demanded of him the diſſolution of the Parliament. Deſborow, a man of a clowniſh and brutal nature, threatened him if he ſhould refuſe. The Protector wanted the reſolution to deny, and poſſeſſed little ability to reſiſt. The Parliament was diſſolved; and by the ſame act the Protector was by every one conſidered as effectually dethroned. Soon after, he ſigned his diſmiſſion in form.

22d of April. Richard depoſed.

HENRY, the deputy of Ireland, was endowed with the ſame moderate diſpoſition as Richard; but as he enjoyed more vigour and capacity, it was apprehended, that he might make reſiſtance. His popularity in Ireland was great; and even his perſonal authority, notwithſtanding his youth, was conſiderable. Had his ambition been very eager, he had, no doubt, been able to create diſturbance: But being threatened by Sir Hardreſs Waller, Colonel John Jones, and other officers, he very quietly reſigned his command, and retired to England. He had once entertained thoughts, which he had not reſolution to execute, of proclaiming the King in Dublin †.

THUS fell, ſuddenly and from an enormous height, but, by a rare fortune, without any hurt or injury, the family of the Cromwels. Richard continued to poſſeſs an eſtate, which was very moderate, and burthened too with a large debt, which he had contracted for the interment of his father. After the reſtoration, tho' he remained unmoleſted, he thought proper to travel for ſome years; and at Pezenas in Languedoc he was introduced, under a borrowed name, to the Prince of Conti. That Prince, talking of Engliſh affairs, broke out into admiration of Cromwel's courage and capacity. "But as for that poor pitiful fellow, Richard," ſaid he, "what has become of him? How could he be ſuch a blockhead as to "reap no greater benefit from all his father's crimes and ſucceſſes?" Richard extended his peaceful and quiet life to an extreme old age, and died not till the latter end of Queen Anne's reign. His ſocial virtues, more valuable than the

* Ludlow. † Carte's Collections, vol. ii. p. 243.

greateſt

greateſt capacity, met with a recompence, more precious than noiſy fame and more ſuitable, contentment and tranquillity. Chap. III. 1659.

THE council of officers, now poſſeſſed of ſupreme authority, deliberated what form of government they ſhould eſtabliſh. Many of them ſeemed inclined to exerciſe the power of the ſword in the moſt open manner: But as it was apprehended, that the people would with great difficulty be induced to pay taxes, levied by arbitrary will and pleaſure; it was agreed to preſerve the ſhadow of civil adminiſtration, and revive the long Parliament, which had been expelled by Cromwel. They could not be diſſolved, it was aſſerted, but by their own conſent; and violence had interrupted, but was not able to deſtroy, their right to government. The officers alſo expected, that as theſe members had ſufficiently felt their own weakneſs, they would be contented to act in ſubordination to the military commanders, and would thenceforth allow all the authority to remain where the power was ſo viſibly veſted.

THE officers applied to Lenthal, the ſpeaker, and propoſed to him, that the Parliament ſhould reſume their ſeats. Lenthal was a man of a low and timid ſpirit; and being uncertain what iſſue might attend theſe councils, was deſirous of evading the propoſal. He replied, that he could by no means comply with the deſire of the officers; being engaged in a buſineſs of far greater importance to himſelf, which he could not omit on any account, becauſe it concerned the ſalvation of his own ſoul. The officers preſſed him to know what it might be. He was preparing, he ſaid, to participate of the Lord's Supper, which he reſolved to take the next ſabbath day. They inſiſted, that mercy was preferable to ſacrifice, and that he could not better prepare himſelf for that great duty, than by contributing to the public good. All their remonſtrances had no effect. However, on the appointed day, the ſpeaker, being informed, that a quorum of the Houſe was likely to meet, thought proper, notwithſtanding the ſalvation of his ſoul, as Ludlow obſerves, to join them; and the Houſe immediately proceeded upon buſineſs. The ſecluded members attempted, but in vain, to reſume their ſeats among them.

THE numbers of this Parliament were very ſmall, little exceeding forty members: Their authority in the nation, ever ſince they had been purged by the army, was extremely diminiſhed; and after their expulſion, had been totally annihilated: But being all of them men of violent ambition; ſome of them men of experience and capacity; they were reſolved, ſince they enjoyed the title of the ſupreme authority, and obſerved that ſome appearance of a Parliament was requiſite for the purpoſes of the army, not to act a ſubordinate part to thoſe who acknowleged themſelves their ſervants. They choſe a council, in which they took care that the officers of Wallingford Houſe ſhould not be the majority: They appointed Long Parliament or Rump reſtored.

Chap. III. 1659.

Fleetwood to be lieutenant-general, but inſerted in his commiſſion, that it ſhould only continue during the pleaſure of the Houſe: They choſe ſeven perſons, who ſhould nominate to ſuch commands as became vacant: And they voted, that all commiſſions ſhould be received from the ſpeaker, and be ſigned by him in the name of the Parliament. Theſe precautions, the tendency of which was viſible, gave great diſguſt to the general officers; and their diſcontent would have broke out into ſome reſolution, fatal to the Parliament, had it not been checked by apprehenſions of danger from the common enemy.

THE bulk of the nation conſiſted of Royaliſts and Preſbyterians; and to both theſe parties the dominion of the pretended Parliament had ever been to the laſt degree odious. When this Parliament was expelled by Cromwel, contempt had ſucceeded to hatred; and no reſerve had been uſed in expreſſing the utmoſt deriſion againſt the impotent ambition of theſe uſurpers. Seeing them reinſtated in authority, all orders of men felt the higheſt indignation; together with apprehenſions leſt ſuch tyrannical rulers ſhould exert their power in taking vengeance upon their enemies, by whom they had been ſo openly inſulted. A ſecret reconcilement therefore, was made between the rival parties; and it was agreed, that, laying aſide former enmities, all efforts ſhould be uſed for the overthrow of the Rump: For ſo they called the Parliament, in alluſion to that part of the animal body. The Preſbyterians, ſenſible, from experience, that their paſſion for liberty, however laudable, had carried them into unwarrantable extremes, were willing to lay aſide former jealouſies, and, at all hazards, to reſtore the royal family. The nobility, the gentry bent their moſt paſſionate endeavours to the ſame enterprize, by which alone they could be redeemed from ſlavery. And no man was ſo remote from party, ſo indifferent to public good, as not to feel the moſt ardent wiſhes, for the diſſolution of that tyranny, which, whether the civil or the military part of it be conſidered, was equally oppreſſive and ruinous to the nation.

Conſpiracy of the Royaliſts.

MORDAUNT, who had ſo narrowly eſcaped on his trial, before the High Court of Juſtice, ſeemed rather animated than daunted with paſt danger; and having, by his reſolute behaviour, obtained the higheſt confidence of the royal party, he was now become the center of all their conſpiracies. In many counties, a reſolution was taken to riſe in arms. Lord Willoughby of Parham and Sir Horatio Townſhend undertook to ſecure Lynne; General Maſſey engaged to ſeize Gloceſter; Lord Newport, Littleton, and other gentlemen conſpired to take poſſeſſion of Shrewſbury; Sir George Booth of Cheſter; Sir Thomas Middleton of North-Wales; Arundel, Pollard, Granville, Trelawney, of Plymouth and Exeter. A day was appointed for the execution of all theſe enterprizes. And the King, attended by the Duke of York, had arrived ſecretly at Calais, with a reſolution of putting himſelf

himſelf at the head of his loyal ſubjects. The French had promiſed to ſupply him with a ſmall body of forces, in order to countenance the inſurrections of the Engliſh. Chap. III. 1659.

This combination was diſconcerted by the infidelity of Sir Richard Willis. That traitor continued with the Parliament the ſame correſpondence, which he had begun with Cromwel. He had engaged to reveal all conſpiracies, ſo far as to deſtroy their effect; but reſerved to himſelf, if he pleaſed, the power of concealing the conſpirators. He took care never to name any of the old, genuine cavaliers, who had zealouſly adhered, and were reſolved ſtill to adhere, to the royal cauſe in every fortune. Theſe men he eſteemed; theſe he even loved. He betrayed only the new converts among the Preſbyterians, or ſuch lukewarm Royaliſts, as, diſcouraged with their diſappointments, were reſolved to expoſe themſelves to no more hazards. A lively proof, how impoſſible it is, even for the moſt corrupted minds, to diveſt themſelves of all regard to morality and ſocial duty!

Many of the conſpirators in the different counties were thrown into priſon: Others, aſtoniſhed at ſuch ſymptoms of ſecret treachery, left their houſes or remained quiet: The moſt tempeſtuous weather prevailed during the whole time appointed for the rendezvous; inſomuch that ſome found it impoſſible to join their friends, and others were diſmayed with fear and ſuperſtition at an incident ſo unuſual during the ſummer ſeaſon. Of all the projects, the only one which took effect was that of Sir George Booth for the ſeizing Cheſter. The earl of Derby, lord Herbert of Cherbury, Mr. Lee, Colonel Morgan took part in his enterprize. Sir William Middleton joined him with ſome troops from North Wales; and the inſurgents were powerful enough to ſubdue all in that neighbourhood, who ventured to oppoſe them. In their declaration they made no mention of the King: They only demanded a free and full Parliament. July. Inſurrection.

The Rump were juſtly alarmed. How combuſtible the materials were, they well knew; and the fire was now fallen among them. Booth was of a family eminently preſbyterian; and his conjunction with the Royaliſts they regarded as a moſt dangerous ſymptom. They had many officers, whoſe fidelity they could more depend upon than that of Lambert: But there was no one in whoſe vigilance and capacity they repoſed ſuch confidence. They commiſſioned him to ſuppreſs the inſurgents. He made incredible haſte. Booth imprudently ventured himſelf out of the walls of Cheſter, and expoſed, in the open field, his raw troops againſt theſe hardy veterans. He was ſoon routed and taken priſoner. His whole party were diſperſed. And the Parliament had no farther occupation than to fill all the priſons with their open or ſecret enemies. Deſigns were even entertained of tranſporting the loyal families to Barbadoes, Jamaica, and the other colonies, leſt they ſhould propagate in England children of the ſame malignant affections with themſelves. Suppreſſed.

Chap. III. 1659.

THIS ſucceſs haſtened the ruin of the Parliament. Lambert, at the head of a body of troops, was no leſs dangerous to them than Booth. A thouſand pounds, which they ſent him to buy a jewel, were employed by him in liberalities to his officers. At his inſtigation they drew up a petition, and tranſmitted it to Fleetwood, a weak man, and an honeſt, if ſincerity in folly deſerves that honourable name. The import of this petition was, that Fleetwood ſhould be made commander in chief, Lambert major-general, Deſborow lieutenant-general of the horſe, Monk major-general of the foot. To which, a demand was added, that no officer ſhould be diſmiſſed from his command but by a court-martial.

THE Parliament, alarmed at the danger, immediately caſhiered Lambert, Deſborow, Berry, Clarke, Barrow, Kerſey, Cobbet. Sir Arthur Hazelrig propoſed the impeachment of Lambert for high treaſon. Fleetwood's commiſſion was vacated, and the command of the army was veſted in ſeven perſons, of whom that General was one. The Parliament voted, that they would have no more general officers. And they declared it high treaſon to levy any money without conſent of Parliament.

BUT theſe votes were feeble weapons in oppoſition to the ſwords of the ſoldiery. Lambert drew ſome troops together, in order to decide the controverſy. Okey, who was leading his regiment to the aſſiſtance of the Parliament, was deſerted by them. Morley and Moſs brought their regiments into Palace-Yard, reſolute to oppoſe the violence of Lambert. But that artful general knew an eaſy way of diſappointing them. He placed his ſoldiers in the ſtreets which led to Weſtminſter-Hall. When the ſpeaker came in his coach, he ordered the horſes to be turned, and very civilly conducted him home. The other members were in like manner intercepted. And the two regiments in Palace-Yard, finding themſelves expoſed to deriſion, peaceably retired to their quarters. A very little before this bold enterprize, a ſolemn faſt had been kept by the army; and it is remarked, that this ceremony was the uſual prelude to every ſignal violence which they committed.

13th of October.

Parliament expelled.

THE officers found themſelves again inveſted with ſupreme authority, of which they intended for ever to retain the ſubſtance, however they might beſtow on others the empty ſhadow or appearance. They elected a committee of twenty-three perſons, of whom ſeven were officers. Theſe they pretended to inveſt with ſovereign authority; and called them a Committee of Safety. They ſpoke every where of ſummoning a Parliament, choſen by the people; but they really took ſome ſteps towards aſſembling a military Parliament, compoſed of officers, elected from every regiment in the ſervice *. Throughout the three kingdoms there prevailed nothing but the melancholy fears, to the nobility and gentry, of a bloody maſſacre

26th of October.

Committee of Safety.

* Ludlow.

and

and extermination; to the reſt of the people, of perpetual ſervitude, beneath thoſe ſanctified robbers, whoſe union and whoſe diviſions would be equally deſtructive; and who, under pretence of ſuperior illuminations, would ſoon extirpate, if poſſible, all private morality, as they had already all public law and juſtice, from the Britiſh dominions. Chap. III. 1659.

During the time that England continued in this diſtracted condition, the other kingdoms of Europe were haſtening towards a compoſure of thoſe differences, by which they had ſo long been agitated. The Parliament, while it preſerved authority, inſtead of following the deſtructive politics of Cromwel, and lending aſſiſtance to the conquering Swede, embraced the prudent maxims of the Dutch Commonwealth, and reſolved, in conjunction with that State, to mediate by force of arms an accommodation between the northern crowns. Montague was ſent with a ſquadron to the Baltic, and carried with him as ambaſſador Algernon Sidney, the famous Republican. Sidney found the Swediſh Monarch employed in the ſiege of Copenhagen, the capital of his enemy; and was highly pleaſed, that, with a Roman arrogance, he could check the progreſs of royal victories, and diſplay in ſo ſignal a manner the ſuperiority of freedom above tyranny. With the higheſt indignation, the ambitious Prince was obliged to ſubmit to the imperious mediation of the two Commonwealths. "'Tis cruel," ſaid he, "that laws ſhould be preſcribed me by parricides and pedlars." But his whole army was encloſed in an iſland, and might be ſtarved by the combined ſquadrons of England and Holland. He was obliged therefore to quit his prey, when he had ſo nearly got poſſeſſion of it; and having agreed to a pacification with Denmark, retired into his own country, where he ſoon after died. Foreign affairs.

The wars between France and Spain were alſo concluded by the treaty of the Pyrenees. Theſe bloody animoſities had long been carried on between the rival ſtates, even while governed by a ſiſter and brother, who cordially loved and eſteemed each other. But politics, which had ſo long prevailed over theſe friendly affections, now at laſt yielded to their influence; and never was the triumph more full and complete. The Spaniſh Low Countries, if not every part of that Monarchy, lay almoſt entirely at the mercy of its enemy. Broken armies, diſordered finances, ſlow and irreſolute councils; by theſe reſources alone were the diſperſed provinces of Spain defended againſt the vigorous power of France. But the Queen Regent, anxious for the fate of her brother, employed her authority with the cardinal to ſtop the progreſs of the French conqueſts, and put an end to a quarrel, which, being commenced by ambition, and attended with victory, was at laſt concluded with moderation. The young Monarch of France, tho' aſpiring and warlike in his character, was at this time entirely

Chap. III. 1659.

entirely occupied in the pleaſures of love and gallantry, and had paſſively reſigned the reins of the empire in the hands of his politic miniſter. And he remained an unconcerned ſpectator; while an opportunity for conqueſt was parted with, which he never was able, during the whole courſe of his active reign, fully to retrieve.

THE miniſters of the two crowns, Mazarine and Don Louis de Haro, met at the foot of the Pyrenees, in the Iſle of Pheaſants, a place which was ſuppoſed to belong to neither kingdom. The negotiation being brought to an iſſue by frequent conferences between the miniſters, the Monarchs themſelves agreed to a congreſs; and theſe two ſplendid courts appeared in their full luſtre amidſt thoſe ſavage mountains. Philip brought his daughter, Mary Thereſe, along with him; and giving her in marriage to his nephew, Louis, endeavoured to cement by this new tye the incompatible intereſts of the two monarchies. The French King made a ſolemn renounciation of every ſucceſſion, which might accrue to him in right of his ſpouſe; a vain formality, too weak to reſtrain the ungoverned ambition of Princes.

THE affairs of England were in ſo great diſorder, that it was not poſſible to comprehend that kingdom in the treaty, or adjuſt meaſures with a power, which was in ſuch inceſſant fluctuation. The King, reduced to deſpair by the failure of all enterprizes for his reſtoration, was reſolved to try the weak reſource of foreign ſuccours; and he went to the Pyrenees at the time when the two miniſters were in the midſt of their negotiations. Don Louis received him with that generous civility, peculiar to his nation; and expreſſed great inclination, had the low condition of Spain allowed him, to give aſſiſtance to the diſtreſſed Monarch. The cautious Mazarine, pleading the alliance of France with the Engliſh Commonwealth, refuſed even to ſee him; and tho' it is pretended, that the King offered to marry the Cardinal's niece, he could, for the preſent, obtain nothing but empty profeſſions of reſpect and proteſtations of ſervice. The condition of that Monarch, to all the world, ſeemed totally deſperate. His friends had been baffled in every attempt for his ſervice: The ſcaffold had often ſtreamed with the blood of the moſt active Royaliſts: The ſpirits of many were broke with tedious impriſonments: The eſtates of all were burthened by the fines and confiſcations which had been levied from them: None durſt openly avow themſelves of that party: And ſo ſmall did their number ſeem to a ſuperficial view, that even ſhould the nation recover its liberty, which was eſteemed nowiſe probable, it was judged uncertain what form of government it would embrace. But amidſt all theſe gloomy proſpects, fortune, by a ſurprizing revolution, was now paving the way for the King to mount in peace

peace and triumph the throne of his anceſtors. It was by the prudence and loyalty of general Monk, that this happy change was at laſt accompliſhed. Chap. III. 1659.

GEORGE MONK, to whom the fate was reſerved of re-eſtabliſhing monarchy, and finiſhing the bloody diſſentions of the three kingdoms, was the ſecond ſon of a family in Devonſhire, antient and honourable, but lately, from too great hoſpitality and expence, ſomewhat fallen to decay. He betook himſelf very early in his youth, to the profeſſion of arms; and was engaged in the unfortunate expeditions to Cadiz and the Iſle of Rhé. After England had concluded peace with all its neighbours, he ſought military experience in the Low Countries, the great ſchool of war to all the European nations; and he roſe to the command of a company under lord Goring. This company conſiſted of 200 men, of whom a hundred were volunteers, often gentlemen of family and eſtate, ſometimes noblemen, who lived upon their own fortunes in a ſplendid manner. Such a military turn at that time prevailed among the Engliſh. General Monk.

WHEN the ſound of war was firſt heard in this iſland, Monk returned to England, partly deſirous of promotion in his native country, partly diſguſted with ſome ill uſage from the States, of which he found reaſon to complain. Upon the Scots pacification, he was employed by the earl of Leiceſter againſt the Iriſh rebels; and having obtained a regiment, was ſoon taken notice of, for his military ſkill and for his calm and deliberate valour. Without oſtentation, expence, or careſſes, merely by his humane and equal temper, he gained the good-will of all the ſoldiery; and with a mixture of familiarity and affection, they uſually called him *honeſt George Monk*; an honourable appellation, which they ſtill continued to him, even during his greateſt elevation. He was remarkable for his moderation in party; and while all around him were enflamed into rage againſt the oppoſite faction, he fell under ſuſpicion from the candour and tranquility of his behaviour. When the Iriſh army was called over into England, ſurmiſes of this kind had been ſo far credited, that he had even been ſuſpended from his command, and ordered to Oxford, that he might anſwer the charge laid againſt him. His eſtabliſhed character for truth and ſincerity here ſtood him in great ſtead; and upon his earneſt proteſtations and delarations, he was ſoon reſtored to his regiment, which he joined at the ſiege of Nantwich. The very next day after his arrival, Fairfax attacked and defeated the Royaliſts, commanded by Biron; and took colonel Monk priſoner. He was ſent to the Tower, where he endured, above two years, all the rigors of poverty and confinement. The King, however, was ſo mindful as to ſend him, notwithſtanding his own difficulties, a preſent of 100 guineas; but it was not till after the Royaliſts were totally ſubdued, that he recovered his liberty. Monk, however diſtreſſed, had always refuſed the moſt inviting offers from the Parliament:

But

Chap. III. 1659.

But Cromwel, ſenſible of his merit, having engaged him to engage in the wars againſt the Iriſh, who were conſidered as rebels both by King and Parliament; he was not unwilling to repair his broken fortunes by accepting a command, which, he flattered himſelf, was reconcilable to the ſtricteſt principles of honour. Having once engaged with the Parliament, he was obliged to obey orders; and found himſelf neceſſitated to fight both againſt the Marqueſs of Ormond in Ireland, and againſt the King himſelf in Scotland. Upon the reduction of this laſt kingdom, Monk was left with the ſupreme command; and by the equality and juſtice of his adminiſtration he was able to give contentment to that reſtleſs people, now reduced to ſubjection by a nation whom they hated. No leſs acceptable was his authority to the officers and ſoldiers; and foreſeeing, that the good will of the army under his command might ſome time be of great ſervice to him, he had, with much care and ſucceſs, cultivated their friendſhip.

THE connexions, which he had formed with Cromwel, his benefactor, preſerved him faithful to Richard, who had been enjoined by his father to follow in every thing the directions of general Monk. When the long Parliament was reſtored, Monk, who was not prepared for oppoſition, acknowledged their authority, and was continued in his command, from which it would not have been ſafe to attempt the diſlodging him. After the army had expelled the Parliament, he proteſted againſt the violence, and reſolved, as he pretended, to vindicate their invaded privileges. Deeper deſigns, either in the King's favour or his own, were from the beginning ſuſpected to be the motive of his actions.

Monk declares for the Parliament.

A RIVALSHIP had long ſubſiſted between him and Lambert: and every body ſaw the reaſon why he oppoſed himſelf to the advancement of that ambitious general, by whoſe ſucceſs his own authority, he knew, would ſoon be ſubverted. But little friendſhip had ever been maintained between him and the parliamentary leaders; and it ſeemed nowiſe probable, that he intended to employ his induſtry and ſpend his blood for the advancement of one enemy above another. How early he entertained deſigns for the King's reſtoration, we know not with certainty: It is likely, that, as ſoon as Richard was depoſed, he foreſaw, that, without ſuch an expedient, it would be impoſſible ever to bring the nation to a regular ſettlement. His elder and younger brothers were entirely devoted to the royal cauſe: The Granvilles, his near relations, and all the reſt of his kindred, were in the ſame intereſt: He himſelf was intoxicated with no fumes of enthuſiaſm, and had maintained no connexions with any of the fanatical tribe. His early engagements had been with the King, and he had left that ſervice without receiving any diſguſt from the royal family. Since he had inliſted himſelf with the oppoſite party, he had been guilty of no violence or rigor, which might ren-

der

der him obnoxious. His return, therefore, to loyalty was eaſy and open; and nothing could be ſuppoſed to counterbalance his natural propenſity to that meaſure, except the views of his own elevation, and the proſpect of uſurping the ſame grandeur and authority, which had been aſſumed by Cromwel. But from ſuch exorbitant, if not impoſſible projects, the natural tranquillity and moderation of his temper, the calmneſs and ſolidity of his genius, and his limited capacity, not to mention his age, now upon the decline, ſeem to have ſet him at a great diſtance. Cromwel himſelf, he always aſſerted *, could not long have maintained his uſurpation; and any other perſon, even equal to him in genius, it was obvious, would now find it more difficult to practiſe arts, of which every one, from experience, was ſufficiently aware. It is more agreeable, therefore, to reaſon as well as candor to ſuppoſe, that Monk, ſo ſoon as he put himſelf in movement, had entertained views of effectuating the King's reſtoration; nor ought any objections, derived from his profound ſilence even to Charles himſelf, be regarded as conſiderable. His temper was naturally reſerved, his circumſtances required diſſimulation, the King he knew was ſurrounded with ſpies and traitors; and upon the whole it ſeems hard to interpret that conduct, which ought to exalt our idea of his prudence, as a diſparagement of his probity. Chap. III. 1659.

Sir John Granville, hoping that the general would engage in the King's ſervice, ſent into Scotland his younger brother, a clergyman, Dr. Monk, who carried him a letter and invitation from the King. When the doctor arrived, he found, that his brother was then holding a council of officers, and was not to be ſeen for ſome hours. In the mean time, he was received and entertained by Price, the general's chaplain, a man of probity, as well as a partizan of the King's. The doctor having an entire confidence in the chaplain, talked very freely with him about the object of his journey, and engaged him, if there ſhould be occaſion, to ſecond his applications. At laſt, the general arrives; the brothers embrace; and after ſome preliminary converſation, the doctor opens his buſineſs. Monk interrupts him to know, whether he had ever before to any body mentioned the ſubject of his journey. "To no body," replied his brother, "but to Price, whom I know to be entirely in your confidence." The general, altering his countenance, changed the diſcourſe; and would enter into no farther confidence with him, but ſent him away with the firſt opportunity. He would not truſt his own brother the moment he knew that he had diſcloſed the ſecret; tho' to a man whom he himſelf could have truſted †.

* Gumble's life of Monk, p. 93.

† Lord Lanſdown's defence of general Monk.

Chap. III. 1659. His conduct in all other particulars was full of the ſame reſerve and prudence; and no leſs was requiſite for effecting the difficult work which he had undertaken. All the officers in his army, of whom he entertained any ſuſpicion, he immediately caſhiered: Cobbet, who had been ſent by the Committee of Safety, under pretence of communicating their reſolutions to Monk, but really with a view of debauching his army, he committed to cuſtody: He drew together the ſeveral ſcattered regiments: He ſummoned an aſſembly, ſomewhat reſembling a convention of eſtates in Scotland; and having communicated his reſolution of marching into England, he received from them a ſeaſonable, tho' no great ſupply of money.

Hearing that Lambert was advancing northward with his army, Monk ſent Cloberry and two other commiſſioners to London with large profeſſions of his inclination to peace, and with offers of terms for an accommodation. His chief aim was to obtain delay, and relax the preparations of his enemies. The Committee of Safety fell into the ſnare. A treaty was ſigned by the commiſſioners; but Monk refuſed to ratify it, and complained that his commiſſioners had exceeded their powers. He deſired however to enter into a new negotiation at Newcaſtle. The Committee willingly accepted this fallacious offer.

November. Meanwhile theſe military ſovereigns found themſelves ſurrounded on all hands with inextricable difficulties. The nation had fallen into a total anarchy; and by refuſing the payment of all taxes, reduced the army to the greateſt neceſſities. While Lambert's forces were aſſembling at Newcaſtle, Hazelrig and Morley took poſſeſſion of Portſmouth, and declared for the Parliament. A party ſent to ſuppreſs them, were perſwaded by their commander to join in the ſame declaration. The city apprentices roſe in a tumult, and demanded a free Parliament. Tho' they were ſuppreſſed by colonel Hewſon, a man who from the profeſſion of a cobler had riſen to a high rank in the army, the city ſtill diſcovered ſymptoms of the moſt dangerous diſcontent. It even eſtabliſhed a kind of ſeparate government, and aſſumed the ſupreme authority within itſelf. Admiral Lauſon with his ſquadron came into the river, and declared for the Parliament. Hazelrig and Morley, hearing of this important event, left Portſmouth, and advanced towards London. The regiments near that city, being ſollicited by their old officers, who had been caſhiered by the Committee of Safety, revolted again to the Parliament. Deſborow's regiment, being ſent by Lambert to ſupport his friends, no ſooner arrived at St. Albans, than it declared for the ſame aſſembly.

Fleetwood's hand was found too weak and unſtable to ſupport this ill-founded fabric, which, every where around him, was falling into ruins. When he received intelligence of any murmurs among the ſoldiers, he would fall upon his knees

knees in prayer, and could hardly be prevailed with to join the troops. Even when among them, in the midſt of any diſcourſe, he would invite them all to prayer, and put himſelf on his knees before them. If any of his friends exhorted him to more vigour, they could get no other anſwer, than that God had ſpit in his face, and would not hear him. Men now ceaſed to wonder, why Lambert had promoted him to the office of General, and had been contented himſelf with the ſecond command in the army. Chap. III. 1659.

LENTHAL, the ſpeaker, being invited by the officers, again aſſumed authority, and ſummoned together the Parliament, which twice before had been expelled with ſo much reproach and ignominy. As ſoon as aſſembled, they repealed their act againſt the payment of exciſe and cuſtoms; they appointed commiſſioners for aſſigning quarters to the army; and without taking any notice of Lambert, they ſent orders to the forces under his command immediately to repair to thoſe garriſons, which were appointed them. 26th of December. Parliament reſtored.

LAMBERT was now in a very diſconſolate condition. Monk, he ſaw, had paſſed the Tweed at Coldſtream, and was advancing upon them. His own ſoldiers deſerted him in great multitudes, and joined the enemy. Lord Fairfax too, he heard, had raiſed forces behind him, and poſſeſſed himſelf of York, without declaring his purpoſe. The laſt orders of the Parliament ſo entirely ſtripped him of his army, that there remained not with him above 100 horſe: All the reſt went to their quarters with quietneſs and reſignation; and himſelf was, ſome time after, committed to the Tower. The other officers of the army, who had formerly been caſhiered by the Parliament, and had reſumed their commands that they might ſubdue that aſſembly, were again caſhiered and confined to their own houſes. Sir Harry Vane and other members, who had concurred with the Committee of Safety, were ordered into a like confinement. And the Parliament now ſeemed to be again poſſeſſed of a more abſolute authority than ever, and to be without any danger of oppoſition or contradiction. 1660. 1ſt of January.

THE Republican party was at this time headed by two men, Hazelrig and Vane, who were of very oppoſite characters, and mortally hated each other. Hazelrig, who poſſeſſed greater authority in the Parliament, was haughty, imperious, precipitate, vain-glorious; without civility, without prudence; qualified only by his noiſy, pertinacious obſtinacy to acquire an aſcendant in public councils. Vane was noted, in all civil tranſactions, for temper, inſinuation, addreſs, and a profound judgment; in all religious ſpeculations, for folly and extravagance. He was a perfect enthuſiaſt; and fancying that he was certainly favoured with inſpiration, he deemed himſelf, to ſpeak in the language of the times, to be a

7

Chap. III. 1660.

man above ordinances, and by reaſon of his perfection, to be unlimited and unreſtrained by any rules, which govern inferior mortals. Theſe whimſies, mingling with pride, had ſo corrupted his excellent underſtanding, that ſometimes he thought himſelf the perſon deputed to reign on earth for a thouſand years over the whole congregation of the faithful *.

MONK, tho' informed of the reſtoration of the Parliament, from whom he received no orders, ſtill advanced with his army, which was near 6000 men: The ſcattered forces in England were above four times more numerous. Fairfax who had reſolved to declare for the King, not being able to make the General open his intentions, retired to his own houſe in Yorkſhire. In all the countries thro' which Monk paſſed, the prime gentry flocked to him with addreſſes, expreſſing their earneſt deſire, that he would be inſtrumental in reſtoring the nation to peace and tranquillity, and to the enjoyment of thoſe liberties, which by law were their birthright, but of which, during ſo many years, they had been fatally bereaved: And that, in order to this ſalutary purpoſe, he would prevail, either for the reſtoring thoſe members, who had been ſecluded before the King's death, or for the election of a new Parliament, who might, legally and by general conſent, again govern the nation. Tho' Monk pretended not to favour theſe addreſſes, that ray of hope, which the knowlege of his character and ſituation afforded, mightily animated all men. The tyranny and the anarchy, which now equally oppreſſed the kingdom; the experience of paſt diſtractions, the fear of future convulſions, the indignation againſt military uſurpation, againſt ſanctified hypocriſy: All theſe motives had united every party, except the moſt deſperate, into ardent wiſhes for the King's reſtoration, the only remedy for all theſe fatal evils.

SCOT and Robinſon were ſent as deputies by the Parliament, under pretence of congratulating the General, but in reality to ſerve as ſpies upon him. The city diſpatched four of their principal citizens to perform like compliments; and at the ſame time to confirm the General in his inclination to a free Parliament, the object of all men's prayers and endeavours. The authority of Monk could ſcarce ſecure the parliamentary deputies from thoſe inſults, which the general hatred and contempt towards their maſters drew from men of every rank and denomination.

MONK continued his march with few intervals till he came to St. Albans. He there ſent a meſſage to the Parliament, deſiring them to remove from London thoſe regiments, who, tho' they now profeſſed to return to their duty, had ſo lately offered violence to that aſſembly. This meſſage was unexpected, and exceedingly perplexed the houſe. Their fate, they found, muſt ſtill depend on a mercenary army; and they were as diſtant as ever from their imaginary ſove-

* Clarendon.

reignty,

reignty. However, they found it neceſſary to comply. The ſoldiers made more difficulty. A mutiny aroſe among them. One regiment in particular, which was quartered in Somerſet Houſe, expreſsly refuſed to yield their place to the northern army. But thoſe officers, who would gladly, on ſuch an occaſion, have inflamed the quarrel, were abſent or in confinement; and for want of leaders, the ſoldiers were at laſt, with great reluctance, obliged to comply. Monk with his army took quarters in Weſtminſter. Chap. III. 1660. 3d of February. Monk enters London.

THE general was introduced to the houſe; and thanks were given him by Lenthal for the eminent ſervices, which he had done his country. Monk was a prudent, but not an eloquent ſpeaker. He told the houſe, that the ſervices, which he had been enabled to perform, were no more than his duty, and merited not ſuch praiſes as thoſe with which they were pleaſed to honour him: That among many perſons of greater worth, who bore their commiſſion, he had been employed as the inſtrument of Providence for effecting their reſtoration; but he conſidered this ſervice only as a ſtep to more important ſervices, which it was their part to render to the nation: That as he marched along, he obſerved all ranks of men, in all places, to be in earneſt expectation of a ſettlement, after the violent convulſions, to which they had been expoſed; and to have no proſpect of ſuch a bleſſing but from the diſſolution of the preſent Parliament, and from the ſummoning of a new one, free and full, who, meeting without oaths or engagements, might finally give contentment to the nation: That applications had been made to him for that purpoſe; but that he, ſenſible of his duty, had ſtill told the petitioners, that the Parliament itſelf, which was now free and would ſoon be full, was the beſt judge of all theſe meaſures, and that the whole community ought to acquieſce in their determination: That tho' he expreſſed himſelf in this manner to the people, he muſt now freely inform the houſe, that the fewer engagements were exacted, the more comprehenſive would their plan prove, and the more ſatisfaction would it give to the nation: And that it was ſufficient for the public ſecurity, if the Fanatic party and the Royaliſts were ſecluded; ſince the principles of theſe factions were deſtructive either of government or of liberty. 6th of February.

THIS ſpeech, containing matter, which was both agreeable and diſagreeable to the Houſe as well as to the nation, ſtill kept every one in ſuſpence, and upheld that uncertainty, in which it ſeemed the General's intereſt to retain the public. But it was impoſſible for the kingdom to remain long in this doubtful ſituation: The people, as well as the Parliament, puſhed matters to a deciſion. During the late convulſions, the payment of taxes had been interrupted; and tho' the Parliament, upon their aſſembling, renewed the ordinances for all collections and impoſitions, yet ſo little reverence did the people pay thoſe legiſlators, that they

Chap. III. 1660.

they gave very ſlow and unwilling obedience to their commands. The common council of London flatly refuſed to ſubmit to an aſſeſſment, required of them; and declared, that, till a free and lawful Parliament impoſed taxes, they never would deem it their duty to make any payment. This reſolution would immediately have put an end to the dominion of the Parliament: They were determined, therefore, upon this occaſion, to make at once a full experiment of their own power and of their General's obedience.

6th of February.

MONK received orders to march into the City, to ſeize twelve perſons the moſt obnoxious to the Parliament, to remove the poſts and chains from all the ſtreets, and to take down and break the portculliſes and gates of the city: And very few hours were allowed him to deliberate upon the execution of theſe violent orders. To the great ſurprize and conſternation of all men, Monk prepared himſelf for obedience. Neglecting the entreaties of his friends, the remonſtrances of his officers, the cries of the people, he entered the City in a military manner; he apprehended as many as he could of the proſcribed perſons, whom he ſent to the Tower; with all the circumſtances of contempt, he broke the gates and portculliſes; and having expoſed the City to the ſcorn and deriſion of all who hated it, he returned in triumph to his quarters in Weſtminſter.

No ſooner had the General leiſure to reflect, than he found, that this laſt meaſure, inſtead of being a continuation of that cautious ambiguity, which he had hitherto maintained, was taking party without reſerve, and laying himſelf, as well as the nation, at the mercy of that tyrannical Parliament, whoſe power had long been odious, as well as their perſons contemptible, to all men. He reſolved therefore, before it was too late, to repair the dangerous miſtake, into which he had been betrayed, and to ſhow the whole world, ſtill more without reſerve, that he meant no longer to be the miniſter of violence and uſurpation. After complaining of the odious ſervice, in which he had been employed; he wrote a letter to the Houſe, reproaching them, as well with the new cabals which they had formed with Vane and Lambert, as with the encouragement given to a fanatical petition preſented by Barebone; and he required them, in the name of the citizens, ſoldiers, and whole Commonwealth, to iſſue writs within a week for the filling their Houſe, and to fix the time for their own diſſolution and the aſſembling of a new Parliament. Having diſpatched this letter, which might be regarded, he thought, as an undoubted pledge of his ſincerity, he marched with his army into the City, and deſired Allen, the mayor, to ſummon a common-council at Guildhall. He there made many apologies for the indignity, which, two days before, he had been obliged to put upon them; aſſured them of his perſeverance in the meaſures which he had adopted; and deſired that they might mutually plight their faith for a ſtrict union

11th of February.

Declares for a free Parliament.

union between city and army, in every enterprize for the happineſs and ſettlement of the Commonwealth. Chap. III. 1660.

It is impoſſible to deſcribe the joy and exultation, which diſplayed itſelf throughout the city, as ſoon as intelligence was conveyed of this happy meaſure, embraced by the General. The proſpect of peace, concord, liberty, juſtice, broke forth at once, from amidſt the deepeſt darkneſs, in which the nation had ever been involved. The view of paſt calamities no longer preſented diſmal prognoſtics of the future: It tended only to inhance the general exultation for thoſe ſcenes of happineſs and tranquillity, which all men now confidently promiſed themſelves. The Royaliſts, the Preſbyterians, forgetting all animoſities, mingled in common joy and tranſport, and vowed never more to gratify the ambition of falſe and factious tyrants, by their calamitous diviſions. The populace, more outrageous in their feſtivity, made the whole air reſound with acclamations, and illuminated every ſtreet with ſignals of jollity and triumph. Applauſes of the General were every where intermingled with deteſtation againſt the Parliament. The moſt ridiculous inventions were adopted, in order to expreſs this latter paſſion. At every bonfire rumps were roaſted; and where theſe could no longer be found, pieces of fleſh were cut into that ſhape: And the funeral of the Parliament (the populace exclaimed) was celebrated by theſe ſymbols of hatred and deriſion.

The Parliament, tho' in the agonies of deſpair, made ſtill one effort for the recovery of their dominion. They ſent a committee with offers to gain the General. He refuſed to hear them except in the preſence of ſome of the ſecluded members. Tho' ſeveral perſons, deſperate from guilt or fanaticiſm, promiſed to inveſt him with the dignity of ſupreme magiſtrate and to ſupport his government, he would not hearken to ſuch wild propoſals. Having fixed a cloſe correſpondence with the City, and eſtabliſhed its militia in hands, whoſe fidelity could be relied on, he marched again with his army to Weſtminſter, and purſued every proper meaſure for the ſettlement of the nation. While he ſtill pretended to maintain republican principles, he was taking large ſteps towards the re-eſtabliſhment of the antient Monarchy.

The ſecluded members, upon the General's invitation, went to the Houſe, and finding no longer any obſtruction, they entered, and immediately appeared to be the majority: Moſt of the Independants left the place. The reſtored members firſt repealed all the orders, by which they had been excluded: They gave Sir George Boothe and all his party their liberty and eſtates: They renewed and enlarged the General's commiſſion: They fixed an aſſeſſment for the ſupport of the fleet and army: And having paſſed theſe votes for the preſent compoſure of the kingdom, they diſſolved themſelves, and gave orders for the immediate aſſembling of 21ſt of February. Secluded members reſtored. 16th of March.

Chap. III. 1660. Long Parliament diſſolved.

of a new Parliament. This laſt meaſure had been previouſly concerted with the General, who knew, that all men, however different in affections, expectations, and deſigns, united in their deteſtation of the Long Parliament.

A COUNCIL OF STATE was eſtabliſhed, conſiſting of men of dignity and moderation; moſt of whom, during the civil wars, had made a great figure among the Preſbyterians. The militia of the kingdom was put into ſuch hands as would promote order and ſettlement. Theſe, conjoined with Monk's army, which lay united at London, were eſteemed a ſufficient check on the more numerous tho' diſperſed army, of whoſe inclinations there was ſtill much reaſon to be diffident. Monk, however, was every day removing the more obnoxious officers, and bringing the troops to a ſtate of diſcipline and obedience.

OVERTON, governor of Hull, had declared his reſolution to keep poſſeſſion of that fortreſs till the coming of King Jeſus: But when Alured produced the authority of the Parliament for his delivering the place to colonel Fairfax, he thought proper to comply.

MONTAGUE, who commanded the fleet in the Baltic, had entered into the ſame conſpiracy with Sir George Boothe; and pretending want of proviſions, had ſailed from the Sound towards the coaſt of England, with an intention of ſeconding that enterprize of the Royaliſts. On his arrival he received the news of Boothe's defeat, and the total failure of the inſurrection. The great difficulties to which the Parliament was reduced, allowed them no leiſure to examine ſtrictly the reaſons, which he gave for quitting his ſtation; and they allowed him to retire peaceably to his country houſe. The council of State now conferred on him, in conjunction with Monk, the command of the fleet; and ſecured the naval, as well as military force in the hands favourable to the public ſettlement.

NOTWITHSTANDING all theſe ſteps, which were taking towards the re-eſtabliſhment of Monarchy, Monk ſtill maintained the appearance of zeal for a Commonwealth, and hitherto allowed no canal of correſpondence between himſelf and the King to be opened. To call a free Parliament, and to reſtore the royal Family, were viſibly, in the preſent diſpoſition of the kingdom, one and the ſame meaſure: Yet would not the General declare, otherways than by his actions, that he had adopted the King's intereſt; and nothing but neceſſity, at laſt extorted the confeſſion from him. His ſilence in the commencement of his enterprize, ought to be no objection to his ſincerity; ſince he maintained the ſame reſerve, at a time, when, conſiſtent with common ſenſe, he could have entertained no other purpoſe *.

THERE

* After Monk's declaration for a free Parliament, on the 11th of February, he could mean nothing but the King's reſtoration: Yet it was long before he would open himſelf even to the King. This declaration was within eight days after his arrival in London. Had he ever intended to have ſet up himſelf,

Chap. III. 1660.

THERE was one Morrice, a gentleman of Devonſhire, of a ſedentary, ſtudious diſpoſition, nearly related to Monk, and one who had always maintained the ſtricteſt intimacy with him. With this friend alone did Monk deliberate concerning that great enterprize, which he had formed. Sir John Granville, who had a commiſſion from the King, applied to Morrice for acceſs to the General; but received for anſwer, that the General deſired him to communicate his buſineſs to Morrice. Granville, tho' importunately urged, twice refuſed to deliver his meſſage to any but Monk himſelf; and that cautious politician, finding him now a perſon, whoſe ſecrecy could be ſafely truſted, admitted him to his preſence, and opened to him his whole intentions. Still he ſcrupled to commit any thing to paper *: He delivered only a verbal meſſage by Granville, aſſuring the King of his ſervices, giving advice for his conduct, and exhorting him inſtantly to leave the Spaniſh territories and retire into Holland. He was juſtly apprehenſive leſt Spain might retain him as a pledge for the recovery of Dunkirk and Jamaica. Charles followed theſe directions, and very narrowly eſcaped to Breda. Had he protracted his journey a few hours, he had certainly, under pretence of honour and reſpect, been arreſted by the Spaniards.

LOCKHART, who was governor of Dunkirk, and no wiſe averſe to the King's ſervice, was applied to on this occaſion. The ſtate of England was ſet before him, the certainty of the reſtoration repreſented, and the proſpect of great favour diſplayed, if he would anticipate the vows of the kingdom, and receive the King into his garriſon. Lockhart ſtill replied that his commiſſion was derived from an Engliſh Parliament, and he would not open his gates but in obedience to the ſame authority †. This ſcruple, tho' in the preſent emergence it approaches towards ſuperſtition, it is difficult for us entirely to condemn.

New Parliament.

THE elections of the new Parliament went every where in favour of the King's party. This was one of thoſe popular torrents, where the moſt indifferent, or even the moſt averſe, are tranſported with the general paſſion, and zealouſly adopt the ſentiments of the ſociety, to which they belong. The enthuſiaſts themſelves ſeemed to be diſarmed of their fury; and between deſpair and aſtoniſhment gave way to thoſe meaſures, which, they found it would be impoſſible for them, by their utmoſt efforts, to withſtand. The Preſbyterians, the Royaliſts, being

ſelf, he would not ſurely have ſo ſoon abandoned a project ſo inviting: He would have taken ſome ſteps, which would have betrayed it: It could only have been ſome diſappointment, ſome fruſtrated attempt, which could have made him renounce the road of private ambition. But there is not the leaſt ſymptom of ſuch intentions. The ſtory told of Sir Anthony Aſh'ley Cooper, by Mr. Locke, has not any appearance of truth. See lord Lanſdown's Vindication, and Philips's Continuation of Baker. I ſhall add to what thoſe authors have advanced, that cardinal Mazarine wiſhed for the King's reſtoration; tho' he would not have ventured much to have procured it.

* Lanſdowne, Clarendon. † Burnet.

united,

Chap. III. 1660. united, formed the voice of the nation, which, without noiſe, but with infinite ardour, called for the King's reſtoration. The kingdom was almoſt entirely in the hands of the former party; and ſome zealous leaders among them began to renew the demand of thoſe conditions, which had been required of the late King in the treaty of Newport: But the general opinion ſeemed to condemn all thoſe rigorous and jealous capitulations with their ſovereign. Harraſſed with convulſions and diſorders, men ardently longed for repoſe, and were terrified with the mention of negotiations or delay, which might afford opportunity to the ſeditious army ſtill to breed new confuſion. The paſſion too for liberty, having been carried to ſuch violent extremes, and having produced ſuch bloody commotions, began, by a natural movement, to give place to a ſpirit of loyalty and obedience; and the public were leſs zealous in a cauſe, which was become odious, on acccount of the calamities, which had ſo long attended it. After the conceſſions made by the late King, the conſtitution ſeemed to be ſufficiently ſecured; and the additional conditions inſiſted on, as they had been framed during the greateſt ardour of the conteſt, amounted rather to an annihilation than a limitation of Monarchy. Above all the General was averſe to the mention of conditions; and reſolved, that the crown, which he intended to reſtore, ſhould be conferred on the King entirely free and unincumbered. Without farther ſcruple, therefore, or jealouſy, the people gave their voice in elections for ſuch as they knew to entertain ſentiments favourable to Monarchy; and all payed court to a party, which, they foreſaw, was ſoon to govern the nation. Tho' the Parliament had voted, that no one ſhould be elected, who had himſelf, or whoſe father had borne arms for the late King; very little regard was any where payed to this ordinance. The leaders of the Preſbyterians, the earl of Mancheſter, lord Fairfax, lord Robarts, Hollis, Sir Anthony Aſhly Cooper, Anneſley, Lewis, were determined to atone for paſt tranſgreſſions by their preſent zeal for the royal intereſts; and from former merits, ſucceſſes, and ſufferings, they had acquired with their party the higheſt credit and authority.

The affairs of Ireland were in a condition no leſs favourable to the King. As ſoon as Monk declared againſt the Engliſh army, he diſpatched emiſſaries into Ireland, and engaged the officers in that kingdom to concur with him in the ſame meaſures. Lord Broghill, preſident of Munſter, and Sir Charles Coote, preſident of Connaught, went ſo far as to enter into a correſpondence with the King, and to promiſe their aſſiſtance for his reſtoration. In conjunction with Sir Theophilus Jones, and other officers, they took poſſeſſion of the government, and excluded Ludlow, who was zealous for the Parliament, but whom they pretended to be in a confederacy with the Committee of Safety. They kept themſelves in a readineſs to ſerve the King; but made no declarations, till they ſhould ſee the turn, which affairs took in England.

But

But all theſe promiſing views had almoſt been blaſted by an untoward accident. Upon the admiſſion of the ſecluded members, the republican party, particularly the late King's judges, were ſeized with the juſteſt deſpair, and endeavoured to infuſe the ſame ſentiments into the whole army. By themſelves or their emiſſaries, they repreſented to the ſoldiers, that all thoſe brave actions, which had been performed during the war, and which were ſo meritorious in the eyes of the Parliament, would no doubt be regarded as the deepeſt crimes by the Royaliſts, and would expoſe the army to the ſevereſt vengeance. That in vain did that party make profeſſions of moderation and lenity: The King's death, the execution of ſo many of the nobility and gentry, the ſequeſtrations and impriſonment of the reſt, were in their eyes crimes ſo deep, and offences ſo perſonal, as muſt be proſecuted with the moſt implacable reſentment. That the loſs of all arrears, the caſhiering every officer and ſoldier, were the lighteſt puniſhment, which muſt be expected: After the diſperſion of the army, no farther protection remained to them, either for life or property, but the clemency of enraged enemies. And that, even, if the moſt perfect ſecurity could be obtained, it was inglorious to be reduced by treachery and deceit, to ſubjection under a foe, who, in the open field, had ſo often yielded to their ſuperior valour.

After theſe ſuggeſtions had been infuſed into the army, Lambert ſuddenly made his eſcape from the Tower, and threw Monk and the Council of State into the greateſt conſternation. They knew Lambert's vigour and activity; they were acquainted with his great popularity in the army; they were ſenſible, that, tho' the ſoldiers had lately deſerted him, they ſufficiently expreſſed their remorſe and their deteſtation of thoſe, who, by falſe profeſſions, they found, had ſo egregiouſly deceived them. It ſeemed neceſſary, therefore, to employ the greateſt celerity in ſuppreſſing ſo dangerous an enemy: Colonel Ingoldſby, who had been named one of the late King's judges, but who was now entirely engaged in the royal cauſe, was diſpatched after him. He overtook him at Daventry, while he had yet aſſembled but four troops of horſe. One of them deſerted him. Another quickly followed the example. He himſelf, endeavouring to make his eſcape, was ſeized by Ingoldſby, to whom he made ſubmiſſions not ſuitable to his former character of ſpirit and valour. Okey, Axtel, Cobbet, Crede, and other officers of that party were taken priſoners with him. All the roads were full of ſoldiers haſtening to join them. In a few days they would have been very formidable. And it was thought, that it might prove dangerous for Monk himſelf to have aſſembled any conſiderable body of his republican army for their ſuppreſſion: So that nothing could be more happy than the ſudden extinction of this riſing flame.

22d of April.

When the Parliament met, they choſe Sir Harbottle Grimſtone, ſpeaker; a man, who, tho' he had for ſome time concurred with the late Parliament, had long been

25th of April.

Chap. III. 1660.

esteemed affectionate to the King's service. The great dangers, incurred during the former usurpations, joined to the extreme caution of the General, kept every one in awe; and no one dared, for some days, to make any mention of the King. The members chiefly exerted their spirit in bitter invectives against the memory of Cromwel, and in execrations upon the inhuman murder of their late

1st of May.

Sovereign. At last, the General, having sufficiently sounded their inclinations, gave directions to Annesley, president of the council, to inform them, that one Sir John Granville, a servant of the King's, had been sent over by his Majesty,

The Restoration.

and was now at the door with a letter to the Commons. The loudest acclamations were excited by this intelligence. Granville was called in: The letters, accompanied with a declaration, greedily read: Without one moment's delay, and without a contradictory vote, a Committee was appointed to prepare an answer: And in order to spread the same satisfaction throughout the kingdom, it was voted that the letter and declaration should immediately be published.

The people, freed from that state of suspence in which they had so long been held, now changed their anxious hope for the unmixt effusions of joy; and displayed a social triumph, and exultation, which no private prosperity, even the greatest, is ever able fully to inspire. Traditions remain of men who died for pleasure, when informed of this happy and surprizing event. The King's declaration was well calculated to uphold the satisfaction, inspired by the prospect of public settlement. It offered a general amnesty to all persons whatsoever; and that without any exceptions but such as should afterwards be made by Parliament: It promised a liberty of conscience; and a concurrence in any act of Parliament, which, upon mature deliberation, should be offered, for the insuring that indulgence: The enquiry into all grants, purchases, and alienations, it submitted to the arbitration of the same assembly: And it assured the soldiers of all their arrears, and promised them, for the future, the same pay which they then enjoyed.

The Lords, perceiving the spirit, by which the kingdom as well as the Commons were animated, hastened to re-instate themselves in their antient authority, and to take their share in the settlement of the nation. They found the doors of their house open; and all were admitted, even such as had formerly been excluded on account of their pretended delinquency.

8th of May.

The two Houses attended; while the King was proclaimed with great solemnity, in Palace-Yard, at Whitehall, and at Temple-Bar. The Commons voted 500 pounds to buy a jewel for Granville, who had brought them the King's gracious messages: A present of 50,000 pounds was conferred on the King, 10,000 pounds on the duke of York, 5000 pounds on the duke of Glocester. A Committee of Lords and Commons was dispatched to invite his Majesty to return and take possession

poſſeſſion of his dominions. The rapidity, with which all theſe events were conducted was marvellous, and diſcovered the paſſionate zeal and entire unanimity of the nation. Such an impatience appeared, and ſuch an emulation, in Lords, and Commons, and City, who ſhould make the moſt lively expreſſions of their joy and duty; that, as the noble hiſtorian expreſſes it, a man could not but wonder where thoſe people dwelt, who had done all the miſchief, and kept the King ſo many years from enjoying the comfort and ſupport of ſuch excellent ſubjects. The King himſelf ſaid, that it muſt ſurely have been his own fault, that he had not ſooner taken poſſeſſion of the throne; ſince he found every body ſo zealous for promoting his happy reſtoration.

The reſpect of foreign powers ſoon followed the ſubmiſſion of the King's ſubjects. Spain invited him to return to the Low Countries, and embark in ſome of their maritime towns. France made proteſtations of affection and regard, and offered Calais for the ſame purpoſe. The States-General ſent deputies with a like friendly invitation. The King reſolved to accept of this laſt offer. The people of the Republic bore him a very cordial affection; and politics no longer reſtrained their magiſtrates from promoting and expreſſing that ſentiment. As he paſſed from Breda to the Hague, he was attended with numerous crouds, and received with the loudeſt acclamations; as if themſelves, not their rivals in power and commerce, were now reſtored to peace and ſecurity. The States-General in a body, and afterwards the States of Holland apart, performed their compliments with the greateſt ſolemnity: Every perſon of diſtinction was ambitious of being introduced to his Majeſty: All ambaſſadors and public miniſters of Kings, Princes, or States, repaired to him, and profeſſed the joy of their maſters on his behalf: So that one would have thought, that, from the united efforts of Chriſtendom, had been derived this revolution, which diffuſed every where ſuch univerſal ſatisfaction.

The Engliſh fleet came in ſight of Scheveling. Montague had not waited for orders from the Parliament; but had perſuaded the officers, of themſelves, to tender their duty to his Majeſty. The duke of York immediately went on board, and took the command of the fleet as lord high admiral.

When the King diſembarked at Dover, he was met by the General whom he cordially embraced. Never ſubject in fact, probably in his intentions, had deſerved better of his King and country. In the ſpace of a few months, without effuſion of blood, by his cautious and diſintereſted conduct alone, he had beſtowed ſettlement on three kingdoms, which had long been torne with the moſt violent convulſions: And having obſtinately refuſed the moſt inviting conditions, offered him by the King as well as by every party in the kingdom, he freely reſtored his injured maſter-

Chap. III. 1660. 29th of May.

to the vacant throne. The King entered London on the 29th of May, which was alſo his birth-day. The fond imaginations of Men interpreted as a happy omen the concurrence of two ſuch joyful periods.

* * * * * * * * * * * * * * *

At this æra, it may be proper to ſtop for a moment, and take a general ſurvey of the age, ſo far as regards manners, finances, arms, commerce, arts and ſciences. The chief uſe of hiſtory is, that it affords materials for diſquiſitions of this nature; and it ſeems the duty of an hiſtorian to point out the proper inferences and concluſions.

Manners and arts.

No people could undergo a change more ſudden and entire in their manners than did the Engliſh nation during this period. From tranquility, concord, ſubmiſſion, ſobriety, they paſſed in an inſtant to a ſtate of faction, fanaticiſm, rebellion, and almoſt frenzy. The violence of the Engliſh parties exceeded any thing, which we can now imagine: Had they continued but a little longer, there was juſt reaſon to dread all the horrors of the antient maſſacres and proſcriptions. The military uſurpers, whoſe authority was founded on palpable injuſtice, and was ſupported by no national party, would have been impelled by rage and deſpair into ſuch ſanguinary meaſures; and if theſe furious expedients had been embraced on one ſide, revenge would naturally have puſhed the other party, after a return of power, to retaliate upon their enemies. No ſocial intercourſe was maintained between the parties; no marriages or alliances contracted. The Royaliſts, tho' oppreſſed, harraſſed, perſecuted, diſdained all affinity with their maſters. The more they were reduced to ſubjection, the greater ſuperiority did they affect above thoſe uſurpers, who by violence and injuſtice had acquired an aſcendant over them.

The manners of the two factions were as oppoſite as thoſe of the moſt diſtant nations. "Your friends, the Cavaliers," ſaid a Parliamentarian to a Royaliſt, "are very diſſolute and debauched." "Yes," replied the Royaliſt, "they have the infirmities of men: But your friends the Roundheads, have "the vices of devils, tyranny, rebellion, and ſpiritual pride †." Riot and diſorder, it is certain, notwithſtanding the good example ſet them by Charles the

† Sir Philip Warwic.

firſt,

firſt, prevailed very much among his partizans. Being commonly men of brith and fortune, to whom exceſſes are leſs pernicious than to the vulgar, they were too apt to indulge themſelves in all pleaſures, particularly thoſe of the table. Oppoſition to the rigid preciſeneſs of their antagoniſts encreaſed their inclination to good-fellowſhip; and the character of a man of pleaſure was affected among them, as a ſure pledge of attachment to the Church and Monarchy. Even when ruined by confiſcations and ſequeſtrations, they endeavoured to maintain the appearance of careleſs and ſocial jollity. "As much as hope is ſuperior to fear," ſaid a poor and merry cavalier, "ſo much is our ſituation preferable to that of "our enemies. We laugh while they tremble."

THE gloomy enthuſiaſm, which prevailed among great numbers of the parliamentary party, is ſurely the moſt curious ſpectacle preſented by any hiſtory; and the moſt inſtructive, as well as entertaining, to a philoſophical mind. All recreations were in a manner ſuſpended by the rigid ſeverity of the Preſbyterians and Independants. Horſe-races and cock-matches were prohibited as the greateſt enormities †. Even bear-beating was eſteemed heatheniſh and unchriſtian: The ſport of it, not the inhumanity, gave offence. Colonel Hewſon, from his pious zeal, marched with his regiment into London, and deſtroyed all the bears, which were there kept for the diverſion of the citizens. This adventure ſeems to have given birth to the fiction of Hudibras. Tho' the Engliſh nation be naturally candid and ſincere, hypocriſy prevailed beyond any example in antient or modern times. The religious hypocriſy, it may be remarked, is of a ſingular nature; and being generally unknown to the perſon himſelf, tho' more dangerous, it implies leſs falſhood than any other ſpecies of inſincerity. The Old Teſtament, preferably to the New, was the favourite of all the ſectaries. The eaſtern poetical ſtyle of that compoſition made it more eaſily ſuſceptible of a turn, which was agreeable to them.

WE have had occaſion, in the courſe of this work, to ſpeak of many of the ſects, which prevailed in England: To enumerate them all would be impoſſible. The Quakers, however, are ſo conſiderable, at leaſt ſo ſingular, as to merit ſome attention; and as they entirely renounced by principle the uſe of arms, they never made ſuch a figure in public tranſactions as to enter into any part of our narration.

THE religion of the Quakers began with the loweſt vulgar, and, in its progreſs, came at laſt to comprehend people of better quality and faſhion. George Fox, born at Drayton in Lancaſhire in 1624, was the founder of this ſect. He was the ſoon of a weaver, and was himſelf bound an apprentice to a ſhoemaker. Feeling a ſtronger turn towards ſpiritual contemplations than towards that mechanical profeſſion, he left his maſter, and went about the country, cloathed in a

† Killing no Murder.

leathern

Chap. III. 1660.

leathern doublet; a dreſs, which he long affected, as well for its ſingularity as its cheapneſs. That he might wean himſelf entirely from ſublunary objects, he broke off all connexions with his friends and family, and never ſtayed a moment in one place; leſt habitude ſhould beget new connexions, and depreſs the ſublimity of his aerial meditations. He frequently wandered into the woods, and paſſed whole days in hollow trees, without other company or amuſement than his bible. Having reached that pitch of perfection that he needed no other book, he ſoon advanced to another ſtage of ſpiritual progreſs, and began to pay leſs regard even to that divine compoſition itſelf. His own breaſt, he imagined, was full of the ſame inſpiration, which had guided the prophets and apoſtles themſelves; and by this inward light muſt every ſpiritual obſcurity be cleared, by this living ſpirit muſt the dead letter be animated.

When he had been ſufficiently conſecrated in his own imagination, he felt that the fumes of ſelf-applauſe ſoon diſſipate, if not continually ſupplied by the admiration of others; and he began to ſeek proſelytes. Proſelytes were eaſily gained, at a time when all mens affections were turned towards religion, and when the moſt extravagant modes of it were ſure to be the moſt popular. All the forms of ceremony invented by pride and oſtentation, Fox and his diſciples, from a ſuperior pride and oſtentation, carefully rejected: Even the ordinary rites of civility were ſhunned, as the nouriſhment of carnal vanity and ſelf-conceit. They would beſtow no titles of diſtinction: The name of *friend* was the only ſalutation, with which they indiſcriminately accoſted every one. To no perſon would they make a bow, or move their hat, or give any ſigns of reverence. Inſtead of that affected adulation, introduced into modern tongues, of ſpeaking to individuals as if they were a multitude, they turned to the ſimplicity of antient languages; and *thou* and *thee* were the only expreſſions, which, on any conſideration, they could be brought to employ.

Dress too, a moſt material circumſtance, diſtinguiſhed the members of this ſect. Every ſuperfluity and ornament was carefully retrenched: No plaits to their coat, no buttons to their ſleeves: No lace, no ruffles, no embroidery. Even a button to the hat, tho' ſometimes uſeful, yet not being always ſo, was univerſally rejected by them with horror and indignation.

The violent enthuſiaſm of this ſect, like all high paſſions, being too ſtrong for the weak nerves to ſuſtain, threw the preachers into convulſions, and ſhakings and diſtortions in their limbs; and they thence received the denomination of *Quakers*. Amidſt the great toleration, which was then granted to all ſects, and even encouragement given to all innovations, this ſect alone ſuffered perſecution. From the fury of their zeal, the Quakers broke into churches, diſturbed public worſhip,

worſhip, and harraſſed the miniſter and audience with railing and reproaches. When carried before a magiſtrate, they refuſed him all reverence, and treated him with the ſame familiarity as if he had been their equal. Sometimes they were thrown into mad-houſes, ſometimes into priſon: Sometimes whipped, ſometimes pilloryed. The patience and magnanimity, with which they ſuffered, begot compaſſion, admiration, eſteem *. A ſupernatural ſpirit was believed to ſupport them under thoſe ſufferings, which the ordinary ſtate of humanity, freed from the illuſions of paſſion, is unable to ſuſtain. Chap. III. 1660.

The Quakers crept into the army: But as they preached univerſal peace, they ſeduced the military zealots from their profeſſion, and would ſoon, had they been ſuffered, have put an end, without any defeat or calamity, to the dominion of the ſaints. Theſe attempts became a freſh ground of perſecution, and a new cauſe for their progreſs among the people.

Morals with the ſect were carried, or affected to be carried, to the ſame degree of extravagance as religion. Give a Quaker a blow on one cheek, he held up the other: Aſk his cloke, he gave you his coat alſo: The greateſt intereſt could not engage him, in any court of judicature, to ſwear even to the truth: He never aſked more for his wares than the preciſe ſum, which he was determined to accept. This laſt maxim is laudable, and continues ſtill to be religiouſly obſerved by that ſect.

No fanatics ever carried farther the hatred of ceremonies, forms, orders, rites, inſtitutions. Even Baptiſm and the Lord's ſupper, by all other ſects believed to be interwoven with the very vitals of Chriſtianity, were diſdainfully rejected by them. The very ſabbath they profaned. The holineſs of churches they derided; and would give to theſe ſacred edifices no other appellation than that of *ſhops* or *ſteeple-houſes*. No prieſts were admitted in their ſect: Every one had received from immediate illumination a character much ſuperior to the ſacerdotal. When they met for divine worſhip, each roſe up in his place, and delivered the extemporary inſpirations of the ſpirit: Women alſo were admitted to teach the brethren, and were conſidered as proper vehicles to convey the dictates of the Holy Ghoſt. Sometimes a great many preachers were moved to ſpeak at once: Sometimes a total ſilence prevailed in their congregations.

Some Quakers attempted to faſt forty days in imitation of Chriſt; and one of them bravely periſhed in the experiment †. A female Quaker came naked into

* The following ſtory is told by Whitlocke, p. 599. Some Quakers at Haſington in Northumberland coming to the miniſter on the ſabbath day, and ſpeaking to him, the people fell upon the Quakers, and almoſt killed one or two of them, who going out fell on their knees, and prayed God to pardon the people, who knew not what they did; and afterwards ſpeaking to the people, ſo convinced them of the evil they had done in beating them, that the country people fell a quarrelling, and beat one another more than they had before beaten the Quakers. † Whitelocke, p. 624.

Chap. III. 1660.

the church where the Protector ſate; being moved by the ſpirit, as ſhe ſaid, to appear *as a ſign* to the people. A number of them fancied, that the renovation of all things had commenced, and that cloaths were to be rejected together with other ſuperfluities. The ſufferings, which followed the practice of this doctrine, were a ſpecies of perſecution not well calculated for promoting it.

JAMES NAYLOR was a Quaker, noted for blaſphemy, or rather madneſs, in the time of the Protectorſhip. He fancied that he himſelf was transformed into Chriſt, and was become the real Saviour of the world; and in conſequence of this frenzy, he endeavoured to imitate many actions of our Saviour related in the Evangeliſts. As he bore a reſemblance to the common pictures of Chriſt; he allowed his beard to grow in a like form: He pretended to raiſe a perſon from the dead †: He entered Briſtol, mounted on a horſe; I ſuppoſe, from the difficulty in that place of finding an aſs: His diſciples ſpread their garments before him, and cried, "Ho-"ſanna to the higheſt; holy, holy is the Lord God of Sabbaoth." When carried before the magiſtrates, he would give no other anſwers to all queſtions than "thou haſt "ſaid it." What is remarkable, the parliament thought that the matter deſerved their attention. Above ten days they ſpent in enquiries and debates about him ‡. They condemned him to be pilloried, whipt, burned in the face, and to have his tongue bored thro' with a red hot iron. All theſe ſeverities he bore with the uſual patience. So far his deluſion ſupported him. But the ſequel ſpoiled all. He was ſent to Bridewell, confined to hard labour, fed on bread and water, debarred from all his diſciples, male and female. His illuſions diſſipated; and after ſome time, he was contented to come out an ordinary man, and return to his ordinary occupations.

THE chief taxes in England, during the time of the Commonwealth, were the monthly aſſeſſments, the exciſe, and the cuſtoms. The aſſeſſments were levied on perſonal eſtates as well as on land §; and commiſſioners were appointed in each county for rating the individuals. The higheſt aſſeſſment amounted to 120,000 pounds a month in England; the loweſt was 35,000. The aſſeſſments in Scotland were ſometimes 10,000 pounds a month ‖; commonly 6000. Thoſe on Ireland 9000. At a medium, this tax might have afforded about a million a year. The exciſe, during the civil wars, was levied on bread, fleſh-meat, as well as beer, ale, ſtrong-waters, and many other commodities. After the King was ſubdued, bread and fleſh-meat were exempted from exciſe. The cuſtoms on exportation were lowered in 1656 ¶. In 1650, commiſſioners were appointed to levy both cuſtoms and exciſes. Cromwel in 1657 returned to the old practice of farming. Eleven hundred thouſand pounds were then offered, both for cuſtoms and exciſe, a greater ſum than had ever been levied by the commiſſioners *. The whole of the taxes during that period might at a medium amount to above two millions a year;

† Harleyan Miſcellany, Vol. vi. p. 399. ‡ Thurloe, Vol. v. p. 708. § Scobel, p. 419.
‖ Thurloe, Vol. ii. p. 476. ¶ Scobel, p. 376. * Thurloe, Vol. vi. p. 425.

a ſum,

a ſum, which, tho' moderate, much exceeded the revenue of any former King. Sequeſtrations, compoſitions, ſale of crown and church lands, and of the lands of delinquents, yielded alſo conſiderable ſums, but very difficult to be eſtimated. Church lands are ſaid to have been ſold at a million *. None of theſe were ever valued at above ten or eleven years purchaſe ‡. Delinquents eſtates amounted to above 200,000 pounds a year §. Cromwel died above two millions in debt ‖; tho' the Parliament had left him in the treaſury above 500,000 pounds; and in ſtores, the value of 700,000 pounds ¶.

THE Committee of Danger in April 1648, voted to raiſe the army to 40,000 men **. The ſame year, the pay of the army was eſtimated at 80,000 pounds a month ††. The eſtabliſhment of the army in 1652, was in Scotland 15,000 foot, 2580 horſe, 560 dragoons; in England, 4700 foot, 2520 horſe, garriſons 6154. In all 31,519, beſides officers §§. The army in Scotland was afterwards conſiderably reduced. The army in Ireland was not much ſhort of 20,000 men; ſo that upon the whole, the Commonwealth maintained in 1652 a ſtanding army of more than 50,000 men. Its pay amounted to a yearly ſum of 1,047,715 pounds ‖‖. Afterwards, the Protector reduced the eſtabliſhment to 30,000 men; as appears by the Inſtrument of Government and Humble Petition and Advice. His frequent enterprizes obliged him from time to time to augment them. Richard had on foot in England an army of 13258 men, in Scotland 9506, in Ireland about 10,000 men ¶¶. The foot ſoldiers had commonly a ſhilling a day ***. The horſe had two ſhillings and ſixpence; ſo that many gentlemen and younger brothers of good family inliſted in the Protector's cavalry †††. No wonder, that ſuch men were averſe from the re-eſtabliſhment of civil government, by which, they well knew, they muſt be deprived of ſo gainful a profeſſion.

ABOUT the time of the battle of Worceſter, the Parliament had on foot about 80,000 men, partly militia, partly regular forces. The vigour of the Commonwealth, and the great capacity of thoſe members, who had aſſumed the adminiſtration, never at any time appeared ſo conſpicuous ‡‡‡.

THE whole revenue of the public during the Protectorſhip of Richard was eſtimated at 1,868,717 pounds: His annual expences at 2,201,540 pounds. An additional revenue was demanded of the Parliament *.

THE commerce and induſtry of England encreaſed extremely during the peaceable period of Charles's reign: The trade to the Eaſt Indies and to Guinea became

* Dr. Walker, p. 14. ‡ Thurloe, Vol. i. p. 753. § Id. Vol. ii. p. 414. ‖ Id. Vol. vii. p. 657. ¶ World's Miſtake in Oliver Cromwel. ** Whitlocke, p. 298. †† Id. p. 378. §§ Journal 2d of December, 1652. ‖‖ Id. Ibid. ¶¶ Id. 6th of April, 1569. *** Thurloe, Vol. i. p. 395. Vol ii. p. 414. ††† Gumble's Life of Monk. ‡‡‡ Whitlocke, p. 477. * Journal, 7th of April, 1659.

Chap. III. 1660.

considerable. The Engliſh poſſeſſed almoſt the ſole trade with Spain. Seven hundred thouſand pounds a year in bullion were coined in the Engliſh Mint. Twenty thouſand cloths were annually ſent to Turkey †. Commerce met with interruption, no doubt, from the civil wars and convulſions, which afterwards prevailed; tho' it ſoon recovered after the eſtabliſhment of the Commonwealth. The war with the Dutch, by diſtreſſing the commerce of ſo formidable a rival, ſerved to encourage trade in England: The Spaniſh war was in an equal degree pernicious. All the effects of the Engliſh merchants, to an immenſe value, were confiſcated in Spain. The prevalence of democratical principles engaged the country gentlemen to bind their ſons apprentices to merchants ‡; and commerce has ever ſince been more honourable in England than in any other European kingdom. The excluſive companies, which formerly confined trade, were never expreſsly aboliſhed by any ordonance of Parliament during the Commonwealth; but as men payed no regard to the prerogative, whence the charter of theſe companies were derived, the monopoly was gradually invaded, and commerce encreaſed by the encreaſe of liberty. Intereſt in 1650 was reduced to ſix per cent.

THE colony of New England encreaſed by means of the Puritans, who fled thither, in order to free themſelves from the conſtraint, which Laud and the church party had impoſed upon them; and before the commencement of the civil wars, it is ſuppoſed to have contained 25,000 ſouls ¶. For a like reaſon, the Catholics, afterwards, who found themſelves expoſed to many hardſhips, and dreaded ſtill worſe treatment, went over to America in great numbers, and ſettled the colony of Maryland.

BEFORE the civil wars, learning and the fine arts were favoured at court, and a good taſte began to prevail in the nation. The King loved pictures, ſometimes handled the pencil himſelf, and was a good judge of the art. The pieces of foreign maſters were bought up at a vaſt price; and the value of pictures doubled in Europe by the emulation between Charles and Philip IV. of Spain, who was touched with the ſame elegant paſſion. Vandyke was careſſed and enriched at court. Inigo Jones was maſter of the King's buildings; tho' afterwards perſecuted by the Parliament on account of the part, which he had in rebuilding St. Paul's, and for obeying ſome orders of council, by which he was directed to pull down houſes, in order to make room for that fabric. Laws, who had not been ſurpaſſed by any muſician before him, was much beloved by the King, who called him the Father of Muſic. Charles was a good judge of writing, and was eſteemed by ſome more anxious with regard to purity of ſtyle than became a Monarch ‖. Notwithſtanding his narrow revenue, and his freedom from all

† Strafford's Letters, Vol. i. p. 421, 423, 430, 467. ‡ Clarendon. ¶ Britiſh Empire in America, Vol. i. p. 372. ‖ Biſhop Burnet's Hiſtory of his own times.

vanity,

vanity, he lived in ſuch magnificence, that he poſſeſſed four and twenty palaces, all of them elegantly and compleatly furniſhed; inſomuch, that, when he removed from one to another, he was not obliged to tranſport any thing along with him.

CROMWEL, tho' himſelf a barbarian, was not inſenſible to literary merit. Uſher, notwithſtanding his being a biſhop, received a penſion from him. Marvel and Milton were in his ſervice. Waller, who was his relation, was careſſed by him. That poet always ſaid, that the protector himſelf was not ſo wholly illiterate as was commonly imagined. He gave a hundred pounds a year to the divinity profeſſor at Oxford; and an hiſtorian mentions this bounty as an inſtance of his love of literature *. He intended to have erected a college at Durham for the benefit of the northern counties.

CIVIL WARS, eſpecially when founded on principles of liberty, are not commonly unfavourable to the arts of eloquence and compoſition; or rather, by preſenting nobler and more intereſting objects, they amply compenſate for that tranquillity, of which they bereave the muſes. The ſpeeches of the parliamentary orators during this period, are of a ſtrain much ſuperior to what any former age had produced in England; and the force and compaſs of our tongue were then firſt put to trial. It muſt however be confeſſed, that the wretched fanaticiſm, which ſo much infected the parliamentary party, was no leſs deſtructive of taſte and ſcience, than of all law and order. Gaiety and wit were proſcribed: Human learning deſpiſed: Freedom of enquiry deteſted: Cant and hypocriſy alone encouraged. It was an article poſitively inſiſted on in the preliminaries to the treaty of Uxbridge, that all play-houſes ſhould for ever be aboliſhed. Sir John Davenant, ſays Whitlocke †, ſpeaking of the year 1658, publiſhed an opera, notwithſtanding the nicety of the times. All the King's furniture was put to ſale: His pictures, diſpoſed of at very low prices, enriched all the collections of Europe: Even his palaces were pulled to pieces, and the materials of them ſold. The very library and medals at St. James's, was intended by the generals to be brought to auction, in order to pay the arrears of ſome regiments of cavalry, quartered near London: But Selden, apprehenſive of this loſs, engaged his friend Whitlocke, then lord-keeper for the Commonwealth, to apply for the office of librarian. This contrivance ſaved that valuable collection.

'TIS however remarkable, that the greateſt genius by far, which ſhone forth in England during this period, was deeply engaged with theſe fanatics, and even proſtituted his pen in theological controverſy, in factious diſputes, and in juſtifying the moſt violent meaſures of the party. This was John Milton, whoſe poems are admirable, tho' liable to ſome objections; his proſe writings diſagreeable, tho' not altogether defective in genius. Nor are all his poems equal: His Paradiſe Loſt,

* Neale's Hiſtory of the Puritans, Vol. iv. p. 123. † P. 639.

his

Chap. III. 1660.

his Comus, and a few others, ſhine out amidſt ſome flat and inſipid compoſitions: Even in the Paradiſe Loſt, his capital performance, there are very long paſſages, amounting to near a third of the work, almoſt wholly devoid of harmony and elegance, nay, of all vigour of imagination. The natural inequality of Milton's genius was much increaſed by the inequalities in his ſubject; of which ſome parts are of themſelves the moſt lofty that can enter into human conception, others would have required the moſt laboured elegance of compoſition to ſupport them. It is certain, that this author, when in a happy mood, and employed on a noble ſubject, is the moſt wonderfully ſublime of any poet in any language; Homer and Lucretius and Taſſo not excepted. More conciſe than Homer, more ſimple than Taſſo, more nervous than Lucretius; had he lived in a latter age, and learned to poliſh ſome rudeneſs in his verſes; had he enjoyed better fortune, and poſſeſſed leiſure to watch the returns of genius in himſelf; he had attained the pinnacle of human perfection, and borne away the palm of epic poetry.

IT is well known, that Milton never enjoyed in his life-time the reputation which he deſerved. His Paradiſe Loſt was long neglected: Prejudices againſt an apologiſt for the regicides, and againſt a work not wholly purged of the cant of former times, kept the ignorant world from perceiving the prodigious merit of that performance. Lord Somers, by encouraging a good edition of it, about twenty years after the author's death, firſt brought it into reputation; and Tonſon, in his dedication of a ſmaller edition, ſpeaks of it as a work juſt beginning to be known. Even during the prevalence of Milton's party, he ſeems never to have been much regarded; and Whitlocke * talks of one Milton, as he calls him, a blind man, who was employed in tranſlating a treaty with Sweden into Latin. Theſe forms of expreſſion are amuſing to poſterity, who conſider how obſcure Whitlocke himſelf, tho' lord-keeper, and ambaſſador, and indeed a man of great ability and merit, has become in compariſon of Milton.

IT was not ſtrange, that Milton received no encouragement after the reſtoration: It was more to be admired, that he eſcaped with his life. Many of the cavaliers blamed extremely that lenity towards him, which was ſo honourable in the King, and ſo advantageous to poſterity. It is ſaid, that he had ſaved Davenant's life during the Protectorſhip; and Davenant in return afforded him like protection after the reſtoration; being ſenſible, that men of letters ought always to regard their ſympathy of taſte as a more powerful band of union, than any difference of party or opinion as a ſource of animoſity. It was during a ſtate of poverty, blindneſs, diſgrace, danger, and old age, that Milton compoſed his wonderful poem, which not only ſurpaſſed all the performances of his cotemporaries, but all the compoſitions, which had flowed from his pen, during the vigour of his age, and the height

* P. 633.

of

of his proſperity. This circumſtance is not the leaſt remarkable of all thoſe which attend that great genius. Chap. III. 1666.

WALLER was the firſt refiner of Engliſh poetry, at leaſt of Engliſh rhyme; but his performances ſtill abound with many faults, and what is more material, they contain but feeble and ſuperficial beauties. Gaiety, wit, and ingenuity are their ruling character: They aſpire not to the ſublime; ſtill leſs to the pathetic. They treat of love, without making us feel any tenderneſs; and abound in panegyric, without exciting admiration. The panegyric however on Cromwel, contains more force than we ſhould expect from the other compoſitions of this poet.

WALLER was born to an ample fortune, was early introduced to the court, and lived in the beſt company. He poſſeſſed talents of eloquence as well as poetry; and till his death, which happened in a good old age, he was the delight of the Houſe of Commons. The errors of his life proceeded more from want of courage than of honour or integrity.

COWLEY is an author extremely corrupted by the bad taſte of his age; but had he lived even in the pureſt times of Greece and Rome, he muſt always have been a very indifferent poet. He had no ear for harmony; and his verſes are only known to be ſuch by the rhyme, which terminates them. In his rugged untuneable numbers are conveyed ſentiments the moſt ſtrained and violent; long ſpun allegories, diſtant alluſions, and forced conceits. Great ingenuity, however, and force of thought ſometimes break out amidſt thoſe unnatural conceptions: A few Anacreontics ſurpriſe us by their eaſe and gaiety: His proſe writings pleaſe, by the honeſty and goodneſs which they expreſs; and even by their ſpleen and melancholy. This author was much more praiſed and admired during his life-time, and celebrated after his death, than the great Milton.

SIR JOHN DENHAM in his Cooper's Hill (for none of his other poems merit attention) has a loftineſs and vigour, which had not before him been attained by any Engliſh poet, who wrote in rhyme. The mechanical difficulties of that meaſure retarded its improvement. Shakeſpeare, whoſe tragic ſcenes are ſo wonderfully forcible and expreſſive, is a very indifferent poet, when he attempts rhyme. Preciſion and neatneſs are chiefly wanting in Denham.

No author in that age was more celebrated both abroad and at home than Hobbes: In our times, he is much neglected: A lively inſtance, how precarious all reputations, founded on reaſoning and philoſophy! A pleaſant comedy, which paints the manners of the age, and expoſes a faithful picture of nature, is a durable work, and is tranſmitted to the lateſt poſterity. But a ſyſtem, whether phyſical or metaphyſical, owes commonly its ſucceſs to its novelty; and is no ſooner canvaſſed with impartiality than its weakneſs is diſcovered. Hobbes's politics are fitted only to promote tyranny, and his ethics to encourage licentiouſneſs. Tho' an enemy to religion, he partakes nothing of the ſpirit of ſcepticiſm; but is as poſitive and dogmatical

Chap. III. 1660.

domatical as if human reaſon, and his reaſon in particular, could attain a thorough conviction on theſe ſubjects. Clearneſs and propriety of ſtyle are the chief excellencies of Hobbes's writings. In his own perſon he is repreſented to have been a man of virtue; a character nowiſe ſurprizing, notwithſtanding his libertine ſyſtem of ethics. Timidity is the principal fault with which he is reproached: He lived to an extreme old age, yet could never reconcile himſelf to the thoughts of death. The boldneſs of his opinions and ſentiments, form a remarkable contraſte to this part of his character.

HARRINGTON's Oceana was well adapted to that age, when the plans of imaginary Republics were the daily ſubjects of debate and converſation; and even in our time it is juſtly admired as a work of genius and invention. The idea however of a perfect and immortal Commonwealth will always be found as chimerical as that of a perfect and immortal man. The ſtyle of this author wants eaſe and fluency; but the good matter, which this work contains, makes ample compenſation.

HARVEY is intitled to the glory of having made, by reaſoning alone, without any mixture of accident, a capital diſcovery in one of the moſt important branches of ſcience. He had alſo the happineſs of eſtabliſhing at once his theory on the moſt ſolid and convincing proofs; and poſterity has added little to the arguments ſuggeſted by his induſtry and ingenuity. His treatiſe of the circulation of the blood is farther embelliſhed by that warmth and ſpirit, which ſo naturally accompany the genius of invention. This great man was much favoured by Charles the firſt, who gave him the liberty of uſing all the deer in the royal foreſts for perfecting his diſcoveries on the generation of animals.

THIS age affords great materials for hiſtory; but did not produce any accompliſhed hiſtorian. Clarendon, however, will always be eſteemed an entertaining author, even independant of our curioſity to know the facts, which he relates. His ſtyle is prolix and redundant, and ſuffocates us by the length of its periods: But it diſcovers imagination and ſentiment, and pleaſes us at the ſame time that we diſapprove of it. He is more partial in appearance than in reality: For he ſeems perpetually anxious to apologize for the King; but his apologies are often well grounded. He is leſs partial in his relation of facts, than in his account of characters: He was too honeſt a man to falſify the former; his affections were eaſily capable, unknown to himſelf, of diſguiſing the latter. An air of probity and goodneſs runs thro' the whole work; as theſe qualities did in reality embelliſh the whole life of the author.

THESE are the chief performances, which engage the attention of poſterity. Thoſe numberleſs productions, with which the preſs then abounded; the cant of the pulpit, the declamations of party, the ſubtilties of theology; all theſe have long ago ſunk into ſilence and oblivion. Even a writer, ſuch as Selden, whoſe learning was his chief excellency; or Chillingworth, an acute diſputant againſt the Papiſts, will ſcarce ever be ranked among the claſſics of our language or country.

THE

THE HISTORY OF GREAT BRITAIN.

CHARLES II.

CHAP. I.

New miniſtry.——Act of Indemnity.——Settlement of the revenue.——Trial and execution of the regicides.——Diſſolution of the Convention Parliament.——Prelacy reſtored.——Inſurrection of the Millenarians.——Affairs of Scotland.——Conference at the Savoy.——Arguments for and againſt a comprehenſion.——A new Parliament.——Biſhops ſeats reſtored.——Corporation act.——Act of uniformity.——King's marriage.——Trial of Vane.——And execution.——Preſbyterian clergy ejected.——Dunkirk ſold to the French.——Declaration of indulgence.——Decline of Clarendon's credit.

CHARLES the ſecond, when he aſcended the throne of his anceſtors, was thirty years of age. He poſſeſſed a vigorous conſtitution, a fine ſhape, a manly figure, a graceful air; and tho' his features were harſh, yet was his countenance in the main lively and engaging. He was in that period of life, when there remains enough of youth to render the perſon amiable, without diminiſhing that authority and regard, which attend the years of experience and maturity. Tenderneſs was excited by the memory of his recent adverſities. His preſent proſperity was the object rather of admiration than of envy. And 1660.

Chap. I. 1660.

as the ſudden and ſurprizing revolution, which reſtored him to his regal rights, had alſo reſtored the nation to peace, law, order, and liberty; no Prince ever obtained a crown in more favourable circumſtances, or was more bleſt with the cordial affection and attachment of his ſubjects.

THIS popularity, the King, by his whole demeanor and behaviour, was well qualified to ſupport and to encreaſe. To a lively wit and quick comprehenſion, he united a juſt underſtanding and a general obſervation both of men and things. The eaſieſt manners, the moſt unaffected politeneſs, the moſt engaging gaiety accompanied his converſation and addreſs. Accuſtomed during his exile to live among his courtiers rather like a companion than a monarch, he retained, even while on the throne, that open affability, which was capable of reconciling the moſt determined Republicans to his royal dignity. Totally devoid of reſentment, as well from the natural lenity as careleſſneſs of his temper, he inſured pardon to the moſt guilty of his enemies, and left hopes of favour to his moſt violent opponents. From the whole tenor of his actions and diſcourſe, he ſeemed deſirous of loſing the memory of paſt animoſities, and of uniting every party in an affection for their Prince and their Country.

New miniſtry.

INTO his council were admitted the moſt eminent men of the nation, without regard to former diſtinctions: The Preſbyterians, equally with the Royaliſts, ſhared this honour. Anneſley was alſo created earl of Angleſey; Aſhley Cooper lord Aſhley; Denzil Hollis lord Hollis. The earl of Mancheſter was appointed lord chamberlain, and lord Say privy ſeal. Calamy and Baxter, Preſbyterian clergymen, were even made chaplains to the King.

ADMIRAL MONTAGUE, created earl of Sandwich, was entitled from his recent ſervices to great favour; and he obtained it. Monk, created duke of Albemarle, had performed ſuch ſignal ſervices, that, according to a vulgar and malignant obſervation, he ought rather to have expected hatred and ingratitude: Yet was he ever treated by the King with great marks of diſtinction. Charles's diſpoſition, free from jealouſy; and the prudent behaviour of the General, who never overrated his merits; prevented all thoſe diſguſts, which naturally ariſe in ſo delicate a ſituation. The capacity too of Albemarle, was not extenſive, nor were his parts ſhining. Tho' he had diſtinguiſhed himſelf in inferior ſtations, he was found, upon familiar acquaintance, to be unequal to thoſe great atchievements, which fortune had enabled him to perform; and he appeared unfit for the court, a ſcene of life to which he had never been accuſtomed. Morice, his friend, was created ſecretary of ſtate, and was ſupported more by his patron's credit than by his own ability or experience.

BUT

But the choice, which the King at firſt made of his principal miniſters and favourites, was the circumſtance, which chiefly gave contentment to the nation, and prognoſticated future happineſs and tranquillity. Sir Edward Hyde, created earl of Clarendon, was chancellor and prime miniſter: The marqueſs, created duke, of Ormond, was lord ſteward of the houſehold: The earl of Southampton high treaſurer: Sir Edward Nicholas ſecretary of ſtate. Theſe men, united together in the ſtricteſt friendſhip, and combining in the ſame laudable inclinations, ſupported each others credit, and purſued the intereſt of the public.

Agreeable to the preſent proſperity of public affairs was the univerſal joy and feſtivity diffuſed throughout the nation. The melancholy auſterity of the fanatics fell into diſcredit together with their principles. The Royaliſts, who had ever affected a contrary diſpoſition, found in their recent ſucceſs new motives for mirth and gaiety; and it now belonged to them to give repute and faſhion to their manners. From paſt experience it had ſufficiently appeared, that gravity was very diſtinct from wiſdom, formality from virtue, and hypocriſy from religion. The King himſelf, who bore a ſtrong propenſity to pleaſure and ſociety, ſerved, by his powerful and engaging example, to baniſh thoſe ſour and malignant humours, which had hitherto engendered ſuch confuſion. And tho' the juſt bounds were undoubtedly paſſed, when men returned from their former extreme; yet was the public happy in exchanging vices pernicious to ſociety for diſorders hurtful chiefly to the individuals themſelves, who were guilty of them.

It required ſome time before the ſeveral parts of the ſtate, diſfigured by war and faction, could recover their former arrangement: But the Parliament immediately entered into a good correſpondence with the King, and they treated him with the ſame dutiful regard, which had uſually been paid to his predeceſſors. Being ſummoned without the King's conſent, they received, at firſt, only the title of a Convention; and it was not till the King paſſed an act for that purpoſe, that they were called by the appellation of Parliament. All judicial proceedings, tranſacted in the name of the Commonwealth or Protector, they thought it requiſite to ratify by a new law. And both houſes acknowleging the guilt of the former rebellion, in their own name and in that of all the ſubjects, laid hold of his majeſty's gracious pardon and indemnity.

The King, before his reſtoration, being afraid of reducing any of his enemies to deſpair, and at the ſame time unwilling that ſuch enormous crimes as had been committed, ſhould receive a total impunity, had expreſſed himſelf very cautiouſly in his declaration of Breda, and had promiſed an indemnity to all criminals, but ſuch as ſhould be excepted by the Parliament. He now iſſued a proclamation, declaring that ſuch of the late King's judges as did not yield themſelves priſoners

Chap. I. 1660.

within fourteen days ſhould receive no pardon. Nineteen ſurrendered themſelves: Some were taken in their flight: Others eſcaped beyond ſea.

THE commons ſeem to have been more inclined to lenity than the lords. The upper houſe, inflamed with the ill uſage, which they had received, were reſolved, beſides the late King's judges, to except every one, who had ſat in any high court of juſtice. Nay, the earl of Briſtol moved, that no pardon might be granted to thoſe who had any way contributed to the King's death. So wide an exception, in which every one, who had ſerved the Parliament, might be comprehended, gave a general alarm; and men began to apprehend, that this motion was the effect of ſome court artifice or intrigue. But the King ſoon diſſipated theſe fears. He came to the houſe of peers; and in the moſt earneſt terms, preſſed the act of general indemnity. He urged both the neceſſity of the thing, and the obligation of his former promiſe: A promiſe, he ſaid, which he would ever regard as ſacred; ſince to it he probably owed the ſatisfaction, which at preſent he enjoyed, of meeting his people in Parliament. This meaſure of the King, tho' irregular, by his taking notice of a bill which depended before the houſes, was received with great applauſe and ſatisfaction.

AFTER repeated ſollicitations from the King, the act of indemnity paſſed both houſes, and ſoon received the royal aſſent. Thoſe who had an immediate hand in the King's death, were there excepted: Even Cromwel, Ireton, Bradſhaw, and others now dead, were attainted, and their eſtates forfeited. Vane and Lambert, tho' none of the King's judges, were alſo excepted. St. John and ſeventeen perſons more were deprived of all benefit from this act, if they ever accepted any public employment. All who had ſat in any illegal high court of juſtice were diſabled from bearing offices. Theſe were all the ſeverities, which followed ſuch furious civil wars and convulſions.

Settlement of the revenue.

THE next buſineſs was the ſettlement of the King's revenue. In this work, the Parliament had regard to public freedom as well as to the ſupport of the crown. The tenures of wards and liveries had long been regarded as a grievance by all lovers of liberty: Several attempts had been made during the reign of James to purchaſe this prerogative together with that of purveyance; and 200,000 pounds a year had been offered that Prince in lieu of them. During the time of the Republic, wardſhips and purveyance had been utterly aboliſhed. And even in the preſent Parliament, before the King arrived in England, a bill had been introduced, offering him a compenſation for theſe revenues. A hundred thouſand pounds a year was the ſum, which the parliament agreed to; and half of the exciſe was ſettled in perpetuity upon the crown as the fund whence that revenue ſhould be levied. Tho' that impoſt yielded more profit, the bargain might be eſteemed hard; and it

was chiefly the neceſſity of the King's ſituation, which induced him to conſent to it. No requeſt of the Parliament, during the preſent joy, could be refuſed them.

Not only the power of the crown, by means of wardſhips and purveyance, was very conſiderable: It was alſo unequal and perſonal; and conſequently, of a nature unſuitable to a monarchy, ſubjected to ſtrict and regular limitations. The uniformity, therefore, of the political ſyſtem ſeemed to require the abolition of theſe Gothic inſtitutions; tho' it might perhaps appear unjuſt, that an advantage, which chiefly reſulted to the proprietors of land, ſhould be purchaſed by an impoſt, that affected every inhabitant of the kingdom.

Tonnage and poundage and the other half of the exciſe were granted to the King during life. The Parliament even proceeded ſo far as to vote that the ſettled revenue of the crown for all charges ſhould be 1,200,000 pounds a year; a ſum larger than any Engliſh Monarch had ever before enjoyed. The late King's revenue from 1637 to the meeting of the long Parliament appeared to be at a medium near 900,000 pounds a year; of which 200,000 pounds aroſe from branches, partly illegal, partly expired. The misfortunes of that prince were now believed to have proceeded originally from the narrowneſs of his revenue, and from the obſtinacy of his Parliaments, who had refuſed him the neceſſary ſupply. And as all the Monarchs of Europe were perpetually augmenting their forces, and conſequently their expences, it became requiſite that England, from motives both of honour and ſecurity, ſhould bear ſome proportion to them, and adapt its revenue to the new ſyſtem of politics, which prevailed. According to the chancellor's computation, a charge of 800,000 pounds a year, was at preſent required for the fleet and other articles, which formerly coſt the crown but eighty thouſand.

Had the Parliament, before reſtoring the King, inſiſted on any farther limitations than thoſe which the conſtitution already impoſed; beſides the danger of inflaming the antient quarrels among parties; it would ſeem, that their caution had been entirely ſuperfluous. By reaſon of its ſlender and precarious revenue, the crown in effect was ſtill totally dependant. Not a fourth part of this ſum, which ſeemed requiſite for public expences, could be levied without conſent of Parliament; and any conceſſions, had they been thought neceſſary, might, even after the reſtoration, be extorted by the commons from their neceſſitous Prince. This Parliament ſhowed no intention of employing at preſent that engine to any ſuch purpoſes; but they ſeemed ſtill determined not to part with it entirely, or to render the revenues of the crown fixed and independant. Tho' they voted in general, that 1,200,000 pounds a year ſhould be ſettled on the King, they aſſigned not any funds, which could yield two thirds of that ſum. And

they

Chap. I. 1660.

they left the care of fulfilling their engagements to the future conſideration of Parliament.

In all the temporary ſupplies which they voted, they diſcovered the ſame cautious frugality. To diſband the army, ſo formidable in itſelf, and ſo much accuſtomed to rebellion and changes of government, was neceſſary, for the ſecurity both of King and Parliament; yet the Commons ſhowed great jealouſy in granting the ſums, requiſite for that purpoſe. An aſſeſſment of 70,000 pounds a month was impoſed: but was at firſt voted, to continue only for three months: And all the other ſums, which by a poll-bill and new aſſeſſments, they levied for that uſe, they ſtill granted by parcels; as if they were not, as yet, well aſſured of the fidelity of that hand, to which the money was committed. Having proceeded ſo far in the ſettlement of the nation, the Parliament adjourned themſelves for ſome time.

13th of September.

Trial and execution of the Regicides.

During the receſs of Parliament, the object, which chiefly intereſted the public, was the trial and condemnation of the Regicides. The general indignation, which attended the enormous crime, of which theſe men had been guilty, made their ſufferings the ſubject of joy to the people: But in the peculiar circumſtances of that action, in the prejudices of the times, as well as in the behaviour of the criminals, a mind, ſeaſoned with humanity, will find a plentiful ſource of compaſſion and indulgence. Can any one, without the utmoſt concern for human blindneſs and ignorance, conſider the demeanor of general Harriſon, who was firſt brought to his trial? With great courage and elevation of ſentiment, he told the court, that the pretended crime, of which he ſtood accuſed, was not a deed, performed in a corner: The ſound of it had gone forth to moſt nations; and in the ſingular and marvellous conduct of it had chiefly appeared the ſovereign power of Heaven. That he himſelf, agitated by doubts, had often, with paſſionate tears, offered his addreſſes to the Divine Majeſty; and earneſtly ſought for light and conviction: He had ſtill received aſſurance of a heavenly ſanction, and returned from theſe devout ſupplications with more ſerene tranquillity and ſatisfaction. That all the nations of the earth, in the eyes of their Creator, were leſs than a drop of water in the bucket; nor were their erroneous judgments aught but darkneſs compared with divine illuminations. That theſe frequent illapſes of the divine Spirit he could not ſuſpect to be intereſted illuſions; ſince he was conſcious, that, for no temporal advantage, would he offer injury to the pooreſt man or woman who trod upon the earth. That all the allurements of ambition, all the terrors of impriſonment, had not been able, during the uſurpation of Cromwel, to ſhake his ſteddy reſolution or bend him to a compliance with that deceitful tyrant. And that when invited by him to ſit on the right hand of the throne, when offered riches and ſplendor and dominion, he had

had disdainfully rejected all temptations; and neglecting the tears of his friends and family, had still, thro' every danger, held fast his principles and his integrity. Chap. I. 1660.

Scot, who was more a Republican than a Fanatic, had said in the house of Commons, a little before the restoration, that he desired no other epitaph to be inscribed on his tombstone than this; *Here lies Thomas Scot, who adjudged the King to death.* He supported the same spirit upon his trial.

Carew, a Millenarian, submitted to his trial, *saving to our Lord Jesus Christ his right to the government of these kingdoms.* Some scrupled to say, according to form, that they would be tried by God and their country; because God was not visibly present to judge them. Others said, that they would be tried by the word of God.

No more than six of the late King's judges, Harrison, Scot, Carew, Clement, Jones, and Scrope, were executed: Scrope alone, of all those who came in upon the King's proclamation. He was a gentleman of a good family and of a decent character: but it was proved, that he had lately, in conversation, expressed himself as if he were no wise convinced of his guilt in condemning the King. Axtel, who had guarded the high court of justice, Hacker, who commanded on the day of the King's execution, Coke, the sollicitor for the people of England, and Hugh Peters, the furious preacher, who inflamed the army to regicide: All these were tried, and condemned, and suffered with the King's judges. No saint nor confessor ever went to martyrdom with more assured confidence of Heaven than was expressed by those criminals, even when the terrors of immediate death, joined to many indignities, were set before them. The rest of the King's judges, by unexampled lenity, were reprieved; and they were dispersed into several prisons.

This punishment of declared enemies no wise interrupted the rejoicings of the court: But the death of the duke of Gloucester, a young Prince of very promising hopes, threw a great cloud upon them. The King, by no incident in his life, was ever so deeply affected. Gloucester was observed to possess united the good qualities of both his brothers: The clear judgment and penetration of the King; the industry and application of the duke of York. He was also believed to be affectionate to the religion and constitution of his country. He was but twenty years of age, when the small pox put an end to his life. 13th of September.

The Princess of Orange, having come to England, in order to partake of the joy, attending the restoration of her family, with whom she lived in great friendship, soon after sickened and died. The Queen-mother paid a visit to her son; and obtained his consent to the marriage of the Princess Henrietta, with the duke of Orleans, brother to the French King.

After a recess of near two months, the Parliament met, and proceeded in the great work of the national settlement. They established the Post-office, wine-licences, 6th November.

and

Chap. I. 1660.

and ſome articles of the revenue. They granted more aſſeſſments, and ſome arrears for paying and diſbanding the army. Buſineſs, being carried on with great unanimity, was ſoon diſpatched: And after they had ſat near two months, the King, in a ſpeech full of the moſt gracious expreſſions, thought proper to diſſolve them.

Diſſolution of the Convention Parliament. 29th of December.

THIS Houſe of Commons had been choſen during the reign of the old Parliamentary party; and tho' many Royaliſts had crept in amongſt them, yet did it chiefly conſiſt of Preſbyterians, who had not yet entirely laid aſide their old jealouſies and principles. Lenthal, a member, having ſaid, that thoſe who firſt took arms againſt the King, were as guilty as thoſe, who afterwards brought him to the ſcaffold, was ſeverely reprimanded by order of the houſe; and the moſt violent efforts of the Long Parliament to ſecure the conſtitution and bring delinquents to juſtice, were in effect vindicated and applauded. The claim of the two Houſes to the militia, the firſt ground of the quarrel, however exorbitant an uſurpation, this Parliament was never brought expreſsly to reſign. All grants of money they made with a very ſparing hand. Great arrears being due by the late Protectors to the fleet, the army, the navy-office, and every branch of ſervice; this whole debt they threw upon the crown, without eſtabliſhing funds ſufficient for its payment. Yet notwithſtanding this jealous care expreſſed by the Parliament, there prevails a ſtory, that Popham, having ſounded the diſpoſition of the members, undertook to the earl of Southampton to procure, during the King's life, a grant of two millions a year, land tax; a ſum, which, joined to the cuſtoms and exciſe, would for ever have rendered this Prince independant of his people. Southampton, it is ſaid, merely from his affection to the King, had unwarily embraced the offer; and it was not till he communicated the matter to the chancellor, that he was made ſenſible of its pernicious tendency. It is not improbable, that ſuch an offer might have been made, and been hearkened to; but it is no wiſe probable, that all the intereſt of the court would ever, with this Houſe of Commons, have been able to make it effectual. Clarendon ſhowed his prudence, no leſs than his integrity, in entirely rejecting it.

THE chancellor, from the ſame principles of conduct, haſtened to diſband the army. When the King reviewed theſe veterane troops, he was ſtruck with their beauty, order, diſcipline, and martial appearance; and being ſenſible, that regular forces are moſt neceſſary implements of royalty, he expreſſed a deſire of finding expedients ſtill to retain them. But his wiſe miniſter ſet before him the dangerous ſpirit by which theſe troops were animated, their enthuſiaſtic genius, their habits of rebellion and mutiny; and he convinced the King, that till they were diſbanded, he never could eſteem himſelf ſecurely eſtabliſhed on his throne. No more troops were retained than a few guards and garriſons, about 1000 horſe, and 4000 foot.

foot. This was the first appearance, under the Monarchy, of a regular standing army in England. The fortifications of Gloceſter, Taunton, and other towns, which had made reſiſtance to the King during the civil wars, were alſo demoliſhed. Chap. I. 1660.

Clarendon not only behaved with great wiſdom and juſtice in the office of chancellor: All the councils, which he gave the King, tended equally to promote the intereſt of Prince and people. Charles, accuſtomed in his exile to pay entire deference to the judgment of that faithful ſervant, continued ſtill to ſubmit to his direction; and for ſome time no miniſter was ever poſſeſſed of more abſolute authority. He moderated the forward zeal of the Royaliſts, and tempered their appetite for revenge. With the oppoſite party, he endeavoured to preſerve inviolate all the King's engagements: He kept an exact regiſter of every promiſe which had been made for any ſervices, and he employed all his induſtry to fulfill them. This good miniſter was now very nearly allied to the royal family. His daughter, Anne Hyde, a woman of ſpirit and fine accompliſhments, had hearkened, while abroad, to the addreſſes of the duke of York, and under promiſe of marriage, had ſecretly admitted him to her bed. Her pregnancy ſoon appeared after the reſtoration; and tho' many endeavoured to diſſwade the Duke from ſo unequal an alliance, the King, in pity to his friend and miniſter, who had been totally ignorant of theſe engagements, obliged his brother to marry her. Clarendon expreſſed great uneaſineſs, at the honour, which he had obtained; and ſaid, that, by being elevated ſo much above his rank, he thence dreaded a more ſudden downfall.

Most circumſtances of Clarendon's adminiſtration have met with applauſe: His maxims alone in the conduct of eccleſiaſtical politics have by many been deemed the effect of prejudices, narrow and bigotted. Had the jealouſy of royal power prevailed ſo far with the Convention Parliament as to make them reſtore the King upon ſtrict limitations, there is no queſtion but the eſtabliſhment of preſbyterian diſcipline had been one of the conditions moſt rigidly inſiſted on. Not only that form of eccleſiaſtical government is more favourable to liberty than to royal power: It was likewiſe on its own account, agreeable to the majority of the Houſe of Commons, and ſuited their religious principles. But as the impatience of the people, the danger of delay, the general diſguſt towards faction, and the authority of Monk had prevailed over that jealous project of limitations, the full ſettlement of the Hierarchy, together with the Monarchy, was a neceſſary and infallible conſequence. All the Royaliſts were zealous for that mode of religion; the merits of the epiſcopal clergy towards the King, as well as their ſufferings on that account, had been very great; the laws, which eſtabliſhed biſhops and the liturgy, were as yet unrepealed by legal authority; and any attempt of the Parliament, by new acts, to give the ſuperiority to Preſbyterianiſm, had been ſufficient to involve again Prelacy reſtored.

Chap. I. 1660.

the nation in blood and confuſion. Moved by theſe views, the Commons had very wiſely poſtponed the examination of all religious controverſy, and had left entirely the ſettlement of the church to the King and to the antient laws.

The King at firſt uſed great moderation in the execution of the laws. Nine biſhops ſtill remained alive; and theſe were immediately reſtored to their dioceſes: All the ejected clergy recovered their livings: The liturgy, a form of worſhip very decent, and not without beauty, was again admitted into the churches: But at the ſame time, a declaration was iſſued, in order to give contentment to the Preſbyterians, and preſerve an air of moderation and neutrality. In that declaration, the King promiſed, that he would provide ſuffragan biſhops for the larger dioceſes; that the prelates ſhould, all of them, be regular and conſtant preachers; that they ſhould not confer ordination or exerciſe any juriſdiction, without the advice and aſſiſtance of Preſbyters, choſen by the dioceſe; that ſuch alterations ſhould be made in the liturgy, as would render it totally unexceptionable; that in the mean time, the uſe of that mode of worſhip ſhould not be impoſed on ſuch as were unwilling to receive it; and that the ſurplice, the croſs in baptiſm, and bowing at the name of Jeſus ſhould not be rigidly inſiſted on. This declaration the King iſſued as head of the church; and he plainly aſſumed, in many parts of it, a legiſlative authority in eccleſiaſtical matters. But the Engliſh government, tho' more exactly defined by late conteſts, was not, as yet, reduced, in every particular, to the ſtrict limits of law. And if ever prerogative was juſtifiably employed, it ſeemed to be on the preſent occaſion; when all parts of the ſtate were torn with paſt convulſions, and required the moderating hand of the chief magiſtrate, to reduce them to their antient order.

But tho' theſe appearances of neutrality were maintained, and a mitigated epiſcopacy only ſeemed to be inſiſted on, it was far from the intention of the miniſtry always to preſerve like regard to the Preſbyterians. The madneſs of the Fifth-Monarchy-men afforded them a pretence for departing from it. Venner, a deſperate enthuſiaſt, who had often conſpired againſt Cromwel, having, by his zealous lectures, inflamed his own imagination and that of his followers, iſſued forth with them into the ſtreets of London. They were to the number of ſixty, compleatly armed, believed themſelves invulnerable and invincible, and firmly expected the ſame fortune, which had attended Gideon and other heroes of the Old Teſtament. Every one at firſt fled before them. One unhappy man, who, being queſtioned, ſaid, "He was for God and King Charles," they inſtantly murdered. They went triumphantly from ſtreet to ſtreet, every where proclaiming King Jeſus, who, they ſaid, was their inviſible leader. At length, the magiſtrates, having aſſembled ſome train-bands, made an attack upon them. They defended themſelves

Inſurrection of the Millenarians.

selves with great order as well as valour; and after killing many of the assailants, they made a regular retreat into Cane-Wood near Hampstead. Next morning, they were chaced thence by a detachment of the guards; but they ventured again to invade the city, which was not prepared to receive them. After committing great disorder, and traversing almost every street of that immense capital, they shut up themselves in a house, which they were resolute to defend to the last extremity. Being surrounded, and the house untiled, they were fired upon from every side; and they still refused quarter. The people rushed in upon them, and seized the few who were alive. They were tryed, condemned, and executed; and to the last they persisted in affirming, that, if they were deceived, it was the Lord that had deceived them. Chap. I. 1660.

Clarendon and the ministry took occasion from this insurrection to infer the dangerous spirit of the Presbyterians and of all the sectaries: But the madness of the attempt sufficiently proved, that it had been undertaken by no concert, and never could have proved dangerous. The well known hatred too, which prevailed between the Presbyterians and the other sects, should have removed the former from all suspicion of any concurrence in the enterprize. But as a pretence was wanted, besides their old demerits, for justifying the intended rigours against them, this reason, however slight, was very greedily laid hold of.

The affairs in Scotland hastened with still quicker steps than those in England towards a settlement and a compliance with the King. It was deliberated in the English council, whether that nation should be restored to its liberty, or whether the forts, erected by Cromwel, should not still be upheld, in order to curb the mutinous spirit, by which the Scots in all ages had been so much governed. Lauderdale, who from the battle of Worcester to the restoration, had been detained a prisoner in the Tower, had considerable influence with the King; and he strenuously opposed this violent measure. He represented, that it was the loyalty of the Scots nation, which had engaged them in opposition to the English rebels; and that to take advantage of the calamities, into which, on that account, they had fallen, would be regarded as the highest injustice and ingratitude: That the spirit of that people was now fully subdued by the long servitude, under which the usurpers had detained them, and would of itself yield to any reasonable compliance with their legal sovereign, if, by his means, they recovered their liberty and independance: That the attachment of the Scots towards their King, whom they regarded as their native Prince, was naturally much stronger than that of the English; and would afford him a sure resource, in case of any rebellion among the latter: That republican principles had long been, and still were, very prevalent with his southern subjects, and might again menace the throne with new tu- Affairs of Scotland.

Chap. I. 1660. mults and reſiſtance. That the time would probably come, when the King, inſtead of deſiring to ſee Engliſh garriſons in Scotland, would be better pleaſed to have Scots garriſons in England, who, ſupported by Engliſh pay, would be fond to curb the ſeditious genius of that opulent nation: And that a people, ſuch as the Scots, governed by a few nobility, would more eaſily be reduced to ſubmiſſion under Monarchy, than one, like the Engliſh, who breathed nothing but the ſpirit of democratical equality.

1661. 1ſt of January. THESE views induced the King to diſband all the forces in Scotland, and to raze all the forts, which had been erected. General Middleton, created earl of that name, was ſent commiſſioner to the Parliament, which was ſummoned. A very compliant ſpirit was there diſcovered in all orders of men. The commiſſioners had even ſufficient influence to obtain an act, annulling, at once, all laws, which had paſſed ſince the year 1633; on pretext of the violence, which, during that time, had been employed againſt the King and his father, in order to procure their aſſent to theſe ſtatutes. This was a very large, if not an unexampled conceſſion: and, together with many dangerous limitations, overthrew ſome uſeful barriers, which had been erected to the conſtitution. But the tide was now running ſtrongly towards Monarchy; and the Scots nation plainly diſcovered, that their paſt reſiſtance had proceeded more from the turbulency of their ariſtocracy and the bigotry of their eccleſiaſtics, than from any fixed paſſion towards civil liberty. The lords of articles were reſtored, with ſome exorbitant branches of prerogative; and royal authority, fortified with more plauſible claims and pretences, was, in its full extent, re-eſtabliſhed in that kingdom.

THE prelacy likewiſe, by the abrogating every ſtatute, enacted in favour of Preſbytery, was thereby tacitely reſtored; and the King deliberated what uſe he ſhould make of this conceſſion. Lauderdale, who at bottom was a paſſionate zealot againſt epiſcopacy, endeavoured to perſwade him, that the Scots, if gratified in this favourite point of eccleſiaſtical government, would, in every other demand, be entirely compliant with the King. Charles, tho' he had no ſuch attachment to prelacy as had influenced his father and grandfather, had ſuffered ſuch indignities from the Scots Preſbyterians, that he ever after bore them a moſt hearty averſion. He ſaid to Lauderdale, that Preſbyterianiſm, he thought, was not a religion for a gentleman; and he could not conſent to its farther continuance in Scotland. Middleton too and his other miniſters perſwaded him, that the nation in general were ſo diſguſted with the violence and tyranny of the Eccleſiaſtics, that any alteration of church government would be univerſally grateful. And Clarendon, as well as Ormond, dreading that the Preſbyterian ſect, if legally eſtabliſhed in Scotland, would acquire authority in England, and Ireland, ſeconded

conded the applications of theſe miniſters. The reſolution was therefore taken to reſtore prelacy; a meaſure afterwards attended with many and great inconveniencies: But whether in this reſolution the King did not chuſe the leſs evil, it is very difficult to determine. Sharpe, who had been commiſſioned by the Preſbyterians in Scotland to manage their intereſt with the King, was perſuaded to abandon that party; and as a reward for his compliance, was created archbiſhop of St. Andrew's. The management of eccleſiaſtical affairs was chiefly intruſted to him; and as he was deemed a traitor and a renegade by his old friends, he became, on that account, as well as from the violence of his conduct, extremely obnoxious to them.

Charles had not promiſed to Scotland any ſuch indemnity as by his declaration of Breda he had enſured to England: And it was deemed more political for him to hold over men's heads, for ſome time, the terror of puniſhment; till they ſhould have made the requiſite compliance with the new eſtabliſhed government. Tho' neither the King's temper nor plan of adminiſtration led him to ſeverity; ſome examples, after ſuch a bloody and triumphant rebellion, ſeemed neceſſary; and the marqueſs of Argyle and one Guthry, a miniſter, were pitched on as the victims. Two acts of indemnity, one paſſed by the late King in 1641, another by the preſent in 1651, formed, it was thought, invincible obſtacles to the puniſhment of Argyle; and barred all enquiry into that part of his conduct, which might juſtly be regarded as the moſt exceptionable. Nothing remained but to try him for his compliance with the uſurpation; a crime common to him with the whole nation, and ſuch a one as the moſt loyal and affectionate ſubject might frequently by violence be obliged to commit. To make this compliance appear the more voluntary and hearty, there were produced in court letters, which he had wrote to Albemarle, while that General governed Scotland, and which contained expreſſions of the moſt cordial attachment. But beſides the general indignation, excited by Albemarle's diſcovery of this private correſpondence; men thought, that even the higheſt demonſtrations of affection might, during jealous times, be exacted as a neceſſary mark of compliance from a perſon of ſuch diſtinction as Argyle, and could not, by any equitable conſtruction, imply the crime of treaſon. The Parliament, however, was reduced to ſuch a ſtate of ſervile complaiſance as to paſs ſentence upon him; and he died with great conſtancy and courage. As he was univerſally known to have been the chief inſtrument of paſt diſorders and civil wars, the irregularity of his ſentence, and ſeveral iniquitous circumſtances in the method of conducting his trial, ſeemed on that account to admit of ſome apology. The lord Lorne, ſon to Argyle, having ever preſerved his loyalty, obtained a gift of the forfeiture. Guthry was a ſeditious preacher, and had perſo-

Chap. I. 1661.

nally affronted the King: His puniſhment gave ſurpriſe to no body. Sir Archibald Johnſtone of Warriſton was attainted and fled; but was ſeized in France about two years after, brought over and executed. He had been very active, during all the late diſorders; and was even ſuſpected of a ſecret combination with the Engliſh Regicides.

BESIDES theſe inſtances of compliance in the Scots Parliament, they voted an additional revenue to the King of 40,000 pounds a year, to be levied by way of exciſe. A ſmall force was propoſed to be maintained by this revenue, in order to prevent like confuſions with thoſe to which the kingdom had been hitherto expoſed. An act was alſo paſſed, declaring the covenant to be unlawful, and its obligation to be void and null. This was a violent ſhock to the bigotted prejudices of the nation.

IN England, the civil diſtinctions ſeemed to be aboliſhed by the lenity and equality of Charles's adminiſtration. Cavalier and round-head were heard of no more: All men ſeemed to concur in ſubmitting to the King's lawful prerogatives, and in cheriſhing the juſt privileges of the people and of Parliament. Theological controverſy alone ſtill ſubſiſted, and kept alive ſome ſparks of that flame, which had thrown the nation into ſuch combuſtion. While Catholics, Independants, and other ſectaries were contented with entertaining ſome proſpect of toleration; Prelacy and Preſbytery ſtruggled for the ſuperiority, and the hopes and fears of both parties kept them in agitation. A conference was held in the Savoy between twelve biſhops and twelve leaders among the Preſbyterian miniſters, with an intention, or at leaſt on pretence, of bringing about an accommodation between the parties. The ſurplice, the croſs in baptiſm, the kneeling at the ſacrament, the bowing at the name of Jeſus, were anew canvaſſed; and the ignorant multitude were in hopes, that ſo many men of gravity and learning could not fail, after deliberate argumentation, to agree in all points of controverſy: They were ſurpriſed to ſee them ſeparate more inflamed than ever, and more confirmed in their ſeveral prejudices. To enter into particulars would be ſuperfluous. Diſputes concerning religious forms are often, in themſelves, the moſt frivolous of any; and merit attention only ſo far as they have influence on the peace and order of civil ſociety.

Conference at the Savoy, 25th of March.

THE King's declaration had promiſed that ſome endeavours ſhould be uſed to effect a comprehenſion of both parties; and Charles's own indifference with regard to all ſuch queſtions ſeemed a very favourable circumſtance for the execution of that project. The partizans of a comprehenſion ſaid, that the Preſbyterians as well as the Prelatiſts, having felt by experience the fatal effects of mutual obſtinacy and violence, were now well diſpoſed towards an amicable agreement; that the biſhops, by relinquiſhing ſome part of their authority, and diſpenſing with th

Arguments for and againſt a comprehenſion.

moſ

moſt exceptionable ceremonies, would ſo gratify their adverſaries as to obtain their cordial and affectionate compliance, and unite the whole nation in one faith and one worſhip; that by obſtinately inſiſting on forms, in themſelves inſignificant, an air of importance was beſtowed on them, and men were taught to continue equally obſtinate in rejecting them; that the Preſbyterian clergy would go every reaſonable length, rather than by parting with their livings, expoſe themſelves to a ſtate of beggary, or at beſt of dependance; and that if their pride were flattered by ſome ſeeming alterations, and a pretence given them for affirming, that they had not abandoned their former principles, nothing farther was neceſſary to produce a thorough union between thoſe two parties, which comprehended the bulk of the nation. Chap. I. 1661.

It was alleged on the other hand, that the difference between religious ſects was founded, not on principle, but on paſſion; and till the irregular affections of men could be corrected, it was in vain to expect, by compliances, to obtain a perfect unanimity and comprehenſion; that the more inſignificant the objects of diſpute appeared, with the more certainty might it be inferred, that the real ground of diſſenſion was different from that which was univerſally pretended; that the love of novelty, the pride of argumentation, the pleaſure of making proſelytes, and the obſtinacy of contradiction, would for ever give riſe to ſects and diſputes, nor was it poſſible that ſuch a ſource of diſſention could ever, by any conceſſions, be entirely exhauſted; that the church, by departing from antient practices and principles, would tacitely acknowlege herſelf guilty of error, and loſe that reverence, ſo requiſite for preſerving the attachment of the multitude; and that if the preſent conceſſions (which was more than probable) ſhould prove ineffectual, greater muſt ſtill be made; and in the iſſue, diſcipline would be deſpoiled of all its authority, and worſhip of all its decency, without obtaining that end, which had been ſo fondly ſought for by theſe dangerous indulgences.

The miniſtry were inclined to give the preference to the latter arguments; and were the more confirmed in that intention by the diſpoſition, which appeared in the Parliament lately aſſembled. The Royaliſts and zealous Churchmen were at preſent the popular party in the nation, and, ſeconded by the efforts of the court, had prevailed in almoſt every election. Not more than fifty-ſix members of the Preſbyterian party had obtained ſeats in the lower houſe *; and theſe were able neither to oppoſe nor retard the meaſures of the majority. Monarchy, therefore, and Epiſcopacy, were now exalted to as great power and ſplendor as they had lately ſuffered miſery and depreſſion. Sir Edward Turner was choſen ſpeaker. A new Parliament. 8th of May.

An act was paſſed for the ſecurity of the King's perſon and government. To intend or deviſe the King's impriſonment, or bodily harm, or depoſition, or the

* Carte's Anſwer to the Byſtander, p. 79.

levying

Chap. I. 1661.

levying war againſt him, is declared, during the life-time of his preſent Majeſty, to be high treaſon. To affirm him to be a Papiſt or Heretic, or to endeavour by ſpeech or writing to alienate his ſubjects affections from him; theſe offences were made ſufficient to incapacitate the perſon guilty from holding any employment in church or ſtate. To maintain that the Long Parliament is not diſſolved, or that either or both Houſes, without the King, are poſſeſſed of legiſlative authority, or that the covenant is binding, was made puniſhable by the penalty of premunire.

THE covenant itſelf, together with the act for erecting the high court of juſtice, that for ſubſcribing the engagement, and that for declaring England a Commonwealth, were ordered to be burned by the hands of the hangman. The people aſſiſted with great alacrity on this occaſion.

THE abuſes of petitioning in the precedent reign had been attended with the worſt conſequences; and to prevent ſuch irregular practices for the future, it was enacted, that no more than twenty hands ſhould be ſubſcribed to any petition, unleſs with the ſanction of three juſtices, or the major part of the grand jury; and that no petition ſhould be preſented to the King or either houſe by above ten perſons. The penalty for a tranſgreſſion of this law was a fine of a hundred pounds and three months impriſonment.

Biſhops' ſeats reſtored.

THE biſhops, tho' reſtored to their ſpiritual authority, were ſtill excluded from Parliament by the law, which the late King had paſſed, immediately before the commencement of the civil diſorders. Great violence, both againſt the King and the Houſe of Peers, had been employed in paſſing this law; and on that account alone, the partizans of the church were provided of a very plauſible pretence for repealing it. Charles expreſſed much ſatisfaction, when he gave his aſſent to the act for that purpoſe. It is certain, that the authority of the crown, as well as that of the church, was intereſted in reſtoring the prelates to their former dignity. But thoſe who eſteemed every acquiſition of the Prince a detriment to the people, were apt to complain of this inſtance of complaiſance in the Parliament.

20th of November.

AFTER an adjournment of ſome months, the Parliament was again aſſembled, and proceeded in the ſame ſpirit as before. They diſcovered no deſign in reſtoring, in its full extent, the antient prerogatives of the crown: They were only anxious to repair all thoſe breaches, which had been made, not by the love of liberty, but by the fury of faction and civil war. The power of the ſword had, in all ages, been allowed to be veſted in the crown; and tho' no law conferred this prerogative, every Parliament, till the laſt of the preceding reign, had willingly ſubmitted to an authority more antient, and therefore more ſacred, than that of any poſitive ſtatute. It was now thought proper ſolemnly to relinquiſh the violent pretenſions of

that

that Parliament, and to acknowlege, that neither one Houſe, nor both Houſes, independant of the King, were poſſeſſed of any military authority. The preamble to this ſtatute went ſo far as to renounce all right even of *defenſive* arms againſt the King; and much obſervation has been made with regard to a conceſſion, eſteemed ſo ſingular. Were thoſe terms taken in their full literal ſenſe, they imply a total renunciation of all limitations to Monarchy, and of all privileges in the ſubject, independant of the will of the Sovereign. For as no rights can ſubſiſt without ſome remedy, much leſs rights expoſed to ſo much invaſion from tyranny or even from ambition; if ſubjects muſt never reſiſt, it is certain, that every Prince, without any effort, policy, or violence, is at once rendered abſolute and uncontroulable: The Sovereign needs only iſſue an edict, aboliſhing every authority but his own; and all liberty, from that moment, is in effect annihilated. But this meaning it were abſurd to impute to the preſent Parliament, who, tho' zealous Royaliſts, ſhowed, in their meaſures, that they had not caſt off all regard to national privileges. They were probably ſenſible, that to ſuppoſe in the Sovereign any ſuch invaſion of public liberty is entirely unconſtitutional; and that therefore expreſsly to reſerve, upon that event, any right of reſiſtance in the ſubject, muſt be liable to the ſame objection. They had ſeen that the Long Parliament, under colour of defence, had begun a violent attack on kingly power; and after involving the kingdom in blood, had finally loſt that liberty, for which they had ſo imprudently contended. They thought, tho' perhaps erroneouſly, that it was no longer poſſible, after ſuch exorbitant pretenſions, to perſevere in that prudent ſilence, hitherto maintained by the laws, and that it was neceſſary, by ſome poſitive declaration, to bar the return of like inconveniences. When they excluded, therefore, the right of defence, they ſuppoſed, that, the conſtitution remaining firm upon its baſis, there never really could be an attack made by the Sovereign. If ſuch an attack was at any time made, the neceſſity was then extreme: And the caſe of extreme and violent neceſſity, no laws, they thought, could comprehend; becauſe to ſuch a neceſſity no laws could beforehand point out a proper remedy. Chap. I. 1661.

THE other meaſures of this Parliament ſtill diſcovered a more anxious care to guard againſt rebellion in the ſubjects than encroachments in the crown: The recent evils of civil war and uſurpation had naturally encreaſed the ſpirit of ſubmiſſion to the Monarch, and had thrown the nation into that dangerous extreme. During the violent and jealous government of the Parliament and of the Protectors, all magiſtrates, liable to ſuſpicion, had been expelled the corporations; and none had been admitted, who gave not proofs of affection to the ruling powers, or who refuſed to ſubſcribe the covenant. To leave all authority in ſuch hands ſeemed dangerous; and the Parliament, therefore, empowered the King to appoint commiſſioners for Corporation act.

Chap. I. 1661.

regulating the corporations, and expelling ſuch magiſtrates as either had intruded themſelves by violence, or profeſſed principles, dangerous to the conſtitution, civil and eccleſiaſtical. It was alſo enacted, that all magiſtrates ſhould diſclaim the obligation of the covenant, and ſhould declare, both their belief, that it was not lawful, upon any pretence whatſoever, to take arms againſt the King, and their abhorrence of the traiterous poſition of taking arms by the King's authority againſt his perſon, or againſt thoſe commiſſioned by him.

WHEN the latter part of this oath, the words, *commiſſioned by him*, which ſeem the moſt dangerous to the conſtitution, came to be debated, it was moved in the Houſe, and earneſtly preſſed by Sir John Vaughan, an eminent lawyer, that the word, *lawfully*, might be added, in order to remove all difficulties. But the attorney-general, Sir Heneage Finch, anſwered, that it was not neceſſary: The very word, commiſſion, imported it; ſince any power, not lawfully iſſued, to lawful perſons, and for a lawful purpoſe, was in reality no commiſſion: And the whole Houſe ſeemed to aſſent to this interpretation. The ſame word, *lawfully*, was endeavoured to be added by Southampton himſelf, in the Houſe of Peers; but a like anſwer was made by Angleſey. Southampton ſtill inſiſted, that ſuch an addition would clear all obſcurities; and that many, not having heard the particular ſenſe of the Parliament, might fancy, that, if any ſort of commiſſion was granted, it would not be lawful to reſiſt it: But that worthy patriot could not prevail. The opinion of both parties, it is to be preſumed, was the ſame: Tho' the fear of affording a pretence to rebellion made the Royaliſts raſhly overlook the danger, to which liberty might be expoſed by ſuch conceſſions. They thought, that in moſt human deliberations, it was difficult, if not impoſſible, to make a choice which was not expoſed to ſome inconvenience. And it is but too uſual for victorious parties, who had ſuffered under oppreſſion, to ſignalize their triumph over their adverſaries, by carrying matters to the extremity moſt oppoſite to that which had formerly prevailed.

1662. Act of uniformity.

THE care of the church was no leſs prevalent with this Parliament than that of Monarchy; and the bill of uniformity was a pledge of their ſincere attachment to the epiſcopal Hierarchy, and their antipathy to Preſbyterianiſm. Different parties, however, concurred in promoting this bill, which contained many ſevere clauſes. The independants and other ſectaries, enraged to find all their ſchemes ſubverted by the Preſbyterians, who had once been their aſſociates, exerted themſelves to diſappoint that party of the favour and iudulgence, to which, from their recent merits in promoting the reſtoration, they thought themſelves juſtly entitled. By the Preſbyterians, ſaid they, the war was raiſed: By them were the populace

firſt incited to tumults: By their zeal, intereſt, and riches were the armies ſupported: By their force was the King ſubdued: And if, in the ſequel, they proteſted againſt thoſe extreme violences, committed on his perſon by the military leaders, their oppoſition came too late, after having ſupplied theſe uſurpers with the power and the pretences, by which they maintained their ſanguinary meaſures. They had indeed concurred with the Royaliſts in recalling the King: But ought they to be eſteemed, on that account, more affectionate to the royal cauſe? Rage and animoſity, raiſed by diſappointed ambition, were plainly their ſole motives; and if the King ſhould now be ſo imprudent as to diſtinguiſh them by any particular indulgences, he would ſoon experience from them the ſame hatred and oppoſition, which proved ſo fatal to his father.

THE Catholics, tho' they had little intereſt in the nation, were a conſiderable party at court; and from their great ſervices and ſufferings, during the civil wars, it ſeemed but juſt to bear them ſome favour and regard. Theſe Religioniſts dreaded an entire union among the Proteſtants. Were they the ſole Nonconformiſts in the nation, the ſevere execution of penal laws upon their ſect ſeemed an infallible conſequence; and they uſed all their intereſt to puſh matters to extremity againſt the Preſbyterians, who had formerly been their moſt ſevere oppreſſors, and whom they now expected for their companions in affliction. The earl of Briſtol, who, from conviction, or intereſt, or levity, or complaiſance for the company with whom he lived, had changed his religion during the King's exile, was regarded as the head of this party.

THE church party had, during ſo many years, ſuffered ſuch injuries and indignities from the ſectaries of every denomination, that no moderation, much leſs deference, was on this occaſion to be expected in their eccleſiaſtics. Even the laity of that communion ſeemed now diſpoſed to retaliate upon their enemies, according to the uſual meaſures of party juſtice. This ſect or faction (for it was a mixture of both) encouraged the rumours of plots and conſpiracies againſt the government; crimes, which, without any apparent cauſe, they imputed to their adverſaries. And inſtead of enlarging their terms of communion, in order to comprehend the Preſbyterians, they gladly laid hold of the prejudices, which prevailed among that ſect, in order to eject them from all their livings. By the bill of uniformity it was required, that every clergyman ſhould be re-ordained, if he had not before received epiſcopal ordination; ſhould declare his aſſent to every thing contained in the book of Common Prayer; ſhould take the oath of canonical obedience; ſhould abjure the ſolemn league and covenant, and ſhould renounce the principle of taking arms, on any pretence whatſoever, againſt the King.

THIS bill re-inſtated the church in the ſame condition, in which it ſtood before the commencement of the civil wars; and as the old perſecuting laws of Elizabeth

Chap. I. 1662.

ſtill ſubſiſted in their full rigor, and new clauſes of a like nature were now enacted, all the King's promiſes of toleration and of indulgence to tender conſciences were thereby eluded and broken. 'Tis true, Charles, in his declaration from Breda, had expreſſed his intention of regulating that indulgence by the advice and authority of Parliament: But this limitation could never reaſonably be extended to a total infringement and violation of his promiſe. It is agreed, that the King did not voluntarily concur with this violent meaſure, and that the zeal of Clarendon and of the church party among the Commons, ſeconded by the intrigues of the Catholics, was the real cauſe, which extorted his conſent.

THE Royaliſts, who now predominated, were very ready to ſignalize their victory, by eſtabliſhing thoſe high principles of Monarchy, which their antagoniſts had controverted: But when any real power or revenue was demanded for the crown, they were neither ſo forward nor ſo liberal in their conceſſions as the King would gladly have wiſhed. Tho' the Parliament paſſed laws for regulating the navy, they took no notice of the army; and declined giving their ſanction to this dangerous innovation. The King's debts were become intolerable; and the Commons were at laſt conſtrained to vote him an extraordinary ſupply of 1,200,000 pounds, to be levied by eighteen months aſſeſſment. But beſides that this ſupply was much inferior to the occaſion, the King was obliged earneſtly to ſollicit the Commons, before he could obtain it; and, in order to convince the Houſe of its abſolute neceſſity, he deſired them to examine ſtrictly into all his receipts and diſburſements. Finding likewiſe upon enquiry, that the ſeveral branches of revenue fell much ſhort of the ſums expected, they at laſt, after much delay, voted a new impoſition of two ſhillings on each hearth; and this tax they ſettled on the King during life. The whole eſtabliſhed revenue, however, did not, for many years, exceed a million *; a ſum confeſſedly too narrow for the public expences. A very rigid frugality at leaſt, which the King wanted, would have been requiſite to make it ſufficient for the dignity and ſecurity of the government. After all buſineſs was diſpatched, the Parliament was prorogued.

19th of May.

King's marriage.

BEFORE the Parliament roſe, the court was employed in making preparations for the reception of the new Queen, Catherine of Portugal, to whom the King was betrothed, and who had juſt landed at Portſmouth. During the time, that the Protector carried on the war with Spain, he was naturally led to ſupport the Portugueſe in their revolt; and he engaged himſelf by treaty to ſupply them with 10,000 men for their defence againſt the Spaniards. On the King's reſtoration, advances were made by Portugal for the renewal of that alliance; and in order to bind the friendſhip cloſer, an offer was made of the Portugueſe Princeſs and a portion of 300,000 pounds, together with two fortreſſes, Tangiers in Africa and

* D'Eſtrades, 25th of July, 1661. Mr. Ralph's Hiſtory, Vol. i. p. 176.

Bombay

Bombay in the East Indies. Spain, who, after the peace of the Pyrenees, bent all her force to recover Portugal, now in appearance abandoned by France, took the alarm, and endeavoured to fix Charles in an opposite interest. The Catholic King offered to adopt any other Princess as a daughter of Spain, either the Princess of Parma, or, what he thought more popular, some Protestant Princess, the daughter of Denmark, Saxony, or Orange: And on any of these, he promised to confer a dowry equal to that offered by Portugal. But many reasons inclined Charles rather to accept of the Portuguese proposals. The great disorders in the government and finances of Spain, made the execution of her promises be much doubted; and the King's urgent wants demanded some supply of money. The interest of the English commerce likewise seemed to require, that the independancy of Portugal should be supported; lest the union of that crown with Spain should put the whole treasures of America into the hands of one potentate. The claims too of Spain upon Dunkirk and Jamaica, rendered it impossible, without farther concessions, to obtain the cordial friendship of that power: And on the other hand, the offer, made by Portugal, of two such considerable fortresses, promised a great accession to the naval force of England. Above all, the proposal of a Protestant Princess was no allurement to Charles, whose inclinations led him strongly to give the preference to a Catholic alliance. According to the most probable accounts †, the resolution of marrying the daughter of Portugal was taken by the King, unknown to all his ministers; and no remonstrances could prevail with him to alter his intentions. The chancellor, with Ormond and Southampton, urged many opposite reasons; and particularly insisted on a report, which was current, of the incapacity of the Princess to have children: But their arguments were rejected. When the matter was laid before the council, all voices concurred in approving the resolution; and the Parliament expressed the same complaisance. And thus was concluded, seemingly with universal consent, the inauspicious marriage with Catharine, a Princess of virtue, but who was never able, either by the graces of her person or humour, to make herself agreeable to the King. The report however of her natural incapacity to have children, seems to have been groundless; since she was twice declared to be pregnant ‡.

Chap. I. 1662.

21st of May.

The festivity of these espousals was clouded by the trial and execution of criminals. Berkstead, Cobbet, and Okey, three Regicides, had escaped beyond sea;

† Carte's Ormond, Vol. ii. p. 254. This account seems better supported, than that in Ablancourt's Memoirs, that the chancellor chiefly pushed the Portuguese alliance. The secret transactions of the court of England could not be supposed to be much known to a French resident at Lisbon: And whatever opposition the chancellor made, he would certainly endeavour to conceal it from the Queen and all her family; and even in the parliament and council would support the resolution already taken.

‡ Lord Lansdown's defence of general Monk. Temple, Vol. ii. p. 154.

and

Chap. I. 1662.

and after wandering ſome time concealed in Germany, came privately to Delft, having appointed their families to meet them in that place. They were diſcovered by Downing, the King's reſident in Holland, who had formerly ſerved the Protector and Commonwealth in the ſame ſtation, and who once had even been chaplain to Okey's regiment. He applied to the States for a warrant to arreſt them. It had been uſual for the States to grant theſe warrants; tho' at the ſame time, they had ever been careful ſecretly to advertiſe the perſons, that they might be enabled to make their eſcape. This precaution was eluded by the vigilance and diſpatch of Downing. He quickly ſeized the criminals, hurried them on board a frigate which lay off the coaſt, and ſent them to England. Theſe three men behaved with more moderation and ſubmiſſion than any of the other Regicides, who had ſuffered. Okey in particular, at the place of execution, prayed for the King, and expreſſed his intention, had he lived, of ſubmitting peaceably to the eſtabliſhed government. He had riſen during the wars from being a chandler in London to a high rank in the army; and in all his conduct appeared to be a man of humanity and honour. In conſideration of his good character and of his dutiful behaviour, his body was given his friends to be buried.

THE attention of the public was much engaged by the trial of two diſtinguiſhed criminals, Lambert and Vane. Theſe men, tho' none of the immediate murderers of the King, had been excepted from the general indemnity, and committed to priſon. The Convention-Parliament, however, was ſo favourable to them, as to petition the King, if they ſhould be found guilty, to ſuſpend their execution: But this new Parliament, more zealous for Monarchy, applied for their trial and condemnation. Not to revive diſputes, which were better buried in oblivion, the indictment of Vane did not comprehend any of his actions during the war between the King and Parliament: It extended only to his behaviour after the late King's death, as member of the council of State, and ſecretary of the navy; where fidelity to the truſt repoſed in him, required his oppoſition to Monarchy.

Trial of Vane.

VANE wanted neither courage nor capacity to avail himſelf of this advantage. He urged, that, if a compliance with the government, at that time eſtabliſhed in England, and an acknowlegement of its authority, were to be regarded as criminal, the whole nation had incurred equal guilt, and none would remain, whoſe innocence could entitle them to try or condemn him for his pretended treaſons: That, according to theſe maxims, wherever an illegal authority was eſtabliſhed by force, a total and univerſal deſtruction muſt enſue: while the uſurpers proſcribed one part of the nation for diſobedience, the lawful Prince puniſhed the other for compliance: That the legiſlature of England, foreſeeing this violent ſituation, had provided for public ſecurity by the famous ſtatute of Henry the VIIth; in which it

was

was enacted, that no man, in caſe of any revolution, ſhould ever be queſtioned for his obedience to the King in being: That whether the eſtabliſhed government was a Monarchy or a Commonwealth, the reaſon of the thing was ſtill the ſame; nor ought the expelled Prince to think himſelf entitled to allegiance, ſo long as he could not afford protection: That it belonged not to private perſons, poſſeſſed of no power, to diſcuſs the title of their governors; and every uſurpation, even the moſt flagrant, would equally require obedience with the moſt legal eſtabliſhment: That the controverſy between the late King and his Parliament was of the moſt delicate nature; and men of the greateſt probity had been divided in their choice of the party which they ſhould embrace: That the Parliament, being rendered undiſſoluble but by their own conſent, was become a kind of co-ordinate power with the King; and as the caſe was thus entirely new and unknown to the conſtitution, it ought not to be tried rigidly by the letter of the antient laws: That for his part, all the violences, which had been put upon the Parliament, and upon the perſon of the Sovereign, he had ever condemned; nor had he once appeared in the houſe for ſome time before and after the execution of the King: That, finding the whole government thrown into diſorder, he was ſtill reſolved, in every revolution, to adhere to the Commons, the root, the foundation of all lawful authority: That in proſecution of this principle, he had cheerfully undergone all the violence of Cromwel's tyranny; and would now, with equal alacrity, expoſe himſelf to the rigours of perverted law and juſtice: That tho' it was in his power, on the King's reſtoration, to have eſcaped from his enemies, he was determined, in imitation of the moſt illuſtrious names of antiquity, to periſh in defence of liberty, and to give teſtimony with his blood for that honourable cauſe, in which he had been enliſted: And that, beſides the ties, with which God and nature had bound him to his native country, he was voluntarily engaged by the moſt ſacred covenant, whoſe obligation no earthly power ſhould ever be able to make him relinquiſh. Chap. I. 1662.

All the defence, which Vane could make, was fruitleſs. The court, conſidering more the general opinion of his active guilt in the beginning and proſecution of the civil wars, than the articles of treaſon charged againſt him, took advantage of the letter of the law, and brought him in guilty. His courage deſerted him not upon his condemnation. Tho' timid by nature, the perſwaſion of a juſt cauſe ſupported him againſt the terrors of death; while his enthuſiaſm, excited by the proſpect of glory, embelliſhed the concluſion of a life, which, thro' the whole courſe of it, had been ſo much diſfigured by the prevalence of that principle. Leſt pity for a courageous ſufferer ſhould make impreſſion on the populace, drummers were placed under the ſcaffold, whoſe noiſe, as he began to launch out in reflections on the government, drowned his voice, and admoniſhed him to temper the ardour of his 11th of June. and execution. 14th of June.

Chap. I. 1662.

his zeal. He was not aſtoniſhed at this unexpected incident. In all his behaviour, there appeared a firm and animated intrepidity; and he conſidered death but as a paſſage to that eternal felicity, which he believed to be prepared for him.

THIS man, ſo celebrated for his parliamentary talents, and for his capacity in buſineſs, has left ſome writings behind him: They treat, all of them, of religious ſubjects, and are abſolutely unintelligible: No traces of eloquence, or even of common ſenſe appear in them. A ſtrange paradox! did we not know, that men of the greateſt genius, where they relinquiſh by principle the uſe of their reaſon, are only enabled by their vigour of mind, to work themſelves the deeper into error and abſurdity. It was remarked, that, as Vane, by being the chief inſtrument of Strafford's death, had firſt opened the way for that deſtruction, which overwhelmed the nation; ſo by his own death he cloſed the ſcene of blood. He was the laſt that ſuffered on account of the civil wars. Lambert, tho' condemned, was reprieved at the bar; and the judges declared, that, if Vane's behaviour had been equally dutiful and ſubmiſſive, he would have experienced like lenity in the King. Lambert ſurvived his condemnation near thirty years. He was confined to the iſle of Guernſey; where he lived contented, forgetting all his paſt ſchemes of greatneſs, and entirely forgot by the nation.

Preſbyterian clergy ejected. 24th of Auguſt.

HOWEVER odious Vane and Lambert to the Preſbyterians, that party had no leizure to rejoice at their condemnation. The fatal St. Bartholomew approached; the day, when the clergy were obliged by the late law, either to relinquiſh their livings, or to ſign the articles required of them. A combination had been entered into by the more zealous of the Preſbyterian eccleſiaſtics to refuſe the ſubſcription; in hopes, that the biſhops would not dare at once to expel ſo great a number of the moſt popular preachers. The Catholic party at court, who deſired a great rent among the Proteſtants, encouraged them in this obſtinacy, and gave them hopes, that the King would protect them in their refuſal. The King himſelf, by his irreſolute conduct, contributed, either from deſign or accident, to encreaſe this opinion. Above all, the terms of ſubſcription had been made very ſtrict and rigid, on purpoſe to diſguſt all the zealous and ſcrupulous among the Preſbyterians, and deprive them of their livings. About 2000 of the clergy, in one day, relinquiſhed their cures; and to the great aſtoniſhment of the court, ſacrificed their intereſt to their religious tenets. Fortified by ſociety in their ſufferings, they were reſolved to undergo any hardſhips, rather than openly renounce thoſe principles, which, on other occaſions, they were ſo apt, from intereſt, to warp or elude. The church enjoyed the pleaſure of retaliation; and even puſhed, as uſual, the vengeance farther than the offence. During the dominion of the Parliamentary party, a fifth of the livings had been left to the ejected clergy; but this indulgence, tho' at firſt inſiſted on

by

by the Houſe of Peers, was now refuſed to the Preſbyterians. However difficult to conciliate peace among theologians, it was hoped by many that ſome relaxation in the terms of communion might have kept the Preſbyterians united to the church, and have cured thoſe eccleſiaſtical factions, which had been ſo fatal, and were ſtill ſo dangerous. Biſhoprics were offered to Calamy, Baxter and Reynolds, great leaders among the Preſbyterians; the laſt only could be prevailed with to accept. Deaneries and other promotions were refuſed by many. Chap. I. 1662.

THE next meaſure of the King has not had the good fortune to be juſtified by any party; but is often conſidered as one of the greateſt miſtakes, if not blemiſhes, of his reign: 'Tis the ſale of Dunkirk to the French. The parſimonious maxims of the Parliament, and the liberal, not to ſay laviſh, diſpoſition of the King, were but ill ſuited to each other; and notwithſtanding all the ſupplies voted him, his treaſury was ſtill very empty and very much indebted. He had received the ſum of 200,000 crowns from France; but the forces ſent over to Portugal, and the fleets, maintained in order to defend that kingdom, had already coſt the King that ſum, and together with it, above double the money, which he had received for the Queen's dowry *. The time fixed for payment of his ſiſter's portion to the duke of Orleans was now approaching. Tangiers, a fortreſs from which great benefit was expected, was become an additional burthen on the crown; and Rutherford, who now commanded in Dunkirk, had encreaſed the charge of that garriſon to a hundred and twenty thouſand pounds a year. Theſe conſiderations had ſuch influence, not only on the King, but even on Clarendon, that that uncorrupt miniſter was the moſt forward to adviſe the accepting a ſum of money in lieu of a place which, he thought, the King, from the narrow ſtate of his revenue, was no longer able to retain. By the treaty with Portugal, it was ſtipulated, that Dunkirk ſhould never be yielded to the Spaniards: France was therefore the only purchaſer that remained. D'Eſtrades was invited over by a letter from the chancellor himſelf, in order to conclude the bargain. Nine hundred thouſand pounds were demanded: One hundred thouſand were offered. The Engliſh by degrees lowered their demands: The French raiſed their offer: And the bargain was ſtruck at 400,000 pounds. The artillery and ſtores were valued at a fifth of the ſum †. The importance of this ſale was not, at that time, ſufficiently known, either abroad or at home ‡. The French Monarch himſelf, tho' ſo fond of acquiſitions, and ſo good a judge Dunkirk ſold to the French.

* D'Eſtrade, 17th of Auguſt, 1662. † Id. 21ſt of Auguſt, 12th of September, 1662.

‡ It appears, however, from many of D'Eſtrade's letters, particularly that of the 21ſt of Auguſt, 1661, that the King might have transferred Dunkirk to the Parliament, who would not have refuſed to bear the charges of it, but were unwilling to give money to the King for that purpoſe. The King

Chap. I. 1662.

a judge of his own intereſts, thought that he had made a very hard bargain *; and this ſum, in appearance ſo ſmall, was the utmoſt which he would allow his ambaſſador to offer.

Declaration of indulgence. 26th of December.

A NEW incident diſcovered ſuch a glimpſe of the King's character and principles of policy as at firſt the nation was ſomewhat at a loſs how to interpret, but ſuch as ſubſequent events, by degrees, rendered ſufficiently plain and manifeſt. He iſſued a declaration on pretence of mitigating the rigours contained in the act of uniformity. After expreſſing his firm reſolution to obſerve the general indemnity, and to truſt entirely to the affections of his ſubjects, not to any military power, for the ſupport of his throne; he mentioned the promiſes of liberty of conſcience, contained in his declaration of Breda. And he ſubjoined, that, "as in the firſt place he had been zealous to ſettle the uniformity of the "church of England, in diſcipline, ceremony and government, and ſhall ever "conſtantly maintain it: So as for what concerns the penalties upon thoſe who, "living peaceably, do not conform themſelves thereunto, thro' ſcruple and tenderneſs of miſguided conſcience, but modeſtly and without ſcandal perform "their devotions in their own way, he ſhould make it his ſpecial care, ſo far as "in him lay, without invading the freedom of Parliament, to incline their wiſdom next approaching ſeſſions to concur with him in making ſome ſuch act for "that purpoſe, as may enable him to exerciſe, with a more univerſal ſatisfaction, "that power of diſpenſing, which he conceived to be inherent in him †." Here a moſt important prerogative was exerciſed by the King; but under ſuch artificial reſerves and limitations as might prevent the full diſcuſſion of the claim, and obviate a breach between him and his Parliament. The foundation of this meaſure lay much deeper, and was of the utmoſt conſequence.

THE King, during his exile, had imbibed ſtrong prejudices in favour of the Catholic religion; and according to the moſt probable accounts, had already been reconciled in form to the church of Rome. The great zeal, expreſſed by the parliamentary party againſt all Papiſts, had always, from a ſpirit of oppoſition, inclined the court and all the Royaliſts to adopt more favourable ſentiments towards that ſect, who, thro' the whole courſe of the civil wars, had ſtrenuouſly ſupported

on the other hand was jealous, leſt the Parliament ſhould acquire any ſuch ſeparate dominion or authority: A proof that the government was not as yet ſettled into that compoſure and mutual confidence, which is abſolutely requiſite for conducting it.

* Id. 3d of October, 1662. The chief importance indeed of Dunkirk to the Engliſh was, that it was able extremely to diſtreſs their trade, when in the hands of the French: But it was Lewis the XIVth who firſt made it a good ſea-port. England can have no occaſion to tranſport armies to the continent, but in ſupport of ſome ally whoſe towns ſerve to the ſame purpoſe as Dunkirk would, if in the hands of the Engliſh.

† Kennet's Regiſter, p. 850.

the

the rights of the Sovereign. The rigour too, which the King, during his abode in Scotland, had experienced from the Preſbyterians, diſpoſed him to run into the other extreme, and to bear a kindneſs to the party, moſt oppoſite in its genius to the ſeverity of thoſe religioniſts. The ſolicitations and importunities of the Queen mother, the contagion of the company which he frequented, the view of a more ſplendid and courtly mode of worſhip, the hopes of indulgence in pleaſure; all theſe cauſes operated powerfully on a young Prince, whoſe careleſs and diſſolute temper made him incapable of adhering cloſely to the principles of his early education. But if the thoughtleſs humour of Charles rendered him an eaſy convert to Popery, the ſame diſpoſition ever prevented the theological tenets of that ſect from taking any faſt hold of him. During his vigorous ſtate of health, while his blood was warm and his ſpirits high, a contempt and diſregard of all religion held poſſeſſion of his mind; and he might more properly be denominated a Deiſt than a Catholic. But in thoſe revolutions of temper, when the love of raillery gave place to reflection, and his penetrating, but negligent underſtanding, was clouded with fears and apprehenſions, he had ſtarts of more ſincere conviction, and a ſect, which always poſſeſſed his inclinations, was then maſter of his judgement and opinion. Chap. I. 1662.

BUT tho' the King thus floated, during his whole reign, between irreligion, which he more openly profeſſed, and Popery, to which he retained a ſecret propenſity, his brother, the duke of York, had zealouſly adopted all the principles of that theological party. His eager temper and narrow underſtanding made him a thorough convert, without any reſerve from intereſt, or doubts from reaſoning and enquiry. By his application to buſineſs, he had acquired a great aſcendant over the King, who, tho' poſſeſſed of much more diſcernment, was glad to throw the burthen of affairs on the Duke, of whom he entertained little jealouſy. On pretence of eaſing the Proteſtant diſſenters, they agreed upon a plan for introducing a general toleration, and giving the Catholics the free exerciſe of their religion; at leaſt, the exerciſe of it in private houſes. The two brothers ſaw with pleaſure ſo numerous and popular a body of the clergy refuſe conformity; and it was hoped, that, under ſhelter of their name, the ſmall and hated ſect of the Catholics might meet with favour and protection.

BUT while the King pleaded his early promiſes of toleration, and inſiſted on many other plauſible topics, the Parliament, who ſat a little after the declaration was iſſued, could by no means be ſatisfied with this meaſure. The declared intention of eaſing the Diſſenters, and the ſecret purpoſe of favouring the Catholics, were equally diſagreeable to them; and in theſe prepoſſeſſions they were encouraged 1663. 18th of February.

Chap. I. 1663.

by the King's miniſters themſelves, particularly the chancellor. The houſe of Commons repreſented to the King, that his declaration of Breda contained no promiſe to the Preſbyterians and other Diſſenters, but only an expreſſion of his intentions, upon the ſuppoſition of the Parliament's concurrence; that even if the Nonconformiſts had been entitled to plead a promiſe, they had entruſted this claim, as well as all their other rights and privileges, to the Houſe of Commons, who were their repreſentatives, and who now freed the King from that obligation; that it was not to be ſuppoſed, that his Majeſty and the Houſes were ſo bound by that declaration as to be incapacitated from making any laws, which might be contrary to it; that even at the King's reſtoration, there were laws of uniformity in force, which could not be diſpenſed with but by act of Parliament; and that the indulgence propoſed would prove moſt pernicious both to Church and State, would open the door to ſchiſm, encourage faction, diſturb the public peace, and diſcredit the wiſdom of the legiſlature. The King did not think proper, after this remonſtrance, to inſiſt any farther at preſent on the project of indulgence.

In order to deprive the Catholics of all hopes, the two Houſes concurred in a remonſtrance againſt them. The King gave a very gracious anſwer; tho' he ſcrupled not to profeſs his gratitude towards many of that perſuaſion, on account of their faithful ſervices in his father's cauſe and in his own. A proclamation, for form's ſake, was ſoon after iſſued againſt Jeſuits and Romiſh prieſts: But care was taken, by the very terms of it, to render it ineffectual. The Parliament had allowed, that all the foreign prieſts, belonging to the two Queens, ſhould be excepted, and that a permiſſion for them to remain in England ſhould ſtill be granted. In the proclamation, the word *foreign* was purpoſely omitted; and the Queens were thereby authorized to give protection to as many Engliſh prieſts as they ſhould think proper.

That the King might reap ſome advantage from his compliances, however fallacious, he engaged the Commons anew into an examination of his revenue, which, chiefly by the negligence in levying it, had proved, he ſaid, much inferior to the public charges. Notwithſtanding the price of Dunkirk, his debts, he complained, amounted to a conſiderable ſum; and to ſatisfy the Commons, that the money formerly granted him had not been prodigally expended, he offered to lay before them the whole account of his diſburſements. It is however agreed on all hands, that the King, tho', during his baniſhment, he had managed his ſmall and precarious income with great order and œconomy, had now much abated of theſe virtues, and was unable to make his royal revenues ſuffice for his expences. The Commons, without entering into too nice a diſquiſition,

voted

voted him four ſubſidies; and this was the laſt time, that taxes were levied in that manner. Chap. I. 1663.

SEVERAL laws were made this ſeſſion with regard to trade. The militia alſo came under conſideration, and ſome rules were eſtabliſhed for ordering and arming it. It was enacted, that the King ſhould have no power of keeping the militia under arms above fourteen days in the year. The ſituation of this iſland, together with its great naval power, has always occaſioned other means of ſecurity, however requiſite, to be much neglected amongſt us: And the Parliament ſhowed here a very ſuperfluous jealouſy of the King's ſtrictneſs in diſciplining the militia. The principles of liberty rather require a contrary jealouſy.

THE earl of Briſtol's friendſhip with Clarendon, which had ſubſiſted, with great intimacy, during their exile and the diſtreſſes of the royal party, had been conſiderably impared ſince the reſtoration, by the chancellor's refuſal of his aſſent to ſome grants, which Briſtol had applied for to a court lady: And a little after, the latter nobleman, agreeable to the impetuoſity and indiſcretion of his temper, broke out againſt the miniſter in the moſt outrageous manner. He even entered a charge of treaſon againſt him before the Houſe of Peers; but had concerted his plan ſo imprudently, that the judges, when conſulted, declared, that, neither for its matter, nor its form, could it legally be received. The articles indeed reſemble more the incoherent altercations of a paſſionate enemy, than a ſerious charge fit to be diſcuſſed by a court of judicature; and Briſtol himſelf was ſo aſhamed of his conduct and defeat, that he abſconded during ſome time. Notwithſtanding his fine talents, his eloquence, his ſpirit, and his courage, he could never regain the character, which he loſt by this haſty and precipitant meaſure.

BUT tho' Clarendon was able to elude this raſh aſſault, he was ſenſibly declining in his credit at court; and in proportion as the King found himſelf eſtabliſhed on the throne, he began to alienate himſelf from a miniſter whoſe character was ſo little ſuited to his own. The King's favour for the Catholics was always oppoſed by Clarendon, public liberty was ſecured againſt all attempts of the over-zealous Royaliſts, prodigal grants were checked or refuſed, and the dignity of his own character was ſo much conſulted by the chancellor, that he made it an inviolable rule, as did alſo his friend, Southampton, never to enter into any connexion with the royal miſtreſſes. The King's favourite was Mrs. Palmer, afterwards created dutcheſs of Cleveland; a woman prodigal, rapacious, diſſolute, violent, revengeful. She failed not in her turn to undermine Clarendon's credit with his maſter; and her ſucceſs was at this time made apparent to the whole world. Secretary Nicholas, the chancellor's great friend, was removed from his place; and Sir Harry Bennet, his avowed enemy, was advanced to that office. Bennet was ſoon after created lord Arlington. Decline of Clarendon's credit.

Chap. I. 1663.

THO' the King's conduct had hitherto, since his restoration, been, in the main, laudable, men of penetration began to observe, that those virtues, by which he had, at first, so much dazled and enchanted the nation, had great show, but not equal solidity. His good understanding lost much of its influence by his want of application; his bounty was more the result of a facility of disposition than of any generosity of character; his social humour led him frequently to neglect his dignity; his love of pleasure was not attended with proper sentiment and decency; and while he seemed to bear a goodwill to every one that approached him, he had a heart not very capable of sincere friendship, and he had secretly entertained a very bad opinion and distrust of mankind. But above all, what sullied his character in the eyes of good judges was his negligent ingratitude towards the unfortunate cavaliers, whose zeal and sufferings for the royal cause had known no bounds. This conduct however in the King may, from the circumstances of his situation and temper, admit of some excuse; at least, of some alleviation. As he had been restored more by the efforts of his reconciled enemies than of his antient friends, the former pretended a title to share his favour; and being from practice, acquainted with public business, they were better qualified to execute any trust committed to them. The King's revenues were far from being large, or even equal to his necessary expences; and his mistresses, and the companions of his mirth and pleasures, gained by sollicitation every request from his easy temper. The very poverty, to which the more zealous Royalists had reduced themselves, by rendering them insignificant, made them unfit to support the King's measures, and caused him to regard them as a useless incumbrance. And as many false and ridiculous claims of merit were offered, his natural indolence, averse to a strict discussion or enquiry, led him to treat them all with equal indifference. The Parliament took some notice of the poor cavaliers. Sixty thousand pounds were at one time distributed among them: Mrs. Lane also and the Penderells had handsome presents and pensions from the King. But the greatest part of the Royalists still remained in poverty and distress; aggravated by the cruel disappointment of their sanguine hopes, and by seeing favour and preferment bestowed upon their most inveterate foes. With regard to the act of indemnity and oblivion, they universally said, that it was an act of indemnity to the King's enemies, and of oblivion to his friends.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

A new ſeſſion.——Rupture with Holland.——A new ſeſſion.——Victory of the Engliſh.——Rupture with France.——Rupture with Denmark.—New ſeſſion.——Sea-fight of four days.——Victory of the Engliſh.——Fire of London.——Advances towards peace.—Diſgrace at Chatham.—Peace of Breda.—Clarendon's fall,—and baniſhment.—State of France.——Character of Lewis XIV.*——French invaſion of the Low Countries.——Negotiations.——Triple league.——Treaty of Aix-la-chapelle.——Affairs of Scotland,——and of Ireland.*

THE next ſeſſions of Parliament diſcovered a continuance of the ſame principles, which had actuated all the foregoing. Monarchy and the church were ſtill the objects of tender affection. During no period of the preſent reign, did this ſpirit paſs more evidently the bounds of reaſon and moderation. 1664. 16th of March. A new ſeſſion.

THE King in his ſpeech to the Parliament, had ventured openly to demand a repeal of the triennial act; and he even went ſo far as to declare, that, notwithſtanding the law, he never would allow any Parliament to be aſſembled by the methods preſcribed in that famous ſtatute. The Parliament, without taking offence at this declaration, repealed the law; and in lieu of all the ſecurities, formerly provided, ſatisfied themſelves with a general clauſe, "that Parliaments ſhould not "be interrupted above three years at the moſt." As the Engliſh Parliament had now raiſed itſelf to be a regular check and controul upon royal power; 'tis evident, that they ought ſtill to have preſerved a regular ſecurity for their meeting, and not to have truſted entirely to the goodwill of the King, who, if ambitious or enterpriſing, had ſo little reaſon to be pleaſed with theſe aſſemblies. Before the end of Charles's reign, the nation had occaſion to feel very ſenſibly the bad effects of this repeal.

BY the act of uniformity, every clergyman, who ſhould officiate without being properly qualified, was puniſhable by fines and impriſonment: But this ſecurity was not thought ſufficient for the church. It was now enacted, that, wherever five perſons above thoſe of the ſame houſehold, ſhould aſſemble in a religious congregation, every one of them was liable, for the firſt offence, to be impriſoned three months

Chap. II. 1664.

months or pay five pounds; for the ſecond, to be impriſoned ſix months or pay ten pounds; and for the third, to be tranſported ſeven years or pay one hundred pounds. The Parliament had only in their eye the malignity of the ſectaries: They ſhould have carried their attention farther, to the cauſe of that malignity, the former reſtraint and hardſhips, which they had undergone.

THE Commons likewiſe paſſed a vote, that the wrongs, diſhonours, and indignities, offered to the Engliſh by the ſubjects of the United Provinces, were the greateſt obſtructions to all foreign trade: And they promiſed to aſſiſt the King with their lives and fortunes in aſſerting the rights of his crown againſt all oppoſition whatſoever. This was the firſt open ſtep towards a Dutch war. We muſt explain the cauſes and motives of this meaſure.

Rupture with Holland.

THAT cloſe union and confederacy, which, during a courſe of near ſeventy years, has ſubſiſted, without interruption or jealouſy, between England and Holland, is not ſo much founded on the natural unalterable intereſts of theſe States, as on their terror of the growing power of France, who, without their combination, it is apprehended would ſoon extend her dominion over Europe. In the firſt years of Charles's reign, when the ambitious genius of the French Monarch had not, as yet, diſplayed itſelf; and when the mighty force of his people was, in a great meaſure, unknown even to themſelves; the rivalſhip of commerce, not checked by any other jealouſy or apprehenſion, had naturally in England begot a violent enmity againſt the neighbouring Republic.

TRADE was beginning, among the Engliſh, to be a matter of very general concern; but notwithſtanding all their efforts and advantages, their commerce ſeemed hitherto to ſtand upon a footing, which was ſomewhat precarious. The Dutch, who, by induſtry and frugality, were enabled to underſell them in every market, retained poſſeſſion of the moſt lucrative branches of commerce; and the Engliſh merchants had the mortification to find, that all attempts to extend their trade were ſtill turned, by the vigilance of their rivals, to their loſs and diſhonour. Their indignation increaſed, when they conſidered the ſuperior naval power of England, the bravery of her officers and ſeamen, her favourable ſituation by which ſhe was enabled to intercept the whole Dutch commerce. By the proſpect of theſe advantages, they were ſtrongly prompted from motives leſs juſt than political, to make war upon the States; and at once to raviſh from them by force, what they could not obtain, or could obtain but ſlowly, by ſuperior ſkill and induſtry.

THE careleſs, unambitious temper of Charles rendered him litt'e capable of forming ſo vaſt a project as that of engroſſing the commerce and naval power of Europe; yet could he not remain altogether inſenſible to ſuch obvious and ſuch tempting proſpects. His genius, happily turned towards mechanics, inclined him

to

to ſtudy naval affairs, which, next to pleaſure, he both loved the moſt of all things, and underſtood the beſt. Tho' the Dutch, during his exile, had expreſſed towards him more civility and friendſhip, than he had received from any other foreign power; the Louveſtein or ariſtocratic faction, which, at this time, ruled the Commonwealth, had fallen into cloſe union with France; and could that party be ſubdued, he might hope, that his nephew, the young Prince of Orange, would be reinſtated in the authority, poſſeſſed by his anceſtors, and would bring the States to a dependance under England. His narrow revenues made it ſtill requiſite for him to ſtudy the humour of his people, which now ran violently towards war; and it has been ſuſpected, tho' the ſuſpicion was not juſtified by the event, that the hopes of diverting ſome of the ſupplies to his private uſe were not overlooked by this neceſſitous Monarch. Chap. II. 1664.

THE duke of York, more active and enterprizing, puſhed more eagerly the war with Holland. He deſired an opportunity of diſtinguiſhing himſelf: He loved to cultivate commerce: He was at the head of a new African company, whoſe trade was extremely checked by the ſettlements of the Dutch: And perhaps, the bigotted prejudices, by which that Prince was always ſo much governed, began, even ſo early, to inſtill into him an antipathy againſt a proteſtant Commonwealth, the bulwark of the reformation. Clarendon and Southampton, obſerving that the nation was not fortified by any foreign alliance, were averſe to the war; but their credit was now on the decline.

BY theſe concurring motives, the Court and Parliament were both of them inclined to a Dutch war. The Parliament was prorogued without voting any ſupplies: But as they had been induced, without any open application from the Crown, to paſs that vote abovementioned againſt the Dutch encroachments, it was reaſonably conſidered as ſanction ſufficient for the vigorous meaſures, which were reſolved on. 17th of May.

DOWNING, the Engliſh miniſter at the Hague, a man of an inſolent, impetuous temper, preſented a memorial to the States, containing a liſt of thoſe depredations, which the Engliſh complained of. It is remarkable, that all the pretended depredations preceded the year 1662, when a treaty of league and alliances had been renewed with the Dutch; and theſe complaints were then thought, either ſo unjuſt or ſo frivolous, that they had not been mentioned in that treaty. Two ſhips alone, the Bonaventure and the Good-hope, had been claimed by the Engliſh; and it was agreed, that they ſhould proſecute their claim by the ordinary courſe of juſtice. The States had conſigned a ſum of money, in caſe the cauſe ſhould be decided againſt them; but the matter was ſtill in dependance. Cary, who was entruſted by the proprietors with the management of the lawſuit for the Bonaventure, had reſolved to accept of thirty thouſand pounds, which were offered him; but was

Chap. II. 1664.

hindered by Downing, who told him, that the claim was a matter of ſtate between the two nations, not a concern of private perſons *. Theſe circumſtances give us no favourable idea of the juſtice of the Engliſh pretenſions.

CHARLES confined not himſelf to memorials and remonſtrances. Sir Robert Holmes was ſecretly diſpatched with a ſquadron of twenty-two ſhips to the coaſt of Africa. He not only expelled the Dutch from Cape Corſe, to which the Engliſh had ſome pretenſions: He likewiſe ſeized the Dutch ſettlements of Cape Verde and the Iſle of Goree, together with ſeveral ſhips trading on that coaſt. And having ſailed to America, he poſſeſſed himſelf of Nova Belgia, ſince called New York; a territory, which James the firſt had given by patent to the earl of Stirling, but which had never been planted but by the Hollanders. When the States complained of theſe hoſtile meaſures, the King, unwilling to avow what he could not well juſtify, pretended to be totally ignorant of Holmes's enterprize. He likewiſe confined Holmes to the Tower; but ſome time after reſtored him to his liberty.

THE Dutch, finding that their applications for redreſs were likely to be eluded, and that a ground of quarrel was induſtriouſly ſought for by the Engliſh, began to arm with diligence. They even exerted, with ſome precipitation, an act of vigor, which haſtened on the rupture. Sir John Lawſon and de Ruyter had been ſent with combined ſquadrons into the Mediterranean, in order to chaſtiſe the pyratical States on the coaſt of Barbary; and the time of their ſeparation and return was now approaching. The States ſecretly diſpatched orders to de Ruyter, that he ſhould take in proviſions at Cadiz; and ſailing towards the coaſt of Guinea, ſhould retaliate on the Engliſh, and put the Dutch in poſſeſſion of thoſe ſettlements whence Holmes had expelled them. De Ruyter, having a conſiderable force on board, met with no oppoſition in Guinea. All the new acquiſitions of the Engliſh, except Cape Corſe, were recovered from them. They were even diſpoſſeſſed of ſome old ſettlements. Such of their ſhips as fell into his hands were ſeized by de Ruyter. That admiral ſailed next to America. He attacked Barbadoes, but was repulſed. He afterwards committed hoſtilities on Long Iſland.

MEANWHILE, the Engliſh preparations for war were advancing with vigor and induſtry. The King had received no ſupplies from Parliament; but by his own funds and credit he was enabled to equip a fleet: The city of London lent him 100,000 pounds: The ſpirit of the nation ſeconded his armaments: He himſelf went from port to port, inſpecting with great diligence, and encouraging the work: And in a little time the Engliſh navy was put in a very formidable condition. Eight hundred thouſand pounds are ſaid to have been expended on this armament.

* Temple, vol. ii. p. 42.

When

When Lawſon arrived, and communicated his ſuſpicion of de Ruyter's enterprize, orders were iſſued for ſeizing all Dutch ſhips; and 135 fell into the hands of the Engliſh. Theſe were not confiſcated nor declared prizes, till afterwards, when war was proclaimed. Chap. II. 1664.

THE Parliament, when met, granted a ſupply, the largeſt by far, that had ever been given to a King of England, but no more than ſufficient for the preſent undertaking. Near two millions and a half were voted, to be levied by quarterly payments in three years. The avidity of the merchants, together with the great proſpect of ſucceſs, had animated the whole nation againſt the Dutch. 24th of November. A new ſeſſion.

A GREAT alteration was made this ſeſſion in the method of taxing the clergy. In almoſt all the other Monarchies of Europe, the aſſemblies, whoſe conſent was formerly requiſite to the enacting of laws, were compoſed of three eſtates, the clergy, the nobility, and the commonalty, which formed ſo many members of the political body, of which the King was conſidered as the head. In England too, the Parliament was always repreſented as conſiſting of three eſtates; but their ſeparation was never ſo diſtinct as in other kingdoms. A convocation, however, had uſually ſat at the ſame time with the Parliament: Tho' they poſſeſſed not a negative voice in the paſſing of laws, and aſſumed no farther power than that of impoſing taxes on the clergy. By reaſon of eccleſiaſtical preferments, which he could beſtow, the King's influence over the church was more conſiderable than over the laity; ſo that the ſubſidies, granted by the convocation, were commonly greater than thoſe voted by the Parliament. The church, therefore, was not diſpleaſed to depart tacitely from the right of taxing herſelf, and allow the Commons to lay impoſitions on eccleſiaſtical revenues as on the reſt of the Kingdom. In recompence, two ſubſidies, which the convocation had formerly granted, were remitted, and the parochial clergy were allowed to vote at elections. Thus the church of England made a barter of power for profit. Their convocations, having become uſeleſs to the Crown, have been very much diſuſed of late years.

THE Dutch ſaw, with the utmoſt regret, a war approaching, whence they might dread the moſt fatal conſequences, but which afforded no proſpect of advantage. They tried every art of negotiation, before they would come to extremity. Their meaſures were at that time directed by John de Wit, a miniſter equally eminent for greatneſs of mind, for capacity, and for integrity. Tho' moderate in his private deportment, he knew how to adopt in his public councils that magnanimity, which ſuits the miniſter of a great ſtate. It was ever his maxim, that no independant government ſhould yield to another any evident point of reaſon or equity; and that all ſuch conceſſions, ſo far from preventing war, ſerved to no other purpoſe than to provoke freſh claims and inſolences. By his management a ſpirit of union

Chap. II. 1664. was preſerved in all the provinces; great ſums were levied; and a navy was equipped, compoſed of larger ſhips than the Dutch had ever built before, and able to cope with the fleet of England.

1665. 22d of February. As ſoon as certain intelligence arrived of de Ruyter's enterprizes, Charles declared war againſt the States. His fleet, conſiſting of 114 ſail, beſides fireſhips and ketches, was commanded by the duke of York, and under him by prince Rupert and the earl of Sandwich. It had about 22,000 men on board. Obdam, who was admiral of the Dutch navy, of nearly equal force, declined not the combat. In the heat of action, when engaged in a cloſe fight with the duke of York, Obdam's ſhip blew up. This accident much diſcouraged the Dutch, who fled towards their own coaſt. Tromp alone, ſon of the famous admiral, killed during the Protectorſhip, bravely ſuſtained with his ſquadron the efforts of the Engliſh, and protected the rear of his countrymen. The vanquiſhed had nineteen ſhips ſunk and taken. The victors loſt only one. Sir John Lawſon died ſoon after of his wounds.

3d of June. Victory of the Engliſh.

It is affirmed, and with great appearance of reaſon, that this victory might have been rendered much more compleat, had not orders been iſſued to ſlacken ſail by Brounker, one of the duke's bedchamber, who pretended authority from his maſter. The duke diſclaimed the orders; but Brounker never was ſufficiently puniſhed for his temerity *. It is allowed, however, that the duke behaved with great bravery during the action. He was long in the thickeſt of the fire. The earl of Falmouth, lord Muſkerry, and Mr. Boyle, were killed by one ſhot at his ſide, and covered him all over with their brains and gore. And it is not likely, that, in a purſuit, where even perſons of inferior ſtation, and of the moſt cowardly diſpoſition, acquire courage, a commander ſhould feel his ſpirits to flag, and ſhould turn from the back of an enemy, whoſe face he had not been afraid to encounter.

This diſaſter threw the Dutch into conſternation, and determined de Wit, who was the ſoul of all their councils, to exert his military capacity, in order to ſupport the declining courage of his countrymen. He went on board the fleet, which he took under his command; and he ſoon remedied all thoſe diſorders, which had been occaſioned by the late misfortune. The genius of this man was of the moſt extenſive nature. He quickly became as much maſter of naval affairs, as if he had from his infancy been educated in them; and he even improved ſome parts of pilotage and ſailing, beyond what men expert in thoſe arts had ever been able to attain.

* Burnet ſufficiently accounts for Brounker's impunity, by informing us, that he was a favourite of the dutcheſs of Cleveland, the King's favourite miſtreſs.

Chap. II. 1665.

Rupture with France.

THE misfortunes of the Dutch determined their allies to act for their aſſiſtance and ſupport. The King of France was engaged in a defenſive alliance with the States; but as his naval force was yet in its infancy, he was extremely averſe, at that time, from entering into a war with ſo formidable a power as England. He tried long to mediate a peace between the two parties, and for that purpoſe ſent an embaſſy to London, which returned without effecting any thing. Lord Hollis, the Engliſh ambaſſador at Paris, endeavoured to draw over Lewis to the ſide of England; and in his maſter's name, made him the moſt tempting offers. Charles was content to abandon all the Spaniſh Low Countries to the French, without pretending to a foot of ground for himſelf; provided Lewis would allow him to purſue his advantages againſt the Dutch *. But the French Monarch, tho' the conqueſt of that valuable territory was the chief object of his ambition, rejected the offer as contrary to his intereſt: He thought, that, if the Engliſh had once eſtabliſhed an uncontroleable dominion over the ſea and over commerce, they would ſoon be able to render his acquiſitions a very dear purchaſe to him. When de Lionne, the French ſecretary, aſſured Van Buninghen, ambaſſador of the States, that this offer had been preſſed on his maſter during ſix months; "I can "readily believe it," replied the Dutchman; "I am ſenſible that it is the intereſt "of England †."

SUCH were the eſtabliſhed maxims at that time with regard to the intereſts of Princes. It muſt however be allowed, that the politics of Charles in making this offer, were not a little hazardous. The extreme weakneſs of Spain would have rendered the French conqueſts eaſy and infallible: But the vigour of the Dutch, it might be foreſeen, would make the ſucceſs of the Engliſh much more precarious. And even were the naval force of Holland totally annihilated, the acquiſition of the Dutch commerce to England could not be relied on as a certain conſequence; nor is trade a conſtant attendant of power, but depends on many other, and ſome of them very delicate, circumſtances.

THO' the King of France was reſolved to ſupport the Hollanders in that unequal conteſt, in which they were engaged; he yet protracted his declaration, and employed the time in naval preparations, both in the Ocean and the Mediterranean. The King of Denmark mean while was reſolved not to remain an idle ſpectator of the conteſt between the maritime powers. The part, which he acted, was the moſt extraordinary. He made a ſecret agreement with Charles to ſeize all the Dutch ſhips in his harbours, and to ſhare the ſpoils with the Engliſh, provided they would aſſiſt him in executing this meaſure. In order to encreaſe his prey, he perfidiouſly invited the Dutch ſhips to take ſhelter in his ports; and accordingly,

* D'Eſtrades, 19th of December, 1664. † Id. 14th of Auguſt, 1665.

the

Chap. II. 1665.

the Eaſt India fleet, very richly laden, had put into Bergen. Sandwich, who now commanded the Engliſh navy (the Duke having gone aſhore) diſpatched Sir Thomas Tiddiman with a ſquadron to attack them; but whether from the King of Denmark's delay in ſending orders to the governor, or, what is more probable, from his avidity in endeavouring to engroſs the whole booty, the Engliſh admiral, tho' he behaved with great bravery, failed of his purpoſe. The Daniſh governor fired upon him; and the Dutch, having had leiſure to fortify themſelves, made a very gallant reſiſtance.

3d of Auguſt.

Rupture with Denmark.

THE King of Denmark, ſeemingly aſhamed of his conduct, concluded with Sir Gilbert Talbot, the Engliſh envoy, an offenſive alliance againſt the States; and at the very ſame time, his reſident at the Hague, by his orders, concluded an offenſive alliance againſt England. To this laſt alliance he adhered, probably from jealouſy of the encreaſing naval power of England; and he ſeized and confiſcated all the Engliſh ſhips in his harbours. This was a very ſenſible check to the advantages, which Charles had obtained over the Dutch. Not only a great blow was given to the Engliſh commerce: The King of Denmark's naval force was alſo conſiderable, and threatened every moment a conjunction with the Hollanders. That Prince ſtipulated to aſſiſt his allies with a fleet of thirty ſail; and he received in return a yearly ſubſidy of 1,500,000 crowns; of which 300,000 were paid by France.

THE King endeavoured to counterballance theſe confederacies by acquiring new friends and allies. He had diſpatched Sir Richard Fanſhaw into Spain, who met with a very cold reception. That Monarchy was ſunk into a great degree of weakneſs, and was menaced with an invaſion from France; yet could not any motive prevail with Philip to enter into a cordial friendſhip with England. Charles's alliance with Portugal, the detention of Jamaica and Tangiers, the ſale of Dunkirk to the French; all theſe offences ſunk ſo deep into the mind of the Spaniſh Monarch, that no motive of intereſt was ſufficient to outweigh them.

THE biſhop of Munſter was the only ally that Charles could acquire. That prelate, a man of reſtleſs enterprize and ambition, had entertained a violent animoſity againſt the States; and he was eaſily engaged, by the promiſe of ſubſidies from England, to make an incurſion on that Republic. With a tumultuary army of near 20,000 men, he invaded her territories, and met with weak reſiſtance. The land-forces of the States were as feeble and ill governed, as their fleets were gallant and formidable. But after committing great ravages in ſeveral of the provinces, a ſtop was put to the progreſs of this warlike prelate. He had not military ſkill ſufficient to improve the advantages, which fortune had offered him. The King of France ſent a body of 6000 men to oppoſe him: Subſidies were not regularly remitted to him from England; and many of his troops deſerted for want of pay:

The elector of Brandenburgh threatened him with an invaſion in his own State: And on the whole, he was glad to conclude a peace under the mediation of France. On the firſt ſurmiſe of his intentions, Sir William Temple was ſent from London with money to fix him in his former alliance; but found, that he had arrived too late. Chap. II. 1665.

THE Dutch, encouraged by all theſe favourable circumſtances, continued reſolute to exert themſelves to the utmoſt in their own defence. De Ruyter, their great admiral, was arrived from his expedition to Guinea: Their India fleet was come home in ſafety: Their harbours were crowded with merchant ſhips: Faction at home was appeaſed: The young Prince of Orange had put himſelf under the tuition of the States of Holland, and of de Wit, their penſionary, who executed his truſt with great honour and fidelity: And the animoſity, which the Hollanders entertained againſt the attack of the Engliſh, ſo unprovoked, as they thought it, made them thirſt for revenge, and hope for better ſucceſs in their next enterprize. Such vigour was exerted in the common cauſe, that, in order the better to man the fleet, all merchant ſhips were prohibited to ſail, and even the fiſheries were totally ſuſpended *.

THE Engliſh likewiſe continued in the ſame diſpoſition; tho' another more grievous calamity had joined itſelf to that of war. The plague had broke out in London; and that with ſuch violence as to cut off, in leſs than a year, near 100,000 inhabitants. The King was obliged to ſummon the Parliament at Oxford. 10th of October.

THE good agreement ſtill continued between the King and the Parliament. They, on their part, unanimouſly voted him the ſupply demanded, twelve hundred and fifty thouſand pounds, to be levied in two years by monthly aſſeſſments. And he, to gratify them, paſſed the famous five-mile-act, which has given occaſion to ſuch grievous and ſuch juſt complaints: The church, under pretence of guarding Monarchy againſt its inveterate enemies, perſevered in the project of wracking its own enmity againſt the Nonconformiſts. It was enacted, that no diſſenting teacher, who took not the non-reſiſtance oath above-mentioned, ſhould, except upon the road, come within five miles of any corporation, or of any place, where he had preached after the act of oblivion. The penalty was a fine of fifty pounds, and ſix months impriſonment. By ejecting the Nonconformiſt miniſters from their churches, and prohibiting all ſeparate congregations, they had been rendered incapable of gaining any livelihood by their ſpiritual profeſſion. And now, under colour of removing them from places, where their influence might be dangerous, an expedient was fallen upon to deprive them of all means of ſubſiſt- New ſeſſion. Five-mile-act.

* Tromp's life. D'Eſtrades, 5th of February, 1665.

ence.

Chap. II. 1665. ence. Had not the ſpirit of the nation undergone a change, theſe violences were preludes to the moſt furious perſecution.

HOWEVER prevalent the hierarchy, this law did not paſs without oppoſition. Beſides ſeveral peers, attached to the old parliamentary party, Southampton himſelf, tho' Clarendon's great friend, expreſſed his diſapprobation of theſe meaſures. But the church party, not diſcouraged with this oppoſition, introduced into the Houſe of Commons a bill for impoſing the oath of non-reſiſtance on the whole nation. It was rejected only by three voices. The Parliament, after a very ſhort ſeſſion, was prorogued.

31ſt of October.

1666. AFTER France had declared war, England was evidently overmatched in force. Yet ſhe poſſeſſed this advantage by her ſituation, that ſhe lay between the fleets of her enemies, and might be able, by ſpeedy and well-concerted operations, to prevent their conjunction. But ſuch was the unhappy conduct of her commanders, or ſuch the want of intelligence in her miniſters, that this circumſtance turned rather to her prejudice. Lewis had given orders to the duke of Beaufort, his admiral, to ſail from Toulon; and the French ſquadron, under his command, conſiſting of above forty ſail*, was now commonly ſuppoſed to be entering the channel. The Dutch fleet, to the number of ſeventy-ſix ſail, was at ſea, under the command of de Ruyter and Tromp, in order to join him. The duke of Albemarle and Prince Rupert commanded the Engliſh fleet, which exceeded not ſeventy-four ſail. Albemarle, who, from his ſucceſſes under the Protectorſhip, had too much learned to deſpiſe the enemy, propoſed to detach Prince Rupert with twenty ſhips, in order to oppoſe the duke of Beaufort. Sir George Ayſcue, well acquainted with the bravery and conduct of de Ruyter, proteſted againſt the temerity of this reſolution: But Albemarle's authority prevailed. The remainder of the Engliſh ſet ſail to give battle to the Dutch; who, ſeeing the enemy advance quickly upon them, cut their cables, and prepared for the combat. The battle which enſued, is one of the moſt memorable, which we read of in ſtory; whether we conſider its duration, or the deſperate courage, with which it was fought. Albemarle made here ſome atonement by his valour for the raſhneſs of the attempt. No youth, animated by glory and ambitious hopes, could exert himſelf more than did this man, who was now in the decline of life, and who had reached the ſummit of honours. We ſhall not enter minutely into particulars. It will be ſufficient to mention the chief events of each day's engagement.

Sea fight of four days.

1ſt of June. IN the firſt day, Sir William Berkeley, vice-admiral, leading the van, fell into the thickeſt of the enemy, was overpowered, and his ſhip taken. He himſelf

* D'Eſtrades, 21ſt of May, 1666.

was

was found dead in his cabbin, all covered with blood. The Engliſh had the weather-gage of the enemy; but as the wind blew ſo high, that they could not uſe their lower tire, they received ſmall advantage from this circumſtance. The Dutch ſhot, however, fell chiefly on their ſails and rigging; and few ſhips were ſunk or much damaged. Chain-ſhot was at that time a new invention; which is commonly attributed to de Wit. Sir John Harman exerted himſelf extremely this day. The Dutch admiral, Evertz, was killed in engaging him. Darkneſs parted the combatants. Chap. II. 1666.

THE ſecond day, the wind was ſomewhat fallen, and the combat became more ſteddy and more terrible. The Engliſh now found, that the moſt heroic valour cannot compenſate the ſuperiority of numbers, againſt an enemy who is well conducted, and who is not defective in courage. De Ruyter and Van Tromp, rivals in glory and enemies from faction, exerted themſelves in emulation of each other; and de Ruyter had the advantage of diſengaging and ſaving his antagoniſt who had been ſurrounded by the Engliſh, and was in the moſt imminent danger. Sixteen freſh ſhips joined the Dutch fleet during the action: And the Engliſh were ſo ſhattered, that their fighting ſhips were reduced to twenty-eight, and they found themſelves obliged to retreat towards their own coaſt. The Dutch followed them, and were juſt on the point of renewing the combat; when a calm, which came a little before night, prevented the engagement.

NEXT morning, the Engliſh were neceſſitated to continue their retreat; and a proper diſpoſition was made for that purpoſe. The ſhattered ſhips were ordered to ſtretch a-head; and ſixteen of the moſt entire followed them in good order, and kept the enemy in awe. Albemarle himſelf cloſed the rear, and preſented an undaunted countenance to his victorious foes. The earl of Oſſory, ſon to Ormond, a gallant youth, who ſought honour and danger in every action throughout Europe, was then on board the admiral. Albemarle confeſſed to him, his intention rather to blow up his ſhip and periſh glorioufly, than yield to the enemy. Oſſory applauded this deſperate reſolution.

ABOUT two o'clock, the Dutch had come up with their enemy, and were ready to renew the fight; when a new fleet was deſcried from the ſouth, crowding all their ſails to reach the ſcene of action. The Dutch flattered themſelves that Beaufort was arrived, to cut off the retreat of the vanquiſhed: The Engliſh hoped, that Prince Rupert had come, to turn the ſcale of action. Albemarle, who had received intelligence of the Prince's approach, bent his courſe towards him. Unhappily, Sir George Ayſcue, in a ſhip of a hundred guns, the largeſt in the fleet, ſtruck on the Galloper ſands, and could receive no aſſiſtance from his friends, who were haſtening to join the reinforcement. He could not even

Chap. II. 1666.

reap the conſolation of periſhing gloriouſly, and revenging his death on his enemies. They were preparing fireſhips to attack him, and he was obliged to ſtrike. The Engliſh ſailors, ſeeing the neceſſity, with the utmoſt indignation ſurrendered themſelves priſoners.

ALBEMARLE and Prince Rupert were now determined to face the enemy; and next morning, the battle began afreſh, with more equal force than ever, and with equal valour. After long cannonading, the fleets came to a more cloſe combat; which was continued with great violence, till parted by a miſt. The Engliſh retired firſt into their harbours.

THO' the Engliſh, by their obſtinate courage, reaped the chief honour in this engagement, it is ſomewhat uncertain, who obtained the victory. The Hollanders took a few ſhips; and having ſome appearances of advantage, expreſſed their ſatisfaction by all the ſigns of triumph and rejoicing. But as the Engliſh fleet was repaired in a little time, and put to ſea more formidable than ever, together with many of thoſe ſhips, which the Dutch had boaſted to have burned or deſtroyed; all Europe ſaw that thoſe two brave nations were engaged in a conteſt, which was not likely, on either ſide, to prove deciſive.

IT was the conjunction of the French alone, which could give the ſuperiority to the Dutch. In order to facilitate this conjunction, de Ruyter, having repaired the fleet, poſted himſelf at the mouth of the Thames. The Engliſh under Prince Rupert and Albemarle were not long in coming to the attack. The numbers of each fleet amounted to about eighty ſail; and the valour and experience of the commanders, as well as of the ſeamen, rendered the engagement fierce and obſtinate. Sir Thomas Allen, who commanded the white ſquadron of the Engliſh, attacked the Dutch van, whom he entirely routed; and he killed the three admirals who commanded it. Van Tromp engaged Sir Jeremy Smith; and during the heat of action, he was ſeparated from de Ruyter and the main body, whether by accident or deſign was never certainly known. De Ruyter, with great conduct and valour, maintained the combat againſt the main body of the Engliſh; and tho' overpowered by numbers, kept his ſtation, till night ended the engagement. Next day, finding the Dutch fleet ſcattered and diſcouraged, his high ſpirit was obliged to ſubmit to a retreat, which yet he conducted with ſuch ſkill, as to render it equally honourable to himſelf as the greateſt victory. Full of indignation however for yielding the ſuperiority to the enemy, he frequently exclaimed, "My God! "what a wretch am I? among ſo many thouſand bullets, is there not one to put "an end to my miſerable life?" One de Witte, his ſon in law, who ſtood near, exhorted him, ſince he ſought death, to turn upon the Engliſh, and render his life a dear purchaſe to the victors. But de Ruyter eſteemed it more worthy a

25th of July. Victory of the Engliſh.

brave man to perſevere to the uttermoſt, and, as long as poſſible, to render ſervice to his country. All that night and next day, the Engliſh preſſed upon the rear of the Dutch; and it was chiefly by the redoubled efforts of de Ruyter, that the latter ſaved themſelves in their harbours. Chap. II. 1666.

The loſs of the Hollanders in this action was not very conſiderable; but as violent animoſities had broke out between the two admirals, who engaged all the officers on one ſide or other, the conſternation, which took place, was very great among the provinces. Tromp's commiſſion was at laſt taken from him; but tho' ſeveral captains had miſbehaved, they were ſo well protected by their friends in the magiſtracy of the towns, that moſt of them eſcaped puniſhment, many were ſtill continued in their commands.

The Engliſh now rode inconteſtible maſters of the ſea, and inſulted the Dutch in their harbours. A detachment under Holmes was ſent into the road of Vlie, and burned a hundred and forty merchantmen, two men of war, together with Brandaris, a large and rich village on the coaſt. The merchants, who loſt by this enterprize, uniting themſelves to the Orange faction, exclaimed againſt an adminiſtration, which, they pretended, had brought ſuch diſgrace and ruin on their country. None but the firm and intrepid mind of de Wit could have ſupported itſelf under ſuch a complication of calamities.

The King of France, apprehenſive that the Dutch would ſink under their miſfortunes; at leaſt, that de Wit, his friend, might be diſpoſſeſſed of the adminiſtration, haſtened the advance of the duke of Beaufort. The Dutch fleet likewiſe was again equipped; and under the command of de Ruyter, cruiſed near the Straits of Dover. Prince Rupert with the Engliſh navy, now ſtronger than ever, came full ſail upon them. The Dutch admiral thought proper to decline the combat, and retired into St. John's Road near Bulloigne. Here he ſheltered himſelf, both from the Engliſh, and from a furious ſtorm, which aroſe. Prince Rupert too was obliged to retire into St. Helens; where he ſtayed ſome time, in order to repair the damages, which he had ſuſtained. Mean while the duke of Beaufort proceeded up the channel, and paſſed the Engliſh fleet unperceived; but he did not find the Dutch, as he expected. De Ruyter had been ſeized with a fever: Many of the chief officers had fallen into ſickneſs: A contagious diſtemper was ſpread thro' the whole fleet: And the States thought it neceſſary to recall them into their harbours, before the enemy ſhould be refitted. The French King, anxious for his navy, which, with ſo much care and induſtry, he had lately built, diſpatched orders to Beaufort, to make the beſt of his way to Breſt. That admiral

Chap. II. 1666.

had again the good fortune to paſs the Engliſh. One ſhip alone, the Ruby, fell into the hands of the enemy.

3d of September. Fire of London.

WHILE the war continued without any deciſive ſucceſs on either ſide, a dreadful calamity happened in London, which threw the people into great conſternation. A fire, breaking out in a baker's houſe near the bridge, ſpread itſelf on all ſides with ſuch rapidity, that no efforts could extinguiſh it, till it laid in aſhes a conſiderable part of the city. The inhabitants, without being able to do any thing effectual for their relief, were reduced to be ſpectators of their own ruin; and were purſued from ſtreet to ſtreet by the flames, which unexpectedly gathered round them. Three days and nights did the fire advance; and it was only by the blowing up of houſes, that it was at laſt extinguiſhed. The King and Duke uſed their utmoſt endeavours to ſtop the progreſs of the flames; but all their induſtry was unſucceſsful. About four hundred ſtreets, and thirteen thouſand houſes were reduced to aſhes.

THE cauſes of this calamity were evident. The narrow ſtreets of London, the houſes built entirely of wood, the dry ſeaſon, and a violent eaſt wind which blew; theſe were ſo many concurring circumſtances, which rendered it eaſy to aſſign the reaſon of the deſtruction, that enſued. But the people were not ſatisfied with this obvious account. Prompted by blind rage, ſome aſcribed the guilt to the Republicans, others to the Catholics; tho' it is not eaſy to conceive how the burning of London could ſerve the purpoſes of either party. As the Papiſts were the chief objects of public deteſtation, the rumour, which threw the guilt on them, was more favourably received by the people. No proof however, or even preſumption, after the ſtricteſt enquiry by a committee of Parliament, ever appeared to authorize ſuch a calumny; yet in order to give countenance to the popular prejudice, the inſcription, engraved by authority on the monument, aſcribed this calamity to that hated ſect. This clauſe was erazed by order of King James, when he came to the throne; but after the revolution it was replaced. So credulous, as well as obſtinate, are the people, in believing every thing, which flatters their prevailing paſſion!

THE fire of London, tho' at that time a great calamity, has proved in the iſſue beneficial both to the city and the kingdom. The city was rebuilt in a very little time; and care was taken to make the ſtreets wider and more regular than before. A diſcretionary power was aſſumed by the King to regulate the diſtribution of the buildings, and to forbid the uſe of lath and timber, the materials of which the houſes were formerly compoſed. The neceſſity was ſo urgent, and the occaſion ſo extraordinary, that no exceptions were made to an exerciſe of authority, which otherwiſe might have been eſteemed illegal. Had the King been

been enabled to carry his power ſtill farther, and made the houſes be rebuilt with perfect regularity, and entirely upon one plan; he had much contributed to the convenience, as well as embelliſhment of the city. Great advantages, however, have reſulted from the alterations; though not carried to the full length. London became much more healthy after the fire. The plague, which uſed to break out with great fury twice or thrice every century, and indeed was always lurking in ſome corner or other of the city, has not once diſcovered itſelf ſince that calamity. Chap. II. 1666.

THE Parliament met ſoon after, and gave the ſanction of law to thoſe regulations made by royal authority; as well as appointed commiſſioners for deciding all ſuch queſtions of property, as might ariſe from the fire. They likewiſe voted a ſupply of 1,800,000 pounds to be levied, partly by a poll-bill, partly by aſſeſſments. Tho' their enquiry brought out no proofs, which could fix on the Papiſts the burning of London, the general averſion againſt that ſect ſtill prevailed; and complaints were made, probably without much foundation, of its dangerous encreaſe. Charles, at the deſire of the Commons, iſſued a proclamation for the baniſhment of all prieſts and jeſuits; but the bad execution of this, as well as of former edicts, deſtroyed all confidence in his ſincerity, whenever he pretended an averſion towards the Catholic religion. Whether ſuſpicions of this nature had diminiſhed the King's popularity, is uncertain; but it appears, that the ſupply was voted much later than Charles expected, or even than the public neceſſities ſeemed to require. The intrigues of the duke of Buckingham, a man who wanted only ſteadineſs to render him extremely dangerous, had ſomewhat embarraſſed the meaſures of the court: And this was the firſt time that the King found any conſiderable reaſon to complain of a failure of confidence in this Houſe of Commons. The riſing ſymptoms of ill humour tended, no doubt, to quicken the ſteps, which were already making towards a peace with foreign enemies. 1667.

CHARLES began to be ſenſible, that all the ends, for which the war had been undertaken, were likely to prove entirely ineffectual. The Dutch, even when alone, had defended themſelves with great vigour, and were every day improving in their military ſkill and preparations. Tho' their trade had ſuffered extremely, their extenſive credit enabled them to levy prodigious ſums; and while the ſeamen of England loudly complained of want of pay, the Dutch navy was regularly ſupplied with every thing requiſite for its ſubſiſtance. As two powerful Kings now ſupported them, every place, from the extremity of Norway to the coaſts of Bayonne, was become hoſtile to the Engliſh. And Charles, neither fond of action, nor ſtimulated by any violent ambition, gladly ſought for means of reſtoring tranquillity to his people, heartily diſguſted with a war, which, being joined with the plague and fire, had proved ſo fruitleſs and deſtructive. Advances towards peace.

THE

Chap. II. 1667.

THE firſt advances towards an accommodation were made by England. When the King ſent for the body of Sir William Berkeley, he inſinuated to the States his deſire of peace on reaſonable terms; and their anſwer correſponded in the ſame amicable intentions. Charles, however, to maintain the appearance of ſuperiority, ſtill inſiſted, that the States ſhould treat at London; and they agreed to make him this compliment ſo far as concerned themſelves: But being engaged in alliance with two crowned heads, they could not, they ſaid, prevail with theſe to depart in that reſpect from their dignity. On a ſudden, the King went ſo far on the other ſide as to offer the ſending ambaſſadors to the Hague; but this propoſal, which ſeemed honourable to the Dutch, was meant only to divide and diſtract them, by affording the Engliſh an opportunity to carry on cabals with the diſaffected party. The offer was therefore rejected; and conferences were ſecretly held in the Queen mother's apartments at Paris, where the pretenſions of both parties were diſcuſſed. The Dutch made very equitable propoſals; either that all things ſhould be reſtored to the ſame condition in which they ſtood before the war; or that both parties ſhould continue in poſſeſſion of their preſent acquiſitions. Charles accepted the latter propoſal; and almoſt every thing was adjuſted, except the diſputes with regard to the iſle of Polerone. This iſland lies in the Eaſt Indies, and was formerly valuable for its product of ſpices. The Engliſh had been maſters of it; but were diſpoſſeſſed at the time when the violences had been committed againſt them at Amboyna. Cromwel had ſtipulated to have it reſtored; and the Hollanders, having firſt entirely deſtroyed all the ſpice trees, maintained, that they had executed the treaty, but that the Engliſh had been anew expelled during the courſe of the war. Charles renewed his pretenſions to this iſland; and as the reaſons on both ſides began to multiply, and ſeemed to require a long diſcuſſion, it was agreed to transfer the treaty to ſome other place; and Charles made choice of Breda.

LORD Hollis and Henry Coventry were the Engliſh ambaſſadors. They immediately deſired, that a ſuſpenſion of arms ſhould be agreed to, till the ſeveral claims ſhould be adjuſted: But this propoſal, ſeemingly ſo natural, was rejected by the intereſt of de Wit. That penetrating and active miniſter, thoroughly acquainted with the characters of Princes and the ſituation of affairs, had diſcovered an opportunity of ſtriking a blow, which might at once reſtore to the Dutch the honour loſt during the war, and ſeverely revenge thoſe injuries, which he aſcribed to the wanton ambition and injuſtice of the Engliſh.

WHATEVER projects might have been formed by Charles for ſecreting the money granted him by Parliament, he had hitherto failed in his intention. The expen-

ces

ces of ſuch vaſt armaments had exhauſted all the ſupplies *; and even a great debt was contracted to the ſeamen. The King, therefore, was reſolved to ſave, as far as poſſible, the laſt ſupply of 1,800,000 pounds; and to employ it for payment of his debts, as well thoſe occaſioned by the war, as thoſe which either neceſſity, or pleaſure, or generoſity, had formerly engaged him to contract. He obſerved, that the Dutch had been with great reluctance forced into the war, and that the events of it were not ſuch as to inſpire them with great deſire of its continuance. The French, he knew, had been engaged into hoſtilities by no other motive than that of ſupporting their allies; and were now more deſirous than ever of putting an end to the quarrel. The differences between the parties were ſo inconſiderable, that the concluſion of peace appeared abſolutely infallible; and nothing but forms, or at leaſt ſome vain points of honour, ſeemed to remain for the ambaſſadors at Breda to diſcuſs. In this ſituation, Charles, allured by the proſpect of gain, raſhly remitted his preparations, and expoſed England to one of the greateſt affronts, which it has ever received. Two ſmall ſquadrons alone were equipped; and during a war with ſuch potent and martial enemies, every thing was left almoſt in the ſame ſituation as in times of the moſt profound tranquillity. Chap. II. 1667.

De Wit protracted the negotiations at Breda, and haſtened the naval preparations. The Dutch fleet appeared in the Thames under the command of de Ruyter, and threw the Engliſh into the utmoſt conſternation. A chain had been drawn croſs the river Medway; ſome fortifications had been added to Sheerneſs and Upnore caſtle: But all theſe preparations were unequal to the preſent neceſſity. Sheerneſs was ſoon taken; nor could it be ſaved by the valour of Sir Edward Sprague, who defended it. Having the advantage of a ſpring tide and an eaſterly wind, the Dutch preſſed on, and broke the chain, tho' fortified by ſome ſhips, which had been there ſunk by order of the Duke of Albemarle. They burned the three ſhips, which lay to guard the chain, the Mathias, the Unity, and the Charles the fifth. After damaging ſeveral veſſels, and poſſeſſing themſelves of the hull of the Royal Charles, which the Engliſh had burned, they advanced with ſix men of war, and five fire ſhips, as far as Upnore caſtle, where they burned the Royal Oak, the Loyal London, and the Great James. Captain Douglas, who commanded on board the Royal Oak, periſhed in the flames, tho' he had an eaſy opportunity of eſcaping. "Never was it known," he ſaid, "that a Douglas had left his poſt without orders †." The Hollanders fell down 10th of June. Diſgrace at Chatham.

* The Dutch had ſpent on the war near 40 millions of livres a year, above 3 millions ſterling: A much greater ſum than had been granted by the Engliſh Parliament. D'Eſtrades, 24th of December 1665; 1ſt of January 1666. Temple, vol. i. p. 71. It was probably the want of money which engaged the King to pay the ſeamen with tickets; a contrivance which proved ſo much to their loſs.

† Temple, Vol. ii. p. 41.

the

Chap. II. 1667. the Medway without receiving any conſiderable damage; and it was apprehended, that they might next tide ſail up the Thames, and extend their hoſtilities even to the bridge of London. Nine ſhips were ſunk at Woolwich, four at Blackwall: Platforms were raiſed in many places, furniſhed with artillery: The train bands were called out; and every place was full of the utmoſt diſorder. The Dutch ſailed next to Portſmouth, where they made a fruitleſs attempt: They met with no better ſucceſs at Plymouth: They inſulted Harwich: They ſailed again up the Thames as far as Tilbury, where they were repulſed. The whole coaſt was in alarm; and had the French thought proper at this time to join the Dutch fleet, and to invade England, conſequences the moſt fatal might juſtly have been apprehended. But Lewis had no intention to puſh the victory to ſuch extremities. His intereſt required, that a balance ſhould be kept between the two maritime powers; not that an uncontrouled ſuperiority ſhould be given to either.

GREAT indignation prevailed amongſt the Engliſh, to ſee an enemy, whom they regarded as inferior, whom they had expected totally to ſubdue, and over whom they had gained many honourable advantages, now of a ſudden ride undiſputed maſters of the ocean, burn their ſhips in their very harbours, fill every place with confuſion, and ſtrike a terror into the capital itſelf. But tho' the cauſe of all theſe diſaſters could be aſcribed neither to bad fortune, to the miſconduct of admirals, nor the miſbehaviour of ſeamen, but ſolely to the avarice, at leaſt to the improvidence, of the government; no dangerous ſymptoms of diſcontent appeared, and no attempt for an inſurrection was made by any of thoſe numerous ſectaries, who had been ſo openly branded for their rebellious principles, and who upon that ſuppoſition had been treated with ſuch ſeverity *.

IN the preſent diſtreſs, two expedients were embraced: An army of 12,000 men was ſuddenly levied; and the Parliament, tho' it lay under prorogation, was ſummoned to meet. The Houſes were very thin; and the only vote, which the Commons paſſed, was an addreſs for breaking the army; which was complied with. This expreſſion of jealouſy ſhewed the court what they might expect from that aſſembly; and it was thought moſt prudent to prorogue them till next winter.

10th of July. Peace of Breda. BUT the ſigning the treaty at Breda extricated the King from his preſent difficulties. The Engliſh ambaſſadors received orders to recede from thoſe demands, which, however frivolous in themſelves, could not now be relinquiſhed, without acknowledging a ſuperiority in the enemy. Polerone remained with the Dutch; ſatisfaction for the ſhips, Bonaventure and Good-hope, the pretended grounds of

* Some Nonconformiſts, however, both in Scotland and England, had kept a correſpondence with the States, and had entertained projects for inſurrections, but they were too weak even to attempt the execution of them. D'Eſtrades, 13th of October, 1665.

the

the quarrel, was no longer inſiſted on; Acadie was yielded to the French. The acquiſition of New-York, a ſettlement ſo important by its ſituation, was the chief advantage which the Engliſh reaped from a war, in which the national character of bravery had ſhone out with great luſtre, but where the miſconduct of the government, eſpecially in the concluſion, had been no leſs apparent. Chap. II. 1667.

To appeaſe the people by ſome ſacrifice ſeemed requiſite before the meeting of the Parliament; and the prejudices of the nation plainly pointed out the victim. The chancellor was at this time much expoſed to the hatred of the public, and of every party, which divided the nation. All the numerous ſectaries regarded him as their determined enemy; and aſcribed, to his advice and influence, thoſe perſecuting laws, to which they had been ſo long expoſed. The Catholics knew, that while he retained any authority, all their credit with the King and the Duke would be entirely uſeleſs to them, nor muſt they ever expect any favour or indulgence. Even the Royaliſts, diſappointed in their ſanguine hopes of preferment, threw a great load of envy on Clarendon, into whoſe hands the King ſeemed at firſt to have reſigned the whole power of government. The ſale of Dunkirk, the bad payment of the ſeamen, the diſgrace at Chatham, the unſucceſsful concluſion of the war; all theſe misfortunes were charged on the chancellor, who, tho' he had ever oppoſed the rupture with Holland, thought it ſtill his duty to juſtify what he could not prevent. A building likewiſe of more expence and magnificence than his ſlender fortune could afford, being unwarily undertaken by him, much expoſed him to public reproach, as if he had acquired great riches by corruption. The populace gave it commonly the appellation of Dunkirk Houſe. Clarendon's fall.

The King himſelf, who had always more revered than loved the chancellor, was now totally eſtranged from him. Amidſt the diſſolute manners of the court, that miniſter ſtill maintained an inflexible dignity, and would not ſubmit to any condeſcenſions, which he deemed unworthy his age and character. Buckingham, a man of profligate morals, happy in his talent of ridicule, but expoſed in his own conduct to all the ridicule which he threw on others, ſtill made him the object of his raillery, and gradually leſſened in the King that regard, which he bore to his miniſter. When any difficulties aroſe, either for want of power or money, the blame was ſtill caſt on him, who, it was believed, had carefully at the reſtoration checked all laviſh conceſſions to the King. And what perhaps touched Charles more nearly, he found in Clarendon, it is ſaid, obſtacles to his pleaſure as well as to his ambition.

The King diſguſted with the homely perſon of his ſpouſe, and deſirous of having children, had hearkened to propoſals of obtaining a divorce, on pretence either of her being pre-engaged to another, or of having made a vow of chaſtity before her

Chap. II. 1667.

marriage. He was farther ſtimulated by his paſſion for Mrs. Stuart, daughter to a Scots gentleman; a lady of great beauty, and whoſe virtue he had hitherto found impregnable: But Clarendon, apprehenſive of the conſequences attending a diſputed title, and perhaps anxious for the ſucceſſion of his grandchildren, engaged the duke of Richmond to marry Mrs. Stuart, and thereby put an end to the King's hopes. It is pretended, that Charles never forgave this diſappointment.

When politics, therefore, and inclination both concurred to make the King ſacrifice Clarendon to popular prejudices, the memory of his paſt ſervices was not able any longer to delay his fall. The ſeals were taken from him, and given to Sir Orlando Bridgeman. Southampton the treaſurer was now dead, who had perſevered to the utmoſt in his attachments to the chancellor. The laſt time he appeared at the council board, he exerted his friendſhip with a vigour, which neither age nor infirmities could abate. "This man," ſaid he, ſpeaking of Clarendon, "is "a true Proteſtant, and an honeſt Engliſhman; and while he enjoys power, we are "ſecure of our laws, liberties, and religion. I dread the conſequences of his removal."

But the fall of the chancellor was not ſufficient to gratify the malice of his enemies: His total ruin was reſolved on. The duke of York in vain exerted his intereſt in behalf of his father-in-law. Both Prince and people united in promoting that violent meaſure; and no means were thought ſo proper for ingratiating the court with a Parliament, which had ſo long been governed by that very miniſter, who was now to be the victim of their prejudices.

10th of October.

Some popular acts paved the way for the ſeſſion; and the Parliament, in their firſt addreſs, gave the King thanks for theſe inſtances of his goodneſs, and among the reſt, they took care to mention his diſmiſſion of Clarendon. The King, in reply, aſſured the Houſes, that he would never again employ that nobleman in any public office whatſoever. Immediately, the charge againſt him was opened in the Houſe of Commons by Mr. Seymour, afterwards Sir Edward, and conſiſted of ſeventeen articles. The houſe, without examining particulars, farther than hearing general affirmations, that all would be proved, immediately voted his impeachment. Many of the articles † we know to be either falſe or frivolous; and ſuch of them, as we are leſs acquainted with, we may fairly preſume to be no

† The articles were, that he had adviſed the King to govern by military power without Parliaments, that he had affirmed the King to be a Papiſt or popiſhly affected, that he had received great ſums of money for procuring the Canary patent and other illegal patents, that he had adviſed and procured divers of his Majeſty's ſubjects to be impriſoned againſt law, in remote iſlands and garriſons, thereby to prevent their having the benefit of the law, that he had procured the cuſtoms to be farmed at underrates, that he had received great ſums from the Vintner's Company, for allowing them to enhance the price of Wines, that he had in a ſhort time gained a greater eſtate than could have been ſuppoſed to ariſe from the profits of his offices, that he had introduced an arbitrary government into his Majeſty's plantations,

no better grounded. His adviſing the ſale of Dunkirk, ſeems the heavieſt and trueſt part of the charge; but a miſtake in judgment, allowing it to be ſuch, where there appears no ſymptoms of corruption or bad intentions, it would be very hard to charge as a crime on any miniſter. The King's neceſſities, which occaſioned that meaſure, cannot with any appearance of reaſon be imputed to Clarendon; and chiefly proceeded from the over-frugal maxims of the Parliament itſelf, in not granting the proper ſupplies to the crown.

When the charge was carried up to the Peers, as it contained an accuſation of treaſon in general, without ſpecifying any particulars, it ſeemed not a ſufficient ground for committing Clarendon to cuſtody. The precedents of Strafford and Laud were not, by reaſon of the violence of the times, deemed a proper authority; but as the Commons ſtill inſiſted upon his commitment, it was neceſſary to appoint a free conference between the Houſes. The Lords perſevered in their reſolution; and the Commons voted this conduct to be an obſtruction to public juſtice, and a precedent of evil and dangerous conſequence. They alſo choſe a committee to draw up a vindication of their own proceedings.

Clarendon, finding that the popular torrent, united to the violence of power, ran with great impetuoſity againſt him, and that a defence, offered to ſuch prejudiced ears, would be entirely ineffectual, thought proper to withdraw himſelf. At Calais, he wrote a paper addreſſed to the Houſe of Lords. He there ſaid, that his fortune, which was but moderate, had been gained entirely by the lawful, avowed profits of his office, and by the voluntary bounty of the King; that during the firſt years after the reſtoration he had always concurred in opinion with the other counſellors, men of ſuch reputation that no one could entertain ſuſpicions of their wiſdom or integrity; that his credit ſoon declined, and however he might diſapprove of ſome meaſures, he found it in vain to oppoſe them; that his repugnance to the Dutch war, the ſource of all the public grievances, was always generally known, as well as his diſapprobation of many unhappy ſteps taken in conducting it; and that whatever pretence might be made of national offences, his real crime, that which had exaſperated his powerful enemies, was his frequent oppoſition to exorbitant grants, which the importunity of ſuitors had extorted from his Majeſty.

plantations, that he had rejected a propoſal for the preſervation of Nevis and St. Chriſtophers, which was the occaſion of great loſſes in thoſe parts, that when he was in his Majeſty's ſervice beyond ſea he held a correſpondence with Cromwel and his complices, that he adviſed the ſale of Dunkirk, that he had unduly altered letters patent under the King's ſeal, that he had unduly decided cauſes in council, which ſhould have been brought before Chancery, that he had iſſued quo warrantos againſt corporations with an intention of ſqueezing money from them, that he had taken money for paſſing the bill of ſettlement of Ireland, that he betrayed the nation in all foreign treaties, and that he was the principal adviſer of dividing the fleet in June 1666.

Chap. II. 1667.

THIS paper the Lords tranſmitted to the Commons under the appellation of a libel; and by a vote of both Houſes, it was condemned to be burned by the hands of the hangman. They next proceeded to exert their legiſlative power againſt Clarendon, and paſſed a bill of baniſhment and incapacity, which received the royal aſſent. He retired into France, where he lived in a private manner. He ſurvived his baniſhment ſix years; and he employed his leizure chiefly in reducing into order the Hiſtory of the Civil Wars, for which he had before collected materials. The performance does great honour to his memory; and, except Whitelock's Memorials, is the moſt candid account of thoſe times, compoſed by any cotemporary author.

Clarendon's baniſhment.

CLARENDON was always a friend to the liberty and the conſtitution of his country. At the commencement of the civil wars, he had entered into the late King's ſervice, and was honoured with a great ſhare in the eſteem and friendſhip of that Monarch: He was purſued with unrelenting animoſity by the Long Parliament: He had ſhared all the fortunes and directed all the councils of the preſent King during his exile: He had been advanced to the higheſt truſt and offices after the reſtoration: Yet all theſe circumſtances, which might naturally operate with ſuch force, either on reſentment, gratitude, or ambition, had no influence on his uncorrupted mind. It is ſaid, that when he firſt engaged in the ſtudy of the law, his father exhorted him with great earneſtneſs to ſhun the practice too common in that profeſſion, of ſtraining every point in favour of prerogative, and perverting ſo uſeful a ſcience to the oppreſſion of liberty: And in the midſt of theſe rational and virtuous counſels, which he re-iterated, he was ſuddenly ſeized with an apoplexy, and expired in his ſon's preſence. This circumſtance gave additional weight to the principles, which he inculcated.

THE combination of King and ſubject to oppreſs ſo good a miniſter affords, to men of oppoſite diſpoſitions, an equal occaſion of inveighing againſt the ingratitude of Princes or ignorance of the people. Charles ſeems never to have mitigated his reſentment againſt Clarendon; and the national prejudices purſued him to his retreat in France. A company of Engliſh ſoldiers, being quartered near him, aſſaulted his houſe, broke open the doors, gave him a dangerous wound on the head, and would have proceeded to the laſt extremity, had not their officers, hearing of the violence, happily interpoſed.

THE next expedient, which the King embraced, in order to acquire popularity, is much more deſerving of praiſe; and, had it been ſteadily purſued, would probably have rendered his reign happy, certainly his memory glorious. It is the Triple Alliance of which I ſpeak; a meaſure, which gave entire ſatisfaction to the public.

THE

Chap. II. 1668.

State of France.

THE glory of France, which had long been eclipſed, either by domeſtic factions, or by the ſuperior force of the Spaniſh Monarchy, began now to break out with great luſtre, and to engage the attention of all the neighbouring nations. The independant power and mutinous ſpirit of the nobility were ſubdued: The popular pretenſions of the Parliament reſtrained: The Hugonot party reduced to ſubjection: That extenſive and fertile country, poſſeſſed of every advantage both of climate and ſituation, was fully peopled with ingenious and induſtrious inhabitants: And while the ſpirit of the nation diſcovered all the vigour and bravery requiſite for great enterprizes, it was tamed to an entire ſubmiſſion under the will of the Sovereign.

Character of Lewis XIV.

THE Sovereign, who now filled the throne, was well adapted, by his perſonal character, both to encreaſe and to avail himſelf of theſe mighty advantages. Lewis the fourteenth, endowed with every quality, which could enchant the people, poſſeſſed many which merit the approbation of the wiſe. The maſculine beauty of his perſon was embelliſhed with a noble air: The dignity of his behaviour was tempered with the higheſt affability and politeneſs: Elegant without effeminacy, addicted to pleaſure without neglecting buſineſs, decent in his very vices, and beloved in the midſt of arbitrary power; he ſurpaſſed all cotemporary Monarchs, as in grandeur, ſo likewiſe in fame and glory.

HIS ambition, regulated by prudence, not by juſtice, had carefully provided every means of conqueſt; and before he put himſelf in motion, he ſeemed to have abſolutely enſured ſucceſs. His finances were brought into order: A naval power created: His armies encreaſed and diſciplined: Magazines and military ſtores provided: And tho' the magnificence of his court was ſupported beyond all former example, ſo regular was the oeconomy obſerved, and ſo willingly did the people, now enriched by arts and commerce, ſubmit to multiplied taxes, that his military force much exceeded what in any preceding age had ever been employed by any European Monarch.

THE ſudden decline and almoſt total fall of the Spaniſh Monarchy opened an inviting field to ſo enterprizing a Prince, and ſeemed to promiſe him an eaſy and univerſal conqueſt. The other nations of Europe, feeble or ill governed, were aſtoniſhed at the greatneſs of his riſing empire; and all of them caſt their eyes towards England, as the only power, which could ſave them from that ſubjection, with which they were ſo nearly threatened.

THE animoſity, which had antiently ſubſiſted between the Engliſh and French nations, and which had been ſuſpended for above a century by the jealouſy of Spaniſh greatneſs, began to revive and to exert itſelf. The glory of preſerving the ballance of Europe, a glory ſo much founded on juſtice and humanity, flattered

Chap. II. 1668.

the ambition of England; and the whole people were eager to provide for their own future ſecurity, by oppoſing the progreſs of ſo hated a rival. The proſpect of embracing ſuch meaſures had contributed, among other reaſons, to render the peace of Breda ſo univerſally acceptable to the nation. By the death of Philip the fourth, King of Spain, an inviting opportunity, and ſome very ſlender pretences, had been afforded to call forth the ambition of Lewis.

AT the treaty of the Pyrenees, when Lewis eſpouſed the Spaniſh Princeſs, he had renounced every title of ſucceſſion to every part of the Spaniſh Monarchy; and this renounciation had been couched in the moſt accurate and moſt preciſe terms, which language could afford. But on the death of his father-in-law, he retracted his renounciation, and pretended, that natural rights, depending on blood and ſucceſſion, could not be annihilated by any extorted deed or contract. Philip had left a ſon, Charles the ſecond of Spain; but as the Queen of France was of a former marriage, ſhe laid claim to a conſiderable province of the Spaniſh Monarchy, even to the excluſion of her brother. By the cuſtoms of ſome parts of Brabant, a female of a firſt marriage was preferred to a male of a ſecond, in the ſucceſſion to private inheritances; and Lewis thence inferred, that his Queen had acquired a right to the dominion of that important dutchy.

French invaſion of the Low Countries.

A CLAIM of this nature was more properly ſupported by military force than by argument and reaſoning. Lewis appeared on the frontiers of the Netherlands with a numerous army of 40,000 men, commanded by the beſt generals of the age, and provided of every thing neceſſary for action. The Spaniards, tho' they might have foreſeen this meaſure, were totally unprepared. Their towns, without magazines, without fortifications, without garriſons, fell into the hands of the French King, as ſoon as he preſented himſelf before him. Athe, Liſle, Tournay, Oudenarde, Courtray, Charleroi, Binche were immediately taken: And it was viſible, that no force in the Low Countries was able to ſtop or retard the progreſs of the French arms.

THIS meaſure, executed with ſo much celerity and ſucceſs, gave great alarm to almoſt every court in Europe. It had been obſerved with what dignity or even haughtineſs, Lewis, from the time he began to govern, had ever ſupported all his rights and pretenſions. D'Eſtrades, the French ambaſſador, and Watteville, the Spaniſh, having quarrelled in London, on account of their pretenſions for precedency, the French Monarch was not ſatisfied, till Spain ſent to Paris a ſolemn embaſſy, and promiſed never more to revive ſuch conteſts. Crequi, his ambaſſador in Rome, had met with an affront from the Pope's guards. The Pope, Alexander the ſeventh, had been obliged to break his guards, to diſpatch his nephew to aſk pardon, and to allow a pillar to be erected in Rome itſelf, as a monument of his own

own humiliation. The King of England too had experienced the high ſpirit and unſubmitting temper of Lewis. A claim of precedency in the Engliſh flag having been advanced, the French Monarch remonſtrated with ſuch vigour, and prepared himſelf to reſiſt with ſuch courage, that Charles found it more prudent to deſiſt from his pretenſions. The King of England, ſaid Lewis to his ambaſſador D'Eſtrades, may know my force, but he knows not the ſentiments of my heart: Every thing appears to me contemptible in compariſon of glory *. Theſe meaſures of conduct had given ſtrong indications of his character: But the invaſion of Flanders diſcovered an ambition, which, being ſupported by ſuch overgrown power, menaced the general liberties of Europe. Chap. II. 1668.

As no State lay nearer the danger, none was ſeized with more terror than the United Provinces. They were ſtill engaged, together with France, in a war againſt England; and Lewis had promiſed them, that he would take no ſteps againſt Spain without previouſly informing them: But, contrary to this aſſurance, he kept a total ſilence, till on the very point of entering upon action. If the renounciation, made at the treaty of the Pyrenees, was not valid, it was foreſeen, that, upon the death of the King of Spain, a ſickly infant, the whole monarchy would be claimed by Lewis; after which it would be vainly expected to ſet bounds to his pretenſions. Charles, acquainted with theſe well-grounded apprehenſions of the Dutch, had been the more obſtinate in inſiſting on conditions at Breda; and by delaying to ſign the treaty, had imprudently expoſed himſelf to the ſignal diſgrace, which he received at Chatham. De Wit, ſenſible, that a few weeks delay would be of no conſequence in the Low Countries, took this opportunity of ſtriking an important blow, and of finiſhing the war with honour to himſelf and to his country.

NEGOTIATIONS meanwhile commenced for the ſaving Flanders; but no reſiſtance was made to the French arms. The Spaniſh miniſters exclaimed every where againſt the flagrant injuſtice of Lewis's pretenſions, and repreſented it to be the intereſt of every power in Europe, even more than of Spain itſelf, to prevent his conqueſt of the Low Countries. The Emperor and the German Princes diſcovered evident ſymptoms of diſcontent; but their motions were ſlow and backward. The States, tho' terrifyed at the proſpect of having their frontiers expoſed to ſo formidable a foe, ſaw no reſſource nor means of ſafety. England indeed ſeemed diſpoſed to make oppoſition to the French; but the variable and impolitic conduct of Charles kept that Republic from making him any open advances, by which they might loſe the friendſhip of France, without acquiring any new ally. And tho' Lewis, dreading a combination of all Europe, had offered terms of ac- Negotiations.

* 25th of January, 1662.

commodation,

Chap. II. 1668. commodation, the Dutch apprehended leſt theſe, either from the obſtinacy of the Spaniards or the ambition of the French, would never be carried into execution.

CHARLES reſolved with great prudence to take the firſt ſtep towards a confederacy. Sir William Temple, his reſident at Bruſſels, received orders to go ſecretly to the Hague, and to concert with the States the means of ſaving the Netherlands. This man, whom philoſophy had taught to deſpiſe the world, without rendering him unfit for it, was frank, open, ſincere, ſuperior to the little tricks of vulgar politicians: And meeting in de Wit with a man of the ſame generous and enlarged ſentiments, he immediately opened his maſter's intention, and preſſed a ſpeedy concluſion. A treaty was from the firſt negotiated between theſe two ſtateſmen with the ſame cordiality, as if it were a private affair, tranſacted between two intimate companions. Deeming the intereſts of their country the ſame, they gave full ſcope to that ſympathy of character, which diſpoſed them to an intire reliance on each others profeſſions and engagements. And tho' the jealouſy againſt the Houſe of Orange might inſpire de Wit with an averſion to a ſtrict union with England, he generouſly reſolved to ſacrifice all private conſiderations to the public ſervice.

TEMPLE preſſed an offenſive league between England and Holland, in order to oblige France to relinquiſh all her conqueſts: But de Wit told him, that this meaſure was too bold and precipitant to be agreed to by the States. He ſaid, that the French were the old and conſtant allies of the Republic; and till matters came to extremity, ſhe never would deem it prudent to abandon a friendſhip ſo well eſtabliſhed, and rely entirely on a treaty with England, which had lately waged ſo cruel a war againſt her: That ever ſince the reign of Elizabeth, there had been ſuch a fluctuation in the Engliſh councils, that it was not poſſible, for two years together, to take any ſure or certain meaſures with that kingdom: That tho' the preſent miniſtry, having entered into views ſo conformable to national intereſt, promiſed greater firmneſs and conſtancy, it might ſtill be unſafe, in a buſineſs of ſuch conſequence, to put entire confidence in them: That the French Monarch was young, haughty, and powerful; and if treated in ſo imperious a manner, would expoſe himſelf to the greateſt extremities rather than ſubmit: That it was ſufficient, if he could be conſtrained to adhere to the offers, which he himſelf had already made; and if the remaining provinces of the Low Countries could be thereby ſaved from the danger, with which they were at preſent threatened: And that the other powers, in Germany and the North, whoſe aſſiſtance they might expect, would be ſatisfied with putting a ſtop to the French conqueſts, without pretending to recover the places, which were already loſt.

THE

Chap. II. 1668.

THE Engliſh ambaſſador was contented to accept of the terms, propoſed by the penſionary. Lewis had offered to relinquiſh all the Queen's rights, on condition either of keeping the conqueſts, which he had made laſt campaign, or of receiving, in lieu of them, Franchecomté, together with Cambray, Aire, and St. Omers. De Wit and Temple founded their treaty upon this propoſal. They agreed to offer their mediation to the contending powers, and oblige France to adhere to this alternative, and Spain to accept of it. If Spain refuſed, they agreed, that France ſhould not proſecute her claim by arms, but leave it entirely to England and Holland to employ force for making the terms effectual. And the remainder of the Low Countries they thenceforth guaranteed to Spain. A defenſive treaty was likewiſe concluded between Holland and England.

THE articles of this confederacy were ſoon adjuſted by ſuch candid and able negotiators: But the greateſt difficulty ſtill remained. By the conſtitution of the Republic, all the towns in all the provinces muſt give their conſent to every treaty; and beſides that this formality could not be diſpatched in leſs than two months, it was juſtly to be dreaded, that the influence of France would obſtruct the paſſage of the treaty in ſome of the ſmaller cities. D'Eſtrades, the French ambaſſador, a man of great ability, hearing of the league, which was on the carpet, treated it very lightly; "Six weeks hence," ſaid he, "we ſhall ſpeak to it." To obviate this difficulty, de Wit had the courage, for the public good, to break thro' the laws in ſo fundamental an article; and by his authority, he prevailed with the States General at once to ſign and ratify the league: Tho' they acknowledged, that, if that meaſure ſhould diſpleaſe their conſtituents, they riſqued their heads by this irregularity. After ſealing, all parties embraced with great cordiality. Temple cried out, *At Breda, as friends: Here, as brothers.* And de Wit added, that now the matter was finiſhed, it looked like a miracle. 13th of January.

ROOM had been left in the treaty for the acceſſion of Sweden, which was ſoon after obtained; and thus was concluded in five days the triple league; an event received with equal ſurprize and approbation by the world. Notwithſtanding the unfortunate concluſion of the laſt war, England now appeared in her proper ſtation, and, by this wiſe conduct, had recovered all her influence and credit in Europe. Temple likewiſe received great applauſe; but to all the compliments made him on that occaſion, he modeſtly replied: That to remove things from their center or proper element, required force and labour; but that of themſelves they eaſily returned to it. Triple league.

THE French Monarch was extremely diſpleaſed with this meaſure. Not only bounds were at preſent ſet to his ambition: Such a barrier was alſo raiſed as ſeemed for ever impregnable. And tho' his own offer was made the foundation of the

Chap. II. 1668.

treaty, he had prescribed so short a time for the acceptance of that offer, that he still expected, from the delays and reluctance of Spain, to find some opportunity of eluding it. The court of Madrid showed equal displeasure. To be obliged to give up any part of the Spanish provinces, in lieu of claims, so apparently unjust, and these urged with such violence and haughtiness, inspired the highest disgust. Often did they threaten to abandon entirely the Low Countries rather than submit to so cruel a mortification; and they endeavoured by this menace, to terrify the mediating powers into more vigorous measures for their support. But Temple and de Wit were better acquainted with the views and interests of Spain. They knew, that she must still retain the Low Countries, as a bond of connexion with the other European powers, who alone, if her young Monarch should happen to die without issue, could ensure her independancy against the pretensions of France. They still urged, therefore, the terms of the triple league, and threatened Spain with war in case of refusal. The plenipotentiaries of all the powers met at Aix-la-Chapelle. Temple was minister for England; Van Beuninghen for Holland; D'Hona for Sweden.

Spain at last, pressed on all hands, accepted of the alternative offered; but in her very compliance, she gave strong symptoms of ill-humour and discontent. It had been apparent, that the Hollanders, entirely neglecting the honour of the Spanish monarchy, had been anxious only for their own security; and, provided they could remove Lewis to a distance from their frontiers, were more indifferent what progress he made in all other places. Sensible of these views, the Queen-regent of Spain resolved still to keep them in an anxiety, which might for the future be the foundation of an union more intimate than they were willing at present to enter into. Franchecomté, by a vigorous and well concerted plan of the French King, had been conquered, in fifteen days, during a rigorous season, and in the midst of winter. She chose therefore to recover this province, and to abandon all the towns conquered in Flanders during the last campaign. By this means, Lewis extended his garrisons into the heart of the Low Countries; and a very feeble barrier remained to the Spanish provinces.

Treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle.

But notwithstanding the advantages of his situation, the French Monarch could entertain small hopes of ever extending his conquests on that quarter, which lay the most exposed to his ambition, and where his acquisitions were of most importance. The triple league guaranteed the remaining provinces to Spain; and the Emperor and other powers of Germany, whose interests seemed to be strongly concerned, were invited to enter into the same confederacy. Spain herself, having about this time, under the mediation of Charles, made peace on equal terms with Portugal, might be expected to exert more vigor in opposition to her haughty and

and triumphant rival. The mighty ſatisfaction, expreſſed in England, on account of the councils now embraced by the court, promiſed the hearty concurrence of Parliament in every meaſure, which could be propoſed for oppoſition to the grandeur of France. And thus all Europe ſeemed to repoſe herſelf with ſecurity under the wings of that powerful confederacy, which had ſo happily been formed for her protection. It is now time to give ſome account of the ſtate of affairs in Scotland and Ireland. Chap. II. 1668.

THE Scots nation, tho' they had never been ſubject to the arbitrary power of their prince, had but very imperfect notions of law and liberty; and ſcarce in any age had they ever enjoyed an adminiſtration, which had confined itſelf within the proper boundaries. By their final union alone with England, their once hated antagoniſt, they have happily attained the experience of a government perfectly regular, and exempt from all violence and injuſtice. Charles, from his averſion to buſineſs, had entruſted the affairs of that country to his miniſters, particularly Middleton; and theſe could not forbear making very extraordinary ſtretches of authority. Affairs of Scotland.

THERE had been intercepted a letter, wrote by Lorne to lord Duffus, in which, a little too plainly, but very truly, he complained, that his enemies had endeavoured by falſhood to prepoſſeſs the King againſt him. But he ſaid, that he had now diſcovered them, and had defeated them, and had gained the perſon, meaning the earl of Clarendon, upon whom the chief of them depended. This letter was produced before the Parliament; and Lorne was tried upon an old, tyrannical, abſurd law of *Leaſing-making*; by which it was rendered criminal to belye the ſubject to the King, or create in him an ill opinion of them. He was condemned to die: But Charles was much diſpleaſed with the ſentence, and granted him a pardon †.

IT was carried in Parliament, that twelve perſons, without crime, witneſs, trial, or accuſer, ſhould be declared incapable of all truſt or office; and to render this injuſtice more egregious, it was agreed, that theſe perſons ſhould be named by ballot: A method of voting, which ſeveral Republics had adopted at elections, in order to prevent faction and intrigue; but which could ſerve only as a cover to malice and iniquity, in the inflicting of puniſhments. Lauderdale, Crawford, and Sir Robert Murray, among others, were incapacitated: But the King, who diſapproved of this injuſtice, refuſed his aſſent ‡.

AN act was paſſed againſt all perſons, who ſhould move the King for reſtoring the children of thoſe attainted by Parliament; an unheard-of reſtraint on applications for grace and mercy. No penalty was affixed; but the act was but the more violent and tyrannical on that account. The court-lawyers had eſtabliſhed it as a maxim, that the aſſigning a puniſhment was a limitation of the crown: Whereas a law, forbidding any thing, tho' without a penalty, made the offenders

† Burnet, p. 149. ‡ Id. p. 152.

Chap. II. 1668.

criminal. And in that caſe, they determined that the puniſhment was arbitrary; only that it did not extend to life. Middleton as commiſſioner paſſed this act; tho' he had no inſtructions for that purpoſe.

An act of indemnity paſſed; but at the ſame time it was voted, that all thoſe who had offended during the late diſorders, ſhould be ſubjected to fines; and a committee of Parliament was appointed for impoſing them. Theſe proceeded without any regard to ſome equitable rules, which the King had preſcribed to them †. The moſt obnoxious compounded ſecretly. No conſideration was had, either of men's eſtates, or of the degrees of their guilt: No proofs were produced: Enquiries were not ſo much as made: But as faſt as information was given in againſt any man, he was marked down for a particular fine: And all was tranſacted in a ſecret committee. When the liſt was read in Parliament, exceptions were made to many: Some had been under age during the civil wars; ſome had been abroad. But it was ſtill replied, that a proper time would come, when every man ſhould be heard in his own defence. The only intention, it was ſaid, of ſetting the fine was, that ſuch perſons ſhould have no benefit by the act of indemnity, unleſs they paid the ſum demanded: Evey one that choſe to ſtand upon his innocence, and renounce the benefit of the indemnity, might do it at his peril. It was well known, that no one would dare ſo far to ſet at defiance ſo arbitrary an adminiſtration. The King wrote to the council, ordering them to ſuperſede the levying thoſe fines: But Middleton found means, during ſome time, to elude thoſe orders ‡. And at laſt, the King obliged his miniſters to compound for half the ſums, which had been impoſed. In all theſe tranſactions, and in moſt others, which paſſed during the preſent reign, we ſtill find the moderating hand of the King, interpoſed to protect the Scots from the oppreſſions, which their own countrymen, employed in the miniſtry, were deſirous of exerciſing over them.

But the chief circumſtance, whence were derived all the ſubſequent tyranny and diſorders in Scotland, was the rigorous execution of the laws for the eſtabliſhment of Epiſcopacy, to which a great part of the nation had entertained the moſt unſurmountable averſion. The right of patrons had for ſome years been aboliſhed; and the power of electing miniſters had been veſted in the kirk-ſeſſion, and lay-elders. It was now enacted, that all incumbents, who had been admitted upon this title, ſhould receive a preſentation from the patron, and ſhould be inſtituted anew by the biſhop, under the penalty of deprivation. The more rigid Preſbyterians concerted meaſures among themſelves, and refuſed obedience: They imagined, that their number would protect them. Three hundred and fifty pariſhes, above a third of the kingdom, were at once declared vacant. The weſtern counties chiefly were obſtinate in this particular. New miniſters were ſought for all over

† Burnet, p. 147. ‡ Id. p. 201.

the

the kingdom; and no one was ſo ignorant or vicious as to be rejected. The people, who loved extremely and reſpected their former teachers; men remarkable for the ſeverity of their manners and their fervour in preaching; were inflamed againſt theſe intruders, who had obtained their livings under ſuch invidious circumſtances, and who took no care, by the regularity of their manners, to ſoften the prejudices contracted againſt them. Even moſt of thoſe, who retained their livings by compliance, fell under the imputation of hypocriſy, either by their ſhewing a diſguſt to the new model of eccleſiaſtical government, which they had acknowleged; or on the other hand, by declaring that their former adherence to Preſbytery and the Covenant had been the reſult of violence and neceſſity. And as Middleton and the new miniſtry indulged themſelves in great riot and diſorder, to which the nation had been little accuſtomed, an opinion univerſally prevailed, that any form of religion, offered by ſuch hands, muſt be profane and impious. Chap. II. 1668.

THE people, notwithſtanding their diſcontents, were reſolved to give no handle againſt them, by the leaſt ſymptom of mutiny or ſedition: But this ſubmiſſive diſpoſition, inſtead of procuring a mitigation of the rigours, was made uſe of as an argument for continuing the ſame meaſures, which by their vigour had enforced ſo prompt an obedience. The King, however, was diſguſted with the violence of Middleton *; and he made Rothes commiſſioner in his place. This nobleman was already preſident of the council; and ſoon after was made lord keeper and treaſurer. Lauderdale ſtill continued ſecretary of ſtate, and commonly reſided at London.

AFFAIRS remained in a peaceable ſituation, till the ſevere law was made in England againſt conventicles †. The Scots Parliament imitated that violence, by paſſing a like act. A kind of high-commiſſion court was appointed, for executing this rigorous law, and for the direction of eccleſiaſtical affairs. But even this court, illegal as it might be deemed, was much preferable to the method next adopted. Military force was let looſe by the council. Wherever the people had generally forſaken their churches, the guards were quartered thro' the country. Sir James Turner commanded them, a man whoſe natural ferocity of temper was often inflamed by the uſe of ſtrong liquors. He went about the country, and received from the miniſters liſts of thoſe who abſented themſelves from church, or were ſuppoſed to frequent conventicles. Without any proof or legal conviction, he demanded a fine from them, and quartered ſoldiers on the ſuppoſed delinquents till he received payment. As an inſurrection was dreaded during the Dutch war, new forces were levyed, and entruſted to the command of Dalziel and Drummond; two officers, who had ſerved the King during the civil wars, and had af-

* Burnet, p. 202. † 1664.

Chap. II. 1668.

terwards retired to Muſcovy, where they had encreaſed the native cruelty of their diſpoſition. A full career was given to their tyranny by the Scots miniſtry. Repreſentations were made to the King againſt theſe enormities. He ſeemed touched with the ſtate of the country; and beſides giving orders, that the eccleſiaſtical commiſſion ſhould be diſcontinued, he ſignifyed his opinion, that another way of proceeding was neceſſary to his ſervice *.

THIS lenity of the King's came too late to remedy the diſorders. The people, inflamed with bigotry, and irritated by ill uſage, roſe in arms. They were inſtigated by Guthry, Semple, and other preachers. They ſurprized Turner in Dumfries, and reſolved to have put him to death; but finding, that his orders, which fell into their hands, were more violent than his execution of them, they ſpared his life. At Laneric, after many prayers, they renewed the covenant, and ſet out their manifeſto; where they profeſſed all ſubmiſſion to the King: They deſired only the reſtoration of Preſbytery and their former miniſters. As many gentlemen of their party had been confined on ſuſpicion; Wallace and Learmont, two officers, who had ſerved, but in no high rank, were entruſted with the command. Their force never exceeded two thouſand men; and tho' the whole country bore them great favour, men's ſpirits were ſo ſubdued, that the rebels could expect no farther acceſſion of numbers. Dalziel took the field to oppoſe their progreſs. Their number was now diminiſhed to 800; and theſe, having advanced near Edinburgh, attempted to find their way back into the weſt by Pentland Hills. They were attacked by the King's forces †. Finding that they could not eſcape, they ſtopped their march. Their miniſters endeavoured to infuſe courage into them. After ſinging ſome pſalms, they turned on the enemy; and being aſſiſted by the advantage of the ground, they received the firſt charge very reſolutely. But that was all the action: Immediately, they loſt order, and fled for their lives. About forty were killed on the ſpot, and a hundred and thirty taken priſoners. The reſt, favoured by the night, and by the wearineſs, and even by the pity of the King's troops, made their eſcape.

THE oppreſſions which theſe people had ſuffered, the deluſions under which they laboured, and their inoffenſive behaviour during the inſurrection, made them the objects of compaſſion: Yet were the King's miniſters, particularly Sharpe, reſolute to take ſevere vengeance. Ten were hanged on one gibbet at Edinburgh: Thirty-five before their own doors in different places. Theſe criminals might all have ſaved their lives, if they would have renounced the covenant. The executions were going on, when the King put a ſtop to them. He ſaid, that blood enough had already been ſhed; and he wrote a letter, in which he ordered, that ſuch of the

* Burnet, p. 213.

† 28th of November, 1666.

priſoners,

priſoners, as ſhould ſimply promiſe to obey the laws for the future, ſhould be ſet at liberty, and that the incorrigible ſhould be ſent to the plantations *. This letter was brought by Burnet, archbiſhop of Glaſgow; but not being immediately delivered to the council by Sharpe, the preſident †, one Maccail had in the interval been put to the torture, under which he expired. He ſeemed to die in a triumph of joy. "Farewel ſun, moon, and ſtars; farewel world and time; farewel weak "and frail body: Welcome eternity, welcome angels and ſaints, welcome Saviour "of the world, and welcome God, the judge of all!" Such were his laſt words: And theſe animated ſpeeches he uttered with a voice and manner, which ſtruck all the byſtanders with aſtoniſhment. Chap. II. 1668.

THE ſettlement of Ireland after the reſtoration was a work of much greater difficulty than that of England or Scotland. Not only the power, during the former uſurpations, had there been veſted in the King's enemies: The whole property, in a manner, of the kingdom had alſo been changed; and it became neceſſary to redreſs, but with as little violence as poſſible, many grievous hardſhips and iniquities, which were there complained of. Affairs of Ireland.

THE Iriſh Catholics had in 1648 concluded a treaty with Ormond, the King's lieutenant; in which they had ſtipulated pardon for their paſt rebellion, and had engaged under certain conditions to aſſiſt the royal cauſe: And tho' the violence of the prieſts and the bigotry of the people had prevented, in a great meaſure, the execution of this treaty; yet were there many, who, having ſtrictly, at the hazard of their lives, adhered to it, ſeemed on that account well entitled to reap the fruits of their loyalty. Cromwel, having without diſtinction expelled all the native Iriſh from the three provinces of Munſter, Leinſter, and Ulſter, had confined them to Connaught and the county of Clare; and among thoſe who had thus been forfeited, were many whoſe innocence was altogether unqueſtionable. Several Proteſtants likewiſe, and Ormond among the reſt, had all along oppoſed the Iriſh rebellion; yet having afterwards embraced the King's cauſe againſt the Parliament, they were all of them forfeited by the Protector. And there were many officers, who had, from the commencement of the inſurrection, ſerved in Ireland, and who, becauſe they would not deſert the King, had been refuſed all their arrears by the Engliſh Commonwealth.

To all theſe unhappy ſufferers ſome juſtice ſeemed to be due: But the difficulty was to find the means of redreſſing ſuch great and extenſive iniquities. Almoſt all the valuable parts of Ireland had been meaſured out and divided, either to the adventurers, who had lent money to the Parliament for the ſuppreſſion of the Iriſh rebellion, or to the ſoldiers, who had received land in lieu of their arrears. Theſe

* Burnet, p. 237. † Wodrow's Hiſtory, vol. i. p. 255.

could

Chap. II. 1668.

could not be diſpoſſeſſed, becauſe they were the moſt powerful and only armed part of Ireland; becauſe it was requiſite to favour them, in order to ſupport the Engliſh and Proteſtant intereſt in that kingdom; and becauſe they had generally, with a ſeeming zeal and alacrity, concurred in the King's reſtoration. The King, therefore, iſſued a proclamation; in which he promiſed to maintain their ſettlement, and at the ſame time engaged to give redreſs to the innocent ſufferers. There was a large quantity of land as yet undivided in Ireland; and from this and ſome other funds, it was thought poſſible for the King to fulfill both theſe engagements.

A COURT OF CLAIMS was erected, conſiſting altogether of Engliſh commiſſioners, who had no connexion with any of the parties, into which Ireland was divided. Before theſe, were laid four thouſand claims of perſons deſiring reſtitution on account of their innocence; and the commiſſioners had found leiſure to examine only ſix hundred. It already appeared, that, if all theſe were to be reſtored, the funds, whence the adventurers and ſoldiers muſt get reprizals, would fall extremely ſhort of giving them any tolerable ſatisfaction. A great alarm and anxiety ſeized all ranks of men: The hopes and fears of every party were excited: Theſe eagerly graſped at recovering their paternal inheritance: Thoſe were reſolute to maintain their new acquiſitions.

THE duke of Ormond was created lord-lieutenant, being the only perſon, whoſe prudence and juſtice could compoſe ſuch jarring intereſts. A Parliament was aſſembled at Dublin; and as the Lower Houſe was almoſt entirely choſen by the ſoldiers and adventurers, who ſtill kept poſſeſſion, it was extremely favourable to that intereſt. The Houſe of Peers ſhowed greater impartiality.

AN inſurrection was projected, together with a ſurprizal of the caſtle of Dublin, by ſome of the diſbanded ſoldiers; but this deſign was happily defeated by the vigilance of Ormond. Some of the criminals were puniſhed. Blood, the moſt deſperate of them, eſcaped into England.

BUT affairs could not long remain in the confuſion and uncertainty, in which they were placed. All parties ſeemed willing to abate ſomewhat of their pretenſions, in order to attain ſome ſtability; and Ormond interpoſed his authority to that purpoſe. The ſoldiers and adventurers agreed to relinquiſh a third part of their poſſeſſions; and as they had purchaſed their lands at very low prices, they had reaſon to think themſelves extremely favoured by this compoſition. All the perſons, forfeited on account of their adherence to the King, were reſtored; and ſome of the innocent Iriſh. It was a hard ſituation, that a man was obliged to prove himſelf innocent, in order to recover poſſeſſion of the eſtate, which he and his anceſtor had ever enjoyed: But the hardſhip was augmented, by the difficult conditions annexed to this proof. If the perſon had ever lived in the quarters of the rebels,

he

he was not admitted to plead his innocence; and he was, for that reaſon alone, ſuppoſed to have been a rebel. The enormous guilt of the Iriſh nation made men overlook the more willingly any iniquity, which might fall on individuals; and it was conſidered, that tho' it be always the intereſt of all good government to prevent injuſtice, it is not always poſſible to remedy it, after it has had a long courſe, and has been attended with great ſucceſſes. Chap. II. 1668.

IRELAND began to attain a ſtate of ſome compoſure, when it was diſturbed by a very violent act, paſſed by the Engliſh Parliament, which prohibited the importation of Iriſh cattle into England †. Ormond remonſtrated ſtrongly againſt this law. He ſaid, that the preſent trade, carried on between England and Ireland, was extremely to the advantage of the former kingdom, which received only proviſions or rude materials, and ſent back in return every ſpecies of manufacture: That if the cattle of Ireland were prohibited, the inhabitants of that iſland had no other commodity by which they could pay England for their importations, and muſt have recourſe to other nations for a ſupply: That the induſtrious inhabitants of England, if deprived of Iriſh proviſions, which made living cheap, would be obliged to augment the price of labour, and thereby render their manufactures too dear to be exported to foreign markets: That the lazy inhabitants of Ireland, finding proviſions fall almoſt to nothing, would never be induced to labour, but would perpetuate to all generations their native ſloth and barbariſm: That by cutting off almoſt entirely the trade between the kingdoms, all the natural bands of union were diſſolved, and nothing remained to keep the Iriſh in their duty but force and violence: And that by reducing that kingdom to extreme poverty, it would be even rendered incapable of maintaining that military power, by which, during its well grounded diſcontents, it muſt neceſſarily be retained in ſubjection.

THE King was ſo convinced of the juſtneſs of theſe reaſons, that he uſed all his intereſt to oppoſe the bill; and he openly declared, that he could not give his aſſent to it with a ſafe conſcience. But the Commons were reſolute in their purpoſe. Some of the rents of England had fallen of late years, which had been aſcribed entirely to the importation of Iriſh cattle: Several intrigues had contributed to enflame that prejudice, particularly thoſe of Buckingham and Aſhley, who were deſirous of giving Ormond diſturbance in his government: And the ſpirit of tyranny, of which nations are as ſuſceptible as individuals, had animated the Engliſh extremely to exert their ſuperiority over their dependant ſtate. No affair could be conducted with greater violence than this was by the Commons. They even went ſo far in the preamble of the bill as to declare the importation of Iriſh cattle to be a *nuiſance*. By this expreſſion, they gave ſcope to their paſſion, and at the ſame time barred the King's prerogative, by which

† In 1666.

Chap. II. 1668.

he might think himſelf entitled to diſpenſe with a law, ſo full of injuſtice and bad policy. The Lords expunged the word; but as the King was ſenſible, that no ſupply would be given by the Commons, unleſs they were gratified in all their prejudices, he was obliged both to employ his intereſt with the peers for making the bill paſs, and to give the royal aſſent to it. He could not, however, forbear expreſſing his diſpleaſure at the jealouſy entertained againſt him, and at the intention, which the Commons diſcovered of retrenching his prerogative.

THIS law brought great diſtreſs for ſome time upon Ireland; but it has occaſioned their applying with greater induſtry to manufactures, and has proved in the iſſue beneficial to that kingdom.

CHAP. III.

A Parliament.——The Cabal.——Their characters.——Their councils.——Alliance with France.——A Parliament.——Coventry act.——Blood's crimes.——Duke declares himſelf Catholic.——Exchequer ſhut.——Declaration of indulgence.——Attack of the Smyrna fleet.——War declared with Holland.——Weakneſs of the States.——Battle of Solebay.——Sandwich killed.——Progreſs of the French.——Conſternation of the Dutch.——Prince of Orange Stadtholder.——Maſſacre of the de Wits.——Good conduct of the Prince.——A Parliament.——Declaration of indulgence recalled.——Sea-fight.——Another ſea-fight.——Another ſea fight.——Congreſs of Cologne.——A Parliament.——Peace with Holland.

SINCE the reſtoration, England was in a condition, which had never been experienced in any former period of her government, and which ſeemed the only one, that could fully enſure her happineſs and her liberty: The King was in continual want of ſupply from the Parliament; and he ſeemed willing to accommodate himſelf to that dependent ſituation. Inſtead of reviving thoſe claims of prerogative, ſo ſtrenuouſly inſiſted on by his father and grandfather, he had ſtrictly confined himſelf within the limits of law, and had courted, by every art of popularity, the affections of his ſubjects. Even the ſeverities, however blameable, which he

had been forced to exerciſe againſt Nonconformiſts, are to be conſidered as expedients, by which he ſtrove to ingratiate himſelf with that party, which predominated in Parliament. But notwithſtanding theſe promiſing appearances, there were many circumſtances, which kept the government from reſting ſteddily on that bottom, on which it was placed. The Crown having loſt almoſt all its antient demeſnes, relied entirely on voluntary grants of the people; and the Commons, not fully accuſtomed to this new ſituation, were not diſpoſed to ſupply with ſufficient liberality the neceſſities of the Crown. They imitated too ſtrictly the example of their predeceſſors in a rigid frugality of public money; and neither ſufficiently conſidered the indigent ſituation of the Prince, nor the general ſtate of Europe, where every nation, by its encreaſe both of magnificence and force, had made great additions to all public expences. Some conſiderable ſums, indeed, were beſtowed on Charles, and the patriots of that age, tenacious of antient maxims, loudly upbraided the Commons with prodigality: But if we may judge by the example of a later period, when the government has become more regular, and the harmony of its parts has been more happily adjuſted, the Parliaments of this reign ſeem rather to have merited a contrary reproach.

The natural conſequence of the poverty of the Crown was, beſides feeble irregular tranſactions in foreign affairs, a continual uncertainty in its domeſtic adminiſtration. No-one could anſwer with any tolerable aſſurance for the meaſures of the Houſe of Commons. Few of the members were attached to the Court by any other band than that of inclination. Royaliſts indeed in their principles, but unexperienced in buſineſs, they lay expoſed to every rumour or inſinuation; and were driven by momentary guſts or currents, no leſs than the populace themſelves. Even the attempts made to gain an aſcendant over them, by offices, and, as 'tis believed, by bribes and penſions, were apt to operate in a manner contrary to what was intended by the miniſters. The novelty of the practice conveyed a general, and indeed a juſt, alarm, while, at the ſame time, the poverty of the Crown rendered this influence very limited and precarious.

The character of Charles was ill fitted to remedy thoſe defects in the conſtitution. He acted in the adminiſtration of public affairs, as if government were a paſtime, rather than a ſerious occupation; and by the uncertainty of his conduct, he loſt that authority, which could alone beſtow conſtancy on the fluctuating reſolutions of the Parliament. His expences too, which always exceeded the proper bounds, were directed more by inclination than by policy; and while they rendered him continually dependant on the Parliament, they were not calculated ſo as fully to ſatisfy either the intereſted or diſintereſted part of that aſſembly.

Chap. III. 1668. 8th of February. A Parliament.

THE Parliament met after a long adjournment; and the King promiſed himſelf every thing from the attachment of the Commons. All his late meaſures had been calculated to acquire the goodwill of his people; and above all, the triple league, it was hoped, would be able to efface all the impreſſions left by the unhappy concluſion of the Dutch war. But a new attempt made by the court, and a very laudable one too, loſt him, for a time, the effect of all theſe endeavours. Buckingham, who was in great favour with the King, and carried on many intrigues among the Commons, had alſo endeavoured to ſupport connexions with the Nonconformiſts; and he now formed a ſcheme, together with the lord keeper, Sir Orlando Bridgeman, and Sir Mathew Hale, chief juſtice, two worthy patriots, to put an end to thoſe ſeverities, under which theſe religioniſts had ſo long laboured. It was propoſed to reconcile the Preſbyterians by a comprehenſion, and to grant a toleration to the Independants and other ſectaries. Favour ſeems not, by this ſcheme, as by others embraced during the preſent reign, to have been intended the Catholics: Yet were the zealous Commons ſo diſguſted, that they could not be prevailed on even to give the King thanks for the triple league, however laudable that meaſure was then, and has ever ſince been eſteemed. They immediately voted an addreſs for a proclamation againſt conventicles. Their requeſt was complied with; but as the King ſtill dropped ſome hints of his deſire to reconcile his proteſtant ſubjects, the Commons paſſed a very unuſual vote, that no man ſhould bring into the Houſe any bill of that nature. The King in vain reiterated his ſollicitations for ſupply, repreſented the neceſſity of equipping a fleet, and even offered, that the money which they ſhould grant, ſhould be collected and iſſued for that purpoſe by commiſſioners appointed by the Houſe. Inſtead of compliance, the Commons voted an enquiry into all the miſcarriages during the late war; the ſlackening ſail after the Duke's victory from falſe orders delivered by Brounker, the miſcarriage at Berghen, the diviſion of the fleet under Prince Rupert and Albemarle, the diſgrace at Chatham. Brounker was expelled the Houſe, and ordered to be impeached. Commiſſioner Pet, who had neglected orders for the ſecurity of Chatham, met with the ſame fate. Theſe impeachments were never proſecuted. The Houſe, at laſt, having been indulged in all their prejudices, were prevailed with to vote the King three hundred and ten thouſand pounds, by an impoſition on wine and other liquors; after which they were adjourned.

11th of May.

PUBLIC buſineſs, beſides being retarded by the diſguſt of the Commons againſt the tolerating maxims of the court, received obſtructions this ſeſſion from a quarrel between the two Houſes. Skinner, a rich merchant in London, having met with ſome injuries from the Eaſt India Company, laid the matter by petition before the Houſe of Lords, by whom he was relieved in coſts and damages to the amount of five thouſand pounds.

pounds. The Commons voted, that the Lords, in taking cognizance of this affair, originally, without any appeal from inferior courts, had acted in a manner not agreeable to the laws of the land, and tending to deprive the subject of the right, ease, and benefit, due to him by these laws; and that Skinner, in prosecuting the suit, had infringed the privileges of the Commons: For which offence, they ordered him to be taken into the custody of the serjeant at arms. Some conferences ensued between the Houses; where the Lords were tenacious of their right of judicature, and maintained, that the method, in which they had exercised it, was quite regular. The Commons rose into a great ferment; and went so far as to vote, that "whoever should be aiding or assisting in putting in execution the "order or sentence of the House of Lords, in the case of Skinner against the East "India Company, shall be deemed a betrayer of the rights and liberties of the "Commons of England, and an infringer of the privileges of the House of Com-"mons." They rightly judged, that it would not be easy, after this vote, to find any one, who would venture on their indignation. The proceedings indeed of the Lords seem in this case to have been unusual and without precedent. Chap. III. 1668.

THE King's necessities obliged him again to assemble the Parliament, who showed some disposition to relieve him. The price, however, which he must pay for this indulgence, was his yielding to laws against conventicles. His complaisance in this particular contributed more to gain the Commons, than all the pompous pretences of supporting the triple alliance, that popular measure, by which he expected to make such advantage. The quarrel between the two Houses was revived; and as the Commons had voted only four hundred thousand pounds, with which the King was not satisfied, he thought proper, before they had carried their vote into a law, to prorogue them. The only business finished this short session was the receiving the report of the committee appointed for examining the public accounts. On the first inspection of this report, there appears a vast sum, no less than a million and a half, unaccounted for; and the natural inference is, that the King had very much abused the trust reposed in him by Parliament. But a more accurate inspection of particulars serves, in a great measure, to remove this imputation. The King indeed went so far as to tell the Parliament from the throne, "That he had fully informed "himself of that matter, and did affirm, that no part of those monies, which they "had given him, had been diverted to other uses, but on the contrary, besides "all those supplies, a very great sum had been raised out of his standing revenue "and credit, and a very great debt contracted; and all for the war." Tho' artificial pretences have often been employed by Kings in their speeches to Parliament and by none more than Charles, it is somewhat difficult to suspect him of a direct lye 1669. 19th of October. 11th of December.

Chap. III. 1669.

lye and falſhood. He muſt have had ſome reaſons, and perhaps not unplauſible ones, for this affirmation, of which all his hearers, as they had the accounts lying before them, were at that time very competent judges *.

THE method which all Parliaments had hitherto followed, was to vote a particular ſum for the ſupply, without any diſtinction or appropriation for particular ſervices. So long as the demands of the Crown were only ſmall and caſual, no great inconveniencies aroſe from this practice. But as all the meaſures of government were now changed, it muſt be confeſſed, that, if the King made a juſt application of public money, this inaccurate method of proceeding, by expoſing him to ſuſpicions, was very prejudicial to him. If he was inclined to act otherwiſe, it was equally hurtful to the people. For theſe reaſons, a contrary practice, during all the late reigns, has conſtantly been followed by the Commons.

1670. 14th of February.

WHEN the Parliament met after the prorogation, they entered anew upon the buſineſs of the ſupply, and granted the King an additional duty, during eight years, of twelve pounds on each tun of Spaniſh wine, eight on each tun of French. A law was alſo paſſed empowering him to ſell the fee farm rents; the laſt remains of the demeſnes by which the antient Kings of England had been ſupported. By this expedient he obtained ſome ſupply for his preſent neceſſities, but left the Crown, if poſſible, ſtill more dependant than before. How much money might be raiſed by theſe ſales is uncertain; but it could not be near one million eight hundred thouſand pounds, the ſum aſſigned by ſome writers †.

THE act againſt conventicles paſſed, and received the royal aſſent. It bears the appearance of mitigating the former perſecuting laws; but if we may judge by the ſpirit, which had broke out almoſt every ſeſſion during this Parliament, it was not

* The abſtract of the report of the Brook-houſe committee (ſo that committee was called) was firſt publiſhed by Mr. Ralph, vol. i. p. 177, from lord Hallifax's Collections, to which I refer. If we peruſe their apology, which we find in the ſubſequent page of the ſame author, we ſhall find, that they acted with ſome malignity towards the King. They would take notice of no ſervices performed before the 1ſt of September, 1664. But all the King's preparations preceded that date, and, as chancellor Clarendon told the Parliament, amounted to eight hundred thouſand pounds; and the computation is very probable. This ſum, therefore, muſt be added. The committee likewiſe charged ſeven hundred thouſand pounds to the King on account of the winter and ſummer guards, ſaved during two years and ten months that the war laſted. But this ſeems iniquitous. For tho' that was an uſual burthen on the revenue, which was then ſaved; would not the diminution of the cuſtoms during the war be an equivalent to it? Beſides, near three hundred and forty thouſand pounds are charged for prize-money, which perhaps the King thought he ought not to account for. Theſe ſums exceed the million and a half.

† Mr. Carte, in his Vindication of the Anſwer to the Byſtander, p. 99, ſays, that the ſale of the fee farm rents would not yield above one hundred thouſand pounds; and his reaſons appear well founded.

intended

intended as any favour to the Nonconformiſts. 'Twas probably found by experience, that laws over rigid and ſevere could not be executed. By this act the hearer in a conventicle, (that is, in a diſſenting aſſembly, where more than five were preſent beſides the family) was fined five ſhillings for the firſt offence, ten for the ſecond; the preacher twenty pounds for the firſt offence, forty for the ſecond. The perſon, in whoſe houſe the conventicle met, forfeited a like ſum with the preacher. One clauſe is very remarkable; that, if any diſpute ſhould ariſe with regard to the interpretation of any part of the act, the judges ſhould always explain the doubt in the ſenſe leaſt favourable to conventicles, it being the intention of the Parliament entirely to ſuppreſs them. Such was the zeal of the Commons, that they violated the plaineſt and moſt eſtabliſhed maxims of civil policy, which require, that, in all criminal proſecutions, favour ſhould always be given to the priſoner. Chap. III. 1670.

The affair of Skinner ſtill remained a ground of quarrel between the two Houſes; but the King prevailed with the Peers to accept of the expedient propoſed by the Commons, that a general razure ſhould be made of all the tranſactions with regard to that diſputed queſtion.

Some attempts were made by the King to effectuate a union between England and Scotland: But they were too feeble to remove all the difficulties, which obſtructed that uſeful and important undertaking. Commiſſioners were appointed to meet, in order to regulate the conditions: But the deſign, chiefly by the intrigues of Lauderdale, ſoon after came to nothing.

The King, about this time, began frequently to attend the debates of the Houſe of Peers. He ſaid, that they amuſed him, and that he found them no leſs entertaining than a play. But deeper deſigns were ſuſpected. As he ſeemed to intereſt himſelf extremely in the cauſe of lord Roos, who had obtained a divorce from his wife, on the accuſation of adultery, and applied to Parliament for leave to marry again; people imagined, that Charles propoſed to make a precedent of the caſe, and that ſome other pretence would be found for getting rid of the queen. Many propoſals to this purpoſe, it is ſaid, were made him by Buckingham: But the King, however little ſcrupulous in ſome reſpects, was incapable of any action, harſh or barbarous; and he always rejected with horror all ſchemes of this nature. A ſuſpicion however of ſuch intentions, it was obſerved, had, at this time, begot a coldneſs between the two royal brothers.

We now come to a period, when the King's councils, which had hitherto, in the main, been good, tho' negligent and fluctuating, became, during ſome time, remarkably bad, or even criminal; and breeding incurable jealouſies in all men, were followed by ſuch conſequences as had almoſt terminated in the ruin both of

prince

Chap. III. 1670.

prince and people. Happily the ſame negligence ſtill attended him, and, as it had leſſened the influence of the good, it alſo diminiſhed the effect of the bad meaſures, which he embraced.

IT was remarked, that the committee of council, eſtabliſhed for foreign affairs, was entirely changed; and that Prince Rupert, the duke of Ormond, ſecretary Trevor, and lord keeper Bridgeman, men in whoſe honour the nation had great confidence, were never called to any deliberations. The whole ſecret was entruſted to five perſons, Clifford, Aſhley, Buckingham, Arlington, Lauderdale. Theſe men were known by the appellation of the Cabal, a word which the initial letters of their names happened to compoſe. Never was there a more dangerous miniſtry in England, nor one more noted for pernicious councils.

The Cabal.

Their characters.

LORD ASHLEY, ſoon after known by the name of earl of Shaftſbury, was one of the moſt remarkable characters of the age, and the chief ſpring of all the ſucceeding movements. During his early youth, he had engaged in the late King's party; but being diſguſted with ſome meaſures of Prince Maurice, he ſoon deſerted to the Parliament. He inſinuated himſelf into the confidence of Cromwel; and as he had great influence on the Preſbyterians, he was ſerviceable in ſupporting the authority of that uſurper. He employed the ſame credit to promote the reſtoration; and on that account both deſerved and acquired great favour with the King. In all his changes, he ſtill maintained the character of never betraying thoſe friends whom he deſerted; and which ever party he joined, his great capacity and ſingular talents ſoon gained him their confidence, and enabled him to take the lead among them. No ſtation could ſatisfy his ambition, no fatigues were inſuperable to his induſtry. Well acquainted with the blind attachment of parties, he ſurmounted all ſenſe of ſhame: And relying on the ſubtilty of his contrivances, he was not ſtartled with enterprizes, the moſt hazardous and moſt criminal. His talents, both of public ſpeaking and private inſinuation, ſhone out in an eminent degree; and amidſt all his furious paſſions, he poſſeſſed a ſound judgment of buſineſs, and ſtill more of men. Tho' fitted by nature for beginning and puſhing the greateſt undertakings, he was never able to conduct any to a happy period; and his eminent abilities, by reaſon of his inſatiable deſires, were equally dangerous to himſelf, to the Prince, and to the people.

THE duke of Buckingham poſſeſſed all the advantages, which a graceful perſon, a high rank, a ſplendid fortune, and a lively wit could beſtow; but by his wild conduct, unreſtrained either by prudence or principle, he found means to render himſelf in the end odious and even inſignificant. The leaſt intereſt could make him abandon his honour; the ſmalleſt pleaſure could ſeduce him from his intereſt; the moſt frivolous caprice was ſufficient to counterballance his pleaſure. By the want of

ſecrecy

ſecrecy and conſtancy, he deſtroyed his character in public life; by the contempt of order and œconomy, he diſſipated his private fortune; by riot and debauchery, he ruined his health; and he remained at laſt as incapable of doing hurt, as he had ever been little deſirous of doing good, to mankind.

THE earl, ſoon after created duke, of Lauderdale, was not defective in natural, and ſtill leſs in acquired, talents; but neither was his addreſs graceful, nor his underſtanding juſt. His principles, or, more properly ſpeaking, his prejudices, were obſtinate, but unable to reſtrain his ambition: His ambition was ſtill leſs dangerous than the tyranny and violence of his temper. An implacable enemy, but a lukewarm friend; inſolent to his inferiors, but abject to his ſuperiors; tho' in his whole character and deportment, he was almoſt diametrically oppoſite to the King, he had the fortune, beyond any other miniſter, to maintain, during the greateſt part of his reign, an aſcendant over him.

THE talents of parliamentary eloquence and intrigue had raiſed Sir Thomas Clifford; and his daring impetuous ſpirit gave him weight in the King's councils. Of the whole cabal, Arlington was the leaſt dangerous either by his vices or his talents. His judgment was ſound, tho' his capacity was but moderate; and his intentions were good, tho' he wanted courage and integrity to perſevere in them. Together with Temple and Bridgeman, he had been a great promoter of the triple league; but he threw himſelf with equal alacrity into oppoſite meaſures, when he found them agreeable to his maſter. Clifford and he were ſecretly Catholics: Shafteſbury, tho' addicted to aſtrology, was reckoned a Deiſt: Buckingham had too little reflection to embrace any ſteady principles: Lauderdale had long been a bigotted and furious Preſbyterian; and the opinions of that ſect ſtill kept poſſeſſion of his mind, however little they appeared in his conduct.

Their councils.

THE dark councils of the Cabal, tho' from the firſt they gave anxiety to all men of reflection, were not thoroughly known but by the event. Such ſeem to have been the views, which they ſuggeſted to the King and the Duke, and which theſe Princes too greedily embraced. They ſaid, that the Parliament, tho' the ſpirit of party, for the preſent, attached them to the Crown, were ſtill more attached to thoſe powers and privileges, which their predeceſſors had uſurped from the Sovereign: That after the firſt flow of kindneſs, they had diſcovered ſymptoms of diſcontent; and would be ſure to turn againſt the King all the authority which they yet retained, and ſtill more thoſe pretenſions which it was eaſy for them in a moment to revive: That they not only kept the King in dependance by means of his precarious revenue, but had never diſcovered a ſuitable generoſity, even in thoſe temporary ſupplies, which they granted him: That it was time for the

Chap. III. 1670.

Prince to rouze himſelf from his lethargy, and to recover that authority, which his predeceſſors, during ſo many ages, had peaceably enjoyed: That the great error or misfortune of his father was the not having formed any cloſe connexion with foreign Princes, who, on the breaking out of the rebellion, might have found their intereſt in ſupporting him: That the preſent alliances, being entered into with ſo many weaker potentates, who themſelves ſtood in need of the King's protection, could never ſerve to maintain, much leſs augment, the royal authority: That the French Monarch alone, ſo generous a Prince, and by blood ſo nearly allied to the King, would be found both able and willing, if gratified in his ambition, to defend the common cauſe of Kings againſt uſurping ſubjects: That a war, undertaken againſt Holland by the united force of two ſuch mighty potentates, would prove an eaſy enterprize, and would ſerve all the purpoſes which were aimed at: That under pretence of that war, it would not be difficult to levy a military force, without which, during the prevalence of republican principles among his ſubjects, the King would vainly expect to defend his prerogative: That his naval power might be maintained, partly by the ſupplies, which, on other pretences, would previouſly be obtained from Parliament; partly by ſubſidies from France; partly by captures, which might eaſily be made on that opulent republic: That in ſuch a ſituation, attempts to recover the loſt authority of the Crown would be attended with ſucceſs; nor would any malecontents dare to reſiſt a Prince, fortified by ſo powerful an alliance; or if they did, they would only draw more certain ruin on themſelves and on their cauſe: And that by ſubduing the States, a great ſtep would be taken towards advancing a reformation of the government; ſince it was apparent, that that republic, by its fame and grandeur, fortified, in his factious ſubjects, their attachment to what they vainly called their civil and religious liberties.

THESE ſuggeſtions happened fatally to concur with all the inclinations and prejudices of the King; his deſire of more extenſive authority, his propenſity to the Catholic religion, his avidity for money. He ſeems likewiſe, from the very beginning of his reign, to have entertained great jealouſy of his own ſubjects, and, on that account, a deſire of fortifying himſelf by an intimate alliance with France. So early as 1664, he had offered the French Monarch to allow him without oppoſition to conquer Flanders, provided that Prince would engage to furniſh him with ten thouſand infantry, and a ſuitable number of cavalry, in caſe of any rebellion in England *. As no dangerous ſymptoms at that time diſcovered themſelves, we are left to conjecture, from this incident, what opinion Charles had conceived of the factious diſpoſition of his people.

* D'Eſtrades, 21ſt of July, 1667.

EVEN

Chap. III. 1670.

EVEN during the time, when the triple alliance was moſt zealouſly cultivated, the King never ſeems to have been entirely cordial in thoſe ſalutary meaſures, but ſtill to have caſt a longing eye towards the French alliance. Clifford, who had much of his confidence, ſaid imprudently, "Notwithſtanding all this joy, we "muſt have a ſecond war with Holland." The acceſſion of the Emperor to that alliance had been refuſed by England on very frivolous pretences. And many unfriendly cavils were raiſed againſt the States with regard to Surinam and the conduct of the Eaſt India Company. But about April 1669, the ſtrongeſt ſymptoms appeared of thoſe fatal meaſures, which were afterwards more openly purſued.

DE WIT, at that time, came to Temple; and told him, that he payed him a viſit as a friend, not as a miniſter. The occaſion was to acquaint him with a converſation which he had lately had with Puffendorf, the Swediſh agent, who had paſſed by the Hague in the way from Paris to his own country. The French miniſters, Puffendorf ſaid, had taken much pains to perſwade him, that the Swedes would find their account very ill in thoſe meaſures, which they had lately embraced: That Spain would fail them in all her promiſes of ſubſidies; nor would Holland alone be able to ſupport them: That England would certainly fail them, and had already adopted councils directly oppoſite to thoſe which by the triple league ſhe had bound herſelf to purſue: And that the reſolution was not the leſs fixed and certain, that the ſecret was as yet communicated to very few either in the French or Engliſh court. When Puffendorf ſeemed incredulous, Turenne ſhowed him a letter from Colbert de Croiſſy, the French miniſter at London; where, after mentioning the ſucceſs of his negotiations, and the favourable diſpoſition of his chief miniſters there, he added; "And I have at laſt made them "ſenſible of the whole extent of his Majeſty's bounty *." From this incident, it appears, that the infamous practice of ſelling themſelves to foreign Princes, a practice, which, notwithſtanding the malignity of the vulgar, is certainly very rare among men in high office, had not been ſcrupled by Charles's miniſters.

BUT the King's reſolutions ſeem never to have been entirely fixed, till the viſit, which he received from his ſiſter, the dutcheſs of Orleans. Lewis, knowing the addreſs and inſinuation of that amiable Princeſs, and the great influence, which ſhe had obtained over her brother, had engaged her to employ all her good offices, in order to detach England from the triple league, which, he knew, had fixed ſuch an unſurmountable barrier to his ambition. That he might the better cover this negotiation, he pretended to viſit his frontiers, particularly the great works, which he had undertaken at Dunkirk; and he carried the Queen and the whole court

* Temple, vol. ii. p. 179.

Chap. III. 1670.

along with him. While he remained on the oppoſite ſhore, the dutcheſs of Orleans went over into England; and Charles met her at Dover, where they paſſed ten days together in great mirth and feſtivity. By her artifices and careſſes, ſhe prevailed on Charles to relinquiſh the moſt ſettled maxims of honour and policy, and to finiſh his engagements with Lewis for the deſtruction of Holland. No particular articles ſeem here to have been ſigned, or even agreed upon. Neither of the Princes had the leaſt claims on that republic; and they could therefore regulate their pretenſions only by the future ſucceſs of their arms. And as to the ſcheme, which Charles is with ſo good reaſon ſuppoſed to have entertained, of employing the French power, or at leaſt the terror of it, for enlarging his authority at home; it was of ſuch a nature as muſt depend upon incidents, and, for the preſent, it ſufficed, if he conjoined his intereſts intimately with France, and obtained general aſſurances of ſupport, in caſe of any oppoſition or inſurrection.

16th of May. Alliance with France.

But Lewis well knew Charles's character, and the uſual fluctuation of his councils. In order to fix him in the French intereſts, he reſolved to bind him by the tyes of pleaſure, the only ones which with him were irreſiſtible; and he made him a preſent of a French miſtreſs, by whoſe means, he hoped, for the future, to govern him. The dutcheſs of Orleans brought with her a young lady of the name of Queroüaille, whom the King carried to London, and ſoon after created dutcheſs of Portſmouth. He was extremely attached to her during the whole courſe of his life; and ſhe proved a great means of ſupporting his connexions with her native country. 'Tis impoſſible but his quick diſcernment muſt have perceived the ſcope of all theſe artifices; but he was too much a ſlave to pleaſure ever to defend himſelf againſt his preſent allurements.

The ſatisfaction, which Charles reaped from his new alliance, received a great check by the death of his ſiſter, and ſtill more by thoſe melancholy circumſtances which attended it. Her death was ſudden, after a few days illneſs; and ſhe was ſeized with the malady upon drinking a glaſs of ſuccory-water. Strong ſuſpicions of poiſon aroſe in the court of France, and ſpread all over Europe; and as her huſband had diſcovered many ſymptoms of jealouſy and diſcontent on account of her conduct, he was univerſally believed to be the author of that crime. Charles himſelf, during ſome time, was entirely convinced of his guilt; but upon receiving the atteſtation of phyſicians, who, on opening her body, found no foundation for the general rumour, he was or pretended to be ſatisfied. The duke of Orleans indeed did never, in any other circumſtance of his life, betray ſuch diſpoſitions as might lead him to ſo criminal an action; and a lady, it is ſaid, drank the remains of the ſame glaſs, without feeling any inconvenience. The ſudden death of Princes

is

is commonly accompanied with these dismal surmises; and therefore less weight is in this case to be laid on the suspicions of the public. Chap. III. 1670.

CHARLES, instead of breaking with France upon this incident, took advantage of it to send over Buckingham, under pretence of condoling with the duke of Orleans, but in reality to concert farther measures for the projected war. Never ambassador received greater caresses. The more destructive the present measures were to the interests of England, the more natural was it for Lewis to load with civilities and even with favours, those whom he could engage to promote them.

THE journey of Buckingham raised strong suspicions in Holland, which every circumstance tended still farther to confirm. Lewis made a sudden irruption into Lorraine; and tho' he missed seizing the duke himself, who had no surmize of the danger, and who very narrowly escaped, he was soon able without resistance to make himself master of the whole country. The French Monarch was so far unhappy, that, tho' the most tempting opportunities offered themselves, he had not commonly so much as the pretence of equity and justice to cover his ambitious measures. This acquisition of Lorraine ought to have excited the jealousy of the contracting powers in the triple league, as much as an invasion of Flanders itself; yet did Charles turn a deaf ear to all remonstrances, which were made him upon that subject.

BUT what tended chiefly to open the eyes of de Wit and the States with regard to the measures of England, was the sudden recall of Sir William Temple. That minister had so firmly established his character of honour and integrity, that he was believed incapable even of obeying his master's commands, in promoting measures, which he esteemed pernicious to his country; and so long as he remained in employment, de Wit thought himself assured of the fidelity of England. Charles was so sensible of this prepossession, that he ordered Temple to leave his family at the Hague, and pretended that that minister would immediately return, after having conferred with the King about some business, where his negotiation had met with obstructions. De Wit made the Dutch resident inform the English court, that he would consider the recall of Temple as an express declaration of a change of measures in England; and would even know what interpretation to put upon any delay of his return.

WHILE these measures were secretly in agitation, the Parliament met, according to adjournment. The King made a very short speech; and left the business to be enlarged upon by the keeper. That minister insisted much on the King's great want of supply; the mighty encrease of the naval power of France, now triple 24th of October. A Parliament.

Chap. III. 1670. triple to what it was before the laſt war with Holland; the decay of the Engliſh navy; the neceſſity of fitting out next year a fleet of fifty ſail; the obligations, which the King lay under by ſeveral treaties to exert himſelf for the common good of Chriſtendom. Among other treaties, he mentioned the triple alliance, and the defenſive league with the States. It is certain, that Bridgeman, tho' he was not admitted into the ſecrets of the Cabal, muſt have obſerved ſo many grounds of ſuſpicion, as ſhould have kept him from giving ſanction to that deceit, which was intended to be put upon the Parliament.

THE artifice ſucceeded. The Houſe of Commons, entirely ſatisfied with the King's meaſures, voted him conſiderable ſupplies. A land tax for a year was impoſed of a ſhilling a pound; two ſhillings a pound on two thirds of the ſalaries of offices; fifteen ſhillings on every hundred pound of bankers' money and ſtock; an additional exciſe upon beer for ſix years, and certain impoſitions upon law proceedings for nine years. The Parliament had never before been in a more liberal diſpoſition; and never ſurely was it leſs merited by the councils of the King and of his miniſters.

THE Commons paſſed another bill for laying a duty on tobacco, Scots ſalt, glaſſes, and ſome other commodities. Againſt this bill the merchants of London appeared by petition before the Houſe of Lords. The Lords entered into their reaſons, and began to make amendments on the bill ſent up by the Commons. This attempt was highly reſented by the lower Houſe, as an encroachment on the right, which they pretended to poſſeſs alone, of granting money to the crown. Many remonſtrances paſſed between the two houſes; and by their altercations the King was obliged to prorogue the Parliament; and he thereby loſt the money which was intended him. This is the laſt time, that the Peers have revived any pretenſions of that nature. Ever ſince, the privilege of the Commons, in all other places except the Houſe of Peers, has paſſed for undiſputed.

1671. 22d of April.

THERE was a private affair, which during this ſeſſion diſguſted the Houſe of Commons, and required ſome pains to accommodate it. The uſual method of thoſe who oppoſed the Court in the money bills, was, if they failed in the main vote as to the extent of the ſupply, to levy the money from ſuch funds as they expected would be unacceptable or would prove deficient. It was propoſed to lay an impoſition upon playhouſes: The courtiers objected, that the players were the King's ſervants, and a part of his pleaſure. Sir John Coventry, a gentleman of the country party, aſked, "whether the King's pleaſure lay among the male or the "female players?" This ſtroke of ſatyre was aimed at Charles, who, beſides his miſtreſſes of higher quality, entertained at that time two actreſſes, Davis and Nell Gwin.

Gwin. The King received not the raillery with that good humour, which might have been expected. It was ſaid, that this being the firſt time, when reſpect to Majeſty had been publicly violated, it was neceſſary, by ſome ſevere chaſtiſemen t, to make Coventry an example to all who might incline to tread in his footſteps. Sands, Obrian, and ſome others of the guards were ordered to way-lay him, and to ſet a mark upon him. He defended himſelf with great bravery, and after wounding ſeveral of the aſſailants, was with ſome difficulty diſarmed. They cut his noſe to the bone, in order, as they ſaid, to teach him what reſpect he owed to the King. The Commons were enflamed by this indignity offered to one of their members, on account of words ſpoke in the Houſe. They paſſed a law, where they made it capital to maim any perſon; and they enacted, that thoſe criminals, who had aſſaulted Coventry, ſhould be incapable of receiving a pardon from the Crown. Chap. III. 1671. Coventry-act.

THERE was another private affair, tranſacted about this time, by which the King was as much expoſed to the imputation of a capricious lenity, as he was here blamed for unneceſſary ſeverity. Blood, a diſbanded officer of the Protector, had been engaged in the conſpiracy for raiſing an inſurrection in Ireland; and for this crime he himſelf had been attainted, and ſome of his accomplices capitally puniſhed. The daring villain meditated a revenge upon Ormond, the lord lieutenant. Having by artifice drawn off the duke's footmen, he attacked his coach in the night, as he drove along St. James's ſtreet in London, and made himſelf maſter of his perſon. He might here have finiſhed the crime, had he not meditated refinements in his vengeance: He was reſolved to hang the duke at Tyburn; and for that purpoſe bound him, and mounted him on horſeback behind one of his companions. They were advanced a good way into the fields; when the duke, making efforts for his liberty, threw himſelf to the ground, and brought down with him the aſſaſſin, to whom he was tied. They were ſtruggling together in the mud; when Ormond's ſervants, whom the alarm had reached, came and ſaved him. Blood and his companions, firing their piſtols in a hurry at the duke, rode off, and ſaved themſelves, by means of the darkneſs. Blood's crimes.

BUCKINGHAM was at firſt, with ſome appearance of reaſon, ſuſpected to be the author of the attempt. His profligate character and his enmity againſt Ormond, expoſed him to this imputation. Oſſory ſoon after came to court, and ſeeing Buckingham ſtand by the King, his colour roſe, and he could not forbear expreſſing himſelf to this purpoſe. "My lord, I know well, that you are at the "bottom of this late attempt upon my father: But I give you warning, if by "any means he comes to a violent end, I ſhall not be at a loſs to know the author: "I ſhall conſider you as the aſſaſſin: I ſhall treat you as ſuch; and wherever I "meet

Chap. III. 1671.

" meet you, I ſhall piſtol you, tho' you ſtood behind the King's chair; and I tell " it you in his Majeſty's preſence, that you may be ſure I ſhall not fail of " performance *." If there was here any indecorum, it was eaſily excuſed in a generous youth, when his father's life was expoſed to danger.

A LITTLE after, Blood formed a deſign of carrying off the Crown and Regalia from the Tower; a deſign, to which he was prompted, as well by the ſurprizing boldneſs of the enterprize as by the views of profit. He was very near ſucceeding. He had bound and wounded Edwards, the keeper of the jewel office; and had got out of the Tower with his prey, but was overtaken and ſeized, with ſome of his aſſociates. One of them was known to have been concerned in the attempt upon Ormond; and Blood was immediately concluded to be the ringleader. When aſked, he frankly avowed the enterprize; but refuſed to tell his accomplices. " The fear of death," he ſaid, " would never engage him, either to deny a guilt, " or betray a friend." All theſe extraordinary circumſtances made him the general ſubject of converſation; and the King was moved by an idle curioſity to ſee and ſpeak with a perſon ſo noted for his courage and his crimes. Blood might now eſteem himſelf ſecure of pardon; and he wanted not addreſs to improve the opportunity. He told Charles, that he had been engaged, with others, in a deſign to kill him with a carabine above Batterſea, where his Majeſty often went to bathe: That the cauſe of this reſolution was the ſeverity exerciſed over the conſciences of the godly, in reſtraining the liberty of their religious aſſemblies: That when he had taken his ſtand among the reeds, full of theſe bloody reſolutions, he found his heart checked with an awe of Majeſty; and not only relented himſelf, but diverted his aſſociates from their purpoſe: That he had long ago brought himſelf to an entire indifference about life, which he now gave for loſt; yet could he not forbear warning the King of the danger which might attend his execution: That his aſſociates had bound themſelves together by the ſtricteſt oaths to revenge the death of any of their confederacy: And that no precaution nor power could ſecure any one from the effects of their deſperate reſolutions.

WHETHER theſe conſiderations excited fear or admiration in the King, they confirmed his reſolution of granting a pardon to Blood; but he thought it a requiſite point of decency firſt to obtain the duke of Ormond's conſent. Arlington came to Ormond in the King's name, and deſired that he would not proſecute Blood, for reaſons which he was commanded to give him. The duke gallantly replied, that his Majeſty's commands were the only reaſon, that could be given, and being ſufficient, he might therefore ſpare the reſt. Charles carried his kindneſs to Blood ſtill farther: He granted him an eſtate of five hundred pounds

* Carte's Ormond, vol. ii. p. 225.

a year

a year in Ireland; he encouraged his attendance about his perſon; he ſhowed him great countenance, and many applied to him for promoting their pretenſions at court. And while old Edwards, who had bravely ventured his life, and had been wounded, in defending the Crown and Regalia, was forgotten and neglected, this man, who deſerved only to be ſtared at and deteſted as a monſter, became a kind of favourite. Chap. III. 1671.

ERRORS of this nature in private life, have often as bad an influence as miſcarriages, in which the public is more immediately concerned. Another incident happened this year, which infuſed a very general diſpleaſure, and ſtill greater apprehenſions, into all men. The dutcheſs of York died, and in her laſt ſickneſs, ſhe made open profeſſion of the Romiſh religion, and finiſhed her life in that communion. This put an end to that thin diſguiſe, which the Duke had hitherto worne; and he now openly declared his attachment to the church of Rome. Unaccountable terrors of popery, ever ſince the acceſſion of the houſe of Stuart, had prevailed throughout the nation; but theſe had formerly been found ſo groundleſs, and had been employed to ſo many bad purpoſes, that ſurmizes of this nature were likely to meet with the leſs credit from all men of ſenſe; and nothing but the Duke's imprudent bigotry could have convinced the whole nation of his converſion. Popery, which had hitherto been only a hideous ſpecter, was now become a real ground of terror, being openly and zealouſly embraced by the heir apparent to the Crown, a prince of induſtry and enterprize; while the king himſelf was not entirely free from like ſuſpicions. Duke declares himſelf Catholic.

IT is probable, that the new alliance of France inſpired the Duke with courage to make open profeſſion of his religion, and rendered him more careleſs of the affections and eſteem of the Engliſh. This alliance became every day more viſible to all the world. Temple was declared to be no longer ambaſſador to the States; and Downing, whom the Dutch regarded as the inveterate enemy of their republic, was ſent over in his place. A ground of quarrel was ſought by means of a yatcht, diſpatched for lady Temple. The captain ſailed thro' the Dutch fleet, which lay on their own coaſts; and he had orders to make them ſtrike, to fire on them, and to perſevere till they ſhould return his fire. The Dutch admiral, Van Ghent, ſurprized at this bravado, came on board the yatcht, and expreſſed his willingneſs to pay reſpect to the Britiſh flag, according to antient practice: But that a fleet on their own coaſts ſhould ſtrike to a ſingle veſſel, and that not a ſhip of war, was, he ſaid, ſuch an innovation, that he durſt not, without expreſs orders, agree to it. The captain, thinking it dangerous to renew firing in the midſt of the Dutch fleet, continued his voyage; and for this neglect of orders was committed to the Tower.

Chap. III. 1672.

THIS incident however furniſhed Downing with a new article to encreaſe thoſe vain pretences, on which it was propoſed to ground the intended quarrel. The Engliſh court delayed ſeveral months before they complained; leſt, if they had demanded ſatisfaction more early, the Dutch might have had time to grant it. Even when Downing delivered his memorial, he was bound by his inſtructions not to accept of any ſatisfaction after a certain number of days; a very imperious manner of negotiating, and impracticable in Holland, where the forms of the republic render delays abſolutely unavoidable. An anſwer, however, tho' refuſed by Downing, was ſent over to London; with an ambaſſador extraordinary, who had orders to uſe every expedient, which might give ſatisfaction to the court of England. That Court replied, that the anſwer of the Hollanders was dark and obſcure; but they would not ſpecify the articles or expreſſions, which were liable to that objection. The Dutch ambaſſador deſired the Engliſh miniſtry to draw the anſwer in what terms they pleaſed; and he engaged to ſign it: The Engliſh miniſtry replied, that it was not their buſineſs to draw papers for the Dutch. The ambaſſador brought them the draught of an article, and aſked them whether it was ſatisfactory: The Engliſh anſwered, that, when he had ſigned and delivered it, they would tell him their mind concerning it. The Dutchman reſolved to ſign it at a venture; and on his demanding a new conference, an hour was appointed for that purpoſe. But when he attended, the Engliſh refuſed to enter upon buſineſs, and told him, that the ſeaſon for negotiating was now paſt †.

LONG and frequent prorogations were made of the Parliament; leſt the Houſes ſhould declare themſelves with vigor againſt councils, ſo oppoſite to the inclination as well as intereſts of the public. Could we ſuppoſe, that Charles, in his alliance againſt Holland, really meant the good of his people, that meaſure muſt paſs for an extraordinary, nay, a romantic, ſtrain of heroiſm, which could lead him, in ſpite of all difficulties, and even in ſpite of themſelves, to ſeek the happineſs of the nation. But every ſtep, which he took in this affair, became a proof to all men of penetration, that the preſent war was intended againſt the liberties of his own ſubjects, even more than againſt the Dutch themſelves. He now acted in every thing, as if he were already an abſolute Monarch, and was never more to lie under the controul of national aſſemblies.

THE long prorogation of Parliament, if it freed the King from their importunate advices and remonſtrances, was however attended with this inconvenience, that no money could be procured to carry on the military preparations againſt Holland. Under pretence of maintaining the triple league, which, at that very time, he had firmly reſolved to break, Charles had obtained a large ſupply from the Commons;

† England's Appeal, p. 22.

but

but this money was ſoon exhauſted, by debts and expences. France had ſtipu- Chap. III.
lated to pay two hundred and forty thouſand pounds the firſt year of the war, and 1672.
the third of that ſum every year during the courſe of it; but theſe ſupplies were very inconſiderable, compared to the immenſe charge of the Engliſh navy. It ſeemed as yet premature to venture on levying money, without conſent of Parliament; ſince the power of taxing themſelves was the privilege, of which the Engliſh were, with reaſon, particularly jealous. Some other reſource muſt be fallen on. The King had declared, that the ſtaff of treaſurer was ready for any one, that could find an expedient for ſupplying the preſent neceſſities. Shafteſbury dropped a hint to Clifford, which the latter immediately ſeized, and carried to the King, who granted him the promiſed reward, together with a peerage. This expedient was the ſhutting up the Exchequer, and retaining all the payments, which ſhould be made into it.

IT had been uſual for the bankers to carry their money to the Exchequer, and 2d of January. Exchequer ſhut.
to advance it upon the ſecurity of the funds, by which they were afterwards repayed, when the money was levied on the public. The bankers, by this traffic, got eight, ſometimes ten, per cent. for ſums, which either had been conſigned to them without intereſt, or which they had borrowed at ſix per cent: Profits, which they dearly paid for by this egregious breach of public faith. The meaſure was ſo ſuddenly taken, that none had warning of the danger. A general confuſion prevailed in the city, followed by the ruin of many. The bankers ſtopped payment; the merchants could anſwer no bills; diſtruſt took place every where, with a ſtagnation of commerce, by which the public was univerſally affected. And men, full of diſmal apprehenſions, aſked each other what muſt be the ſcope of thoſe myſterious councils, whence the Parliament and all men of honour were excluded, and which commenced by the forfeiture of public credit, and an open violation of the moſt ſolemn engagements, both foreign and domeſtic.

ANOTHER meaſure of the Court contains ſomething laudable, when conſidered Declaration of indulgence.
in itſelf; but if we reflect on the motive whence it proceeded, as well as the time when it was embraced, it will appear a ſtrong inſtance of the arbitrary and dangerous councils, purſued at preſent by the King and his miniſtry. Charles reſolved to make uſe of his ſupreme power in eccleſiaſtical matters; a power, he ſaid, which was not only inherent in him, but which had been recognized by ſeveral acts of Parliament. By virtue of this authority, he iſſued a proclamation, ſuſpending the 15th of March.
penal laws, enacted againſt all Nonconformiſts or Recuſants whatſoever, and granting to the proteſtant Diſſenters the public exerciſe of their religion, to the Catholics the exerciſe of it in private houſes. A fruitleſs experiment of this kind, oppoſed by the Parliament and retracted by the King, had already been made a few

Chap. III. 1672.

years after the reſtoration; but Charles expected that the Parliament, whenever it ſhould meet, would now be tamed to greater ſubmiſſion, and would no longer dare to controul his meaſures. Meanwhile, the Diſſenters, the moſt inveterate enemies to the Court, were mollified by theſe indulgent maxims: And the Catholics, under their ſhelter, enjoyed more liberty than the laws had hitherto allowed them.

At the ſame time, the act of navigation was ſuſpended by royal will and pleaſure: A meaſure, which, tho' a ſtretch of prerogative, ſeemed uſeful to commerce, while all the ſeamen were employed on board the royal navy. A like ſuſpenſion had been granted, during the time of the firſt Dutch war, and was not much remarked; becauſe men had, at that time, entertained leſs jealouſy of the crown. A proclamation was alſo iſſued, containing very rigorous clauſes in favour of preſſing: Another full of menaces againſt thoſe who preſumed to ſpeak undutifully of his Majeſty's meaſures, and even againſt thoſe who heard ſuch diſcourſes, unleſs they informed in due time upon the offenders: Another againſt importing or vending any ſorts of painted earthen ware, "except thoſe of China, upon pain of being grievouſly fined "and ſuffering the utmoſt puniſhment, which might be lawfully inflicted upon con- "temners of his Majeſty's royal authority." A new army had been levied; and it was found, that diſcipline could not be enforced without the exerciſe of martial law, which was therefore eſtabliſhed by order of council, tho' contrary to the petition of right. All theſe acts of power, however little important in themſelves, ſavoured ſtrongly of arbitrary government, and were nowiſe ſuitable to that legal adminiſtration, which the Parliament, after ſuch violent convulſions and civil wars, had hoped to have eſtabliſhed in the kingdom.

It may be worth remarking, that the lord-keeper refuſed to affix the ſeals to the declaration for ſuſpending the penal laws; and was for that reaſon, tho' under other pretences, removed from his office. Shafteſbury was made chancellor in his place; and thus another member of the Cabal received the reward of his councils.

Attack of the Smyrna fleet.

Foreign tranſactions kept pace with theſe domeſtic occurrences. An attempt, before the declaration of war, was made on the Dutch Smyrna fleet by Sir Robert Holmes. That fleet conſiſted of ſeventy ſail, valued at a million and a half; and the hopes of ſeizing ſo rich a prey had been a great motive of engaging Charles in the preſent war, and he had conſidered that capture as a principal reſſource for ſupporting his military enterprizes. Holmes, with nine frigates and three yatchts, had orders to go in ſearch of this fleet; and he paſſed Sprague in the Channel, who was returning home with a ſquadron from a cruize in the Mediterranean. Sprague informed him of the near approach of the Hollanders; and had not Holmes, from a deſire of engroſſing all the honour and profit of the enterprize, kept the ſecret of his orders, the conjunction of theſe ſquadrons had rendered the ſucceſs infallible.

When

Chap. III. 1672.

When Holmes approached the Dutch, he put on an amicable appearance, and invited the admiral, Van Neſs, who commanded the convoy, to come on board of him: One of his captains gave a like inſidious invitation to the rear-admiral. But theſe officers were on their guard. They had received an intimation of the hoſtile intentions of the Engliſh, and had already put all the ſhips of war and merchantmen in an excellent poſture of defence. Three times were they valiantly aſſailed by the Engliſh; and as often did they valiantly defend themſelves. In the third attack, one of the Dutch ſhips of war was taken; and three or four of their moſt inconſiderable merchantmen fell into the enemies hands. The reſt, fighting with great ſkill and courage, continued their courſe; and, favoured by a miſt, got ſafe into their own harbours. This attempt is denominated perfidious and pyratical by the Dutch writers, and even by many of the Engliſh. It merits at leaſt the appellation of irregular; and as it had been attended with bad ſucceſs, it brought double ſhame upon the contrivers. The Engliſh miniſtry endeavoured to cover the action, by pretending that it was a caſual rencounter, ariſing from the obſtinacy of the Dutch, who refuſed the honours of the flag: But the contrary was ſo well known, that even Holmes himſelf had not the aſſurance to perſiſt in this aſſeveration.

13th of March.

'Till this incident the States, notwithſtanding all the menaces and preparations of the Engliſh, never believed them to be thoroughly in earneſt; and had always expected that the affair would terminate, either in ſome demands of money, or in ſome propoſals for the advancement of the Prince of Orange. The French themſelves had made little account of aſſiſtance from England; and could ſcarce believe, that their ambitious projects would, contrary to every maxim of honour and policy, be forwarded by that power, which was moſt intereſted and moſt able to oppoſe them. But Charles was too far advanced to retreat. He immediately iſſued a declaration of war againſt the Dutch; and ſurely reaſons, more falſe and frivolous, never were employed to juſtify a flagrant violation of treaty. Some complaints were made of injuries done to the Eaſt India Company, which yet that company diſavowed: The detention of ſome Engliſh in Surinam is mentioned; tho' it appears that theſe perſons had voluntarily remained there: The refuſal of a Dutch fleet on their own coaſts to ſtrike to an Engliſh yatcht, is much aggravated: And to piece up all theſe pretenſions, ſome abuſive pictures are mentioned, and repreſented as a ground of quarrel. The Dutch were long at a loſs what to make of this article; till at laſt it was diſcovered, that a portrait of Cornelius de Wit, brother to the penſionary, painted by order of ſome magiſtrates of Dort, and hung up in a chamber of the town-houſe, had given occaſion to the complaint. In the perſpective of this portrait, the painter had drawn ſome ſhips on fire in a harbour. This was conſtrued to be Chatham, where de Wit had really diſtinguiſhed himſelf,

17th of March. War declared with Holland.

and

Chap. III. 1672. and had acquired great honour; but little did he imagine, that, while the inſult itſelf had ſo long been forgiven, the picture of it ſhould draw ſuch ſevere vengeance upon his country. The concluſion of this manifeſto, where the King ſtill profeſſed his attachment to the triple alliance, was of a piece with all the reſt of it.

THE French King's declaration of war contained more dignity, if undiſguiſed violence and injuſtice could merit that appellation. He pretended only, that the behaviour of the Hollanders had been ſuch, that it did not conſiſt with his glory any longer to bear it. That Monarch's preparations were in great forwardneſs; and his ambition was flattered with the moſt promiſing views of ſucceſs. Sweden was detached from the triple league: The biſhop of Munſter was engaged by the payment of ſubſidies to take part with France: The elector of Cologne had entered into the ſame alliance; and having conſigned Bonne and other towns into the hands of Lewis, magazines were there erected; and it was from that quarter, that France propoſed to invade the United Provinces. The ſtanding force of that Kingdom amounted to one hundred and eighty thouſand men; and with more than the half of this great army was the King now approaching to the Dutch frontiers. The order, œconomy, induſtry of Colbert, ſubſervient equally to the ambition of the Prince and happineſs of the people, furniſhed unexhauſted treaſures: Theſe, employed by the unrelenting vigilance of Louvois, ſupplied every military preparation, and facilitated all the enterprizes of the army: Condé, Turenne, ſeconded by Luxembourg, Crequi, and the moſt renowned generals of the age, conducted this army, and by their conduct and reputation inſpired courage into every one. The Monarch himſelf, ſurrounded with a gallant nobility, animated his troops, by the proſpect of reward, or, what was more valued, by the hopes of his approbation. The fatigues of war gave no interruption to gaiety: Its dangers furniſhed matter for glory: And in no enterprize did the genius of that gallant and polite people ever break out with more diſtinguiſhed luſtre.

THO' de Wit's intelligence in foreign courts was not equal to the vigilance of his domeſtic adminiſtration, he had, long before, received many ſurmizes of this fatal confederacy; but he prepared not for defence, ſo early or with ſuch induſtry, as the danger required. An union of England with France was evidently, he ſaw, deſtructive to the intereſts of the former kingdom; and therefore, overlooking or ignorant of the humours and ſecret views of Charles, he concluded it impoſſible, that ſuch pernicious projects could ever really be carried into execution. Secure in this fallacious reaſoning, he allowed the Republic to remain too long in that defenceleſs ſituation, into which many concurring accidents had united to throw it.

Chap. III. 1672. Weakneſs of the States.

By a continued and ſucceſsful application to commerce, the people were become very unwarlike, and confided entirely for their defence in that mercenary army, which they maintained. After the treaty of Weſtphalia, the States, truſting to their peace with Spain, and their alliance with France, had broke a great part of this army, and did not ſupport with ſufficient vigilance the diſcipline of the troops, which remained. When the ariſtocratic party prevailed, it was thought prudent to diſmiſs many of the old experienced officers, who were devoted to the houſe of Orange: and their place was ſupplied by raw youths, the ſons or kinſmen of Burgomaſters, by whoſe intereſt the party was ſupported. Theſe new officers, relying on the credit of their friends and family, neglected their military duty; and ſome of them, it is ſaid, were even allowed to ſerve by deputies, to whom they aſſigned a ſmall part of their pay. During their war with England, all the forces of that nation had been diſbanded: Lewis's invaſion of Flanders, followed by the triple league, occaſioned the diſmiſſion of the French regiments: And the place of theſe troops, which had ever had a chief ſhare in the honour and fortune of all the wars in the Low Countries, had not been ſupplied by any new levies.

De Wit, ſenſible of this dangerous ſituation, and alarmed by the reports, which came from all quarters, beſtirred himſelf to ſupply thoſe defects, to which it was not eaſy of a ſudden to provide a ſuitable remedy. But every propoſal, which he could make, met with oppoſition from the Orange party, which was now become extremely formidable. The long and uncontrouled adminiſtration of this ſtateſman had begot envy: The preſent incidents rouzed up his enemies and opponents, who aſcribed to his miſconduct alone the bad ſituation of the Commonwealth: And above all, the popular affection to the young Prince, which had ſo long been held in violent conſtraint, and had thence acquired new acceſſion of force, began to diſplay itſelf, and to threaten the Commonwealth with ſome great convulſion. William the third, Prince of Orange, was now in the twenty-ſecond year of his age, and gave ſtrong indications of all thoſe great qualities, by which his life was afterwards ſo much diſtinguiſhed. De Wit himſelf, by giving him an excellent education, and inſtructing him in all the principles of government and ſound policy, had generouſly contributed to make his rival formidable. Dreading the precarious ſituation of his own party, he was always reſolved, he ſaid, by conveying to him the knowlege of affairs, to render the Prince capable of ſerving his country, if ever any future emergence ſhould throw the adminiſtration into his hands. The conduct of the young Prince had hitherto been extremely laudable. Notwithſtanding his powerful alliances with England and Brandenburgh, he had expreſſed his reſolution of depending entirely on the States for his advancement; and the whole tenor of his behaviour ſuited extremely the genius of that people. Silent and

thoughtful;

Chap. III. 1672.

thoughtful; given to hear and to enquire; of a ſound and ſteady underſtanding; much firmneſs in what he once reſolved or once denied; great application to buſineſs, little to pleaſure: By theſe virtues, he engaged the attention of all men. And the people, ſenſible, that they owed their liberty, and very exiſtence, to his family, and remembring, that his great uncle, Maurice, had been able, even in more early youth, to protect them againſt the exorbitant power of Spain, were deſirous of raiſing this Prince to all the authority of his anceſtors, and hoped, from his valour and conduct alone, to receive protection againſt thoſe imminent dangers, with which they were at preſent threatened.

While theſe two powerful factions ſtruggled for ſuperiority, every ſcheme for defence was oppoſed, every project retarded. What was determined with difficulty, was executed without vigour. Levies indeed were made, and the army compleated to ſeventy thouſand men*: The Prince was appointed both general and admiral of the Commonwealth, and the whole military power was put into his hands. But new troops could not of a ſudden acquire diſcipline and experience: And the partizans of the Prince were ſtill unſatisfied, as long as the *perpetual edict*, ſo it was called, remained in force; by which he was excluded from the Stadtholderſhip, and from all ſhare in the civil adminiſtration.

It had always been the maxim of de Wit's party to cultivate naval affairs with extreme care, and to give the fleet a viſible preference above the army, which they repreſented as the object of an unreaſonable partiality in the Princes of Orange. The two violent wars, which had of late been waged with England, had exerciſed the valour, and improved the ſkill of the ſailors. And above all, de Ruyter, the greateſt ſea commander of the age, was cloſely connected with the Louveſtein party; and every one was diſpoſed, with confidence and alacrity, to obey him. The equipment of the fleet was therefore haſtened by de Wit; in hopes, that, by ſtriking at firſt a ſucceſsful blow, he might inſpire courage into the diſmayed States, and ſupport his own declining authority. He ſeems too, to have been, in a peculiar manner, enraged againſt the Engliſh; and he reſolved to take revenge on them for their conduct, of which, he thought, his country had ſuch reaſon to complain. By the offer of a cloſe alliance and confederacy for mutual defence, they had ſeduced the Republic to quit the alliance of France; but no ſooner had ſhe embraced theſe meaſures, than they formed leagues for her deſtruction, with that very power, which they had treacherouſly engaged her to offend. In the midſt of full peace, nay, during an intimate union, they had attacked her commerce, the only means of her ſubſiſtence, and moved by ſhameful rapacity, had invaded that property, which, relying on their faith, they had hoped to find unprotected and

* Temple, Vol. i. p. 75.

defenceleſs,

defenceleſs. Contrary to their own viſible intereſt, as well as to their honour, they ſtill retained a malignant reſentment for her ſucceſsful concluſion of the laſt war; a war, which had, at firſt, ſprung from their own wanton inſolence and ambition. To repreſs ſo dangerous an enemy, would, de Wit imagined, give a peculiar pleaſure, and contribute to the future ſecurity of his country, whoſe proſperity was ſo much the object of general envy. Chap. III. 1672.

ACTUATED by like motives and views, de Ruyter put to ſea with a formidable fleet, conſiſting of ninety-one ſhips of war and forty-four fire-ſhips. Cornelius de Wit was on board, as deputy from the States. They ſailed in queſt of the Engliſh, who were under the command of the duke of York, and who had already joined the French under Mareſchal d'Etrées. The combined fleets lay at Solebay in a very negligent poſture; and Sandwich, being an experienced officer, had given the Duke warning of the danger; but received, 'tis ſaid, ſuch an anſwer as intimated, that there was more of caution than of courage in his apprehenſions. Upon the appearance of the enemy, every one ran to his poſt with precipitation, and many ſhips were obliged to cut their cables, in order to be in readineſs. Sandwich commanded the van; and tho' determined to conquer or to periſh, he ſo tempered his courage with prudence, that the whole fleet was viſibly indebted to him for its ſafety. He haſtened out of the bay, where it had been eaſy for de Ruyter with his fire-ſhips to have deſtroyed the combined fleets, which were crowded together; and by this wiſe meaſure he gave time to the duke of York, who commanded the main body, and to Mareſchal d'Etrées, admiral of the rear, to diſengage themſelves. He himſelf meanwhile was engaged in cloſe fight with the Hollanders; and by preſenting himſelf to every danger, had drawn upon him all the braveſt of the enemy. He killed Van Ghent, the Dutch admiral, and beat off his ſhip: He ſunk another ſhip, which ventured to lay him aboard: He ſunk three fire-ſhips, which endeavoured to grapple with him: And tho' his veſſel was torne in pieces with ſhot, and of a thouſand men ſhe contained, near ſix hundred were laid dead upon the deck, he continued ſtill to thunder with all his artillery in the midſt of the enemy. But another fire-ſhip, more fortunate than the preceding, having laid hold of his veſſel, her deſtruction was now inevitable. Warned by Sir Edward Haddoc, his captain, he refuſed to make his eſcape, and bravely embraced death as a ſhelter from that ignominy, which a raſh expreſſion of the duke, he thought, had thrown upon him. Battle of Solebay. 28th of May. Sandwich killed.

DURING this fierce engagement with Sandwich, de Ruyter remained not inactive. He attacked the duke of York, and fought him with ſuch fury for above two hours, that of two and thirty actions, in which he had been engaged, he declared this combat to be the moſt obſtinately diſputed. The Duke's ſhip was ſo ſhattered,

Chap. III. 1672.

tered, that he was obliged to leave her, and remove his flag to another. His ſquadron was overpowered with numbers; till Sir Joſeph Jordan, who had ſucceeded to Sandwich's command, came to his aſſiſtance; and the fight, being more equally ballanced, was continued till night, when the Dutch retired, and were not followed by the Engliſh. The loſs ſuſtained by the fleets of the two maritime powers, was nearly equal; if it did not rather fall more heavy on the Engliſh. The French ſuffered very little, becauſe they had ſcarce been engaged in the action; and as this backwardneſs is not their national character, it was concluded, that they had received orders to ſpare their ſhips, while the Dutch and Engliſh ſhould weaken themſelves by their mutual animoſity. Almoſt all the other actions during the preſent war tended to confirm this ſuſpicion.

It brought great honour to the Dutch to have fought with ſome advantage the combined fleets of two ſuch powerful nations; but nothing leſs than a compleat victory could ſerve the purpoſe of de Wit, or ſave his country from thoſe calamities, which from every quarter threatened to overwhelm her. He had expected, that the French would make their attack on the ſide of Maeſtricht, which was well fortified and provided of a good garriſon; but Lewis, taking advantage of his alliance with Cologne, reſolved to invade the enemy from that quarter, which he knew to be more feeble and defenceleſs. The armies of that Elector and thoſe of Munſter appeared on the other ſide of the Rhine, and divided the force and attention of the States. The Dutch troops, too weak to defend ſo extenſive a frontier, were ſcattered into ſo many towns, that no conſiderable body remained in the field; and a ſtrong gariſon was hardly to be found in any fortreſs. Lewis paſſed the Meuſe at Viſet; and laying ſiege to Orſoi, a town of the Elector of Brandenburgh, but garriſoned by the Dutch, he carried it in three days. He divided his army, and inveſted at once Burik, Weſel, Emerik, and Rhimberg, four places regularly fortified, and not unprovided of troops: In a few days, all theſe places were ſurrendered. A general aſtoniſhment had ſeized the Hollanders, from the combination of ſuch powerful Princes againſt the Republic; and no where was reſiſtance made, ſuitable to the antient glory or preſent greatneſs of the State. Governors without experience commanded troops without diſcipline; and deſpair had univerſally extinguiſhed that ſenſe of honour, by which alone men, in ſuch dangerous extremities, can be animated to a valorous defence.

14th of May.

Progreſs of the French.

Lewis advanced to the banks of the Rhine, which he prepared to paſs. To all the other calamities of the Dutch was added the extreme drought of the ſeaſon, by which the greateſt rivers were much diminiſhed, and in ſome places rendered fordable. The French cavalry, animated by the preſence of their Prince, full of impetuous courage, but ranged in exact order, flung themſelves into the river: The

2d of June.

The infantry paſſed in boats: A few regiments of Dutch appeared on the other ſide, who were unable to make reſiſtance. And thus was executed without danger, but not without glory, the paſſage of the Rhine; ſo much celebrated, at that time, by the flattery of French courtiers, and tranſmitted to poſterity by the more durable flattery of their poets. Chap. III. 1672.

Each ſucceſs added courage to the conquerors, and ſtruck the vanquiſhed with diſmay. The Prince of Orange, tho' prudent beyond his age, was but newly advanced to the command, unacquainted with the army, unknown to them; and all men, by reaſon of the violent factions which prevailed, were uncertain of the authority on which they muſt depend. It was expected, that the fort of Skink, ſo famous for the ſieges, which it had formerly ſuſtained, would make ſome reſiſtance; but it yielded to Turenne in a few days. The ſame general made himſelf maſter of Arnheim, Knotzembourg, and Nimeguen, as ſoon as he appeared before them. Doeſbourg at the ſame time opened its gates to Lewis: Soon after, Harderwic, Amersfort, Campen, Rhenen, Viane, Elberg, Zwol, Cuilemberg, Wageninguen, Lochem, Woerden fell into the enemies hands. Groll and Deventer ſurrendered to the Mareſchal Luxembourg, who commanded the troops of Munſter. And every hour brought to the States news of the rapid progreſs of the French, and of the cowardly defence of their own garriſons.

The Prince of Orange, with his ſmall and diſcouraged army, retired into the province of Holland; where he expected, from the natural ſtrength of the country, ſince all human art and courage failed, to be able to make ſome reſiſtance. The town and province of Utrecht ſent deputations, and ſurrendered themſelves to Lewis. Naerden, a place within three leagues of Amſterdam, was ſeized by the marqueſs of Rochefort; and had he puſhed on to Muyden, he had eaſily got poſſeſſion of it. Fourteen ſtragglers of his army having appeared before the gates of that town, the magiſtrates ſent them the keys; but a ſervant maid, who was alone in the caſtle, having raiſed the drawbridge, kept them from taking poſſeſſion of that fortreſs. The magiſtrates afterwards, finding the party ſo weak, made them drunk, and took the keys from them. Muyden is ſo near Amſterdam, that its cannon may infeſt the ſhips, which enter that city.

Lewis with a ſplendid court made a ſolemn entry into Utrecht, full of glory, becauſe every where attended with ſucceſs; tho' more owing to the cowardice and miſconduct of his enemies, than to his own valour or prudence. Three provinces were already in his hands, Guelderland, Overyſſel, and Utrecht; Groninghen was threatened; Friezeland lay expoſed: The only difficulty lay in Holland and Zealand; and the Monarch deliberated concerning the proper meaſures for reducing them. Condé and Turenne exhorted him to diſmantle all the towns, which he 25th of June.

Chap. III. 1672.

had taken, except a few; and fortifying his main army by the garriſons, put himſelf in a condition of puſhing his conqueſts. Louvois, hoping that the other provinces, weak and diſmayed, would prove an eaſy prey, adviſed him to keep poſſeſſion of places, which might afterwards ſerve to retain the people in ſubjection. His council was followed; tho' it was found ſoon after to have been the moſt impolitic.

Conſternation of the Dutch.

MEANWHILE the people, throughout all the Republic, inſtead of collecting a noble indignation againſt the haughty conqueror, diſcharged their rage upon their own unhappy miniſter, on whoſe prudence and integrity every one formerly beſtowed the merited applauſe. The bad condition of the armies was laid to his charge: The ill choice of governors was aſcribed to his partiality: As inſtances of cowardice multiplied, treachery was ſuſpected; and his former connections with France being remembered, the populace believed, that he and his partizans had now combined to betray them to their moſt mortal enemy. The Prince of Orange, notwithſtanding his youth and inexperience, was looked on as the only ſaviour of the State; and men were violently drove by their fears into his party, to which they had always been led by favour and inclination.

THE town of Amſterdam alone ſeemed to retain ſome courage; and by forming a regular plan of defence, endeavoured to infuſe ſpirit into the other cities. The magiſtrates obliged the burgeſſes to keep a ſtrict watch: The populace, whom want of employment might engage to mutiny, were maintained by regular pay, and armed for the defence of the public. Some ſhips, which lay uſeleſs in the harbour, were refitted, and ſtationed to guard the city: And the ſluices being opened, the neighbouring country, without regard to the great damage ſuſtained, was laid under water. All the province followed this example, and ſcrupled not in this extremity to reſtore to the ſea thoſe fertile fields, which with infinite art and expence had been won from it.

THE States of Holland met to conſider, whether any means were left to ſave the remains of their lately flouriſhing, and now diſtreſſed Commonwealth. Tho' they were ſurrounded with waters, which barred all acceſs to the enemy, their deliberations were not conducted with that tranquillity, which could alone ſuggeſt meaſures, proper to extricate them from their preſent difficulties. The nobles gave their vote, that, provided their religion, liberty, and ſovereignty could be ſaved, every thing elſe ſhould without ſcruple be ſacrificed to the conqueror. Eleven towns concurred in the ſame ſentiments. Amſterdam ſingly declared againſt all treaty with inſolent and triumphant enemies: But notwithſtanding that oppoſition, ambaſſadors were diſpatched to implore the pity of the two combined Monarchs. It was reſolved to ſacrifice to Lewis Maeſtricht and all the frontier towns, which

lay

lay without the bounds of the ſeven provinces; and to pay him a large ſum for the charges of the war. Chap. III. 1672.

LEWIS deliberated with his miniſters Louvois and Pomponne, concerning the meaſures, which he ſhould embrace in the preſent emergence; and fortunately for Europe, he ſtill preferred the violent councils of the former. He offered to evacuate his conqueſts on condition, that all duties lately impoſed on the commodities of France ſhould be taken off; that the public exerciſe of the Romiſh religion ſhould be permitted; the churches ſhared with the Catholics, and their prieſts maintained by appointments from the States; that all the frontier towns of the Republic ſhould be reſigned to him, together with Nimeguen, Skink, Knotzembourg, and that part of Guelderland which lay on the other ſide of the Rhine; as likewiſe the iſle of Bommel, that of Voorn, the fortreſs of St. Andrew, that of Louveſtein and Crevecœur; that they ſhould pay him the ſum of twenty millions of livres for the charges of the war; that they ſhould every year ſend him a ſolemn embaſſy, and preſent him with a golden medal, as an acknowlegement, that they owed to him the preſervation of that liberty, which by the aſſiſtance of his predeceſſors they had been able to acquire; and that they ſhould give entire ſatisfaction to the King of England: And he allowed them but ten days for the acceptance of theſe exorbitant demands.

THE ambaſſadors, who came to London, met with ſtill worſe reception: No miniſter was allowed to treat with them; and they were retained in a kind of confinement. But notwithſtanding this rigorous conduct of the Court, the preſence of the Dutch ambaſſadors excited the ſentiments of tender compaſſion, and even indignation among the people in general, but eſpecially among thoſe who could foreſee the aim and reſult of thoſe dangerous councils. The two moſt powerful Monarchs, they ſaid, in Europe, the one by land, the other by ſea, have, contrary to the faith of ſolemn treaties, combined to exterminate an illuſtrious Republic: What a diſmal proſpect does their ſucceſs afford to the neighbours of the one, and to the ſubjects of the other? Charles had formed the triple league, in order to reſtrain the exorbitant power of France: A ſure proof, that he does not now err from ignorance. He had courted and obtained the applauſes of his people by that wiſe meaſure: As he now adopts contrary councils, he muſt ſurely expect by their means to render himſelf independant of his people, whoſe ſentiments are become ſo indifferent to him. During the moſt entire ſubmiſſion of the nation, and moſt dutiful behaviour of the Parliament, dangerous projects, without provocation, are formed to reduce them to ſubjection, and all the foreign intereſts of the people are ſacrificed, in order the more ſurely to bereave them of their domeſtic liberties. Leſt any inſtance of freedom ſhould remain within their

view,

Chap. III. 1672.

view, the United Provinces, the real barrier of England, muſt be abandoned to the moſt dangerous enemy of England; and by an univerſal combination of tyranny againſt laws and liberty, all mankind, who have retained, in any degree, their precious, tho' hitherto precarious, birthrights, are for ever to ſubmit to ſlavery and injuſtice.

THO' the fear of giving offence to his confederate had engaged Charles to treat the Dutch ambaſſadors with ſuch rigour, he was not altogether without uneaſineſs, on account of the rapid and unexpected progreſs of the French arms. Were Holland entirely conquered, its whole commerce and naval force, he ſaw, muſt become an acceſſion to France; the Spaniſh Low Countries muſt ſoon follow; and Lewis, now independant of his ally, would no longer think it his intereſt to ſupport him againſt his diſcontented ſubjects. Charles, tho' he never ſtretched his attention to very diſtant conſequences, could not but foreſee theſe obvious events; and tho' incapable of envy or jealouſy, he was touched with anxiety when he found every thing yield to the French arms, while ſuch vigorous reſiſtance was made to his own. He ſoon diſmiſſed the Dutch ambaſſadors, leſt they ſhould cabal among his ſubjects, who bore them great favour: But he ſent over Buckingham and Arlington, and ſoon after lord Halifax, to negotiate anew with the French King, in the preſent proſperous ſituation of that Monarch's affairs.

THESE miniſters paſſed thro' Holland; and as they were ſuppoſed to bring peace to the diſtreſt Republic, they were received every where with the loudeſt acclamations. "God bleſs the King of England! God bleſs the Prince of Orange! "Confuſion to the States!" This was every where the cry of the populace. The ambaſſadors had ſeveral conferences with the States and the Prince of Orange; but made no reaſonable advances towards an accommodation. They went to Utrecht, where they renewed the league with Lewis, and agreed, that neither of the Kings ſhould ever make peace with Holland but by common conſent. They next gave in their pretenſions, of which the following are the principal articles; that the Dutch ſhould give up the honour of the flag without the leaſt reſerve or limitation, nor ſhould whole fleets, even on the coaſt of Holland, refuſe to ſtrike and lower their topſails to the ſmalleſt ſhip, carrying the Britiſh flag; that all perſons, guilty of treaſon againſt the King or writing ſeditious libels, ſhould on complaint be baniſhed for ever the dominions of the States; that the Dutch ſhould pay the King a million ſterling towards the charges of the war, together with ten thouſand pounds a year for permiſſion to fiſh on the Britiſh ſeas; that they ſhould ſhare the Indian trade with the Engliſh; that the Prince of Orange and his deſcendants ſhould enjoy the ſovereignty of the United Provinces; at leaſt that they ſhould be inveſted with the dignities of Stadtholder, Admiral, and General, in as ample a manner as had ever

ever been enjoyed by any of his anceſtors; and that the iſle of Walcheren, the city and caſtle of Sluis, together with the iſles of Cadſant, Gorée, and Vorne, ſhould be put into the King's hands, as a ſecurity for the performance of articles. It is moſt conſiſtent with candour and reaſon to ſuppoſe, that Charles had not, in his alliance with France, propoſed the utter deſtruction of the United Provinces; ſince ſuch a ſcheme is ſcarce compatible with the project of employing the French power for extending his authority at home: But as the unexpected progreſs of Lewis's arms had reduced the Hollanders to the laſt extremity, the King was deſirous of acquiring a conſiderable ſhare of that rich booty, which fortune had thrown into their hands. Chap. III. 1672.

THE terms propoſed by Lewis bereaved the Republic of all ſecurity againſt any land invaſion from France: Thoſe demanded by Charles expoſed them equally to an invaſion by ſea from England: And when both were joined, they appeared abſolutely intolerable, and reduced the Hollanders, who ſaw no means of defence, to the utmoſt deſpair. What extremely augmented their diſtreſs, were the violent factions, with which they continued to be every where agitated. De Wit, too pertinacious in defence of his own ſyſtem of liberty, while the very being of the Commonwealth was threatened, ſtill perſevered in oppoſing the repeal of the perpetual edict, now become the object of horror to the Dutch populace. Their rage at laſt broke all bounds, and bore every thing before it. They roſe in an inſurrection at Dort, and by force conſtrained their burgo-maſters to ſign the repeal, ſo much demanded. This proved a ſignal of a general revolt throughout all the provinces. At Amſterdam, the Hague, Middlebourg, Rotterdam, the people flew to arms, and trampling under foot the authority of their magiſtrates, obliged them to ſubmit to the Prince of Orange. They expelled from their office ſuch as diſpleaſed them: They required the Prince to appoint others in their place: And agreeable to the proceedings of the populace in all ages, provided they might wreak their vengeance on their ſuperiors, they expreſſed a great indifference for the protection of their civil liberties. 30th of June. Prince of Orange Stadtholder.

THE ſuperior talents and virtues of de Wit made him, on this occaſion, the chief object of general envy, and expoſed him to the utmoſt rage of popular prejudices. Four aſſaſſins, actuated by no other motive than miſtaken zeal, had aſſaulted him in the ſtreets; and after giving him many wounds, had left him for dead. One of them was puniſhed: The others were never queſtioned for their crime. His brother Cornelius, who had behaved with great prudence and courage on board the fleet, was obliged by ſickneſs to come aſhore, and he was now confined to his houſe at Dort. Some aſſaſſins broke in upon him; and it was with the utmoſt difficulty that his family and ſervants could repell their violence.

At

Chap. III. 1672.

At Amſterdam, the houſe of the brave de Ruyter, the ſole reſſource of the diſtreſt Commonwealth, was ſurrounded by the enraged populace, and his wife and children were for ſome time expoſed to the moſt imminent danger.

One Tichelaer, a barber, a man noted for infamy, accuſed Cornelius de Wit of endeavouring by bribes to engage him in the deſign of poiſoning the Prince of Orange. The accuſation, tho' attended with the moſt improbable and even abſurd circumſtances, was greedily received by the credulous multitude; and Cornelius was cited before a court of judicature. The judges, either blinded by the ſame prejudices, or not daring to oppoſe the popular torrent, condemned him to ſuffer the queſtion. This man, who had bravely ſerved his country in war, and who had been inveſted with the higheſt dignities, was delivered into the hands of the executioner, and torne in pieces by the moſt inhuman torments. Amidſt the ſevere agonies, which he endured, he ſtill made proteſtations of his innocence; and frequently repeated an ode of Horace, which contained ſentiments, ſuited to his deplorable condition.

Juſtum & tenacem propoſiti virum, &c. *

The judges, however, condemned him to loſe his offices, and to be baniſhed the Commonwealth. The penſionary, who had not been terrified from performing the part of a kind brother and faithful friend during this proſecution, reſolved not to deſert him on account of the unmerited infamy, which was endeavoured to be

* Which may be thus tranſlated.

The man, whoſe mind on virtue bent,
Purſues ſome greatly good intent,
With undiverted aim,
Serene beholds the angry crowd;
Nor can their clamours, fierce and loud,
His ſtubborn honour tame.
Not the proud tyrant's fierceſt threat,
Nor ſtorms, that from their dark retreat
The lawleſs ſurges wake,
Nor Jove's dread bolt that ſhakes the pole,
The firmer purpoſe of his ſoul
With all its power can ſhake.
Shou'd Nature's frame in ruins fall,
And chaos o'er the ſinking ball
Reſume primæval ſway,
His courage chance and fate defies,
Nor feels the wreck of earth and ſkies
Obſtruct its deſtin'd way.

This tranſlation was executed, at the author's deſire, by his friend, Mr. Blacklock, whoſe elegant collection of poems was lately publiſhed by Mr. Dodſley. The poems are worthy of attention on account of their own merit, but may be regarded as very extraordinary, when we conſider what force of imagination is there diſplayed by an author born blind.

thrown

thrown upon him. He came to his brother's priſon, determined to accompany him to the place of his exile. The ſignal was given to the populace. They roſe in arms: They broke open the doors of the priſon; they pulled out the two brothers; and a thouſand hands vied with each other, who ſhould firſt be embrued in their blood. Even their death did not ſatiate the brutal rage of the multitude. They exerciſed on the dead bodies of thoſe virtuous citizens, indignities too ſhocking to be recited; and till tired with their own fury, it was not permitted the friends of the deceaſed to approach, or to beſtow on them the honours of a funeral, ſilent and unattended. Chap. III. 1672. Maſſacre of the De Wits.

THE maſſacre of the de Wits put an end for the time to the remains of their party; and all men, from fear, inclination, or prudence, concurred in expreſſing the moſt implicite obedience to the Prince of Orange. The Republic, tho' half ſubdued by foreign force, and as yet diſmayed by its misfortunes, was firmly united under one leader, and began to collect the remains of its antient vigour. William, worthy of that heroic family from which he ſprung, adopted ſentiments becoming the head of a brave and a free people. He bent all his efforts againſt the public enemy: He ſought not againſt his country any advantages, which might be dangerous to civil liberty. Thoſe intolerable conditions, demanded by their inſolent enemies, he exhorted the States to reject with ſcorn; and by his advice they put an end to negotiations, which ſerved only to break the courage of their fellow citizens, and delay the aſſiſtance of their allies. He ſhowed them, that the numbers and riches of the people, aided by the advantages of nature, would ſtill be ſufficient, if they abandoned not themſelves to deſpair, to reſiſt, at leaſt retard, the progreſs of their enemies, and preſerve the remaining provinces, till the other nations of Europe, ſenſible of the common danger, could come to their relief. He repreſented, that as envy of their opulence and liberty had produced this mighty combination againſt them, they would in vain expect by conceſſions to ſatisfy foes, whoſe pretenſions were as little bounded by moderation as by juſtice. He exhorted them to remember the generous valour of their anceſtors, who, yet in the infancy of their State, preferred liberty to every human conſideration, and rouzing their ſpirits to an obſtinate defence, repelled all the power, riches, and military diſcipline of Spain. And he profeſſed himſelf willing to tread in the ſteps of his illuſtrious predeceſſors, and hoped, that as they had honoured him with the ſame affection which their anceſtors payed the former Princes of Orange, they would ſecond his efforts with the ſame conſtancy and manly fortitude. Good conduct of the Prince.

THE ſpirit of the young Prince infuſed itſelf into all his hearers. Thoſe who lately entertained thoughts of yielding their necks to ſubjection were now bravely

Chap. III. 1672.

determined to reſiſt the haughty victor, and to defend thoſe laſt remains of their native ſoil, of which neither the irruptions of Lewis nor the inundation of waters had as yet bereaved them. Should even the ground fail them on which they might combat, they were ſtill reſolved not to yield the generous ſtrife; but flying to their ſettlements in the Indies, erect a new empire in thoſe remote regions, and preſerve alive, even in the climates of ſlavery, that liberty, of which Europe was become unworthy. Already they concerted meaſures for executing this extraordinary reſolution; and found, that the veſſels, contained in their harbours, could tranſport above two hundred thouſand inhabitants to the Eaſt Indies.

THE combined Princes, finding at laſt ſome appearance of oppoſition, bent all their efforts to ſeduce the Prince of Orange, on whoſe valour and conduct the fate of the Commonwealth entirely depended. The ſovereignty of the province of Holland was offered him; and the protection of England and France, to inſure him, as well againſt the invaſion of foreign enemies, as the inſurrection of his ſubjects. All propoſals were generouſly rejected; and the Prince declared his reſolution to retire into Germany, and to paſs his life in hunting on his lands there, rather than abandon the liberty of his country, or betray the truſt repoſed in him. When Buckingham urged the inevitable deſtruction, which hung over the United Provinces, and aſked him, whether he did not ſee, that the Commonwealth was ruined; *There is one certain means*, replied the Prince, *by which I can be ſecure never to ſee my country's ruin: I will die in the laſt ditch.*

THE people in Holland had been much incited to eſpouſe the Prince's party, by the hopes, that the King of England, pleaſed with his nephew's advancement, would abandon thoſe dangerous engagements, into which he had entered, and would afford his protection to the diſtreſſed Republic. But all theſe hopes were ſoon found to be fallacious. Charles ſtill perſiſted in his alliance with France; and the combined fleets approached the coaſt of Holland, with an Engliſh army on board, commanded by Count Schomberg. It is pretended, that an unuſual tyde carried them off the coaſt, and that Providence thus interpoſed in an extraordinary manner to ſave the Republic, from the imminent danger, to which it was expoſed. Very tempeſtuous weather, it is certain, prevailed all the reſt of the ſeaſon; and the combined fleets either were blown to a diſtance, or dared not to approach a ſhore, which might prove fatal to them. Lewis, finding that his enemies gathered courage behind their inundations, and that no farther progreſs was likely for the preſent to attend his arms, had retired to Verſailles.

THE other nations of Europe regarded the ſubjection of Holland as the forerunner of their own ſlavery, and retained no hopes of defending themſelves, ſhould ſuch a mighty acceſſion be made to the already exorbitant power of France. The Emperor,

Emperor, tho' he lay at a diſtance, and was naturally ſlow in his undertakings, began to put himſelf in motion; Brandenburgh ſhewed a diſpoſition to take party with the States; Spain had ſent ſome forces to their aſſiſtance; and by the preſent efforts of the Prince of Orange and the proſpect of relief from their allies, a different face of affairs began already to appear. Groninghen was the firſt place which ſtopped the progreſs of the enemy: The biſhop of Munſter was repulſed from that town, and obliged to raiſe the ſiege with loſs and diſhonour. Naerden was attempted by the Prince of Orange; but Mareſchal Luxembourg, breaking in upon his entrenchments with a ſudden irruption, obliged him to abandon the enterprize.

1673. 4th of February. A Parliament.

THERE was no ally on whom the Dutch more relied for aſſiſtance than the Parliament of England, which the King's neceſſities at laſt obliged him to aſſemble. The eyes of all men, both abroad and at home, were fixed on this ſeſſion, which met after prorogations continued for near two years. It was evident how much the King dreaded the aſſembling his Parliament; and the diſcontents univerſally excited by the bold meaſures entered into both in foreign and domeſtic adminiſtration, had given but too juſt foundation for his apprehenſions.

THE King, however, in his ſpeech, addreſſed them with all the appearance of cordiality and confidence. He ſaid, that he would have aſſembled them ſooner, had he not been deſirous to allow them leizure for attending their private affairs, as well as to give his people reſpite from taxes and impoſitions: That ſince their laſt meeting, he had been forced into a war, not only juſt but neceſſary, neceſſary both for the honour and intereſt of the nation: That in order to have peace at home while he had war abroad, he had iſſued his declaration of indulgence to diſſenters, and had found many good effects to reſult from that meaſure: That he heard of ſome exceptions which had been taken to this exerciſe of power; but he would tell them plainly, that he was reſolved to ſtick to his declaration; and would be much offended at any contradiction: And that tho' a rumour had been ſpread, as if the new levied army had been intended to controul law and property, he regarded that jealouſy as ſo frivolous, that he was reſolved to augment his forces next ſpring; and did not doubt but they would conſider the neceſſity of them in their ſupplies. The reſt of the buſineſs he left to the chancellor.

THE chancellor enlarged on the ſame topics, and added many extraordinary poſitions of his own. He told them, that the Hollanders were the common enemies of all monarchies, eſpecially that of England, their only competitor for commerce and naval power, and the ſole obſtacle to their views of an univerſal empire as extenſive as that of ancient Rome: That even during their preſent diſtreſs and danger, they were ſo intoxicated with theſe ambitious projects, as to ſlight all treaty, nay to refuſe all ceſſation of hoſtilities: That the King, in entering on this

Chap. III. 1673.

war, did no more than profecute thofe maxims, which had engaged the Parliament to adviſe and approve of the laſt; and he might therefore ſafely ſay, that *it was their war:* That the States being the eternal enemies of England, both by intereſt and inclination, the Parliament had wiſely judged it neceſſary to extirpate them, and had laid it down as an eternal maxim, that *delenda eſt Carthago*, this hoſtile government by all means is to be ſubverted: And that tho' the Dutch pretended to have aſſurances, that the Parliament would furniſh no ſupplies to the King, he was confident, that this hope, in which they extremely truſted, would ſoon fail them.

BEFORE the Commons entred upon buſineſs, there lay before them an affair, which diſcovered, beyond a poſſibility of doubt, the arbitrary projects of the King; and the meaſures, taken upon it, proved, that the houſe was not at preſent in a diſpoſition to ſubmit to them. It had been the conſtant undiſputed practice, ever ſince the Parliament in 1604, for the houſe, in caſe of any vacancy, to iſſue out writs for new elections; and the chancellor, who, before that time, had had ſome precedents in his favour, had ever afterwards abſtained from all exerciſe of that authority. This indeed was one of the firſt ſteps, which the Commons had taken in eſtabliſhing and guarding their privileges; and nothing could be more requiſite than this precaution, in order to prevent the clandeſtine iſſuing of writs, and to enſure a fair and free election. No one but ſo deſperate a miniſter as Shafteſbury, who had entered into a regular plan for reducing the people to ſubjection, could have entertained thoughts of breaking in upon a practice ſo reaſonable and ſo well eſtabliſhed, or could have hoped to ſucceed in ſo bold an enterprize. Several members had taken their ſeats upon irregular writs iſſued by the chancellor; but the houſe was no ſooner aſſembled, and the ſpeaker placed in his chair, than a motion was made againſt them; and the members themſelves had the modeſty to withdraw. Their election was declared null; and new writs, in the uſual form, were iſſued by the ſpeaker.

THE next ſtep taken by the Commons had the appearance of ſome more complaiſance; but in reality proceeded from the ſame ſpirit of liberty and independence. They reſolved, in order to ſupply his Majeſty's extraordinary occaſions, for that was the expreſſion they uſed, to grant eighteen months aſſeſſment, at the rate of 70,000 pounds a month, amounting in the whole to 1,260,000 pounds. Tho' unwilling to come to a violent breach with the King, they would not expreſs the leaſt approbation of the war; and they gave him the proſpect of this ſupply, only that they might have permiſſion to proceed peaceably in the redreſs of ſome other grievances, of which they had ſuch reaſon to complain.

No grievance was more alarming, both on account of the ſecret views from which it proceeded, and the conſequences which might attend it, than the declaration

ration of indulgence. A remonſtrance was immediately formed againſt that exer- Chap. III. 1673.
ciſe of prerogative. The King defended his meaſure. The Commons perſiſted in their oppoſition to it; and they repreſented, that ſuch a practice, if admitted, might tend to interrupt the free courſe of the laws, and alter the legiſlative power, which had always been acknowleged to reſide in the King and the two houſes. All the world was in expectation, with regard to the iſſue of this extraordinary affair. The King ſeemed engaged in honour to ſupport his meaſure; and in order to obviate all oppoſition, he had poſitively declared, that he would ſupport it. The Commons were obliged to perſevere, not only becauſe it was diſhonourable, to be foiled, where they could plead ſuch ſtrong reaſons, but alſo becauſe, if the King prevailed in his pretenſions, an end ſeemed to be put to all the legal limitations of the conſtitution.

It is evident, that the King was now come to that delicate criſis, which he ought at firſt to have foreſeen, when he embraced thoſe deſperate councils; and his reſolutions, in ſuch an event, ought long ago to have been entirely fixed and determined. Beſides his uſual guards, he had an army encamped at Blackheath under the command of mareſchal Schomberg, a foreigner; and many of the officers were of the Catholic religion. His ally, the French King, he might expect, would ſecond him, if violence became requiſite for reſtraining his diſcontented ſubjects, and ſupporting the meaſures, which by common conſent they had agreed to purſue. But Charles was ſtartled, when he approached ſo dangerous a precipice, as that which lay before him. Were violence once offered, there could be no return, he ſaw, of mutual confidence and truſt with his people; the perils attending foreign ſuccours, eſpecially from ſo mighty a prince, were ſufficiently apparent; and the ſucceſs which his own arms had met with in the war was not ſo great, as to encreaſe his authority, or terrify the malecontents from oppoſition. The deſire of power likewiſe, which had engaged Charles in theſe precipitant meaſures, had leſs proceeded, we may obſerve, from ambition than from love of eaſe. Strict limitations of the conſtitution rendered the government complicated and troubleſome; and it was impoſſible for him, without much contrivance and intrigue, to procure the money neceſſary for his pleaſures, or even for the regular ſupportof the government. When the proſpect, therefore, of ſuch dangerous oppoſition preſented itſelf, the ſame love of eaſe inclined him to retract what it ſeemed ſo difficult to maintain; and his turn of mind, naturally pliant and careleſs, made him find little objection to a meaſure, which a more haughty prince would have embraced with the utmoſt reluctance. That he might yield with the better grace, he aſked the opinion of the Houſe of Peers, who adviſed him to comply with the Commons. And accordingly the King ſent for the declaration, and with his own hands broke the ſeals. The Commons expreſſed the utmoſt ſatisfaction with this meaſure, and Declaration of indulgence recalled.

the

Chap. III. 1673. the moſt entire duty to his Majeſty. The King aſſured them, that he would willingly paſs any law, offered him, which might tend to give them ſatisfaction in all their juſt grievances.

SHAFTESBURY, when he ſaw the King recede at once from ſo capital a point, which he had publicly declared his reſolution to maintain, concluded, that all the ſchemes for enlarging royal authority were vaniſhed, and that Charles was utterly incapable of purſuing ſuch difficult and ſuch dangerous meaſures. The Parliament, he foreſaw, might puſh their enquiries into thoſe councils, which were ſo generally odious; and the King, from the ſame facility of diſpoſition, might abandon his miniſters to their vengeance. He was reſolved, therefore, to make his peace in time with that party, which was likely to predominate; and to attone for all his violences in favour of monarchy, by like violences in oppoſition to it. Never turn was more ſudden, or leſs calculated to ſave appearances. Immediately he entered into all the cabals of the country party; and diſcovered to them, perhaps magnified, the arbitrary councils of the court, in which he himſelf had borne ſo deep a ſhare. He was received with open arms by that party, who ſtood in need of ſo able a leader; and no queſtions were aſked with regard to his late apoſtacy. The various factions, into which the nation had been divided, and the many ſudden revolutions to which the public had been expoſed, had tended much to debauch the minds of men, and to deſtroy the ſenſe of honour and decorum in their public conduct.

BUT the Parliament, tho' ſatisfied with the King's compliance, had not loſt all thoſe apprehenſions, to which the meaſures of the court had given ſo much foundation. A law paſſed for impoſing a *teſt* on all who ſhould enjoy any public office. Beſides taking the oaths of allegiance and ſupremacy, and receiving the ſacrament in the eſtabliſhed church; they were obliged to abjure all belief in the doctrine of tranſubſtantiation. As the Diſſenters had ſeconded the efforts of the Commons againſt the King's declaration of indulgence, and ſeemed reſolute to accept of no toleration in an illegal manner, they had acquired great favour with the Parliament, and a project was adopted to unite the whole Proteſtant intereſt againſt the common enemy, who now began to appear formidable. A bill paſſed the Commons for the eaſe and relief of the Proteſtant nonconformiſts; but met with ſome difficulties, at leaſt delays, in the Houſe of Peers.

THE reſolution for ſupply was carried into a law; as a recompence to the King for his conceſſions. A general pardon likewiſe and indemnity was paſſed, which ſcreened the miniſters from all farther enquiry. The Parliament probably thought that the beſt method of reclaiming the criminals, was to ſhew them, that their caſe was not deſperate. Even the remonſtrance, which the Commons voted of their grievances, may be regarded as a proof, that their anger was, for the time, appeaſed. None of the capital points are touched on; the breach of the triple league,

league, the French alliance, the ſhutting up the Exchequer. The ſole grievances mentioned are an arbitrary impoſition on coals for providing convoys, the exerciſe of military law, the quartering and preſſing of ſoldiers; and they prayed, that, after the concluſion of the war, the whole army ſhould be diſbanded. The King gave them a gracious, tho' evaſive anſwer. When buſineſs was finiſhed, the two Houſes adjourned themſelves. Chap. III. 1673. 29th of March.

THO' the King had, for the time, receded from his declaration of indulgence, and thereby had tacitly relinquiſhed the ſuſpending power, he was ſtill reſolved, notwithſtanding his bad ſucceſs both at home and abroad, to perſevere in his alliance with France, and in the Dutch war, and conſequently in all thoſe ſecret views, whatever they were, which depended on thoſe fatal meaſures. The money, granted by Parliament, ſufficed to equip a fleet, of which Prince Rupert was declared admiral: For the Duke was ſet aſide by the teſt. Sir Edward Sprague and the earl of Oſſory commanded under the Prince. A French ſquadron joined them, commanded by d'Etreés. The combined fleets ſet ſail towards the coaſt of Holland, and found the enemy, lying at anchor, within the ſands at Schonvelt. There is a natural confuſion attending ſea fights, even beyond other military tranſactions; derived from the precarious operations of winds and tides, as well as from the ſmoke and darkneſs, in which every thing is there involved. No wonder, therefore, that relations of theſe battles are apt to contain uncertainties and contradictions; eſpecially when compoſed by writers of the hoſtile nations, who take pleaſure in exalting their own advantages, and ſuppreſſing thoſe of the enemy. All we can ſay with certainty of this battle, is, that both ſides boaſted of the victory; and we may thence infer, that the action was not deciſive. The Dutch, being near home, retired into their own harbours. In a week, they were refitted, and preſented themſelves again to the combined fleets. A new action enſued, not more deciſive than the foregoing. It was not fought with great obſtinacy on either ſide; but whether the Dutch or the allies firſt retired ſeems to be a matter of uncertainty. The loſs in the former of theſe actions fell chiefly on the French, whom the Engliſh, diffident of their intentions, took care to place under their own ſquadrons; and they thereby expoſed them to all the fire of the enemy. There ſeems not to have been a ſhip loſt on either ſide in the ſecond engagement. 28th of May. Sea-fight. 4th of June. Another ſea-fight.

IT was ſufficient glory to de Ruyter, that with a fleet much inferior to the combined ſquadrons of France and England, he could fight without any notable diſadvantage; and it was ſufficient victory, that he could defeat the project of a deſcent in Zealand, which, had it taken place, had endangered, in the preſent circumſtances, the total overthrow of the Dutch Commonwealth. Prince Rupert alſo was ſuſpected not to favour the King's projects of ſubduing Holland, or enlarging

Chap. III. 1673.

his authority at home; and from theſe motives, he was thought not to have preſſed ſo hard on the enemy, as his well-known valour gave reaſon to expect. It is indeed remarkable, that, during this war, tho' the Engliſh with their allies much over-matched the Hollanders, they were not able to gain any advantage over them; while in the former war, tho' often over-borne by numbers, they ſtill exerted themſelves with the moſt heroic courage, and always acquired great renown, ſometimes even ſignal victories. But they were diſguſted with the preſent meaſures, which they eſteemed pernicious to their country; they were not ſatisfy'd in the juſtice of the quarrel; and they entertained a perpetual jealouſy of their confederates, whom, had they been permitted, they would with much more pleaſure have deſtroyed than even the enemy themſelves.

If Prince Rupert was not favourable to the deſigns of the court, he enjoyed as little favour from the court, at leaſt from the Duke, who, tho' he could no longer command the fleet, ſtill poſſeſſed the chief authority in the Admiralty. The Prince complained of a total want of every thing, powder, ſhot, proviſions, beer, and even water; and he went into harbour, that he might refit the fleet, and ſupply its numerous neceſſities. After ſome weeks he was refitted; and he again put to ſea: The hoſtile fleets met at the mouth of the Texel, and fought the laſt battle, which, during a courſe of ſo many years, theſe neighbouring maritime powers have diſputed with each other. De Ruyter, and under him Tromp, commanded the Dutch in this action, as in the two former: For the Prince of Orange had reconciled theſe two gallant rivals; and they retained nothing of their former animoſity, except that emulation, which made them exert themſelves with more diſtinguiſhed bravery againſt the enemies of their country. Brankert was oppoſed to D'Etreés, de Ruyter to Prince Rupert, Tromp to Sprague. It is remarkable, that in all actions theſe brave admirals laſt mentioned had ſtill ſelected each other, as the only antagoniſts worthy each others valour; and no deciſive advantage had as yet been gained by either of them. They fought in this battle, as if there were no mean between death and victory.

11th of Auguſt. Another ſea-fight.

D'Etrees and all the French ſquadron, except rear admiral Martel, kept at a diſtance; and Brankert, inſtead of preſſing on them, bore down to the aſſiſtance of de Ruyter, who was engaged in furious combat with Prince Rupert. On no occaſion did the Prince acquire more deſerved honour: His conduct, as well as valour, ſhone out with ſignal luſtre. Having diſengaged his ſquadron from the numerous enemies, with which he was every where ſurrounded, and having joined Sir John Chichely, his rear admiral, who had been ſeparated from him, he made haſte to the relief of Sprague, who was very hard preſſed by Tromp's ſquadron. The Royal Prince, in which Sprague firſt engaged, was ſo diſabled, that he was obliged to hoiſt his

his flag on board the St. George; while Tromp was for a like reaſon obliged to quit his ſhip, the Golden Lion, and go on board the Comet. The fight was renewed with the utmoſt fury by theſe valorous rivals, and by the rear-admirals, their ſeconds. Oſſory, rear-admiral to Sprague, was preparing to board Tromp, when he ſaw the St. George terribly torne, and in a manner diſabled. Sprague was leaving her in order to hoiſt his flag on board a third ſhip, and return to the charge; when a ſhot, which had paſſed thro' the St. George, took his boat, and ſunk her. The admiral was drowned, to the great regret of Tromp himſelf, who beſtowed on his valour the deſerved praiſes. Chap. III. 1673.

PRINCE Rupert found affairs in this dangerous ſituation, and ſaw moſt of the ſhip's in Sprague's ſquadron diſabled from flight. The engagement was renewed, and became very cloſe and bloody. The Prince threw the enemy into great diſorder. To encreaſe it, he ſent among them two fire-ſhips; and at the ſame time made a ſignal to the French to bear down, which if they had done, a total victory muſt have enſued. But the Prince, when he ſaw that they neglected his ſignal, and obſerved that moſt of his ſhips were in no condition to keep the ſea long, wiſely provided for their ſafety by making eaſy ſail towards the Engliſh coaſt. The victory in this battle was as doubtful, as in all the actions fought during the preſent war.

THE turn, which the affairs of the Hollanders took by land, was more favourable. The prince of Orange beſieged and took Naerden; and from this ſucceſs gave his country reaſon to hope for ſtill more proſperous enterprizes. Montecuculi, who commanded the Imperialiſts on the upper Rhine, deceived, by the moſt artful conduct, the vigilance and penetration of Turenne, and making a ſudden march, ſat down before Bonne. The Prince of Orange's conduct was no leſs maſterly; while he eluded all the French generals, and leaving them behind him, joined his army to that of the Imperialiſts. Bonne was taken in a few days: Several other places of the electorate of Cologne fell into the hands of the allies: And the communication being thus cut off between France and the United Provinces, Lewis was obliged to recall his forces, and to abandon all his conqueſts with greater rapidity than he had at firſt made them. The taking Maeſtricht was the only advantage, which he gained this campaign.

A CONGRESS was opened at Cologne under the mediation of Sweden; but with ſmall hopes of ſucceſs. The demands of the two Kings were ſuch as muſt have reduced the Hollanders to perpetual ſervitude. In proportion as the affairs of the States roſe, the Kings ſunk in their demands; but the States ſtill ſunk lower in their offers; and it was impoſſible for the parties ever to agree on any conditions. After the French evacuated Holland, the congreſs broke up; and the ſeizure of Congreſs of Cologne.

Chap. III. 1673. Prince William of Furſtenburg by the Imperialiſts, afforded the French and Engliſh a good pretence for leaving Cologne. The Dutch ambaſſadors in their memorials expreſſed all the haughtineſs and diſdain, ſo natural to a free State, which had met with ſuch unmerited ill uſage.

20th of October. A Parliament. THE Parliament of England was now aſſembled, and diſcovered much greater ſymptoms of ill humour, than had appeared in their laſt meeting. They had ſeen for ſome time a negotiation of marriage carried on between the Duke of York, and the Archduchеſs of Inſpruc, a catholic of the Auſtrian family; and they had made no oppoſition. But when that intention failed, and the Duke applied to a Princeſs of the houſe of Modena, then in cloſe conjunction with France; this circumſtance, joined to ſo many other grounds of diſcontent, raiſed the Commons into a flame; and they remonſtrated with the greateſt zeal againſt the intended marriage. The King told them, that their remonſtrances came too late; and that the marriage was already agreed on, and even celebrated by proxy. The Commons ſtill inſiſted; and proceeding to the examination of the other parts of government, they voted the ſtanding army to be a grievance, and declared, that they would grant no more ſupply, unleſs it appeared, that the Dutch were ſo obſtinate as to refuſe all reaſonable conditions. To cut ſhort theſe diſagreeable attacks, the King reſolved to prorogue the Parliament; and with that intention he came unexpectedly to the Houſe of Peers, and ſent the uſher to ſummon the Commons. It happened, that the ſpeaker and the uſher nearly met at the door of the Houſe; but the ſpeaker being within, ſome of the members ſuddenly ſhut the door, and cried, *To the chair, to the chair:* While others cried, *The black-rod is at the door.* The ſpeaker was hurried to the chair; and the following motions were inſtantly made: That the alliance with France is a grievance; that the evil counſellors about the King are a grievance; that the Duke of Lauderdale is a grievance, and not fit to be truſted or employed. There was a general cry, *To the queſtion, to the queſtion:* But the uſher knocking violently at the door, the ſpeaker leapt from the chair, and the Houſe roſe in great confuſion.

4th of November.

DURING the interval, Shafteſbury, whoſe intrigues with the malecontent party were now become notorious, was diſmiſſed from the office of chancellor; and the ſeals were given to Sir Heneage Finch, under the title of lord-keeper. The teſt had incapacitated Clifford; and the white ſtaff was conferred on Sir Thomas Oſborne, ſoon after created Earl of Danby, a miniſter of ability, who had riſen by his parliamentary talents. Clifford retired into the country, and ſoon after died.

1674. 7th of February. THE Parliament had been prorogued, in order to give the Duke leiſure to conſummate his marriage; but the King's neceſſities ſoon obliged him again to aſſemble them; and by ſome popular acts he paved the way for the ſeſſions. But all his

efforts were in vain. The diſguſt of the Commons was fixed on foundations too deep to be eaſily removed. They began with applications for a general faſt; by which they intimated, that the nation was in a very calamitous condition: They addreſſed againſt the King's guards, which they repreſented as dangerous to liberty, and even as illegal, ſince they had never yet received the ſanction of Parliament: They took ſome ſteps towards eſtabliſhing a new and more rigorous teſt againſt popery: And what chiefly alarmed the court, they made an attack on the members of the cabal, to whoſe pernicious councils they juſtly imputed all their preſent grievances. Clifford was dead: Shafteſbury had made his peace with the country party, and was become their leader: Buckingham was endeavouring to imitate Shafteſbury; but his intentions were as yet known to very few. A motion was therefore made in the Houſe of Commons for his impeachment: He deſired to be heard at the bar; but expreſſed himſelf in ſo confuſed and ambiguous a manner as gave little ſatisfaction. He was required to anſwer preciſely to certain queries, which they propoſed to him. Theſe queries regarded all the articles of miſconduct abovementioned; and among the reſt, the following one ſeems remarkable. "By "whoſe advice was the army brought up to overawe the debates and reſolutions of "the Houſe of Commons?" This ſhews to what length the ſuſpicions of the Houſe were at that time carried. Buckingham, in all his anſwers, endeavoured to exculpate himſelf, and to load Arlington. He ſucceeded not in the former intention: The Commons voted an addreſs for his removal. But Arlington, who was on many accounts obnoxious to the Houſe, was attacked. Articles were drawn up againſt him; tho' the impeachment was never proſecuted. Chap. III. 1674.

THE King plainly ſaw, that he could expect no ſupply from the Commons for carrying on a war, which was ſo odious to them. He reſolved therefore to make a ſeparate peace with the Dutch, on the terms which they had propoſed, thro' the canal of the Spaniſh ambaſſador. With a cordiality, which, in the preſent diſpoſition on both ſides, was probably but affected, but which was obliging, he aſked advice of the Parliament. The Parliament unanimouſly concurred, both in thanks for this gracious condeſcenſion, and in their advice for peace. Peace was accordingly concluded. The honour of the flag was yielded by the Dutch in the moſt extenſive terms: A regulation of trade was agreed to: All poſſeſſions were reſtored to the ſame condition as before the war: The Engliſh planters in Surinam were allowed to remove at pleaſure: And the States agreed to pay to the King the ſum of 800,000 patacoons, near 300,000 pounds. Four days after the Parliament was prorogued, the peace was proclaimed in London, to the great joy of the people. Spain had declared, that ſhe could no longer ſtand neuter, if hoſtilities were continued againſt Holland; and a great decay of trade was foreſeen, in caſe a rupture ſhould Peace with Holland. 28th of February.

Chap. IV. 1674.

enſue with that nation. The proſpect of this loſs contributed very much to encreaſe the national averſion to the preſent war, and to enliven the joy for its concluſion.

THERE was in the French ſervice a large body of Engliſh to the number of 10,000 men, which had acquired great honour in every action, and had contributed greatly to the ſucceſſes of Lewis. Theſe troops, Charles ſaid he was bound by treaty not to recall; but he obliged himſelf to the States by a ſecret article not to allow them to be recruited. His partiality to France prevented a ſtrict execution of this article.

CHAP. IV.

Propoſterous ſchemes of the cabal.——Remonſtrances of Sir William Temple.——Campaign of 1674.*——A Parliament.——Paſſive obedience.——A Parliament.——Campaign of* 1675.*——Congreſs of Nimeguen.——Campaign of* 1676.*——Uncertain conduct of the King.——A Parliament.——Campaign of* 1677.*——Parliament's diſtruſt of the King.——Marriage of the Prince of Orange with the Lady Mary.——Plan of peace.——Negotiations.——Campaign of* 1678. *——Negotiations.——Peace of Nimeguen.——State of affairs in Scotland.*

1674. Propoſterous ſchemes of the cabal.

IF we conſider the projects of the famous Cabal, it will be hard to determine, whether the end, which they propoſed, was more blameable and pernicious, or the means, by which they were to effect it, more impolitic and imprudent. Tho' they might talk only of recovering or fixing the King's authority; their intention could be no other than that of making him abſolute: Since it was not poſſible to regain or maintain, in oppoſition to the people, any of thoſe powers of the crown, aboliſhed by late law or cuſtom, without ſubduing the people, and rendering the royal prerogative entirely uncontroulable. Againſt ſuch a ſcheme, they might foreſee, that every party of the nation would declare themſelves, not only the old parliamentary party, which, tho' they kept not in a body, were ſtill very numerous; but even the greateſt Royaliſts, who were indeed attached to Monarchy, but deſired to ſee it limited and reſtrained by law. It had appeared, that the preſent Parliament, tho' elected during the greateſt prevalence of the royal party, were yet very tenacious of popular privileges, and retained a conſiderable jealouſy of the

Crown,

Crown, even before they had received any juſt ground of ſuſpicion. The guards, therefore, together with a ſmall army, new levied, and undiſciplined, and compoſed too of Engliſhmen, were almoſt the only domeſtic reſources, which the King could depend on in the proſecution of theſe dangerous councils. Chap. IV. 1674.

The aſſiſtance of France was, no doubt, eſteemed by the Cabal a conſiderable ſupport in the ſchemes, which they were forming: But it is not eaſily conceived, that they could imagine themſelves capable of directing and employing an aſſociate of ſo domineering a character. They ought juſtly to have ſuſpected, that it would be Lewis's ſole intention, as it evidently was his intereſt, to raiſe incurable jealouſies between the King and his people; and that he ſaw how much a ſteddy uniform government in this iſland, whether free or abſolute, would form invincible barriers to his ambition. Should his aſſiſtance be demanded; if he ſent a ſmall ſupply, it would ſerve only to enrage the people, and render the breach altogether irreparable; if he furniſhed a great force, ſufficient to ſubdue the nation, there was little reaſon to truſt his generoſity, with regard to the uſe, which he would make of this advantage.

In all its other parts, the plans of the Cabal, it muſt be confeſſed, appear equally abſurd and incongruous. If the war with Holland was attended with great ſucceſs, and involved the ſubjection of the Republic, ſuch an acceſſion of force muſt fall to Lewis, not to Charles: And what hopes afterwards of reſiſting by the greateſt unanimity ſo mighty a monarch? How dangerous, or rather how ruinous to depend upon his aſſiſtance againſt domeſtic diſcontents? If the Dutch, by their own vigour, and the aſſiſtance of allies, were able to defend themſelves, and could bring the war to an equality; the French arms would be ſo employed abroad, that no conſiderable reinforcement could thence be expected to ſecond the King's enterprizes in England. And might not the project of over-awing or ſubduing the people be eſteemed, of itſelf, ſufficiently odious, without the aggravation of ſacrificing that State, which they regarded as their beſt ally, and with which, on many accounts, they were deſirous of maintaining the greateſt concord and ſtricteſt confederacy?

Whatever views likewiſe might be entertained of promoting by theſe meaſures the catholic religion; they could tend only to render all the other ſchemes abortive, and make them fall with inevitable ruin upon the projectors. The catholic religion, indeed, where it is eſtabliſhed, is more proper than the proteſtant for ſupporting an abſolute Monarchy; but would any man have thought of it as the means of acquiring arbitrary authority in England, where it was more deteſted than even ſlavery itſelf?

It muſt be allowed, that the difficulties, and even inconſiſtencies, attending the ſchemes of the Cabal, are ſo numerous and obvious, that one feels at firſt an inclination to deny the reality of thoſe ſchemes, and to ſuppoſe them entirely the chimeras of

Chap. IV. 1674. of calumny and faction. But the utter impoſſibility of accounting by any other hypotheſis for thoſe ſtrange meaſures embraced by the court, as well as for the numerous circumſtances, which accompanied them, obliges us to acknowlege (tho' there remains no direct evidence of it*) that a formal plan was laid for ſubverting the conſtitution, and that the King and the Miniſtry were in reality conſpirators againſt the people. What is moſt probable in human affairs is not always true; and a very minute circumſtance, overlooked in our ſpeculations, ſerves often to explain events, which may ſeem the moſt ſurprizing and unaccountable. Tho' the King poſſeſſed penetration and a ſound judgment, his capacity was chiefly fitted for ſmaller matters†, and the ordinary occurrences of life; nor had he application enough to carry his view to diſtant conſequences, or to digeſt and adjuſt any plan of political operations. As he ſcarce ever thought twice on any one ſubject, every appearance of advantage was apt to ſeduce him; and when he found his way obſtructed by unlooked-for difficulties, he readily turned aſide into the firſt path, where he expected more to gratify the natural indolence of his diſpoſition. To this verſatility or pliancy of genius, he himſelf was inclined to truſt; and he thought, that, after trying an experiment for enlarging his authority, he could eaſily, if it failed, return into the ordinary channel of government. But the ſuſpicions of the people, tho' they burſt not forth at once, were by this attempt rendered altogether incurable; and the more they reflected on the circumſtances, attending it, the more reſentment and jealouſy were they apt to entertain. They obſerved, that the King never had any favourite; that he was never governed by his miniſters,

* No treaty to this purpoſe with France ever appeared; and indeed, it is probable for the reaſons mentioned above, that no ſuch treaty was ever formally entered into: The King thought it ſufficient, that he joined his intereſt with that of the French Monarch, and he believed that this circumſtance alone would enable him to depend on that Prince's aſſiſtance in caſe of neceſſity. The abbot Primi indeed publiſhed at Paris the terms of a treaty to this purpoſe: But there are ſo many difficulties attending his narration, that it can have little weight with us: He ſpoke only by conjecture, or if he was ſupplied by the French Miniſters with materials, it was ſo much the intereſt of that court to embroil the King with his ſubject, that their account is very much to be ſuſpected. He ſays too, that it was expreſsly agreed to divide the United Provinces, to give the inland Provinces to Lewis, Zealand to Charles, Holland to the Prince of Orange. But this is very improbable on many accounts, particularly becauſe there is no appearance of ſuch a ſcheme in the French propoſals at Utrecht. We ſee plainly by them, that there was no concerted plan bewixt the two kings, and that they governed themſelves entirely by events. Father Orleans, who, it is ſaid, wrote from materials given him by K. James, is the moſt authentic teſtimony of the arbitrary deſigns of the court; and there is no doubt of the truth of his narration in this particular. But his hiſtory in other reſpects is ſo falſe and ſuperficial, that were it not ſupported by other arguments, it would in this narration have ſmall weight with us. But after all, the diſcourſe of Sir William Temple to the King after mentioned, which that Monarch does not oppoſe, is, next to the evidence of facts, the beſt proof of the King's intentions.

† Duke of Buckingham's character of King Charles II.

ſcarce

scarce even by his mistresses; and that he himself was the chief spring of all public councils. Whatever appearance, therefore, of a change might be pretended, they still suspected, that the same project was secretly in agitation; and they deemed no precaution too great to secure them against the pernicious consequences of such councils. Chap. IV. 1674.

The King, sensible of this jealousy, was inclined thenceforth not to trust altogether to his people; and tho' obliged to make a separate peace, he still kept up connexions with the French monarch. He apologized for deserting his ally, by representing to him all the real undissembled difficulties, under which he laboured; and Lewis, with the greatest complaisance and good humour, admitted the validity of his excuses. The Duke likewise, conscious that his principles and conduct had rendered him still more obnoxious to the people, maintained on his own account a separate correspondence with the French court, and entered into particular connexions with Lewis, which these Princes dignified with the name of friendship. The Duke had only in view the securing his succession, and favouring the Catholics; and it must be acknowleged to his praise, that, tho' his schemes were dangerous to the people, they gave the King no just ground of jealousy. A dutiful subject, and an affectionate brother, he knew no other rule of conduct but obedience; and the same unlimited submission, which afterwards, when King, he exacted of his people, he was ever willing, before he ascended the throne, to pay to his Sovereign.

As the King was at peace with all the world, and almost the only Prince in Europe who was placed in that agreeable situation, he thought proper to offer his mediation to the contending powers, in order to compose all their differences. France, willing to negotiate under so favourable a mediator, very readily accepted Charles's offer; but, it was apprehended, that, for a like reason, the allies would be inclined to refuse it. In order to give a new sanction to his councils, the King invited Temple from his retreat, and appointed him ambassador to the States. That wise minister, reflecting on the unhappy issue of his former undertakings, and the fatal turn of councils, which had occasioned it, resolved, before he embarked anew, to acquaint himself, as far as possible, with the real intentions of the King, in those popular measures, which he seemed to have again adopted. After blaming the dangerous schemes of the Cabal, which the King was desirous to excuse, he told his Majesty very plainly, that he would find it extremely difficult, if not absolutely impossible, to erect in England the same system of government and religion, which was established in France: That the universal bent of the nation was against both; and it required ages to change the genius and sentiments of a people: That many, who were at bottom indifferent in matters of religion, would yet oppose all alterations Remonstrance of Sir W. Temple.

on

Chap. IV. 1674.

on that head; becauſe they conſidered, that nothing but force of arms could ſubdue the reluctance of the people againſt popery; after which, they knew, there could be no ſecurity for civil liberty: That in France every circumſtance had long been adjuſted to that ſyſtem of government, and tended to its eſtabliſhment and ſupport: That the commonalty, being poor and diſpirited, were of no account; the nobility, engaged by the proſpect or poſſeſſion of numerous offices, civil and military, were entirely attached to the court; the eccleſiaſtics, retained by like motives, added the ſanction of religion to the principles of civil policy: That in England a great part of the landed property belonged to the yeomanry or middling gentry; the King had few offices to beſtow; and could not himſelf even ſubſiſt, much leſs maintain an army, except by the voluntary ſupplies of his Parliament: That if he had an army on foot, yet, if compoſed of Engliſhmen, they would never be prevailed on to promote ends, which the people ſo much feared and hated: That the Roman Catholics in England were not the hundredth part of the nation, and in Scotland, not the two hundredth; and it ſeemed againſt all common ſenſe to hope, by one part, to govern ninety-nine, who were of contrary ſentiments and diſpoſitions: And that foreign troops, if few, would tend only to inflame hatred and diſcontent; and how to raiſe and bring over at once, or to maintain many, it was very difficult to imagine. To theſe reaſonings Temple added the ſentiments of Gourville, a Frenchman, for whom, he knew, the King had entertained a great eſteem. "A King of England," ſaid Gourville, "who will be *the man of his people*, is the greateſt King in the "world: But if he will be any thing more, he is nothing at all." The King heard at firſt this diſcourſe with ſome impatience; but being a very dextrous diſſembler, he ſeemed moved at laſt, and laying his hand on Temple's, ſaid with an appearing cordiality, "And I will be the man of my people."

TEMPLE when he went abroad, ſoon found, that the ſcheme of mediating a peace was likely to prove abortive. The allies, beſides their jealouſy of the King's mediation, were extremely bent upon the continuance of the war. Spain had ſtipulated with Holland never to come to an accommodation, till all things in Flanders were reſtored to the condition, in which they had been left by the Pyrenean treaty. The Emperor had very high pretenſions in Alſace; and as the greateſt part of the empire joined in the alliance, it was hoped, that France, ſo much overmatched in force, would ſoon be obliged to ſubmit to the terms demanded of her. The States indeed, oppreſſed by exorbitant taxes, as well as checked in their commerce, were deſirous of peace, and had few or no claims of their own to retard it: But they could not in gratitude, nor even in good policy, abandon allies, to whoſe protection they had been ſo lately indebted for their ſafety. The Prince of Orange likewiſe, who had great influence in their counci's, was all on fire for military fame,

and

and was well pleaſed to be at the head of armies, from which ſuch mighty ſucceſſes were expected. Under various pretences, he eluded, during the whole campaign, the meeting with Temple; and after the troops were ſent into winter-quarters, he told that miniſter, in his firſt conference, that till greater impreſſion was made on France, reaſonable terms could not be hoped for; and it was therefore in vain to negotiate. Chap. IV. 1674.

THE ſucceſs of the campaign had not anſwered expectation. The prince of Orange, with a ſuperior army, was oppoſed in Flanders to the prince of Condé, and had hoped to penetrate into France by that quarter, where the frontier was then very feeble. After long endeavouring, tho' in vain, to bring Condé to a battle, he raſhly expoſed, at Seneffe, a wing of his army; and that active prince failed not at once to ſee and to ſeize the advantage. But this imprudence of the prince of Orange was amply compenſated by his behaviour in that obſtinate and bloody action which enſued. He rallied his diſmayed troops; he led them to the charge; he puſhed the veteran and martial troops of France; and he obliged the prince of Condé, notwithſtanding his age and character, to exert greater efforts, and to riſque his perſon more, than in any action, where, even during the heat of youth, he had ever commanded. After ſun-ſet, the action was continued by the light of the moon; and it was darkneſs at laſt, not the wearineſs of the combatants, which put an end to the conteſt, and left the victory undecided. "The "prince of Orange," ſaid Condé, with great candour and generoſity, "has acted "in every thing like an old captain, except venturing his life too like a young ſol-"dier." Oudenarde was afterwards inveſted by the prince of Orange; but he was obliged by the Imperial and Spaniſh generals to raiſe the ſiege on the approach of the enemy. He afterwards beſieged and took Grave; and at the beginning of winter, the armies broke up, with great diſcontents and complaints on all ſides. Campaign of 1674.

THE allies were not more ſucceſsful in other places. Lewis in a few weeks reconquered Franchecomté. In Alſace, Turenne diſplayed againſt a much ſuperior enemy, all that military ſkill, which had long rendered him the moſt renowned captain of his age and nation. By a ſudden and forced march, he attacked and beat at Sintzheim the duke of Lorrain and Caprara, general of the Imperialiſts. Seventy thouſand Germans pour into Alſace, and take up their quarters in that province. Turenne, who had retired into Lorrain, returns unexpectedly upon them. He attacks and defeats a body of the enemy at Mulhauſen. He chaces from Colmar the elector of Brandenburgh, who commanded the German troops. He gains a new advantage at Turkheim. And having diſlodged all the allies, he obliges them to repaſs the Rhine; full of ſhame for their multiplied defeats, and ſtill more, of anger and complaints againſt each other.

Chap. IV. 1674. In England, all these events were considered by the people with great anxiety and concern; tho' the King and his ministers affected great indifference with regard to them. Considerable alterations were about this time made in the English ministry. Buckingham was disgraced, who had long, by his wit and entertaining humour, possessed the King's favour. The chief ministers were Arlington, now lord chamberlain, and Danby the treasurer. Great hatred and jealousy took place between these ministers; and the King's affairs were somewhat disturbed by their quarrels. But Danby gained ground every day with the King, and Arlington declined in the same proportion. Danby was a frugal minister; and by his application and industry, he brought the revenue into tolerable order. He endeavoured so to conduct himself as to give offence to no party; and the consequence was, that he was able entirely to please none. He was always a declared enemy to the French alliance; but never possessed authority enough to overcome the prepossessions, which the King and the Duke retained towards it. It must be ascribed to the prevalence of that interest, that the Parliament was assembled so late this year; lest they should attempt to engage the King in measures against France, during the ensuing campaign. They met not till the approach of summer.

1675. 13th of April. A Parliament. Every step taken by the Commons discovered that ill humour and jealousy, to which the late open measures of the King, and his present secret attachments, gave such just foundation. They drew up a new bill against popery, and resolved to insert in it many severe clauses for the detection and prosecution of priests: They presented addresses a second time against Lauderdale; and when the King's answer was not satisfactory, they seemed still determined to persevere in their applications: An accusation was moved against Danby; but upon examining the several articles, it was not found to contain any just reasons of a prosecution; and was therefore dropped: They applied to the King for recalling his troops from the French service; and as he only promised, that they should not be recruited, they appeared to be much dissatisfied with his answer: A bill was brought in, making it treason to levy money without authority of Parliament: Another vacating the seats of such members as accepted of offices: Another to secure the personal liberty of the subject, and to prevent sending any one prisoner beyond sea.

That the court party might not be idle, during these attacks, a bill for a new test was introduced into the House of Peers by the earl of Lindesey. All members of either house, and all who possessed any office, were by this bill required to swear, that it was not lawful, upon any pretence whatsoever, to take arms against the King; that they abhorred the traiterous position of taking arms by his authority against his person, or against those commissioned by him; and that they will not at any time endeavour the alteration of the Protestant religion or of the established government either in church or state.

Passive obedience.

Chap. IV. 1675.

GREAT oppoſition was made to this bill; as might be expected from the preſent diſpoſition of the public. During ſeventeen days, the debates were carried on with much zeal; and all the reaſon and learning of both parties were diſplayed on this memorable occaſion. The queſtion, indeed, with regard to reſiſtance, was a point, which entered into the controverſies of the old parties, cavalier and round-head; as it made an eſſential part of the preſent diſputes between court and country. Few neuters were found in the nation: But among ſuch as could maintain a calm indifference, there prevailed ſentiments very wide of thoſe adopted by either party. Such perſons thought, that all public declarations of the legiſlature, either for or againſt reſiſtance, were equally impolitic, and could ſerve to no other purpoſe, than to ſignalize in their turn the triumph of one faction over another: That the ſimplicity retained in the antient laws of England, as well as in the laws of every other nation, ought ſtill to be preſerved, and was beſt calculated to prevent the extremes on either ſide: That the abſolute excluſion of reſiſtance, in all poſſible caſes, was founded on *falſe* principles; its expreſs admiſſion might be attended with *dangerous* conſequences; and there was no neceſſity of expoſing the public to either inconvenience: That if a choice muſt neceſſarily be made in the caſe, the preference of utility to truth in public inſtitutions was apparent; nor could the ſuppoſition of reſiſtance, beforehand and in general terms, be ſafely admitted in any government: That even in mixt monarchies, where that ſuppoſition ſeemed moſt requiſite, it was yet entirely ſuperfluous; ſince no man, on the approach of extraordinary neceſſity, could be at a loſs, tho' not directed by legal declarations, to find the proper remedy: That even thoſe, who might, at a diſtance and in ſcholaſtic reaſoning, exclude all reſiſtance, would yet hearken to the voice of nature, when evident ruin, both to themſelves and to the public, muſt attend a ſtrict adherence to their pretended principles: That the queſtion, as it ought thus to be entirely excluded from all determinations of the legiſlature, was, even among private reaſoners, little better than a diſpute of words: That the one party could not pretend, that reſiſtance ought ever to become a familiar practice; the other would ſurely have recourſe to it in great extremities: And thus the difference could only turn on the degrees of danger or oppreſſion, which could warrant this irregular remedy; a difference, which, in a general queſtion, it was impoſſible, by any language, preciſely to fix or determine.

THERE were many other abſurdities in this teſt, particularly that of ſwearing not to alter the government either in church or ſtate; ſince all human inſtitutions are liable to abuſe, and require continual amendments, which are, in reality, ſo many alterations. It is not indeed poſſible to make a law, which does not innovate, more or leſs, in the government. Theſe difficulties produced ſuch obſtructions to the

Chap. IV. 1675. bill, that it was carried only by two voices in the Houſe of Peers. All the popiſh Lords, headed by the earl of Briſtol, voted againſt it. It was ſent down to the Houſe of Commons, where it was likely to meet with a ſcrutiny ſtill more ſevere.

But a quarrel, which enſued between the two Houſes, prevented the paſſing all the bills, projected during the preſent ſeſſion. One Dr. Shirley, being caſt in a law-ſuit before the Chancery againſt Sir John Fag, a member of the Houſe of Commons, preferred a petition of appeal before the Houſe of Peers. The Lords received it, and ſummoned Fag to appear before them. He complained to the lower Houſe, who eſpouſed his cauſe. They not only maintained, that no member of their Houſe could be ſummoned before the Peers; and for this claim they could plead precedent: They alſo aſſerted, that the upper Houſe could receive no appeals from any court of equity; a pretenſion, which extremely retrenched the juriſdiction of the Peers, and which was contrary to the practice that had prevailed during this whole century. The Commons ſend Shirley to priſon: the Lords aſſert their powers. Conferences are tried; but no accommodation enſues. Four lawyers are ſent to the Tower by the Commons, for tranſgreſſing the order of the Houſe, and pleading in this cauſe before the Peers. The Peers denominate this arbitrary commitment a breach of the great charter, and order the lieutenant of the Tower to releaſe the priſoners: He refuſes obedience: They apply to the King, and deſire him to puniſh the lieutenant for his contempt. The King ſummons both Houſes; exhorts them to unanimity; and informs them, that the preſent quarrel had ariſen from the contrivance of his and their enemies, who propoſed by that means to force a diſſolution of the Parliament. His advice has no effect: The Commons continue as violent as ever; and the King, finding that no buſineſs could be finiſhed, at laſt prorogued the Parliament.

8th of June.

When the Parliament were again aſſembled, there appeared not in any reſpect a change of the diſpoſitions of either Houſe. The King deſired ſupplies, as well for the building of ſhips as for taking off anticipations, which lay upon his revenue. He even confeſſed, that he had not been altogether ſo frugal as he might have been, and as he reſolved to be for the future: Tho' he aſſerted, that to his great ſatisfaction he had found his expences by no means ſo exorbitant as ſome had repreſented them. The Commons took into conſideration the ſubject of ſupply. They voted 300,000 pounds for the building of ſhips; but they appropriated the ſum by very ſtrict clauſes. They paſſed a reſolution not to grant any ſupply for taking off the anticipations of the revenue *. This vote was carried

13th of October. A Parliament.

* Several hiſtorians have affirmed, that the Commons found, this ſeſſion, upon enquiry, that the King's revenue was 1,600,000 pounds a year, and that the neceſſary expence was but 700,000 pounds; and have appealed to the Journals for a proof. But there is not the leaſt appearance of this in the Journals; and the fact is impoſſible.

in

in a very full houſe, by a majority of four only: So nearly were the parties balanced. The quarrel was revived, to which Dr. Shirley's cauſe had given occaſion. The proceedings of the Commons diſcovered equal violence as during laſt ſeſſion. A motion was made in the Houſe of Peers, but rejected, for addreſſing the King to diſſolve the preſent Parliament. The King contented himſelf with proroguing them to a very long term. Whether theſe quarrels between the Houſes aroſe from contrivance or accident, was never certainly known. Each party might, according to their different views, eſteem themſelves either gainers or loſers by them. The Court might deſire to obſtruct all attacks from the Commons, by giving them other employment. The country party might deſire the diſſolution of a Parliament, which, notwithſtanding all diſguſts, ſtill contained too many royaliſts, ever to ſerve all the purpoſes of the malecontents.

Chap. IV. 1675.

22d of November.

Soon after the prorogation, there paſſed a tranſaction, which in itſelf is trivial, but tends ſtrongly to mark the genius of the Engliſh government, and of Charles's adminiſtration during this period. The liberty of the conſtitution, and the variety as well as violence of the parties, had begot a propenſity for political converſation; and as the coffee-houſes in particular were the ſcenes, where the conduct of the King and the miniſtry was canvaſſed with great freedom, a proclamation was iſſued to ſuppreſs theſe places of rendezvous. Such an act of power, during former reigns, would have been grounded entirely on the prerogative; and before the acceſſion of the houſe of Stuart, no ſcruple would have been entertained with regard to that exerciſe of authority. But Charles, finding doubts to ariſe upon his proclamation, had recourſe to the judges, who ſupplied him with a chicane of law, and that too a very frivolous one, by which he might juſtify his proceedings. The act, which ſettled the exciſe, gave the King a power to refuſe licences for retailing liquors to ſuch as could not find ſecurity for payment of the duties. But coffee was not a liquor liable to exciſe; and even this power of refuſing licences was very limited, and could not reaſonably be extended beyond the intention of the act. The King, therefore, obſerving the people to be much diſſatisfied, yielded to a petition of the coffee-men, who promiſed for the future to reſtrain all ſeditious diſcourſe in their houſes; and the proclamation was recalled.

This campaign proved more fortunate to the confederates than any other during this whole war. The French took the field in Flanders with a very numerous army; and the King himſelf ſerved as a volunteer under the prince of Condé. But notwithſtanding his mighty preparations, he could gain no advantages but the taking of Huy and Limbourg, places of no great conſequence. The prince of Orange with a conſiderable army oppoſed him in all his motions; and neither party

Campaign of 1675.

Chap. IV. 1675. was willing, without a viſible advantage, to hazard a general battle, which might be attended either with the entire loſs of Flanders on the one hand, or the invaſion of France on the other. Lewis, tired of ſo unactive a campaign, returned to Verſailles; and the whole ſummer paſſed in Flanders without any memorable event.

TURENNE commanded on the Upper Rhine, in oppoſition to his great rival, Montecuculi, general of the Imperialiſts. The object of the latter was to paſs the Rhine, to penetrate into Alſace, Lorraine, or Burgundy, and to fix his quarters in theſe provinces: The aim of the former was to guard the French frontiers, and to diſappoint all the ſchemes of his enemy. The moſt conſummate ſkill was diſplayed on both ſides; and if any ſuperiority appeared in Turenne's conduct, it was aſcribed chiefly to his greater vigour of body, by which he was enabled to inſpect all the poſts in perſon, and could on the ſpot take the juſteſt meaſures for the execution of his deſigns. By poſting himſelf on the German ſide of the Rhine, he not only kept Montecuculi from paſſing that river: He had alſo laid his plan in ſo maſterly a manner, that in a few days he muſt have obliged the Germans to decamp, and have gained a conſiderable advantage over them; when a period was put to his illuſtrious life, by a random ſhot, which ſtruck him on the breaſt, as he was taking a view of the enemy. The news excited ſorrow in King, court, and people, equalled by nothing which we meet with in hiſtory, but the lamentations of the Roman people for the death of Germanicus. The conſternation of the army was inexpreſſible. The French troops, who, a moment before, were aſſured of victory, now conſidered themſelves as totally vanquiſhed; and the Germans, who would have been glad to compound for a ſafe retreat, expected no leſs than the total deſtruction of the enemy. But de Lorges, nephew to Turenne, ſucceeded him in the command, and poſſeſſed a great ſhare of the genius and capacity of his predeceſſor. By his ſkilful operations, the French were enabled to repaſs the Rhine, without conſiderable loſs; and this retreat was eſteemed equally glorious with the greateſt victory. The deſperate valour of the Engliſh troops, who were placed in the rear, contributed greatly to ſave the French army. They had been ſeized with equal paſſion as the native troops of France, for their brave general, and fought with ardour to revenge his death on the Germans. The duke of Marlborough, then captain Churchill, here learned the rudiments of that art, which he afterwards practiſed with ſuch fatal ſucceſs againſt France.

THE prince of Condé left the army in Flanders under the command of Luxembourg; and carrying with him a conſiderable reinforcement, ſucceeded to Turenne's command. He defended Alſace from the Germans, who had paſſed the Rhine, and invaded that province. He obliged them firſt to raiſe the ſiege of Hagenau, then that of Saberne. He eluded all their attempts to bring him to a battle. And having dextrouſly kept them from eſtabliſhing themſelves in Alſace, he forced them, not-

notwithſtanding their ſuperiority of number, to repaſs the Rhine, and take up their winter quarters in their own country. Chap. IV. 1675.

After the death of Turenne, a detachment of the German army was ſent to the ſiege of Treves: An enterprize, in which the Imperialiſts, the Spaniards, the Palatine, the duke of Lorraine, and many other princes paſſionately concurred. The project was well concerted, and executed with vigour. Mareſchal Crequi, on the other hand, collected an army, and advanced with a view of forcing the Germans to raiſe the ſiege. They left a detachment to guard their lines, and under the command of the dukes of Zell and Oſnabrugh, marched in queſt of the enemy. At Conſarbric, they fell unexpectedly, and with ſuperior numbers, on Crequi, and put him to rout. He eſcaped with four attendants only; and throwing himſelf into Treves, reſolved by a vigorous defence to make amends for his former error or misfortune. The garriſon was brave, but not abandoned to that total deſpair, by which their governor was actuated. They mutinied againſt his obſtinacy; capitulated for themſelves; and becauſe he refuſed to ſign the capitulation, they delivered him a priſoner into the hands of the enemy.

'Tis remarkable, that this rout of Crequi is almoſt the only battle, which the French loſt at land, from Rocroi to Bleinheim, during the courſe of above ſixty years; and theſe too, full of bloody wars againſt potent and martial enemies: Their victories equal almoſt the number of years during that period. Such was the vigour and good conduct of that Monarchy! And ſuch too were the reſources and refined policy of the European nations, by which they were enabled to repair their loſſes, and ſtill to confine that mighty power nearly within its antient limits! A fifth part of theſe victories would have ſufficed in another period to have given to France the empire of Europe.

The Swedes had been engaged, by the payment of large ſubſidies, to take part with Lewis, and invade the territories of the elector of Brandenburgh in Pomerania. That elector, joined by ſome Imperialiſts from Sileſia, fell upon them with great bravery and ſucceſs. He ſoon beat them out of his part of that country, and purſued them into their own. He had an interview with the King of Denmark, who was now entered into the intereſts of the confederates, and reſolved to declare war againſt Sweden. Theſe princes concerted meaſures for puſhing the victory.

To all theſe misfortunes againſt foreign enemies were united ſome domeſtic inſurrections of the common people in Guienne and Brittany. Tho' ſoon ſuppreſſed, they divided the force and attention of Lewis. The only advantage, gained by the French, was at ſea. Meſſina in Sicily had revolted; and a fleet under the duke de Vivonne was diſpatched to ſupport the rebels. The Dutch had ſent a ſquadron

Chap. IV. 1675. dron to aſſiſt the Spaniards. A battle enſued, where de Ruyter was killed. This event alone was thought equivalent to a victory.

THE French, who, twelve years before, had ſcarce a ſhip of war in any of their harbours, had raiſed themſelves, by means of perſeverance and policy, to be, in their preſent force, tho' not in their reſources, the firſt maritime power in Europe. The Dutch, while in alliance with them againſt England, had ſupplied them with ſeveral veſſels, and had taught them the rudiments of the difficult art of ſhip building. The Engliſh next, when in alliance with them againſt Holland, inſtructed them in the method of fighting their ſhips, and of preſerving order in naval engagements. Lewis availed himſelf of every opportunity to aggrandize his people, while Charles, ſunk in indolence and pleaſure, neglected all the noble arts of government; or if, at any time, he rouſed himſelf from his lethargy, that induſtry, by reaſon of the unhappy projects which he embraced, was often more pernicious to the public than his inactivity itſelf. He was as anxious to promote the naval power of France, as if the ſafety of his crown had depended on it; and many of the plans executed in that kingdom, were firſt, 'tis ſaid *, digeſted and corrected by him.

1676. THE ſucceſſes of the allies had been conſiderable the laſt campaign; but the Spaniards and Imperialiſts well knew, that France was not yet ſufficiently broke, nor willing to ſubmit to the terms which they reſolved to impoſe upon her. Tho' they could not refuſe the King's mediation, and Nimeguen, after many difficulties, was at laſt fixed on as the place of congreſs; yet under one pretence or other, they ſtill delayed ſending their ambaſſadors, and no progreſs was made in the negotiation. Lord Berkeley, Sir William Temple, and Sir Lionel Jenkins, were the Engliſh miniſters at Nimeguen. The Dutch, who were impatient for peace, ſoon appeared: Lewis, who hoped to divide the allies, and who knew, that he himſelf could neither be ſeduced nor forced into a diſadvantageous peace, ſent ambaſſadors: The Swedes, who hoped to recover by treaty, what they had loſt by arms, were alſo forward to negotiate. But as theſe powers could not proceed of themſelves to ſettle terms, the congreſs hitherto ſerved merely as an amuſement to the public.

Congreſs of Nimeguen.

Campaign of 1676. IT was by the events of the campaign, not the conferences of negotiators, that the articles of peace were to be determined. The Spaniſh towns, ill fortified and worſe defended, made but a feeble reſiſtance to Lewis, who, by laying up magazines during the winter, was able to take the field early in the ſpring, before the forage could be found in the open country. In the month of April he laid ſiege to Condé, and took it by ſtorm in four days. Having ſent the duke of Orleans to beſiege Bouchaine, a ſmall but important fortreſs, he poſted himſelf ſo advantage-

* Welwood, Burnet, Coke.

ouſly

ouſly with his main army, as to hinder the confederates from relieving it, or fighting without diſadvantage. The Prince, in ſpite of all the difficulties of the ſeaſon, and the want of proviſions, came in ſight of the French army; but his induſtry ſerved to no other purpoſe than to render him a ſpectator of the ſurrender of Bouchaine. Both armies ſtood in awe of each other, and were unwilling to hazard an action, which might be attended with the moſt important conſequences. Lewis, tho' he wanted not perſonal courage, was very little enterprizing in the field; and being reſolved this campaign to reſt contented with the advantages, which he had ſo early acquired, he thought proper to entruſt his army to Mareſchal Schomberg, and retired himſelf to Verſailles. After his departure, the Prince of Orange laid ſiege to Maeſtricht; but meeting with an obſtinate reſiſtance, he was obliged, on the approach of Schomberg, who in the mean time had taken Aire, to raiſe the ſiege. He was incapable of yielding to adverſity or bending under misfortunes: But he began to foreſee, that, by the negligence and errors of his allies, the war in Flanders muſt neceſſarily have a very unfortunate iſſue. Chap. IV. 1676.

On the upper Rhine, Philipſbourgh was taken by the Imperialiſts. In Pomerania, the Swedes were ſo unſucceſsful againſt the Danes and Brandenburghers, that they ſeemed to be loſing apace all thoſe poſſeſſions, which, with ſo much valour and good fortune, they had acquired in Germany.

About the beginning of winter, the congreſs of Nimeguen was pretty full, and the plenipotentiaries of the Emperor and Spain, two powers ſtrictly conjoined by blood and alliance, at laſt appeared. The Dutch had threatened, if they delayed any longer, to proceed to a ſeparate treaty with France. In the conferences and negotiations, the diſpoſitions of the parties became every day more apparent.

The Hollanders, loaded with debts, and harraſſed with taxes, were deſirous of putting an end to a war; in which, beſides the inconveniencies attending all leagues, the weakneſs of the Spaniards, the diviſions and delays of the Germans, prognoſticated nothing but diſgrace and misfortune. Their commerce languiſhed; and what gave them ſtill greater anxiety, the commerce of England, by reaſon of her neutrality, flouriſhed extremely; and they were apprehenſive, leſt advantages, once loſt, would never thoroughly be regained. They had themſelves no farther motive for continuing the war, except to ſecure a good frontier to Flanders; but gratitude to their allies ſtill engaged them to try, whether another campaign might procure a peace, which would give general ſatisfaction. The Prince of Orange, urged by motives of honour, of ambition, and of animoſity againſt France, endeavoured to keep them ſteady to this reſolution. 1677.

Chap. IV. 1677.

THE Spaniards, not to mention the other incurable weakneſſes, into which their monarchy was fallen, were diſtracted with domeſtic diſſenſions between the parties of the Queen Regent and of Don John, natural brother to their young ſovereign. Tho' unable of themſelves to defend Flanders, they were reſolute not to conclude a peace, which would leave it expoſed to every aſſault or inroad: and while they made the moſt magnificent promiſes to the States, their real truſt was in the protection of England. They ſaw, that, if that ſmall but important territory was once ſubdued by France, the Hollanders, expoſed to ſo terrible a power, wou'd fall into dependance, and would endeavour, by ſubmiſſions, to ward off that deſtruction, to which a war in the heart of their State muſt neceſſarily expoſe them. They believed, that Lewis, ſenſible how much greater advantages he might reap from the alliance than from the ſubjection of the Republic, which muſt ſcatter its people and depreſs its commerce, would be contented with very moderate conditions, and would turn his enterprizes againſt his other neighbours. They thought it impoſſible but the people and Parliament of England, foreſeeing theſe obvious conſequences, muſt at laſt force the King to take part in the affairs of the continent, in which their intereſts were ſo deeply concerned. And they truſted, that even the King himſelf, on the approach of ſo great a danger, muſt open his eyes, and ſacrifice his prejudices, in favour of France, to the ſafety of his own kingdoms.

Uncertain conduct of the King.

BUT Charles here found himſelf entangled in ſuch oppoſite motives and engagements, as he had not reſolution enough to break, nor patience to unravel. On the one hand, he always regarded his alliance with France as a ſure reſource in caſe of any commotions among his own ſubjects; and whatever ſchemes he might have formed for enlarging his authority, or altering the eſtabliſhed religion, it was from that quarter alone he could expect aſſiſtance. He had actually, in ſecret, ſold his neutrality to France, and he received remittances of a million of livres a year, which was afterwards encreaſed to two millions; a conſiderable ſupply in the preſent embarraſſed ſtate of his revenue. And he dreaded, leſt the Parliament ſhould treat him as they had formerly done his father; and after they had engaged him in a war on the continent, ſhould take advantage of his neceſſities, and make him purchaſe ſupplies by ſacrificing his prerogative, and abandoning his miniſters.

ON the other hand, the cries of his people and Parliament, ſeconded by Danby, Arlington, and moſt of his miniſters, incited him to take part with the allies, and to correct the unequal balance of power in Europe. He might apprehend danger from oppoſing ſuch earneſt deſires: He might hope for large ſupplies, if he concurred with them: And however inglorious and indolent his diſpoſition, the renown of acting as arbiter of Europe, would probably at intervals rouze him from his lethargy, and move him to ſupport the high character, with which he was inveſted.

IT

Chap. IV. 1677.

It is worthy obſervation, that, during this period, the King was, by every one, abroad and at home, by France and by the allies, allowed to be the undiſputed arbiter of Europe; and no terms of peace, which he would have preſcribed, could have been refuſed by either party. Tho' France afterwards found means to reſiſt the ſame alliance, joined with England; yet was ſhe then obliged to make ſuch violent efforts as quite exhauſted her; and it was the utmoſt neceſſity, which puſhed her to find reſſources, far ſurpaſſing her own expectations. Charles was ſenſible, that, ſo long as the war continued abroad, he ſhould never enjoy eaſe at home, from the impatience and importunity of his ſubjects; yet could he not reſolve to impoſe a peace by openly conjoining himſelf with either party. Terms advantageous to the allies muſt loſe him the friendſhip of France: The contrary would enrage his Parliament. Between theſe views, he perpetually floated; and from his conduct, it is obſervable, that a careleſs, remiſs diſpoſition, agitated by oppoſite motives, is capable of as great inconſiſtencies as is incident even to the greateſt imbecillity and folly.

15th of February. A Parliament.

The Parliament was aſſembled; and the King made them a very plauſible ſpeech, in which he warned them againſt all differences among themſelves; expreſſed a reſolution to do his part for bringing their conſultations to a happy iſſue; and offered his conſent to any laws for the farther ſecurity of their religion, liberty, and property. He then told them of the decayed condition of the navy; and aſked money for repairing it: He informed them, that part of his revenue, the additional exciſe, was ſoon to expire: And he added theſe words, "You may at any "time ſee the yearly eſtabliſhed expence of the government, by which it will ap"pear, that the conſtant and unavoidable charge being paid, there will remain "no overplus towards anſwering thoſe contingencies, which may happen in all "kingdoms, and which have been a conſiderable burthen on me this laſt year."

Before the Parliament entered upon buſineſs, they were ſtopped by a doubt, which was ſtarted concerning the legality of their meeting. It had been enacted by an old law of Edward the Third, "That Parliaments ſhould be held once every "year, or oftner, if need be." The laſt prorogation had been longer than a year; and being ſuppoſed on that account illegal, it was pretended to be equivalent to a diſſolution. The conſequence ſeems by no means juſt; and beſides, a latter act, that which repealed the triennial law, had determined, that it was neceſſary to hold Parliaments only once in three years. Such weight, however, was put on this cavil, that Buckingham, Shafteſbury, Saliſbury, and Wharton, inſiſted ſtrenuouſly in the Houſe of Peers on the invalidity of the Parliament, and the nullity of all its future acts. For ſuch dangerous poſitions, they were ſent to the Tower, there to remain during the pleaſure of his Majeſty and the Houſe. Buckingham, Saliſbury, and

Chap. IV. 1677. Wharton, made ſubmiſſions, and were ſoon after releaſed. But Shaftesbury, more obſtinate in his temper, and deſirous of diſtinguiſhing himſelf by his adherence to liberty, ſought the remedy of law; and being rejected by the judges, he was at laſt, after a twelvemonth's impriſonment, obliged to make the ſame ſubmiſſions; upon which he was alſo releaſed.

THE Commons at firſt ſeemed to proceed with temper. They granted the ſum of 586,000 pounds, for building thirty ſhips; tho' they ſtrictly appropriated the money to that ſervice. Eſtimates were given in of the expence; but it was afterwards found that they fell ſhort near 100,000 pounds. They alſo voted, agreeably to the King's requeſt, the continuance of the additional exciſe for three years. This exciſe had been granted for nine years in 1668. Every thing ſeemed to promiſe a peaceable and an eaſy ſeſſion.

Campaign of 1677. BUT the Parliament was ſoon rouzed from this tranquillity by the news received from abroad. The French King had taken the field in the middle of February, and laid ſiege to Valenciennes, which he carried in a few days by ſtorm. He next inveſted both Cambray and St. Omer. The prince of Orange, alarmed with this progreſs, haſtily aſſembled an army, and marched to the relief of St. Omer. He was encountered by the French, under the duke of Orleans and Mareſchal Luxembourg. The prince poſſeſſed great talents for war; courage, activity, vigilance, patience; but ſtill he was inferior in genius to thoſe conſummate generals oppoſed to him by Lewis; and tho' he always found means to repair his loſſes, and to make head in a little time againſt the victors, he was during his whole life unſucceſsful. By a maſterly movement of Luxembourg, he was here beat, and obliged to retreat to Ypres. During the battle, he made the utmoſt efforts, by exhortation and example, to rally his diſmayed ſoldiers: He ſtruck one of the runaways acroſs the face with his ſword: "Raſcal," ſaid he, "I will "ſet a mark on you at preſent, that I may hang you afterwards." Cambray and St. Omer were ſoon ſurrendered to Lewis.

THIS ſucceſs, derived from ſuch exorbitant power and ſuch wiſe conduct, ſtruck a juſt terror into the Engliſh Parliament. They addreſſed the King, repreſenting the danger to which the kingdom was expoſed from the greatneſs of France, and deſiring, that his Majeſty, by ſuch alliances as he ſhould think fit, would both ſecure his own dominions and the Spaniſh Netherlands, and thereby quiet the fears of his people. The King, deſirous of eluding this application, which he conſidered as a kind of attack on his meaſures, replied in general terms, that he would uſe all means for the preſervation of Flanders, conſiſtent with the peace and ſafety of his kingdoms. This anſwer was an evaſion, or rather a real denial. The Commons, therefore, thought proper to be more particular. They entreated

him

him not to defer the entering into ſuch alliances as might attain that great end: And in caſe war with the French King ſhould be the reſult of his meaſures, they promiſed to grant him all the aids and ſupplies, which would enable him to ſupport the honour and intereſt of the nation. The King was alſo more particular in his reply. He told them, that the only way to prevent danger, was to put him in a condition to make preparations for their ſecurity. This meſſage was underſtood to be a demand of money. The Parliament accordingly empowered the King to borrow on the additional exciſe 200,000 pounds, at ſeven per cent: A very ſmall ſum indeed; but which they deemed ſufficient, with the ordinary revenue, to equip a good ſquadron, and thereby put the nation in ſecurity, till farther reſolutions were taken. Chap. IV. 1677.

But this conceſſion fell far ſhort of the King's expectations. He therefore informed them, that unleſs they granted him the ſum of 600,000 pounds upon new funds, it would not be poſſible for him, without expoſing the nation to manifeſt danger, to ſpeak or act thoſe things, which would anſwer the end of their ſeveral addreſſes. The Houſe took this meſſage into conſideration: But before they came to any reſolution, the King ſent for them to Whitehall, where he told them, upon the word of a King, that they ſhould not repent any truſt, which they would repoſe in him for the ſafety of his kingdoms; that he would not for any conſideration break credit with them, or employ their money to other uſes, than thoſe for which they intended it; but that he would not hazard, either his own ſafety or theirs, by taking any vigorous meaſures, or forming new alliances, till he was in a better condition, both to defend his ſubjects and offend his enemies. This ſpeech brought affairs to a ſhort iſſue. The King required them to truſt him with a large ſum: He pawned his royal word for their ſecurity: They muſt either run the riſque of loſing their money, or endanger thoſe alliances they had projected, and at the ſame time declare to all the world the higheſt diſtruſt of their Sovereign.

Parliament's diſtruſt of the King.

But there were many reaſons, which determined the Houſe of Commons to put no truſt in his Majeſty. They conſidered, that the pretence of danger was obviouſly groundleſs; while the French were oppoſed by ſuch powerful alliances on the continent, while the King was maſter of a good fleet at ſea, and while all his ſubjects were ſo heartily united in oppoſition to foreign enemies. That the only juſtifiable reaſon, therefore, of the King's backwardneſs, was not the apprehenſion of danger from abroad, but a diffidence, which he might perhaps have entertained of his Parliament; leſt, after engaging him in foreign alliances, for carrying on a war, they ſhould take advantage of his neceſſities, and extort from him conceſſions dangerous to his royal dignity. That this Parliament, by their paſt conduct, had

Chap. IV. 1677. had given no foundation for ſuch ſuſpicions, and were ſo far from purſuing any ſiniſter ends, that they had granted ſupplies for the firſt Dutch war; for maintaining the triple league, tho' concluded without their advice; even for carrying on the ſecond Dutch war, which was entered into contrary to their opinion, and contrary to the manifeſt intereſts of the nation. That on the other hand, the King had, by former meaſures, excited very reaſonable jealouſies in his people, and did with a bad grace require at preſent their truſt and confidence. That he had not ſcrupled to demand ſupplies for maintaining the triple league, at the very moment he was concerting meaſures for breaking it, and had accordingly employed to that purpoſe the ſupplies, which he had obtained by thoſe deluſive pretenſions. That his union with France, during the war againſt Holland, muſt have been founded on projects the moſt dangerous to his people; and as the ſame union was ſtill ſecretly maintained, it might juſtly be feared, that the ſame projects were not yet entirely abandoned. That the King could not ſeriouſly intend to proſecute vigorous meaſures againſt France; ſince he had ſo long remained entirely unconcerned during ſuch obvious dangers, and, till prompted by his Parliament, whoſe proper buſineſs it was not to take the lead in thoſe parts of adminiſtration, had ſuſpended all his activity. That if he really meant to enter into a cordial union with his people, he would have taken the firſt ſtep, and have endeavoured, by putting truſt in them, to reſtore that confidence, which he himſelf, by his raſh councils, had firſt violated. That it was in vain to aſk ſo ſmall a ſum as 600,000 pounds, in order to ſecure him againſt the future attempts of the Parliament; ſince that ſum muſt ſoon be exhauſted by a war with France, and he muſt again fall into that dependance, which was become in ſome degree eſſential to the conſtitution. That if he would form the neceſſary alliances, that ſum or a greater would inſtantly be voted; nor could there be any reaſon to dread, that the Parliament would immediately deſert meaſures, in which they were engaged by their honour, their inclination, and the public intereſt. That the real ground, therefore, of the King's refuſal was neither apprehenſion of danger from foreign enemies, nor jealouſy of parliamentary encroachments; but a deſire of obtaining the money, which he intended, notwithſtanding his royal word, to employ to other purpoſes. And that by uſing ſuch diſhonourable means to ſo ignoble an end, he rendered himſelf ſtill more unworthy the confidence of his people.

THE Houſe of Commons were now regularly divided into two parties, the court and the country. Some were inliſted in the court-party by offices, nay a few by bribes ſecretly given them; a ſcandalous practice firſt begun by Clifford, a pernicious miniſter: But great number were attached merely by inclination; ſo far

far as they eſteemed the meaſures of the Court agreeable to the intereſts of the nation. Private views and faction had likewiſe drawn many into the country party: But there were alſo many, who had no other object than the public good. Theſe diſintereſted members on both ſides fluctuated between the parties; and gave the ſuperiority ſometimes to the court, ſometimes to the oppoſition *. In the preſent emergence, a general diſtruſt of the King prevailed; and the Parliament reſolved not to hazard their money, in expectation of alliances, which, they believed, were never intended to be formed. Inſtead of granting the ſupply, they voted an addreſs, wherein "they beſought his Majeſty to enter into a "league, offenſive and defenſive, with the States General of the United Pro- "vinces, againſt the growth and power of the French King, and for the pre- "ſervation of the Spaniſh Netherlands; and to make ſuch other alliances with the "confederates as ſhould appear fit and uſeful to that end." They ſupported their advice with reaſons; and promiſed ſpeedy and plentiful ſupplies, for preſerving his Majeſty's honour and the ſafety of the public. The King pretended the higheſt anger at this addreſs, which he repreſented as a dangerous encroachment upon his prerogative. He reproved the Commons in very ſevere terms; and ordered them immediately to be adjourned. Chap. IV. 1677. 8th of May.

It is certain, that this was the critical moment, when the King both might with eaſe have preſerved the balance of power in Europe, which it has ſince coſt this iſland an infinite profuſion of blood and treaſure to reſtore, and might by perſeverance have at laſt regained, in ſome tolerable meaſure, after all paſt errors, the confidence of his people. This opportunity being neglected, the wound became incurable; and notwithſtanding *his* momentary appearances of vigour againſt France and popery, and *their* momentary inclinations to rely on his faith; *he* was ſtill believed to be at bottom engaged in the ſame intereſt, and *they* ſoon relapſed into diſtruſt and jealouſy. The ſecret memoirs of that reign, which have ſince been publiſhed †, prove beyond a doubt, that the King had at this time concerted meaſures with France, and had no intention to enter into a war in favour of the allies. He had entertained no view, therefore, even when he pawned his ROYAL WORD to his people, than to procure a grant of money; and he truſted, that, while he eluded their expectations, he could not afterwards want pretences for palliating his conduct.

* Temple's Memoirs, vol. i. p. 458.

† Such as the letters, which paſſed betwixt Danby and Montague, the King's ambaſſador at Paris; Temple's Memoirs, and his Letters. In theſe laſt, we ſee that the King never made any propoſals of terms but what were advantageous to France, and the prince of Orange believed them to have been always concerted with the French ambaſſador. Vol. i. p. 439.

Chap. IV. 1677.

NEGOTIATIONS meanwhile were carried on between France and Holland, and an eventual treaty was concluded; that is, all their differences were adjuſted, provided they could afterwards ſatisfy their allies on both ſides. But this work, tho' in appearance difficult, ſeemed to be extremely forwarded, by farther bad ſucceſſes on the part of the confederates, and by the great impatience of the Hollanders; when a new event happened, which promiſed a more proſperous iſſue to the quarrel with France, and revived extremely the hopes of all the Engliſh, who underſtood the intereſts of their country.

THE King ſaw, with regret, the violent diſcontents, which prevailed in the nation, and which ſeemed every day to augment upon him. Strongly deſirous by his natural temper to be eaſy himſelf, and to make every body elſe eaſy, he ſought expedients to appeaſe thoſe mumurs, which, as they were very diſagreeable for the preſent, might in their conſequences prove extremely dangerous. He knew, that, during the late war with Holland, the malecontents at home had made applications to the prince of Orange; and if he continued ſtill to neglect the prince's intereſts, and to thwart the inclinations of his people, he apprehended leſt their common complaints ſhould cement a laſting union between them. He ſaw, that the religion of the Duke inſpired the nation with very diſmal apprehenſions; and tho' he had obliged his brother to allow the young princeſſes to be educated in the proteſtant faith, ſomething farther, he thought, was requiſite, in order to ſatisfy the nation. He entertained therefore propoſals for marrying the prince to the lady Mary, the eldeſt princeſs, and heir apparent to the crown (for the duke had no male iſſue). And he hoped, by ſo tempting an offer, to engage him entirely in his intereſts. A peace he propoſed to make; ſuch as would ſatisfy France, and ſtill preſerve his connections with that crown: And he intended to ſanctify it by the approbation of the prince, whom he found to be extremely revered in England, and reſpected throughout all Europe. All the reaſons for this alliance were ſeconded by the ſolicitations of Danby, and alſo of Temple, who was at that time in England: And Charles at laſt granted permiſſion to the prince, when the campaign ſhould be over, to pay him a viſit.

10th of October.

THE King very graciouſly received his nephew at Newmarket. He would have entered immediately upon buſineſs; but the prince deſired firſt to be acquainted with the lady Mary: And he declared, that, contrary to the uſual ſentiments of perſons of his rank, he placed a great part of happineſs in domeſtic ſatisfaction, and would not, upon any conſideration of intereſt or politics, match himſelf with a perſon diſagreeable to him. He was introduced to the princeſs, whom he found in the bloom of youth, and extremely amiable both in her perſon and her humour. The King now thought, that he had a double tye upon him, and might ſafely make

make account of his compliance with every propoſal: He was ſurprized to find the Prince decline all diſcourſe of buſineſs, and refuſe to concert any terms for the general peace, till his marriage ſhould be finiſhed. He well foreſaw, he ſaid, from the ſituation of affairs, that his allies were likely to have hard terms; and he never would never expoſe himſelf to the reproach of having ſacrificed their intereſts to promote his own purpoſes. Charles ſtill believed, notwithſtanding the cold, ſevere manner of the prince, that he would abate of this rigid punctilio of honour; and he protracted the time, hoping by his own inſinuation and addreſs, as well as by the allurements of love and ambition, to win him to compliance. One day, Temple found the prince in very bad humour, repenting that he had ever come to England, and reſolute in a few days to leave it: But before he went, the King, he ſaid, muſt chuſe the terms, on which they ſhould hereafter live together: He was ſure it muſt be like the greateſt friends or the greateſt enemies: And he deſired Temple to inform his maſter next morning of theſe intentions. Charles was ſtruck with this menace, and foreſaw how the prince's departure would be interpreted by the people. He reſolved, therefore, immediately to yield with a good grace; and having paid a compliment to his nephew's honeſty, he told Temple, that the marriage was concluded, and deſired him to inform the Duke of it, as of an affair already reſolved on. The duke ſeemed ſurprized; but yielded a prompt obedience; which, he ſaid, was his conſtant maxim, to whatever he found to be the King's pleaſure. No meaſure during this reign gave ſuch general ſatisfaction. All parties ſtrove who ſhould moſt applaud it. And even Arlington, who had been kept out of the ſecret, told the prince, "That ſome things, good in themſelves, "were ſpoiled by the manner of doing them, as ſome things bad were mended "by it; but he would confeſs, that this was a thing ſo good in itſelf, that the "manner of doing it could not ſpoil it."

23d of October. Marriage of the prince of Orange with the lady Mary.

THIS marriage was a great ſurprize to Lewis, who, being accuſtomed to govern every thing in the Engliſh Court, now found ſo important a ſtep taken, not only without his conſent, but without his knowlege or participation. A conjunction of England with the allies, and a vigorous war in oppoſition to French ambition, were the conſequences immediately expected, both abroad and at home: But to check theſe ſanguine expectations, the King, a few days after the marriage, prolonged the adjournment of the Parliament, from the third of December to the fourth of April. This term was too late for granting ſupplies, or making preparations of war; and could be choſen by the King for no other reaſon, but as an attonement to France for his conſent to the marriage.

THE King, however, entered into conſultations with the prince, together with Danby and Temple, concerning the terms which it would be proper to require of

Plan of peace.

Chap. IV. 1677.

France. After ſome debate, it was agreed, that France ſhould reſtore Lorrain to the Duke; with Tournay, Valenciennes, Condé, Aeth, Charleroi, Courtray, Oudenarde, and Binche to Spain, in order to form a good frontier for Flanders. The prince inſiſted much, that Franchecomté ſhould likewiſe be reſtored; and Charles thought, that becauſe he had patrimonial eſtates of great value in that province, and deemed his property more ſecure in the hands of Spain, he was engaged by ſuch views to be obſtinate in that point: But the prince very generouſly declared, that to procure but one good town to the Spaniards in Flanders, he would willingly abandon all thoſe poſſeſſions. As the King ſtill inſiſted on the impoſſibility of wreſting Franchecomté from Lewis, the prince was obliged to ſubmit.

NOTWITHSTANDING this conceſſion to France, the projected peace was favourable to the allies; and it was a ſufficient indication of vigour in the King, that he had given his aſſent to it. He farther agreed to ſend over a miniſter inſtantly to Paris, in order to propoſe theſe terms. This miniſter was to enter into no treaty: He was to allow but two days for the acceptance or refuſal of the terms: Upon the expiration of theſe, he was immediately to return: And in caſe of refuſal, the King promiſed immediately to enter into the confederacy. To carry ſo imperious a meſſage, and ſo little expected from the Engliſh Court, Temple was the perſon pitched on, whoſe declared averſion to the French intereſt was not likely to make him fail of vigour and promptitude in the execution of his commiſſion.

BUT Charles next day felt a relenting in this aſſumed vigour. Inſtead of Temple, he diſpatched the earl of Feverſham, a creature of the Duke's, and a Frenchman by birth: And he ſaid, that the meſſage being harſh in itſelf, it was needleſs to aggravate it by a diſagreeable meſſenger. The prince left London; and the King, at his departure, aſſured him, that he never would abate in the leaſt point of the ſcheme concerted, and would enter into war with Lewis, if he refuſed it.

Negotiations.

LEWIS received the meſſage with ſeeming gentleneſs and complacency. He told Feverſham, that the King of England well knew, that he might always be maſter of the peace; but ſome of the towns in Flanders, it ſeemed very hard to demand, eſpecially Tournay, upon whoſe fortifications ſuch immenſe ſums had been expended: He would therefore take ſome ſhort time to conſider of an anſwer. Feverſham ſaid, that he was limited to two days ſtay: But when that time was elapſed, he was prevailed with to ſtay ſome few days longer; and he came away at laſt without any poſitive anſwer. Lewis ſaid, that he hoped his brother would not break with him for one or two towns: And with regard to them too, he would ſend orders to his ambaſſador at London, to treat with the King himſelf.

Charles

Charles was ſoftened by the ſoftneſs of France; and the blow was thus artfully eluded. The French ambaſſador, Barillon, owned, at laſt, that he had orders to yield all except Tournay, and even to treat about ſome equivalent for that fortreſs, if the King abſolutely inſiſted upon it. The prince was gone, who had given ſpirit to the Engliſh Court; and the Negotiations began to draw out into meſſages and returns from Paris. Chap. IV. 1677.

By intervals, however, the King could rouze himſelf, and ſhow ſtill ſome firmneſs and reſolution. Finding that affairs were not likely to come to any concluſion with France, the Parliament, notwithſtanding the long adjournment, was aſſembled on the fifteenth of January; a very unuſual meaſure, and capable of giving alarm to the French Court. Temple was ſent for to the council, and the King told him, that he intended he ſhould go to Holland, in order to form a treaty of alliance with the States; and that the purpoſes of it ſhould be, like the triple league, to force both France and Spain to accept of the terms propoſed. Temple was ſorry to find this act of vigour qualified by ſuch a regard to France, and by ſuch an appearance of indifference of neutrality between the parties. He told the King, that the reſolution agreed on, was to begin the war in conjunction with all the confederates, in caſe of no direct and immediate anſwer from France: That this meaſure would ſatisfy the prince, the allies, and the people of England; advantages which could not be expected from ſuch an alliance with Holland alone: That France would be diſobliged, and Spain likewiſe; nor would the Dutch be ſatisfied with ſuch a faint imitation of the triple league, a meaſure concerted when they were equally at peace with both parties. For theſe reaſons, Temple declined the employment; and Laurence Hyde, ſecond ſon to chancellor Clarendon, was ſent in his place.

The prince of Orange was ſurpriſed to obſerve ſuch ſymptoms of weakneſs and vigour conjoined in the Engliſh councils. He was reſolved, however, to make the beſt of a meaſure, which he did not approve; and as Spain ſecretly conſented, that her ally ſhould form a league, which was ſeemingly directed againſt her as well as France, but which was to fall only on the latter, the States concluded the treaty in the terms propoſed by the King. 1678. 6th of January.

Meanwhile, the Engliſh Parliament met, after ſome new delays; and the King was aſtoniſhed, that, notwithſtanding all the reſolute meaſures, which, he thought, he had taken, great diſtruſt and jealouſy and diſcontent were apt, at intervals, ſtill to prevail among the members. Tho' in his ſpeech he had allowed, that a good peace could no longer be expected from negotiation, and aſſured them, that he was reſolved to enter into war for that purpoſe; the Com- 28th of January.

Chap. IV. 1678.

mons did not forbear to insert in their reply several very harsh and even unreasonable clauses. Upon his reproving them, they seemed penitent, and voted, that they would assist his Majesty in the prosecution of the war. A fleet of ninety sail, an army of thirty thousand men, and a million of money were also voted. Great difficulties were made by the Commons with regard to the army, which the House, judging by past measures, believed to be intended more against the liberties of England than against the progress of the French Monarch. To this perilous situation had the King reduced both himself and the nation. In all debates, severe speeches were made, and were received with a seeming approbation: The Duke and the treasurer began to be apprehensive of impeachments: Many motions against the King's ministers were lost by a very small majority: The Commons appointed a day to consider the state of the kingdom with regard to popery: And they even went so far as to vote, that, how urgent soever the occasion, they would lay no farther charge on the people, till secured against the prevalence of the catholic party. In short, the Parliament were impatient for war whenever the King seemed averse to it; but grew suspicious of some sinister design so soon as he complied with their requests, and seemed to enter into their measures.

THE King was enraged at this last vote: He reproached Temple with his popular notions, as he termed them; and asked him how he thought the House of Commons could be trusted for carrying on the war, should it be entered on, when in the very commencement they made such declarations. The uncertainties indeed of Charles's conduct were so multiplied, and the jealousies on both sides so incurable, that even those who approached nearest the scene of action could not determine, whether the King ever seriously meant to enter into war, or whether, if he did, the House of Commons would not have taken advantage of his necessities, and made him purchase supplies by a great sacrifice of his authority *.

THE King of France knew how to avail himself of all the advantages, which these distractions afforded him. By his emissaries, he represented to the Dutch the uncertainty of their dependance on England; where an indolent King, averse to all war, especially with France, and irresolute in his measures, was actuated only by the uncertain breath of a factious Parliament. To the aristocratic faction, he remarked the danger of the Prince's alliance with the Royal Family of England, and revived their apprehensions, lest, in imitation of his father, who had been honoured with the same alliance, he should violently attempt to enlarge his authority, and enslave his native country. In order to second these motives with some farther terrors, he himself took the field very early in the spring; and after threatening Luxembourg, Mons, and Namur, he sat down suddenly before Ghent and Ypres, and in

Campaign of 1678.

* Temple, vol. I. p. 461.

a few

a few weeks made himſelf maſter of both places. This ſucceſs gave great alarm to the Hollanders, who were no wiſe ſatisfied with the conduct of England, or with the ambiguous treaty lately concluded; and it quickened all their paces towards an accommodation. Chap. IV. 1678.

IMMEDIATELY after the Parliament had voted the ſupply, the King began to inliſt forces; and ſuch was the ardour of the Engliſh for a war with France, that an army of above 20,000 men, to the aſtoniſhment of all Europe, were compleated in a few weeks. Three thouſand men, under the duke of Monmouth, were ſent over to ſecure Oſtend: Some regiments were recalled from the French ſervice: A fleet was fitted out with great diligence: And a quadruple alliance was projected between England, Holland, Spain, and the Emperor.

BUT theſe vigorous meaſures received a ſudden damp from a paſſionate addreſs of the lower Houſe; in which they juſtified all their paſt proceedings, that had given diſguſt to the King; deſired to be acquainted with the meaſures taken by him, prayed him to diſmiſs evil counſellors; and named in particular the duke of Lauderdale, on whoſe removal they ſtrenuouſly inſiſted. The King told them, that their addreſs was ſo extravagant, that he was not willing ſpeedily to give it the anſwer, which it deſerved. And he began again to lend an ear to the propoſals of France, who offered him great ſums of money, if he would conſent to their making an advantageous peace with the allies.

TEMPLE, tho' preſſed by the King, refuſed to have any concern in ſo diſhonourable a negotiation: But he informs us, that the King ſaid, there was one article propoſed, which ſo incenſed him, that, as long as he lived, he would never forget it: Sir William goes no farther, but the editor of his works, the famous Dr. Swift, ſays, that the French, before they would agree to any payment, required as a preliminary, that the King ſhould engage never to keep above 8000 regular troops in his three kingdoms. Charles broke into a paſſion. "Cod's-fiſh," ſaid he, his uſual oath, "Does my brother of France think to ſerve me thus? Are all his "promiſes to make me abſolute maſter of my people come to this? Or does he "think *that* a thing to be done with eight thouſand men?" Negotiations.

VAN BEVERNING was the Dutch ambaſſador at Nimeguen, a man of great authority with the States. He was very eager for peace, and was perſuaded, that the reluctance of the King and the jealouſies of the Parliament would for ever diſappoint the allies in their hopes of ſuccour from England. Orders were ſent him by the States to go to the French King at Ghent, and concert the terms of a general treaty, as well as procure a preſent truce for ſix weeks. The terms agreed on were much worſe for the Spaniards, than thoſe planned by the King and the Prince of Orange. Six towns, ſome of them of no great importance, were to be reſtored to them:

Chap. IV. 1678. them: But Ypres, Condé, Valenciennes, and Tournay, in which conſiſted the chief ſtrength of their frontier, were to remain with France.

GREAT murmurs aroſe in England, when it was known, that Flanders was to be left in ſo defenceleſs a condition. The chief complaints were levelled againſt the King, who, by his concurrence at firſt, by his favour afterwards, and by his delays at laſt, had raiſed the power of France to ſuch an enormous height, that it threatened the general liberties of Europe. Charles, uneaſy under theſe imputations, dreading the conſequence of loſing the affections of his ſubjects, and perhaps diſguſted with the ſecret article propoſed by France, began to wiſh heartily for war, which, he hoped, would have reſtored him to his antient popularity.

AN opportunity very unexpectedly offered itſelf for his diſplaying theſe new diſpoſitions. While the ambaſſadors at Nimeguen were concerting the terms of a general treaty, the marquis de Balbaces, the Spaniſh ambaſſador, aſked the ambaſſadors of France, at what time France intended to reſtore the ſix towns in Flanders. They made no difficulty of declaring, that the King, their maſter, being obliged to ſee an entire reſtitution made to the Swedes of all they had loſt in the war, could not evacuate theſe towns, till that Crown had received ſatisfaction; and that this detention of places was the only means to induce the Princes of the North to accept of the peace.

THE States immediately gave the King intelligence of a pretenſion, which might be attended with ſuch dangerous conſequences. The King was both ſurprized and angry. He immediately diſpatched Temple to concert with the States vigorous
16th of July. meaſures for oppoſing France. Temple in ſix days concluded a treaty, by which Lewis was obliged to declare within ſixteen after the date, that he would preſently evacuate the towns: And in caſe of his refuſal, Holland was engaged to continue the war, and England immediately to declare againſt France, in conjunction with the whole confederacy.

ALL theſe warlike meaſures were ſo little ſeconded by the Parliament, where even the French miniſters were ſuſpected of carrying on ſome intrigues, that the Commons renewed their former jealouſies againſt the King, and voted the army immediately to be diſbanded. The King by a meſſage repreſented the danger of diſarming before peace was concluded; and he recommended to their conſideration, whether he could honourably recall his forces from thoſe towns in Flanders, which had put themſelves under his protection, and which had at preſent no other means of defence. The Commons agreed to prolong the term with regard to theſe forces. Every thing indeed in Europe wore the appearance of war. France had poſitively declared, that ſhe would not evacuate the towns before the requiſite ceſſion was made

made to Sweden; and her honour ſeemed now engaged to ſupport that declaration. Spain and the Empire, extremely diſguſted with the terms of peace, impoſed by Holland, ſaw with pleaſure the proſpect of a powerful ſupport from the new reſolutions of Charles. Holland itſelf, encouraged by the Prince of Orange and his party, was not diſpleaſed to find that the war would be renewed on more equal terms. The allied army under that Prince was approaching towards Mons, then blockaded by France. A conſiderable body of Engliſh forces under the duke of Monmouth, were ready to join him. Chap. IV. 1678.

CHARLES uſually paſſed a great part of his time in the women's apartments, particularly thoſe of the dutcheſs of Portſmouth; where, among other gay company, he often met with Barillon, the French ambaſſador, a man of polite converſation, who was admitted into all the amuſements of that inglorious, but agreeable, monarch. It was the charms of this ſauntering eaſy life, which, during the latter part of his life, attached Charles to his miſtreſſes. By the inſinuations of Barillon and the dutcheſs of Portſmouth, an order was, in an unguarded hour, procured, which inſtantly changed the face of affairs in Europe. One du Cros, a French fugitive monk, was ſent to Temple, directing him to apply to the Swediſh ambaſſador, and perſwade him not to inſiſt on the conditions required by France, but to ſacrifice to general peace thoſe intereſts of Sweden. Du Cros, who had ſecretly received inſtructions from Barillon, publiſhed every where in Holland the commiſſion, with which he was intruſted; and all men took the alarm. It was concluded, that Charles's ſudden alacrity for war was as ſuddenly extinguiſhed, and that no ſteady meaſures could ever be taken with England. The King afterwards, when he ſaw Temple, treated this important matter in raillery; and ſaid laughing, that the rogue du Cros had outwitted them all.

THE negotiations however at Nimeguen ſtill continued; and the French ambaſſadors ſpun out the time, till the morning of the fatal day, which, by the late treaty between England and Holland, was to determine, whether a ſudden peace or a long war was to have place in Chriſtendom. The French ambaſſadors came then to Van Beverning, and told him, that they had received orders to conſent to the evacuation of the towns, and immediately to conclude and ſign the peace. Van Beverning might have refuſed compliance, becauſe it was now impoſſible to procure the conſent and concurrence of Spain; but he had entertained ſo juſt an idea of the fluctuations in the Engliſh councils, and was ſo much alarmed by the late commiſſion given to du Cros, that he deemed it fortunate for the Republic to conclude on any terms a dangerous war, where they were likely to be very ill ſupported. The papers were inſtantly drawn up, and ſigned by the miniſters of France and Holland be- 1ſt of Auguſt.

Chap. IV. 1678.

between eleven and twelve o' clock at night. By this treaty, France ſecured the poſſeſſion of Franchecomté, together with Cambray, Aire, St. Omer, Valenciennes, Tournay, Ypres, Bouchane, Caſſel, &c. and reſtored to Spain only Charleroi, Courtrai, Oudenard, Athe, Ghent, and Limbourg.

NEXT day Temple received an expreſs from England, which brought the ratifications of the treaty lately concluded with the States, with orders immediately to proceed to the exchange of them. Charles was now returned to his former inclinations for war with France.

VAN BEVERNING was loudly exclaimed againſt by the ambaſſadors of the allies at Nimeguen, eſpecially thoſe of Brandenburg and Denmark, whoſe maſters were obliged by the treaty to reſtore all their acquiſitions. The miniſters of Spain and the Emperor were ſullen and diſguſted; and all men hoped, that the States, importuned and encouraged by continual ſollicitations from England, would diſavow their ambaſſador, and renew the war. The Prince of Orange even took a very extraordinary ſtep, in order to engage them to that meaſure; or perhaps to give vent to his own ſpleen and reſentment. The day after ſigning the peace at Nimeguen, he attacked the French army at St. Dennis near Mons; and gained ſome advantage over Luxembourg, who reſted ſecure on the faith of the treaty, and concluded the war to be finiſhed. The Prince knew, at leaſt had reaſon to believe, that the peace was ſigned, tho' it had not been formally notified to him; and he here ſacrificed wantonly, without a proper motive, the lives of many brave men on both ſides, who fell in this ſharp and well conteſted action.

HYDE was ſent over with a view of perſuading the States to diſavow Van Beverning; and the King promiſed, that England, if ſhe might depend on Holland, would immediately declare war, and would purſue it, till France was reduced to reaſonable conditions. Charles at preſent went farther than words. He hurried on the embarkation of his army for Flanders, and all his preparations wore a hoſtile appearance. But the States had been too often deceived to truſt him any longer. They ratified the treaty ſigned at Nimeguen; and all the other Powers of Europe were at laſt, after much clamour and many diſguſts, obliged to accept of the terms preſcribed to them.

Peace of Nimeguen.

LEWIS had now reached the height of that glory, which ambition can afford. His miniſters and negotiators appeared as much ſuperior to thoſe of all Europe in the cabinet, as his generals and armies had been experienced in the field. A ſucceſsful war had been carried on againſt an alliance, compoſed of the greateſt Potentates in Europe. Conſiderable conqueſts had been made, and his territories enlarged on every ſide. An advantageous peace was at laſt concluded, where he had given the law. The allies were ſo enraged againſt each other, that they were not likely

likely to cement ſoon in any new confederacy. And thus he had, during ſome years, a real and near proſpect of attaining the Monarchy of Europe, and of exceeding the Empire of Charlemagne, perhaps equalling that of antient Rome. Had England continued much longer in the ſame condition, and under the ſame government, it is not eaſy to conceive, that he could have failed of his purpoſe. Chap. IV. 1678.

In proportion as theſe circumſtances exalted the French, they excited indignation among the Engliſh, whoſe animoſity, rouzed by terror, mounted to a great height againſt that rival nation. Inſtead of taking the lead in the affairs of Europe, Charles, they thought, had, contrary to his own honour and intereſt, acted a part entirely ſubſervient to the common enemy; and in all his meaſures, had either no project at all, or ſuch as was highly criminal and dangerous. While Spain, Holland, the Emperor, the Princes of Germany, called aloud on England to lead them to victory and to liberty, and conſpired to raiſe her to a ſtation more glorious than ſhe had ever before attained; her King, from mean pecuniary views, had ſecretly ſold his alliance to Lewis, and was bribed into an intereſt contrary to that of his people. His active ſchemes in conjunction with France were highly pernicious; his neutrality was equally ignominious; and the jealous, refractory behaviour of the Parliament, tho' in itſelf dangerous, was the only remedy for ſo many greater ills, with which the public, from the miſguided councils of the King, was ſo nearly threatened. Such were the diſpoſitions of men's minds at the concluſion of the peace of Nimeguen: And theſe diſpoſitions very naturally prepared the way for the events which followed.

We muſt now return to the affairs of Scotland, which we left in ſome diſorder, after the ſuppreſſion of the inſurrection in 1666. The King, who at that time endeavoured to render himſelf popular in England, adopted like meaſures in Scotland; and he entruſted the government chiefly into the hands of Tweddale, and Sir Robert Murray, men of prudence and moderation. Theſe miniſters made it their principal occupation to compoſe the religious differences, which ran very high, and for which ſcarce any modern nation, but the Dutch, had as yet found out the proper remedy. As rigour and reſtraint had failed in Scotland, a ſcheme of *comprehenſion* was tried; by which it was propoſed to diminiſh greatly the authority of biſhops, to aboliſh their negative voice in the eccleſiaſtical courts, and to leave them little more than the right of precedency among the preſbyters. But the zealots entertained great jealouſy againſt this ſcheme. They remembered, that it was by ſuch gradual ſteps, that King James endeavoured to introduce epiſcopacy. Should the ears and eyes of men be once reconciled to the name and habit of biſhops, the whole power of the function, they dreaded, would ſoon follow: The leaſt communication with unlawful and antichriſtian inſtitutions they eſteemed dangerous and criminal: State of affairs in Scotland.

Chap. IV. 1678. *Touch not, taſte not, handle not*; this cry went out amongſt them: And the King's miniſters at laſt perceived, that they ſhould proſtitute the dignity of government, by making advances, to which the malecontents were determined not to correſpond.

THE next project adopted was that of *indulgence*. In proſecution of this ſcheme, the moſt popular of the expelled preachers, without requiring any terms of ſubmiſſion to the eſtabliſhed religion, were ſettled in vacant churches; and ſmall ſallaries of about twenty pounds a year were offered to the reſt, till they ſhould otherwiſe be provided for. Theſe laſt refuſed the King's bounty, which they conſidered as the wages of a criminal ſilence. Even the former ſoon repented their compliance. The people, who had been accuſtomed to hear them rail againſt their ſuperiors, and preach to the times, as they called it, deemed their ſermons languid and ſpiritleſs, when deprived of theſe ornaments. Their uſual gifts, they thought, had left them, on account of their ſubmiſſion, which was ſtigmatized as eraſtianiſm. They gave them the appellation, not of miniſters of Chriſt, but of *the King's curates*; as the clergy of the eſtabliſhed church were commonly denominated the *biſhops curates*. The preachers themſelves returned in a little time to their former practices, by which they hoped to regain their former dominion over the minds of men; a ſuperiority, which no one, who has ever poſſeſſed it, will willingly, by any conſideration, be prevailed on to relinquiſh. The conventicles multiplied daily in the Weſt: The clergy of the eſtabliſhed church were inſulted: The laws were neglected: The Covenanters even met daily in arms at their places of worſhip: And tho' they uſually diſperſed themſelves after religious ſervice, yet the government took a juſt alarm at ſeeing men, who were ſo entirely governed by their ſeditious teachers, dare to ſet authority at defiance, and during a time of full peace, to put themſelves in a military poſture.

THERE was here, it is apparent, in the political body, a diſeaſe very dangerous and inveterate; and the government had tried every remedy, but the true one, to allay and correct it. An unlimited toleration, after ſects have diffuſed themſelves and are ſtrongly rooted, is the only expedient, which can allay their fervour, and make the civil union acquire a ſuperiority above religious diſtinctions. But as the operations of this regimen are commonly very gradual, and at firſt imperceptible, vulgar politicians are apt, for that reaſon, to have recourſe to more haſty and more dangerous remedies. It is obſervable too, that theſe non-conformiſts in Scotland neither offered nor demanded toleration; but laid claim to an entire ſuperiority, and to the exerciſe of extreme rigour againſt their adverſaries. The Covenant, which they idolized, was a perſecuting, as well as a ſeditious band of confederacy: And the government, inſtead of treating them like madmen, who ſhould be ſoothed, and flattered, and deceived into tranquillity, thought themſelves intitled to a rigid obedience,

dience, and were too apt, from a miſtaken policy, to retaliate upon the Diſſenters, who had erred from the ſpirit of enthuſiaſm. Chap. IV. 1678.

AMIDST theſe diſturbances, a new Parliament was aſſembled at Edinburgh *; and Lauderdale was ſent down commiſſioner. The zealous preſbyterians, who were the chief patrons of liberty, were too obnoxious to reſiſt the meaſures of the government; and the tyde ſtill ran ſtrong in favour of Monarchy. The commiſſioner had ſuch influence as to get two acts paſſed, which were of the utmoſt conſequence to the civil and eccleſiaſtical liberties of the kingdom. By the one, it was declared, that the ſettling all things with regard to the external government of the church was a right of the crown: That whatever related to eccleſiaſtical meetings, matters, and perſons, were to be ordered, according to ſuch directions as the King ſhould ſend to his Privy Council: And that theſe, being publiſhed by them, ſhould have the force of laws. The other act regarded the militia, which the King by his own authority had two years before eſtabliſhed, in place of the army which was broke. By this act, the militia was ſettled to the number of 22,000 men, who were to be conſtantly armed, and regularly diſciplined. And it was farther enacted, that theſe troops ſhould be held in readineſs to march into England, Ireland, or any part of the King's dominions, for any cauſe in which his Majeſty's authority, power, or greatneſs, was concerned; on receiving orders, not from the King, but the Privy Council of Scotland.

LAUDERDALE boaſted extremely of his ſervices in procuring theſe two laws: The King by the former was rendered abſolute maſter of the church; and might legally, even by an edict, re-eſtabliſh, if he thought proper, the Catholic religion in Scotland: By the latter, he ſaw a powerful force ready at his call. He had even the advantage of being able to diſguiſe his orders under the name of the Privy Council; and in caſe of failure in his enterprizes, could, by ſuch a pretence, apologize for his conduct to the Engliſh Parliament. But in proportion as theſe laws were agreeable to the King, they gave alarm to the Engliſh Commons, and were the chief cauſe of thoſe redoubled attacks, which they made upon Lauderdale. Theſe attacks, however, ſerved only to fortify him in his intereſt with the King; and tho' it is probable, that the Scots militia, during the divided ſtate of that kingdom, would, if matters had come to extremity, have been of very little ſervice againſt England; yet did Charles regard the credit of it as a conſiderable ſupport to his authority: And Lauderdale, by degrees, became the prime or rather ſole miniſter for Scotland. The natural indolence of the King diſpoſed him to give entire confidence to a man, who had ſo far extended the royal prerogative, and who was ſtill diſpoſed to render it abſolutely uncontroulable.

* 19th of October, 1669.

Chap. IV. 1678.

In a ſubſequent ſeſſion of the ſame Parliament *, a ſevere law was enacted againſt conventicles. Ruinous fines were impoſed both on the preachers and hearers, even if the meetings had been in houſes; but field conventicles were ſubjected to the penalty of death and confiſcation of goods: Four hundred marks Scots were offered as a reward to thoſe who ſhould ſeize the criminals; and they were indemnified for any ſlaughter, which they ſhould commit in the execution of ſuch an undertaking. And as it was found difficult to get evidence againſt theſe conventicles, however numerous, it was enacted by another law, that, whoever, being required by the Council, refuſed to give information upon oath, ſhould be puniſhed by arbitrary fines, by impriſonment, or by baniſhment to the plantations. Thus all perſecution naturally, or rather neceſſarily, adopts the iniquities, as well as rigors, of the inquiſition. What a conſiderable part of the ſociety conſider as their duty and honour, and the others are apt to regard with compaſſion and indulgence, can by no other expedient be ſubjected to ſuch ſevere penalties as the natural ſentiments of mankind appropriate only to the greateſt crimes.

Tho' Lauderdale found this ready compliance in the Parliament, a party was formed againſt him, of which duke Hamilton was the head. Next ſeſſion †, this party had become conſiderable: And many were diſguſted, as well with Lauderdale's inſolence, as with the grievances, under which the nation laboured. The firſt Parliament of this reign had acknowledged, that the regulation of all foreign trade was an inherent branch of royal prerogative. In conſequence of this important conceſſion, the King, by an act of council, had prohibited the importation of brandy and all ſpirits; and the execution of this edict was committed to lord Elphinſtone, a relation of Lauderdale's. Elphinſtone made no other uſe of this power than to ſell licences to the merchants, by which expedient he gained great ſums to himſelf, tho' to the loſs of the revenue, as well as of the kingdom. A monopoly of ſalt had alſo been granted to lord Kincardine; and a new impoſition on tobacco had been beſtowed in gift upon Sir John Nicolſon, for the benefit of himſelf and ſome friends of Lauderdale. When theſe grievances were complained of, the commiſſioner, who was deſirous to prevent all parliamentary inquiry, choſe rather to redreſs them in council; and he accordingly cancelled the three patents complained of. But as farther grievances were mentioned, and a general repreſentation of the ſtate of the kingdom was propoſed to be made by Parliament; Lauderdale oppoſed, as a barrier, the Lords of Articles, without whoſe conſent, he ſaid, no motion could be received. Men were now convinced of their imprudence in reſtoring that inſtitution, which rendered all national aſſemblies in a manner uſeleſs for the redreſs of grievances.

* 28th of July, 1670. † 11th of June, 1673.

Hamilton,

HAMILTON, Tweddale, and others went to London, and applied to the King, who was alone able to correct the abuſes of Lauderdale's adminiſtration. But even their complaints to him might be dangerous; and all approaches of truth to the Throne were barred by the ridiculous law againſt leaſing-making; a law, which ſeems to have been extorted by the antient nobles, in order to protect their own tyranny, oppreſſion, and injuſtice. Great precautions, therefore, were uſed by the Scots malecontents in their repreſentations to the King; but no redreſs was obtained. Charles loaded them with careſſes, and continued Lauderdale in his authority.

A VERY bad, at leaſt a ſevere uſe was made of this authority. The Privy Council diſpoſſeſſed twelve gentlemen or noblemen of their houſes*; and theſe houſes were converted into ſo many garriſons, eſtabliſhed for the ſuppreſſion of conventicles. The nation, it was pretended, was really, on account of theſe religious aſſemblies, in a ſtate of war; and by the antient law, the King, in ſuch an emergence, was empowered to place a garriſon in any houſe, where he ſhould judge it expedient.

IT were endleſs to recount every act of violence and arbitrary authority exerciſed during Lauderdale's adminiſtration. All the lawyers were put from the bar, nay, baniſhed by the King's order twelve miles from Edinburgh, and by that means the whole juſtice of the kingdom was ſuſpended for a year; till theſe lawyers were brought to declare it as their opinion, that all appeals to Parliament were illegal. A letter was procured from the King, for turning out twelve of the chief magiſtrates of Edinburgh, and declaring them incapable of all public office; tho' their only crime had been their want of compliance with Lauderdale. The boroughs of Scotland have a privilege of meeting once a year by their deputies, in order to conſider the ſtate of trade, and make bye-laws for its regulation: In this convention, a petition was voted, complaining of ſome late laws, which obſtructed commerce; and praying the King, that he would impower his commiſſioner, in the next ſeſſion of Parliament, to give his aſſent to the repealing them. For this preſumption, as it was called, ſeveral of the members were fined and impriſoned. One More, a member of Parliament, having moved in the Houſe, that, in imitation of the Engliſh Parliament, no bill ſhould paſs except after three readings, he was for this pretended offence immediately ſent to priſon by the commiſſioner.

THE private deportment of Lauderdale was as inſolent and provoking as his public adminiſtration was violent and tyrannical. Juſtice likewiſe was univerſally

* In 1675.

per-

Chap. IV. 1678.

perverted by faction and intereſt: And from the great rapacity of that duke, and ſtill more of his dutcheſs, all offices and favours were openly put to ſale. No one was allowed to approach the Throne who was not dependant on him; and no remedy could be hoped for or obtained againſt his manifold oppreſſions. The caſe of Mitchel ſhows, that this miniſter was as much devoid of truth and honour as of lenity and juſtice.

Mitchel, was a deſperate fanatic, and had entertained a reſolution of aſſaſſinating Sharpe, archbiſhop of St. Andrews, who, by his former apoſtacy and ſubſequent rigour, had rendered himſelf extremely odious to all men, eſpecially to the Covenanters. In the year 1668, Mitchel fired a piſtol at the primate, as he was ſitting in his coach; but the biſhop of Orkney, ſtepping into the coach, happened to ſtretch out his arm, which intercepted the ball, and was much ſhattered by it. This happened in the principal ſtreet of the city; but ſo generally was the archbiſhop deteſted, that the aſſaſſin was allowed peaceably to walk off; and having turned a ſtreet or two, and thrown off a wig, which diſguiſed him, he immediately appeared in public, and remained altogether unſuſpected. Some years afterwards, Sharpe remarked a man, who ſeemed to eye him very eagerly; and being ſtill anxious, leſt an attempt of aſſaſſination ſhould be renewed, he ordered him to be ſeized and examined. Two loaded piſtols were found upon him; and as he was now concluded to be the author of the former attempt, Sharpe promiſed, that, if he would confeſs his guilt, he ſhould be diſmiſſed without any puniſhment. Mitchel was ſo credulous as to believe him; but was immediately produced before the council by the faithleſs primate. The council, having no proof againſt him, but hoping to involve the whole body of Covenanters in this odious crime, very ſolemnly renewed the promiſe of pardon, if he would make a full diſcovery; and it was a great diſappointment to them, when they found, upon his confeſſion, that only one perſon, who was now dead, had been acquainted with his bloody reſolutions. Mitchel was next carried before a court of judicature, and required to renew his confeſſion; but being apprehenſive, that, tho' a pardon for life had been promiſed him, other corporal puniſhments might ſtill be inflicted, he refuſed compliance; and was ſent back to priſon. He was next examined before the council, under pretence of his being concerned in the inſurrection at Pentland; and tho' no proof appeared againſt him, he was put to the queſtion, and contrary to the moſt obvious principles of equity, was urged to accuſe himſelf. He endured the torture with ſingular reſolution, and continued obſtinate in the denial of a crime, of which, it is believed, he really was not guilty. Inſtead of obtaining his liberty, he was ſent to the Baſs, a very high rock, ſurrounded by the ſea; at this time converted into a ſtate priſon, and full of the unhappy

Covenanters. He there remained in great miſery, loaded with irons; till the year 1677, when it was reſolved by ſome new examples to ſtrike a freſh terror into the perſecuted, but ſtill obſtinate enthuſiaſts. Mitchel was then brought before a court of judicature, and put upon his trial, for an attempt to aſſaſſinate an archbiſhop and a privy counſellor. His former confeſſion was pleaded againſt him, and was proved by the teſtimony of the duke of Lauderdale, lord commiſſioner, lord Hatton his brother, deputy treaſurer, the earl of Rothes, chancellor, and the primate himſelf. Mitchel, beſides maintaining that the Privy Council was no court of judicature, and that a confeſſion before them was not judicial, aſſerted, that he had been engaged to make that confeſſion by a ſolemn promiſe of pardon which had been given him. The four privy counſellors denied upon oath, that any ſuch promiſe had ever been given. The priſoner then deſired, that the council books might be produced in court; and even offered a copy of that day's proceedings to be read; but the Privy Counſellors maintained, that, after they had made oath, no farther proof could be admitted, and that the books of Privy Council contained the King's ſecrets, which were on no account to be divulged. They were not probably aware, when they ſwore, that the clerk having engroſſed the promiſe of pardon in the narrative of Mitchel's confeſſion, the whole minute had been ſigned by the chancellor, and that the proofs of their perjury were by that means committed to record. Tho' the priſoner was condemned, Lauderdale was ſtill inclined to pardon him; but the unrelenting primate rigorouſly inſiſted upon his execution, and ſaid, that, if aſſaſſins remained unpuniſhed, his life muſt be expoſed to perpetual danger. Mitchel was accordingly executed at Edinburgh in January 1678. Such a complication of cruelty and treachery ſhews the character of thoſe miniſters to whom the King had entruſted the government of Scotland. Chap. IV. 1678.

LAUDERDALE'S adminiſtration, beſides the iniquities ariſing from the extreme violence of his temper, and the ſtill greater iniquities inſeparable from all projects of perſecution, was attended with other circumſtances, which engaged him into ſevere and arbitrary meaſures. An abſolute government was to be introduced, which on its commencement is often moſt rigorous; and tyranny was ſtill obliged, for want of military power, to cover itſelf under an appearance of law; a ſituation which rendered it extremely aukward in its motions, and by provoking oppoſition, extended the fury of its oppreſſions.

THE rigours, exerciſed againſt conventicles, inſtead of breaking the ſpirit of the fanatics, had tended only, as is uſual, to render them more obſtinate in their errors, to increaſe the fervour of their zeal, to link them more cloſely with each other, and to enflame them againſt the eſtabliſhed hierarchy. The Commonalty, almoſt every where in the South, particularly in the Weſtern counties, frequented conventicles

Chap. IV. 1678. ticles without reſerve; and the gentry, tho' they themſelves commonly abſtained from theſe illegal places of worſhip, connived at this irregularity in their inferiors. In order to engage the former on the ſide of the perſecutors, a bond or contract was by order of the Privy Council tendered to the landlords in the Weſt, by which they were to engage for the good behaviour of their tenants; and in caſe any tenant frequented a conventicle, they were to ſubject themſelves to the ſame fine as could by law be exacted from the delinquent. It was ridiculous to give ſanction to laws by voluntary contracts: It was iniquitous to make one man anſwerable for another's conduct: It was illegal to impoſe ſuch hard conditions upon men, who had no wiſe offended. For theſe reaſons, the greateſt part of the gentry refuſed to ſign thoſe bonds; and Lauderdale, enraged at this oppoſition, endeavoured to break their ſpirit by expedients, which were ſtill more unuſual and more arbitrary.

THE law enacted againſt conventicles, had called them ſeminaries of rebellion. This expreſſion, which was nothing but a flouriſh of rhetoric, Lauderdale and the Privy Council were willing to underſtand in a literal ſenſe; and becauſe the weſtern counties abounded in conventicles, tho' otherwiſe in the moſt profound peace, they pretended, that theſe counties were in a ſtate of actual war and rebellion. They made therefore an agreement with ſome highland chieftains, to call out their clans to the number of 8000 men: to theſe they joined the guards, and the militia of Angus: And they ſent the whole to live on free quarter upon the lands of ſuch as had refuſed the bonds illegally required of them. The obnoxious counties were the moſt populous and moſt induſtrious in Scotland: The highlanders were the people the moſt diſorderly and the leaſt civilized. It is eaſy to imagine the havoc and deſtruction, which enſued. A multitude, not accuſtomed to military diſcipline, averſe to the reſtraint of laws, trained up in rapine and violence, were let looſe amidſt thoſe whom they were taught to regard as enemies to their Prince and to their religion. Nothing eſcaped their ravenous hands: By hardſhips, and ſometimes by tortures, men were obliged to diſcover their concealed wealth. Neither age, nor ſex, nor innocence afforded protection: And the gentry, finding that even thoſe who had been moſt compliant, and who had ſubſcribed the bonds, were alike expoſed to the rapacity of thoſe barbarians, confirmed themſelves ſtill more in the obſtinate reſolution of refuſing them. The voice of the nation was raiſed againſt this enormous outrage; and after two months free quarter, the highlanders were at laſt ſent back to their hills, loaded with the ſpoils and execrations of the Weſt.

THOSE who had been engaged to ſubſcribe the bonds, could find no ſecurity but by turning out ſuch tenants as they ſuſpected of an inclination to conventicles, and thereby depopulating their eſtates. To encreaſe the miſery of theſe unhappy tenants the council enacted, that none ſhould be received any where, or allowed a habitation, who

who brought not a certificate of his conformity from the pariſh miniſter. That the obſtinate and refractory might not eſcape farther perſecution, a new device was fallen upon. By the law of Scotland, any man, who ſhould go before a magiſtrate, and ſwear that he thought himſelf in danger from another, might obtain a writ of *law-burrows*, as it was called; by which the latter was bound, under the penalty of impriſonment and outlawry, to find ſecurity for his good behaviour. Lauderdale entertained the abſurd notion of making the King ſue for writs of law-burrows againſt his ſubjects. On this pretence, the refuſers of the bonds were ſummoned to appear before the council, and were required to bind themſelves, under the penalty of two years rent, neither to frequent conventicles themſelves, nor allow their family and tenants to be preſent at thoſe unlawful aſſemblies. Thus chicanery was joined to tyranny; and the Majeſty of the King, inſtead of being exalted, was in reality proſtituted; as if he were obliged to ſeek the ſame ſecurity, which one neighbour might require of another. Chap. IV. 1678.

It was an old law, but ſeldom executed, that a man, who was accuſed of any crime, and did not appear, in order to take his trial, might be *intercommuned*, that is, he might be publicly outlawed; and whoever afterwards, either on account of buſineſs, relation, nay charity, had the leaſt intercourſe with him, was ſubjected to the ſame penalties as could by law be inflicted on the criminal himſelf. A great many writs of intercommuning were now iſſued againſt the hearers and preachers in conventicles; and by this ſevere and even abſurd law, crimes and guilt went on multiplying in a geometrical proportion. Where laws themſelves are ſo violent, it is no wonder that an adminiſtration ſhould be tyrannical.

Leſt the cry of an oppreſſed people ſhould reach the Throne, the council forbad, under high penalties, every nobleman or gentleman of landed property to leave the kingdom. A ſevere edict, eſpecially where the Sovereign himſelf reſided in a foreign country. Notwithſtanding this act of council, Caſſilis firſt, afterwards Hamilton and Tweddale, went to London, and laid their complaints before the King. Theſe violent proceedings of Lauderdale were very oppoſite to the natural temper of Charles; and he immediately iſſued orders for diſcontinuing the bonds and the writs of law-burrows. But as he was commonly little touched with what lay at a diſtance, he entertained not the proper indignation againſt thoſe who had abuſed his authority. Even while he retracted theſe oppreſſive meaſures, he was prevailed with to avow and praiſe them in a letter, which he wrote to the privy council. This proof of confidence might fortify the hands of the miniſtry, but the King ran a manifeſt hazard of loſing the affections of his ſubjects, by not permitting even thoſe who were deſirous of it, to diſtinguiſh between him and their oppreſſors.

Chap. IV. 1678.

IT is reported *, that Charles, after a full hearing of the debates concerning Scots affairs, ſaid, "I perceive that Lauderdale has been guilty of many bad things "againſt the people of Scotland; but I cannot find, that he has acted any thing "contrary to my intereſt." A ſentiment moſt unworthy of a ſovereign!

DURING the abſence of Hamilton and the other diſcontented Lords, the King allowed Lauderdale to ſummon a convention of eſtates at Edinburgh. This convention, beſides granting ſome money, beſtowed applauſes on all Lauderdale's adminiſtration, and in their addreſſes to the King, expreſſed the higheſt contentment and ſatisfaction. But theſe inſtances of complaiſance had the contrary effect in England from what was expected by the contrivers of them. All men there concluded, that in Scotland the very voice of liberty was totally ſuppreſſed; and that, by the prevalence of tyranny, grievances were ſo rivetted, that it was become dangerous even to mention them, or complain to the Prince, who alone was capable of redreſſing them. From the ſlavery of the neighbouring kingdom, they inferred the arbitrary diſpoſitions of the King; and from the violence, with which ſovereign power was there exerciſed, they apprehended the miſeries, which might enſue to themſelves, upon their loſs of liberty. If perſecution by a proteſtant church could be carried to ſuch extremities, what might be dreaded from the prevalence of popery, which had ever, in all ages, made open profeſſion of exterminating by fire and ſword every oppoſite ſect or communion? and if the firſt approaches towards unlimited authority were ſo tyrannical, ho wdiſmal its final eſtabliſhment; when all dread of oppoſition ſhall at laſt be removed by mercenary armies, and all ſenſe of ſhame by long and inveterate habit?

* Burnet.

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

The popiſh plot.——Oates's Narrative.——And character.——Coleman's letters.——Godfrey's murder.——General conſternation.——The Parliament.——Zeal of the Parliament.——Bedloe's narrative.——Accuſation of Danby.———His impeachment.———Diſſolution of the long Parliament.——Its character.——Trial of Coleman.——Of Ireland.——New elections.——Duke of Monmouth.——Duke of York retires to Bruſſels.——New Parliament.——Danby's impeachment.——Popiſh plot.——New council.——Limitations on a popiſh ſucceſſor.——Bill of excluſion.——Habeas corpus bill.——Prorogation and diſſolution of the Parliament——Trial and execution of the five Jeſuits.——And of Langhorne.——Wakeman acquitted.——State of affairs in Scotland.——Battle of Bothwel bridge.

THE Engliſh nation, ever ſince the fatal league with France, had entertained violent jealouſies againſt the Court; and the ſubſequent meaſures adopted by the King, had tended more to encreaſe than cure the general prejudices. Some myſterious deſign was ſtill ſuſpected in every enterprize and profeſſion: Arbitrary power and popery were apprehended as the ſcope of all projects: Each breath or rumour made the people ſtart with anxiety: Their enemies, they thought, were in their very boſom, and had got poſſeſſion of their Sovereign's confidence. While in this timorous, jealous diſpoſition, the cry of a *plot* all on a ſudden ſtruck their ears: They were wakened from their ſlumber; and like men affrighted and in the dark, took every ſhadow for a ſpectre. The terror of each man became the ſource of terror to another. And an univerſal panic being diffuſed, reaſon and argument, and common ſenſe, and common humanity loſt all influence over them. From this diſpoſition of men's minds we are to account for the progreſs and credit of the POPISH PLOT; an event, which would otherwiſe appear prodigious and altogether inexplicable. Chap. V. 1678. The popiſh plot.

ON the twelfth of Auguſt, one Kirby, a chemiſt, accoſted the King, as he was walking in the Park: "Sir," ſaid he, "keep within the company: Your ene-

Chap. V. 1678. "mies have a deſign upon your life; and you may be ſhot in this very walk." Being aſked the reaſon of theſe ſtrange ſpeeches, he ſaid, that two men, called Grove and Pickering, had engaged to ſhoot the King, and Sir George Wakeman, the Queen's phyſician, to poiſon him. This intelligence, he added, had been communicated to him by doctor Tongue; whom, if permitted, he would introduce to his Majeſty. Tongue was a divine of the church of England; a man active, reſtleſs, full of projects, devoid of underſtanding. He brought papers to the King, which contained information of a plot, and were digeſted into forty-three articles. The King not having leiſure to peruſe them, ſent them to the lord treaſurer, Danby, and ordered the two informers to lay the buſineſs before that miniſter. Tongue confeſſed to Danby, that he himſelf had not drawn the papers, that they had been ſecretly thruſt under his door, and that, tho' he ſuſpected, he did not certainly know who was the author. After a few days, he returned, and told the treaſurer, that his ſuſpicions, he found, were juſt; that the author of the intelligence, whom he had met twice or thrice in the ſtreet, had acknowleged the whole matter, and had given him a more particular account of the conſpiracy; but deſired, that his name might be concealed, being apprehenſive leſt the papiſts ſhould murder him.

The information was renewed with regard to Grove's and Pickering's intentions of ſhooting the King; and Tongue even pretended, that, at a particular time, they were to ſet out for Windſor with that intention. Orders were given for arreſting them, ſo ſoon as they ſhould appear in that place: But tho' this alarm was more than once renewed, ſome frivolous reaſons were ſtill found by Tongue for their delaying the journey. And the King concluded, both from theſe evaſions, and from the myſterious, artificial manner of communicating the intelligence, that the whole was a fiction.

Tongue came next to the treaſurer, and told him, that a pacquet of letters, wrote by jeſuits concerned in the plot, was that night to be put into the poſt-houſe for Windſor, directed to Bedingfield, a jeſuit, confeſſor to the Duke. When this intelligence was conveyed to the King, he replied, that the pacquet mentioned had a few hours before been brought to the Duke by Bedingfield; who ſaid, that he ſuſpected ſome bad deſign upon him, that the letters ſeemed to contain matters of a dangerous import, and that he knew them not to be the hand-writing of the perſons whoſe names were ſubſcribed to them. This incident ſtill farther confirmed the King in his incredulity.

The matter had probably ſlept in this poſture for ever, had it not been the anxiety of the Duke, who, hearing that prieſts and jeſuits and even his own confeſſor had been accuſed, was deſirous, that a thorough enquiry ſhould be made by the

the council into the pretended conſpiracy. Kirby and Tongue were enquired after, and were now found to be living in cloſe conjunction with Titus Oates, the perſon who was ſaid to have conveyed the firſt intelligence to Tongue. Oates affirmed, that he had fallen under ſuſpicion with the jeſuits; that he had received three blows with a ſtick, and a box on the ear from the provincial of that order, for revealing their conſpiracy; and that over-hearing them ſpeak of their intentions to puniſh him more ſeverely, he had withdrawn, and concealed himſelf. This man, in whoſe breaſt was lodged a ſecret, involving the fate of Kings, and kingdoms, was allowed to remain in ſuch neceſſity, that Kirby was obliged to ſupply him with daily bread; and it was a joyful ſurprize to him, when he heard, that the council were at laſt diſpoſed to take ſome notice of his intelligence. But as he expected more encouragement from the public, than from the King or his miniſters, he thought proper, before he was preſented to the council, to go with his two companions to Sir Edmundſbury Godfrey, a noted and active juſtice of peace, and to give evidence before him of all the articles of the conſpiracy. Chap. V. 1678.

THE wonderful intelligence, which Oates conveyed both to Godfrey and the council, and afterwards to the Parliament, was to this purpoſe *. The Pope, he ſaid, on examining the matter in the congregation *de propaganda fide*, had found himſelf entitled to the poſſeſſion of England and Ireland on account of the hereſy of Prince and people, and had accordingly aſſumed the ſovereignty of theſe kingdoms. This ſupreme power he had thought proper to delegate to the ſociety of jeſuits; and de Oliva, general of that order, in conſequence of the papal grant, had exerted every act of regal authority, and particularly had ſupplied, by commiſſions under the ſeal of the ſociety, all the chief offices, both civil and military. Lord Arundel was created chancellor, lord Powis treaſurer, Sir William Godolphin privy ſeal, Coleman ſecretary of ſtate, Langhorne attorney general, lord Bellaſis general of the papal army, lord Peters lieutenant general, lord Stafford pay-maſter; and inferior commiſſions, ſigned by the provincial of the jeſuits, were alſo diſtributed to men of all ranks. All the dignities of the church were filled, and many of them with Spaniards and other foreigners. The provincial had held a conſult of the jeſuits under his authority; where the King, whom they opprobiouſly called the Black Baſtard, was ſolemnly tried and condemned as a heretic; and a reſolution taken to put him to death. Father le Shee (for ſo this great plotter and informer called father la Chaiſe, confeſſor to the French King, a man of probity and humanity) had conſigned in London ten thouſand pounds to be paid to any man, who ſhould merit it by this aſſaſſination. A Spaniſh provincial had expreſſed like liberality: The prior of the Benedictines Oates's narrative.

* Oates's Narrative.

Chap. V. 1678.

was willing to go the length of ſix thouſand pounds: The Dominicans approved of the action; but pleaded poverty. Ten thouſand pounds had been offered to Sir George Wakeman, the Queen's phyſician, who demanded fifteen thouſand, as a reward for ſo great a ſervice: His demand was complied with; and five thouſand had been paid him by advance. Leſt this means ſhould fail, four Iriſh ruffians had been employed by the jeſuits, at the rate of twenty guineas a-piece, to ſtab the King at Windſor; and Coleman, late ſecretary to the dutcheſs of York, had given the meſſenger, who carried them orders, a guinea to quicken his diligence. Grove and Pickering were alſo employed to ſhoot the King with ſilver bullets: The former was to receive the ſum of fifteen hundred pounds; the latter, being a pious man, was to be rewarded with thirty thouſand maſſes, which, eſtimating maſſes at a ſhilling a-piece, amounted to a like value. Pickering would have executed his purpoſe, had not the flint at one time dropt out of his piſtol, at another time the priming. Coniers, the jeſuit, had bought a knife at the price of ten ſhillings, which, he thought, was not dear, conſidering the purpoſe for which he intended it, to wit, ſtabbing the King. Letters of ſubſcription were circulated among the catholics all over England to raiſe a ſum for the ſame purpoſe. No leſs than fifty jeſuits had met in May laſt, at the White-horſe tavern, where it was unanimouſly agreed to put the King to death. This ſynod did afterwards, for more convenience, divide themſelves into many leſs cabals or companies; and Oates was employed to carry notes and letters from one to another, all tending to the ſame end of murthering the King. He even carried, from one company to another, a paper, in which they formally expreſſed their reſolution of executing that deed; and it was regularly ſubſcribed by all of them. A wager of an hundred pounds was laid, and ſtakes made, that the King ſhould eat no more Chriſtmas pyes. In ſhort, it was determined, to uſe the expreſſion of a jeſuit, that if he would not become R. C. (Roman catholic) he ſhould no longer be C. R. (Charles rex). The great fire of London had been the work of the jeſuits, who had employed eighty or eighty-ſix perſons for that purpoſe, and had expended ſeven hundred fire-balls; but they had a good return for their charges; for they had been able to pilfer goods from the fire to the value of fourteen thouſand pounds: The jeſuits had alſo raiſed another fire on St. Margaret's Hill, whence they had ſtolen goods to the value of two thouſand pounds: Another at Southwark; and it was determined in like manner to burn all the chief cities in England. A paper model was already framed for the firing of London; the ſtations were regularly marked out, where the ſeveral fires were to commence; and the whole plan of operations was ſo concerted, that precautions were taken by the jeſuits to vary their meaſures, according to the variations of the winds. Fire balls were familiarly called among them Teuxbury

muſtard-

mustard-pills; and were said to contain a notable biting sauce. In the great fire, it had been determined to murther the King; but he had discovered such diligence and humanity in extinguishing the flames, that even the jesuits relented, and spared his life. Besides these assassinations and fires; insurrections, rebellions, and massacres were projected by that religious order in all the three kingdoms. There were twenty thousand Catholics in London, who would rise in four and twenty hours or less; and Jennison, a jesuit, said, that they might easily cut the throats of an hundred thousand Protestants. Eight thousand Catholics had agreed to take arms in Scotland. Ormond was to be murthered by four jesuits; a general massacre of the Irish Protestants was concerted; and forty thousand black bills were already provided for that purpose. Coleman had remitted two hundred thousand pounds to promote the rebellion in Ireland; and the French King was to land a great army in that island. Poole, who wrote the Synopsis, was particularly marked out for assassination; as was also, Dr. Stillingfleet, a controversial writer against the Papists. Burnet tells us, that Oates paid him the same compliment. After all this havock, the crown was to be offered to the Duke; but on the following conditions; that he receive it as a gift from the Pope; that he confirm all the papal commissions for offices and employments; that he ratify all past transactions, by pardoning the incendiaries, and the murderers of his brother and of the people; and that he consent to the utter extirpation of the protestant religion. If he refuse these conditions, he himself was immediately to be poisoned or assassinated. *To pot James must go*; according to the expression ascribed by Oates to the jesuits. Chap. V. 1678.

Oates, the informer of this dreadful plot, was himself the most infamous of mankind. He was the son of an anabaptist preacher, chaplain to colonel Pride; but having taken orders in the church, he had been provided in a small living by the duke of Norfolk. He had been indicted for perjury; and by some means had escaped. He was afterwards a chaplain on board the fleet; whence he had been dismissed on complaint of some unnatural practices, not fit to be named. He then became a convert to the Catholics; but he afterwards boasted, that his conversion was a mere pretence, in order to get into their secrets, and to betray them *: He was sent over to the jesuit's college at St. Omers, and tho' above thirty years of age, he there lived some time among the students. He was despatched on an errand to Spain; and thence returned to St. Omers; where the jesuits, heartily tired of their convert, at last dismissed him from their seminary. It is likely, that, from resent- And character.

* Burnet, Echard, North, L'Estrange, &c.

ment

Chap. V. 1678.

ment of this uſage, he was induced, in combination with Tongue, to contrive that plot, of which he accuſed the Catholics.

THIS abandoned man, when examined before the council, betrayed his impoſtures in ſuch a manner, as would have utterly diſcredited the moſt conſiſtent ſtory, and the moſt reputable evidence. While in Spain, he had been carried, he ſaid, to Don John, who promiſed great aſſiſtance to the execution of the catholic deſigns. The King aſked him, what ſort of man Don John was: He anſwered, a tall, lean man; directly contrary to truth, as the King well knew *. He totally miſtook the ſituation of the jeſuits college at Paris †. Tho' he pretended great intimacies with Coleman, he knew him not, when placed very near him; and had no other excuſe than that his ſight was bad in candle-light ‡. He fell into like miſtakes with regard to Wakeman.

NOTWITHSTANDING theſe objections, great attention was paid to Oates's evidence, and the plot became very ſoon the ſubject of converſation, and even the object of terror to the people. The violent animoſity, which had been excited againſt the Catholics in general, made the public ſwallow the groſſeſt abſurdities, when they accompanied an accuſation of thoſe religioniſts: And the more diabolical any contrivance appeared, the better it ſuited the tremendous idea entertained of a jeſuit. Danby likewiſe, who ſtood in oppoſition to the French and catholic intereſt at court, was willing to encourage every ſtory, which might ſerve to diſcredit that party. By his ſuggeſtion, when a warrant was ſigned for arreſting Coleman, there was inſerted a clauſe for ſeizing his papers; a circumſtance attended with the moſt important conſequences.

Coleman's letters.

COLEMAN, partly on his own account, partly by orders from the Duke, had been engaged in a correſpondence with father la Chaiſe, with the Pope's nuncio at Bruſſels, and with other Catholics abroad; and being himſelf a fiery zealot, buſy and ſanguine, the expreſſions in his letters often betrayed great violence and indiſcretion. His correſpondence during the years 1674, 1675, and part of 1676, was ſeized, and contained many extraordinary paſſages. In particular, he ſaid to la Chaiſe, "We have here a mighty work upon our hands, no leſs than the converſion of three kingdoms, and by that perhaps the utter ſubduing of a peſtilent "hereſy, which has a long time domineered over a great part of this northern "world. There were never ſuch hopes of ſucceſs, ſince the days of Queen Mary, "as now in our days. God has given us a Prince," meaning the Duke, "who "is become (may I ſay a miracle) zealous of being the author and inſtrument of "ſo glorious a work; but the oppoſition we are ſure to meet with is alſo like to

* Burnet, North. † North. ‡ Burnet, North, Trials.

"be

" be great: So that it imports us to get all the aid and assistance we can." In another letter he said, " I can scarce believe myself awake, or the thing real, when I think " of a Prince, in such an age as we live in, converted to such a degree of zeal and " piety, as not to regard any thing in the world in comparison of God Almighty's " glory, the salvation of his own soul, and the conversion of our poor kingdom." In other passages, the interests of the Crown of England, those of the French King, and those of the catholic religion are spoke of as inseparable. The Duke is also said to have connected his interests unalterably with those of Lewis. The King himself, he affirms, is always inclined to favour the Catholics, when he may do it without hazard. " Money," Coleman adds, " cannot fail of persuading the King " to any thing. There is nothing it cannot make him do, were it ever so much " to his prejudice. It has such an absolute power over him, that he cannot resist " it. Logic, in our court, built upon money, has more powerful charms than any " other sort of argument." For these reasons, he proposes to father la Chaise, that the French King should remit the sum of 300,000 pounds, on condition that the Parliament be dissolved; a measure, to which, he says, the King was, of himself, sufficiently inclined, were it not for his hopes of obtaining money from that assembly. The Parliament, he said, had already constrained the King to make peace with Holland, contrary to the interests of the catholic religion, and of his most christian majesty: And if they should meet again, they would surely engage him farther, and even to make war against France. It appears also from the same letters, that the assembling the Parliament so late as April in the year 1675, had been procured by the intrigues of the catholic and French party, who thereby intended to show the Dutch and other confederates abroad, that they could expect no assistance from England. Chap. V. 1678.

When the contents of these letters were publicly known, they diffused the panic, with which the nation began already to be seized on account of the popish plot. Men reasoned more from their fears and their passions than from the evidence before them. It is certain, that the active and enterprizing spirit of the catholic church, particularly of the jesuits, merits attention, and is, in some degree, dangerous, to every other communion. Such zeal of proselytism actuates that sect, that its missionaries have penetrated into every nation of the globe: and in one sense, there is a *popish plot* perpetually carried on against all states, Protestant, Pagan, and Mahometan. It is likewise very probable, that the conversion of the Duke, and the favour of the King, had inspired the catholic priests with new hopes of recovering in these islands their lost dominion, and gave fresh vigour to that intemperate zeal, by which they are commonly actuated. Their first aim was to obtain a toleration; and such was the evidence, they believed, of their theological tenets,

Chap. V. 1678.

that, could they but procure entire liberty, they muſt infallibly in time open the eyes of the people. After they had converted conſiderable numbers, they might be enabled, they hoped, to re-inſtate themſelves in full authority, and entirely to ſuppreſs that hereſy, with which the kingdom had ſo long been infected. Tho' theſe dangers to the proteſtant religion were very diſtant, it was juſtly the object of great concern to find, that the heir-apparent to the crown was ſo blinded with bigotry, and ſo deeply engaged in foreign intereſts; and that the King himſelf had been prevailed with, from low intereſts, to hearken to his dangerous inſinuations. Very bad conſequences might enſue from ſuch perverſe habits and attachments; nor could the nation and Parliament guard againſt them with too anxious a precaution. But that the Roman pontiff could hope to aſſume the ſovereignty of theſe kingdoms; a project, which, even during the darkneſs of the eleventh and twelfth centuries would have appeared chimerical: That he ſhould delegate this authority to the jeſuits; that order in the Romiſh church, which was the moſt hated: That a maſſacre could be attempted of the Proteſtants, who ſurpaſſed the Catholics a hundred fold, and were inveſted with the whole authority of the ſtate: That the King himſelf was to be aſſaſſinated, and even the Duke, the only ſupport of their party. Theſe were ſuch abſurdities as no human teſtimony was ſufficient to prove; much leſs the evidence of one man, who was noted for infamy, and who could not keep himſelf, every moment, from falling into the groſſeſt inconſiſtencies. Did ſuch intelligence deſerve even ſo much attention as to be refuted, it would appear, that Coleman's letters were ſufficient alone to deſtroy all its credit. For how could ſo long a train of correſpondence be carried on, by a man ſo much truſted by the party; and yet no traces of inſurrections, if really intended, of fires, maſſacres, aſſaſſinations, invaſions, be ever diſcovered in any ſingle paſſage of theſe letters? But all ſuch reflections, and many more equally obvious, were vainly employed againſt that general prepoſſeſſion, with which the nation was ſeized. Oates's plot and Coleman's were univerſally confounded: And the evidence of the latter being unqueſtionable, the belief of the former, aided by the paſſions of hatred and of terror, took poſſeſſion of the whole people.

17th of October. Godfrey's murder.

THERE was danger however, leſt time might open the eyes of the public; when the murder of Godfrey compleated the general deluſion, and rendered the prejudices of the nation abſolutely incurable. This magiſtrate had been miſſing ſome days; and after much ſearch, and many ſurmiſes, his body was found lying in a ditch at Primroſe-hill: The marks of ſtrangling were thought to appear about his neck, and ſome contuſions on his breaſt: His own ſword was ſticking in the body; but as no conſiderable quantity of blood enſued on drawing it, it was concluded, that it had been thruſt in after his death, and that he had not killed himſelf: He had rings on his fingers

fingers and money in his pocket: It was therefore inferred, that he had not fallen into the hands of robbers. Without farther reaſoning, the cry roſe, that he had been aſſaſſinated by the Papiſts, on account of his taking Oates's evidence. This clamour was quickly propagated, and met with univerſal belief. The panic ſpread itſelf on every ſide with infinite rapidity; and all men, aſtoniſhed with fear, and animated with rage, ſaw in Godfrey's fate all the horrible deſigns aſcribed to the Catholics; and no farther doubt remained of Oates's veracity. The voice of the whole nation united againſt that hated ſect; and notwithſtanding that the bloody conſpiracy was ſuppoſed to be now diſcovered, men could ſcarce be perſuaded, that their lives were yet in ſafety. Each hour teemed with new rumours and ſurmiſes. Invaſions from abroad, inſurrections at home, even private murders and poiſonings were apprehended. To deny the reality of the plot was to be an accomplice: To heſitate was criminal: Royaliſt, Republican; Churchman, Sectary; Courtier, Patriot; all parties concurred in the illuſion. The city prepared for defence, as if the enemy were at its gates: The chains and poſts were put up: And it was a noted ſaying at that time of Sir Thomas Player, the chamberlain, that were it not for theſe precautions, all the citizens might riſe next morning with their throats cut *.

Chap. V. 1678.

General conſternation.

In order to propagate the popular frenzy, ſeveral artifices were employed. The dead body of Godfrey was carried into the city, attended by vaſt multitudes. It was publickly expoſed in the ſtreets, and viewed by all ranks of men; and every one, who ſaw it, went away inflamed, as well by the mutual contagion of ſentiments, as by the diſmal ſpectacle itſelf. The funeral pomp was celebrated with great parade. It was conducted thro' the chief ſtreets of the city: Seventy-two clergymen marched before: Above a thouſand perſons of diſtinction followed after: And at the funeral ſermon, two able-bodied divines mounted the pulpit, and ſtood on each ſide of the preacher; leſt, in paying the laſt office to this unhappy magiſtrate, he ſhould, before the whole people, be murthered by the Papiſts †.

In this diſpoſition of the nation, reaſon could no more be heard than a whiſper in the midſt of the moſt violent hurricane. Even at preſent, Godfrey's murther cannot upon any ſyſtem be rationally accounted for. That he was aſſaſſinated by the Catholics, ſeems utterly improbable. Theſe religioniſts could not be engaged to commit that crime from *policy*, in order to deter other magiſtrates from acting againſt them. Godfrey's fate was nowiſe capable of producing that effect, unleſs it were publickly known, that the Catholics were his murtherers; an opinion, which, it was eaſy to foreſee, muſt prove the ruin of their party. Beſides, how

* North, p. 206. † North, p. 205.

Chap. V. 1678.

many magiſtrates, during more than a century, had acted in the moſt violent manner againſt them, without its being ever ſuſpected, that any one had been cut off by aſſaſſination? Such jealous times as the preſent were ſurely ill fitted for beginning theſe dangerous experiments. Shall we therefore ſay, that the Catholics were puſhed on, not by policy, but by blind *revenge* againſt Godfrey? But Godfrey had given them little or no occaſion of offence in taking Oates's evidence. His part was merely an act of form, belonging to his office; nor could he, or any man in his ſtation, poſſibly refuſe it. In the reſt of his conduct, he lived on good terms with the Catholics, and was far from diſtinguiſhing himſelf by his ſeverity againſt that ſect. It is even certain, that he had contracted an intimacy with Coleman, and took care to inform his friend of the danger, to which, by reaſon of Oates's evidence, he was at preſent expoſed.

THERE are ſome writers, who, finding it impoſſible to account for Godfrey's murther by the machinations of the Catholics, have recourſe to the oppoſite ſuppoſition. They lay hold of that common preſumption, that thoſe commit the crime who reap profit by it; and they affirm that it was Shaftſbury and the heads of the popular party, who perpetrated that deed, in order to throw the odium of it on the Papiſts. But if this ſuppoſition be received, it muſt alſo be admitted, that the whole plot was the contrivance of thoſe politicians; and that Oates acted altogether under their direction. But it appears, that Oates, dreading probably the oppoſition of powerful enemies, had very anxiouſly acquitted the Duke, Danby, Ormond, and all the miniſtry; perſons who were certainly the moſt obnoxious to the popular leaders. Beſides, the whole texture of the plot contains ſuch low abſurdity, that it is impoſſible to have been the invention of any man of ſenſe or education. It is true, the more monſtrous and horrible the conſpiracy, the better was it fitted to terrify, and thence to convince the populace: But this effect, we may ſafely ſay, no one could beforehand have promiſed upon; and a fool was, in this caſe, more likely to ſucceed than a wiſe man. Had Shafteſbury laid the plan of a popiſh conſpiracy, he had probably rendered it moderate, conſiſtent, credible; and on that very account had never met with the prodigious ſucceſs, with which Oates's tremendous fictions were attended.

WE muſt, therefore, be contented to remain for ever ignorant of the actors in Godfrey's murther; and only pronounce in general, that that event in all likelihood, had no connexion, one way or other, with the popiſh plot. Any man, eſpecially ſo active a magiſtrate as Godfrey, might, in ſuch a city as London, have many enemies, of whom his friends and family had no ſuſpicion. He was a melancholy man; and there is ſome reaſon, notwithſtanding all the pretended appearances to the contrary, to ſuſpect that he fell by his own hands. The affair was never examined with

tran-

tranquillity, or even common ſenſe, during the time; and it is impoſſible for us, at this diſtance, certainly to account for it. Chap. V. 1678.

No one doubted but the papiſts had aſſaſſinated Godfrey: But ſtill the particular actors were unknown. A proclamation was iſſued by the King, offering a pardon and five hundred pounds reward to any one who would diſcover them. As it was afterwards ſurmiſed, that the terror of a like aſſaſſination would prevent diſcovery, a new proclamation was iſſued, promiſing abſolute protection to any one who would reveal the ſecret. Thus were indemnity, money, and ſecurity offered to the faireſt bidder: And no one needed to fear, during the preſent fury of the people, that his evidence would undergo too ſevere a ſcrutiny.

WHILE the nation was in this ferment, the Parliament was aſſembled. In his ſpeech the King told them, that tho' they had given money for diſbanding the army*, he had found Flanders ſo expoſed, that he had thought it neceſſary ſtill to keep them on foot, and doubted not but this meaſure would meet with their approbation. He informed them, that his revenue lay under great anticipations, and at beſt was never equal to the conſtant and neceſſary expence of the government; as would appear from the ſtate of it, which he intended to lay before them. He alſo mentioned the plot, carried on againſt his life by jeſuits; but ſaid, that he would forbear delivering any opinion of the matter, leſt he ſhould ſeem to ſay too much or too little; and that he would leave the ſcrutiny of it entirely to the law. 21ſt of October. The Parliament.

THE King was anxious to keep the queſtion of the popiſh plot from the Parliament, where, he ſuſpected, many deſigning people would very much abuſe the preſent credulity of the nation: But Danby, who hated the catholics, and courted popularity, and perhaps hoped, that the King, if his life was believed to be in danger from the jeſuits, would be more cordially loved by the nation, had entertained oppoſite deſigns; and the very firſt day of the ſeſſion, he opened the matter in the Houſe of Peers. The King was extremely diſpleaſed with this temerity, and told his miniſter, "Tho' you do not believe it, you will find, that you have given "the Parliament a handle to ruin yourſelf, as well as to diſturb all my affairs; "and you will ſurely live to repent it." Danby had afterwards ſufficient reaſon to applaud the ſagacity of his maſter.

THE cry of the plot was immediately echoed from one Houſe to the other. The verdict of Parliament gave ſanction to that fury, with which the people were already agitated. An addreſs was voted for a ſolemn faſt: A form of prayer was contrived for that ſervice; and becauſe the popiſh plot had been omitted in the Zeal of the Parliament.

* They had granted him 600,000 pounds for diſbanding the army, for re-imburſing the charges of his naval armaments, and for paying the Princeſs of Orange's portion.

firſt

Chap. V. 1678.

first draught, it was carefully ordered to be inſerted; leſt Omniſcience ſhould want intelligence, to uſe the words of an hiſtorian †.

In order to continue and propagate the alarm, addreſſes were voted for laying before the Houſe ſuch papers as might diſcover the horrible conſpiracy; for the removal of popiſh recuſants from London; for adminiſtring every where the oaths of allegiance and ſupremacy; for denying acceſs at court to all unknown and ſuſpicious perſons; and for appointing the train-bands of London and Weſtminſter to be in readineſs. The lords Powis, Stafford, Arundel, Peters, and Bellaſis were committed to the Tower, and were ſoon after impeached for high treaſon. And both Houſes, after hearing Oates's evidence, voted, "That the "Lords and Commons are of opinion, that there hath been, and ſtill is, a dam- "nable and helliſh plot, contrived and carried on by the popiſh recuſants, for "aſſaſſinating and murdering the King, for ſubverting the government, and for "rooting out and deſtroying the proteſtant religion."

So vehement were the Houſes, that they ſat every day, forenoon and afternoon, on the ſubject of the plot: For no other buſineſs could be admitted. A committee of Lords were appointed to examine priſoners and witneſſes: Blank warrants were put into their hands, for the commitment of ſuch as ſhould be accuſed or ſuſpected. Oates, who, tho' his evidence were true, muſt, by his own confeſſion, be regarded as an infamous villain, was by every one applauded, careſſed, and called the ſaviour of the nation. He was recommended by the Parliament to the King. He was lodged in Whitehall, protected by guards, and encouraged by a penſion of 1200 pounds a year.

Bedloe's narrative.

It was not long before ſuch bountiful encouragement brought forth new witneſſes. William Bedloe, a man, if poſſible, more infamous than Oates, appeared next upon the ſtage. He was of very low birth, had been noted for ſeveral cheats and even thefts, had travelled over many parts of Europe under borrowed names, had frequently paſſed himſelf for a man of quality, and had endeavoured, by a variety of lies and contrivances, to prey upon the ignorant and unwary. When he appeared before the council, he gave intelligence only of Godfrey's murther, which, he ſaid, had been perpetrated in Somerſet-houſe, where the Queen lived, by papiſts, ſome of them ſervants in her family. He was queſtioned about the plot; but utterly denied all knowlege of it, and alſo aſſerted, that he had no acquaintance with Oates. Next day, when examined before the committee of Lords, he bethought himſelf better, and was ready to give an ample account

† North, p. 207.

of

of the plot, which he found ſo anxiouſly enquired into. This narrative he made to tally, as well as he could, with that of Oates, which had been publiſhed: But that he might make himſelf acceptable by new information, he added ſome other circumſtances, and thoſe, ſtill more tremendous and extraordinary. He ſaid, that ten thouſand men were to be landed from Flanders in Burlington Bay, and immediately to ſeize Hull: That Jerſey and Guernſey were to be ſurpriſed by forces from Breſt; and that a French fleet were, all laſt ſummer, hovering in the Channel for that purpoſe: That the lords Powis and Peters were to form an army in Radnorſhire, to be joined by another army, conſiſting of twenty or thirty thouſand religious men and pilgrims, who were to land at Milford Haven from St. Iago in Spain: That there were forty thouſand men ready in London; beſides thoſe, who would, on the alarm, be poſted at every alehouſe door, in order to kill the ſoldiers as they came out of their quarters: That lord Stafford, Coleman, and father Ireland had money ſufficient to defray the expences of all theſe armaments: That he himſelf was to receive four thouſand pounds, as one that could murder a man; as alſo a commiſſion from lord Bellaſis, and a benediction from the Pope: That the King was to be aſſaſſinated; all the proteſtants maſſacred who would not ſeriouſly be converted; the government offered to ONE, if he would conſent to hold it of the church; but if he ſhould refuſe that condition, as was ſuſpected, the authority would be left to certain lords under the nomination of the Pope. In a ſubſequent examination before the Commons, Bedloe added, (for theſe men always brought out their intelligence ſucceſſively and by piece-meal) that lord Carrington was alſo in the conſpiracy for raiſing men and money againſt the government; as was likewiſe lord Brudenel. Theſe noblemen, with all other perſons mentioned by Bedloe, were immediately committed to cuſtody by the Parliament.

IT is remarkable, that the only reſource of Spain, in her preſent decayed condition, lay in the aſſiſtance of England; and ſo far from being in a ſituation to tranſport ten thouſand men for the invaſion of that kingdom, ſhe had ſolicited and obtained Engliſh forces to be ſent into the garriſons of Flanders, which were not otherwiſe able to defend themſelves againſt the French. The French too, we may obſerve, were, at that very time, in open war with Spain, and yet are ſuppoſed to be engaged in the ſame deſign againſt England; as if religious motives were become the ſole actuating principle among ſovereigns. But none of theſe circumſtances, however obvious, were able, when ſet in oppoſition to multiplied horrors, antipathies, and prejudices, to engage the leaſt attention of the populace: For ſuch the whole nation were at this time become. The popiſh plot paſſed for inconteſtible: And had not men ſoon expected with certainty the legal puniſhment of theſe criminals, the Catholics had been expoſed to the hazard of

an

Chap. V. 1678.

an univerſal maſſacre. The torrent indeed of national prejudices ran ſo high, that no one, without the moſt imminent danger, durſt venture openly to oppoſe it; nay, ſcarce any one, without great force of judgment, could ſecretly entertain an opinion contrary to the prevailing ſentiments. The loud and unanimous voice of a great nation has mighty authority over weak minds; and even later hiſtorians are ſo ſwayed by the concurring judgment of ſuch multitudes, that ſome of them have eſteemed themſelves ſufficiently moderate, when they affirmed, that many circumſtances of the plot were true, tho' ſome were added, and others much magnified. But it is an obvious principle, that a witneſs, who perjures himſelf in one circumſtance, is credible in none: And the authority of the plot, even to the end of the proſecutions, ſtood entirely upon witneſſes. Tho' the Catholics had been ſuddenly and unexpectedly detected, at the very moment, when their conſpiracy, it is ſaid, was ready to be put in execution; no arms, no ammunition, no money, no commiſſions, no papers, no letters, after the moſt rigorous ſearch, ever were diſcovered, to confirm the evidence of Oates and Bedloe. Yet ſtill the nation, tho' often fruſtrated, went on in the eager purſuit and confident belief of the conſpiracy: And even the manifold inconſiſtencies and abſurdities, contained in the Narratives, inſtead of diſcouraging them, ſerved only as farther incentives to diſcover the bottom of the plot, and were conſidered as ſlight objections, which a more complete information would fully remove. In all hiſtory, it will be difficult to find ſuch another inſtance of popular frenzy and bigotted deluſion.

In order to ſupport the panic among the people, eſpecially among the citizens of London, a pamphlet was publiſhed with this title, "A narrative and impar-"tial diſcovery of the horrid popiſh plot, carried on for burning and deſtroying "the cities of London and Weſtminſter with their ſuburbs; ſetting forth the ſe-"veral conſults, orders, and reſolutions of the jeſuits, concerning the ſame: By "captain William Bedloe, lately engaged in that horrid deſign, and one of the "popiſh committee for carrying on ſuch fires." Every fire, which had happened for ſeveral years paſt, is there aſcribed to the machinations of the jeſuits, who propoſed, as Bedloe ſaid, by ſuch attempts to find an opportunity for the general maſſacre of the Proteſtants; and in the mean time, were pleaſed to enrich themſelves by pilfering goods from the fires.

The King, tho' he ſcrupled not, wherever he could uſe freedom, to throw the higheſt ridicule on the plot, and on all who believed it; yet found it neceſſary to adopt the popular opinion before the Parliament. The torrent, he ſaw, ran too ſtrong to be controuled; and he could only hope, by a ſeeming compliance, to be able, after ſome time, to guide and direct and elude its fury. He made therefore a ſpeech

a ſpeech to both houſes; in which he told them, that he would take the utmoſt care of his perſon during theſe times of danger; that he was as ready as their hearts could wiſh, to join with them in all means for eſtabliſhing the proteſtant religion, not only during his own time, but for all future ages; that, provided the right of ſucceſſion was preſerved, he would conſent to any laws for reſtraining a popiſh ſucceſſor: And in concluſion, he exhorted them to think of effectual means for the conviction of popiſh recuſants; and he highly praiſed the duty and loyalty of all his ſubjects, who had diſcovered ſuch anxious concern for his ſafety. Chap. V. 1678.

THESE gracious expreſſions abated nothing of the vehemence of parliamentary proceedings. A bill was introduced for a new teſt, in which popery was denominated idolatry; and all members, who refuſed this teſt, were excluded both Houſes. The bill paſſed the Commons without much oppoſition; but in the upper Houſe the Duke moved, that an exception might be admitted in his favour. With great earneſtneſs, and even with tears in his eyes, he told them, that he was now to caſt himſelf on their kindneſs, in the greateſt concern, which he could have in the world; and he proteſted, that, whatever his religion might be, it ſhould only be a private thing between God and his own ſoul, and never ſhould appear in his public conduct. Notwithſtanding this ſtrong effort, in ſo important a point, he prevailed only by two voices; a ſufficient indication of the general diſpoſition of the people. "I would not have," ſaid a noble Peer, in the debate on this bill, "ſo much as a popiſh man or a popiſh woman to remain here; not ſo much as a "popiſh dog or a popiſh bitch; not ſo much as a popiſh cat to purr or mew "about the King." What is more extraordinary, this ſpeech met with praiſe and approbation.

ENCOURAGED by this general fury, the witneſſes went ſtill a ſtep farther in their accuſations; and tho' both Oates and Bedloe had often declared, that there was no other perſon of diſtinction, whom they knew to be concerned in the plot, they were now ſo audacious as to accuſe even the Queen herſelf of entering into the deſign againſt her huſband's life. The Commons, in an addreſs to the King, gave countenance to this ſcandalous accuſation; but the Lords would not be prevailed with to join in the addreſs. It is here, if any where, that we may ſuſpect the ſuggeſtions of the popular leaders to have had place. The King, it was well known, bore no great affection to his conſort; and now more than ever, when his heir-apparent was ſo much hated, had reaſon to be deſirous of iſſue, which might quiet the jealous fears of his people. This very hatred, which prevailed againſt the Duke, would much facilitate, he knew, any expedient that could be deviſed for the excluſion of that Prince; and nothing farther ſeemed requiſite for the King, than to give way in this particular to the rage and fury of the nation. But Charles,

Chap. V. 1678.

notwithstanding all allurements of pleasure, or interest, or safety, had the generosity to protect his injured consort. "They think," said he, "I have a mind to a "new wife; but for all that I will not see an innocent woman abused *." He immediately ordered Oates to be strictly confined, seized his papers, and dismissed his servants; and this daring informer was obliged to make applications to Parliament, in order to recover his liberty.

During this agitation of men's minds, the Parliament gave new attention to the militia; a circumstance, which, even during the times of greatest tranquillity, can never prudently be neglected. They passed a bill, by which it was enacted, that a regular militia should be kept in arms, during six weeks of the year, and a third part of them do duty every fortnight of that time. The popular leaders probably intended to make use of the general prejudices, and even to turn the arms of the people against the Prince †. But Charles refused his assent to the bill, and told the Parliament that he would not, were it for half an hour, part so far with the power of the sword: But if they would contrive any other bill for ordering the militia, and still leave it in his power to assemble or dismiss them as he thought proper, he would willingly give it the royal sanction. The Commons, dissatisfied with this negative, tho' the King had never before employed that prerogative, immediately voted that all the new-levied forces should be dismissed. They passed a bill, granting money for that service; but to shew their extreme jealousy of the Crown, besides appropriating that money by the strictest clauses, they ordered it to be paid, not into the exchequer, but into the chamber of London. The Lords demurred with regard to so extraordinary a clause, which threw a violent reflection on the King's ministers, and even on himself; and by that means the act remained in suspence.

Accusation of Danby.

It was no wonder, that the present ferment and credulity of the nation engaged men of infamous character and indigent circumstances to become informers; when persons of rank and condition could be tempted to give into that scandalous practice. Montague, the King's ambassador at Paris, had procured a seat in the lower House; and without obtaining or asking the King's leave, he suddenly came over into England. Charles, suspecting his intention, ordered his papers to be seized; but Montague, who foresaw this measure, had taken care to secrete one paper, which he immediately laid before the House of Commons. It was a letter from the treasurer Danby, wrote at the beginning of the year, during the negotiations at Nimeguen for the general peace. Montague was there directed to make a demand of money; or in other words, the King was willing secretly to sell his good offices to France, contrary to the general interests of the confederates, and

* North's Examen, p. 186. † Burnet, vol. i. p. 437.

even

even to thoſe of his own kingdoms. The letter, among other particulars, contains theſe words: "In caſe the conditions of peace ſhall be accepted, the King expects "to have ſix millions of livres a year for three years, from the time that this agree- "ment ſhall be ſigned between his Majeſty and the King of France: becauſe it "will probably be two or three years before the Parliament will be in humour "to give him any ſupplies after the making of any peace with France; and the "ambaſſador here has always agreed to that ſum; but not for ſo long a time." Danby was ſo unwilling to engage in this negotiation, that the King, to ſatisfy him, ſubjoined with his own hand theſe words: "This letter is writ by my or- "der, C. R." Chap. V. 1678.

THE Commons were inflamed with this intelligence; and carrying their ſuſpicions much farther than the truth, they concluded, that the King had all along acted in concert with the French court, and that every ſtep which he had taken in conjunction with the allies, had been illuſory and deceitful. Deſirous of getting to the bottom of ſo important a ſecret, and being puſhed by Danby's numerous enemies, they immediately voted an impeachment of high treaſon againſt that miniſter, and ſent up ſix articles to the Houſe of Peers. Theſe articles were, That he had traiterouſly engroſſed to himſelf regal power, by giving inſtructions to his majeſty's ambaſſadors, without the participation of the ſecretaries of ſtate, or the privy council: That he had traiterouſly endeavoured to ſubvert the government, and introduce arbitrary power; and to that end, had levied and continued an army, contrary to act of Parliament: That he had traiterouſly endeavoured to alienate the affections of his Majeſty's ſubjects, by negotiating a diſadvantageous peace with France, and procuring money for that purpoſe: That he was popiſhly affected, and had traiterouſly concealed, after he had notice, the late horrid and bloody plot, contrived by the papiſts againſt his Majeſty's perſon and government: That he had waſted the King's treaſure: And that he had, by indirect means, obtained ſeveral exorbitant grants from the Crown. His impeachment.

IT is certain, that the treaſurer, in giving inſtructions to the ambaſſador, had exceeded the bounds of his office; and as the genius of a monarchy, ſtrictly limited, requires, that the proper miniſter ſhould be anſwerable for every abuſe of power, the Commons, tho' they here advanced a new pretenſion, might juſtify themſelves by the utility and even neceſſity of it. But in other reſpects their charge againſt Danby was very ill-grounded. That miniſter made it appear to the Houſe of Lords, not only that Montague, the informer againſt him, had all along promoted the money-negotiations with France, but that he himſelf was ever extremely averſe to the intereſts of that crown, which he eſteemed pernicious to his maſter, and to his country. The French nation, he ſaid, had always en-

Chap. V. 1678.

tertained, as he was certainly informed, the higheſt contempt, both of the King's perſon and government. His diligence, he added, in tracing and diſcovering the popiſh plot, was generally known; and if he had common ſenſe, not to ſay common honeſty, he would ſurely be anxious to preſerve the life of a maſter, by whom he was ſo much favoured. He had waſted no treaſure, becauſe there was no treaſure to waſte. And tho' he had reaſon to be grateful for the King's bounty, he had made more moderate acquiſitions than were generally imagined, and than others in his office had often done, even during a ſhorter adminiſtration.

The Houſe of Peers plainly ſaw, that, allowing all the charge of the Commons to be true, Danby's crime fell not under the ſtatute of Edward the third; and tho' the words, *treaſon* and *traiterouſly*, had been carefully ſubjoined to ſeveral articles, this appellation could not alter the nature of things, or ſubject him to the penalties annexed to that crime. They refuſed, therefore, to commit Danby upon this irregular charge: The Commons inſiſted on their demand; and a great conteſt was likely to ariſe, when the King, who had already obſerved ſufficient inſtances of the ill-humour of the Parliament, thought proper to prorogue them. This prorogation was ſoon after followed by a diſſolution; a deſperate remedy in the preſent diſpoſition of the nation. But the diſeaſe, it muſt be owned, the King had reaſon to eſteem deſperate. The utmoſt rage had been diſcovered by the Commons, on account of the popiſh plot; and their fury began already to point againſt the royal family, if not againſt the Throne itſelf. The Duke had been ſtruck at in ſeveral motions: The treaſurer had been impeached: All ſupply had been refuſed, except on the moſt diſagreeable conditions: Fears, jealouſies, and antipathies were every day multiplying in Parliament: And tho' the people were ſtrongly infected with the ſame prejudices, the King hoped, by diſſolving the preſent cabals, that a ſet of men might be choſen, more moderate in their purſuits, and leſs tainted with the virulence of faction.

30th of December.

Diſſolution of the long Parliament.

Its character.

Thus came to a period a Parliament, which had ſat during the whole courſe of this reign, one year excepted. Its concluſion was very different from its commencement. Being elected during the joy and feſtivity of the reſtoration, it conſiſted almoſt entirely of royaliſts; who were diſpoſed to ſupport the Crown by all the liberality which the habits of that age would permit. Alarmed by the alliance with France, they gradually withdrew their confidence from the King; and finding him ſtill to perſevere in a foreign intereſt, they proceeded to diſcover ſymptoms of the moſt refractory and moſt jealous diſpoſition. The popiſh plot puſhed them beyond all bounds of moderation; and before their diſſolution they ſeemed to be treading faſt into the foot-ſteps of the laſt long Parliament, on whoſe conduct they threw at firſt ſuch violent blame. In all their variations, they had

ſtill

ſtill followed the opinions and prejudices of the nation; and ſeemed ever to be more governed by humour and party views than by public intereſt, and more by public intereſt than by any corrupt or private influence. Chap. V. 1678.

DURING the ſitting of the Parliament, and after its prorogation and diſſolution, the trials of the pretended criminals were carried on; and the courts of judicature, places, which, if poſſible, ought to be kept more pure from injuſtice than even national aſſemblies themſelves, were ſtrongly infected with the ſame party rage and bigotted prejudices. Coleman, the moſt obnoxious of the conſpirators, was firſt brought to his trial. His letters were produced againſt him. They contained, as he himſelf confeſſed, much indiſcretion: But unleſs ſo far as it is illegal to be a zealous Catholic, they ſeem to prove nothing criminal, much leſs treaſonable, againſt him. Oates and Bedloe ſwore, that he had received a commiſſion, ſigned by the ſuperior of the jeſuits, to be papal ſecretary of ſtate, and had conſented to the poiſoning, ſhooting, and ſtabbing the King: He had even, according to Oates's depoſition, advanced a guinea to promote thoſe bloody purpoſes. Theſe wild ſtories were all confounded with the projects contained in his letters; and Coleman received ſentence of death. The ſentence was ſoon after executed upon him *. He ſuffered with calmneſs and conſtancy, and to the laſt perſiſted in the ſtrongeſt proteſtations of his innocence. Trial of Coleman.

COLEMAN'S execution was ſucceeded by the trial of father Ireland, who, 'tis pretended, had ſigned, together with fifty jeſuits, the great reſolve of murdering the King. Grove and Pickering, who had undertaken to ſhoot him, were tried at the ſame time. The only witneſſes againſt the priſoners were ſtill Oates and Bedloe. Ireland affirmed, that he was in Staffordſhire all the month of Auguſt laſt, a time when Oates's evidence made him in London. He proved his aſſertion by good evidence, and would have proved it by undoubted; had he not, moſt iniquitouſly, been debarred, while in priſon, of all uſe of pen and ink, and denied the liberty of ſending for witneſſes. All theſe men, before they came to the bar, were condemned in the opinions of the judges, jury, and ſpectators; and to be a jeſuit, or even a Catholic, was of itſelf a ſufficient proof of guilt. The chief juſtice † in particular gave ſanction to all the narrow prejudices and bigotted fury of the populace. Inſtead of being council for the priſoners, as his office required, he pleaded the cauſe againſt them, brow-beat their witneſſes, and on every occaſion repreſented their guilt as certain and uncontroverted. He even went ſo far as publicly to affirm, that the Papiſts had not the ſame principles which Proteſtants have, and therefore were not entitled to that common credence, which the principles and practices of the latter call for. And when the jury brought in their verdict againſt Of Ireland.

* 3d of December.

† Sir William Scrogges.

the

Chap. V. 1678. the priſoners, he ſaid, "You have done, gentlemen, like very good ſubjects, and "very good Chriſtians, that is to ſay, like very good Proteſtants: And now "much good may their 30,000 maſſes do them." Alluding to the maſſes, by which Pickering was to be rewarded for murdering the King. All theſe unhappy men went to execution, proteſting their innocence; a circumſtance, which made no impreſſion on the ſpectators. The opinion, that the jeſuits allowed of lies and mental reſervations for the promotion of a good cauſe, was at this time ſo univerſally received, that no credit was given to teſtimony, delivered either by that order, or by any of their diſciples. It was forgot, that all the conſpirators, engaged in the gun-powder treaſon, and Garnet, the jeſuit, among the reſt, had freely on the ſcaffold made confeſſion of their guilt.

1679, 24th of January.

THO' Bedloe had given information of Godfrey's murder, he ſtill remained a ſingle evidence againſt the perſons accuſed; and all the allurements of profit and honour had not hitherto tempted any one to confirm the teſtimony of that informer. At laſt, means were found to compleat the legal evidence. One Prance, a ſilverſmith, and a Catholic, had been accuſed by Bedloe of being an accomplice in that murder; and upon his denial had been thrown into priſon, loaded with heavy irons, and confined to the condemned hole, a place cold, dark, and full of naſtineſs. Such rigours were ſuppoſed to be exerciſed by orders from the ſecret committee of lords, particularly Shafteſbury and Buckingham; who, in examining the priſoners, uſually employed (as 'tis ſaid, and indeed ſufficiently proved) threatenings and promiſes, rigour and indulgence, and every art, under pretence of extorting the truth from them. Prance had not courage to reſiſt, but confeſſed himſelf an accomplice in Godfrey's murder. Being aſked concerning the plot, he alſo thought proper to be acquainted with it, and conveyed ſome intelligence to the council. Among other abſurd circumſtances, he ſaid, that one Le Fevre bought a ſecond-hand ſword of him; becauſe he knew not, as he ſaid, what times were at hand: And Prance, expreſſing ſome concern for poor tradeſmen, if ſuch times came; Le Fevre replied, that it would be better for tradeſmen, if the Catholic religion was reſtored: And particularly, that there would be more church work for ſilverſmiths. But all this information, with regard to the plot as well as the murder of Godfrey, Prance ſolemnly retracted, both before the King and the ſecret committee: And being again thrown into priſon, he was induced, by new terrors and new ſufferings, to confirm his firſt information; and was now produced as a ſufficient evidence.

HILL, Green and Berry, were tried for Godfrey's murder; all of them men of low ſtation. Hill was ſervant to a phyſician: The other two belonged to the popiſh chapel at Somerſet Houſe. It is needleſs to run over all the particulars of a long

6

long trial: It will be ſufficient to ſay, that Bedloe's evidence and France's were in many circumſtances totally irreconcileable; that both of them laboured under unſurmountable difficulties, not to ſay groſs abſurdities; and that they were invalidated by contrary evidence, which is altogether convincing. But all was in vain. The priſoners were condemned and executed. They all denied their guilt at their execution; and as Berry died a Proteſtant, this circumſtance was regarded as very conſiderable: But inſtead of giving ſome check to the general credulity of the people, men were only ſurprized, that a Proteſtant could be induced at his death to perſiſt in ſo manifeſt a falſhood. Chap. V. 1679. February 21ſt and 28th.

As the army could neither be kept up nor diſbanded without money, the King, however little hopes he could entertain of more compliance, found himſelf obliged to ſummon a new Parliament. The blood already ſhed on account of the popiſh plot, inſtead of ſatiating the people, ſerved only as an incentive to their fury; and each conviction of a criminal was hitherto regarded as a new proof of thoſe horrible deſigns, aſcribed to the Papiſts. This election is perhaps the firſt in England, which, ſince the commencement of the Monarchy, had been carried on by a violent conteſt between the parties, and where the court intereſted itſelf, to a high degree, in the choice of the national repreſentatives. But all its efforts were fruitleſs, in oppoſition to the torrent of prejudices, which prevailed. Religion, liberty, property, even the lives of men were now ſuppoſed to be at ſtake; and no ſecurity, it was thought, except in a vigilant Parliament, could be found againſt the impious and bloody conſpirators. Were there any part of the nation, to which the ferment, occaſioned by the popiſh plot, had not as yet propagated itſelf; the new elections, by intereſting the whole people in national concerns, tended to diffuſe it into the remoteſt corner, and the conſternation, univerſally excited, proved an excellent engine for influencing the electors. All the zealots of the former Parliament were re-choſen: New ones were added: The Preſbyterians in particular, being tranſported with the moſt inveterate antipathy againſt popery, were very active and very ſucceſsful in the elections. That party, it is ſaid, firſt began at this time the abuſe of ſplitting their freeholds, in order to multiply the votes of electors. By accounts, which came from every part of England, it was concluded, that the new repreſentatives would, if poſſible, exceed the old in their refractory oppoſition to the court, and furious perſecution of the Catholics. Ne tio

The King was alarmed, when he ſaw ſo dreadful a tempeſt ariſe from ſuch ſmall and unaccountable beginnings. His life, if Oates and Bedloe's information was true, had been aimed at by the Catholics: Even the Duke's was in danger. The higher, therefore, the rage mounted againſt popery, the more ſhould the nation have been reconciled to theſe two princes, in whom, it appeared, the church of Rome repoſed no confidence. But there is a ſophiſtry, which attends all the paſſions;

Chap. V. 1679.

sions; especially those into which the populace enter. Men gave credit to the informers, so far as concerned the guilt of the Catholics: But they still retained their old suspicions, that these religionists were secretly favoured by the King, and had obtained the most entire ascendant over his brother. Charles had too much penetration not to see the danger, to which the succession, and even his own crown and dignity, now stood exposed. A numerous party, he found, was formed against him; on the one hand, composed of a populace, so credulous from prejudice, so blinded with religious antipathy, as implicitly to believe the most palpable absurdities; and conducted, on the other hand, by leaders so little scrupulous, as to endeavour, by encouraging perjury, subornation, lyes, impostures, and even by shedding innocent blood, to gratify their own furious ambition, and subvert all legal authority. Rouzed from his lethargy by so imminent a peril, he began to exert that vigour of mind, of which on great occasions he was not destitute; and without quitting in appearance his usual facility of temper, he collected an industry, firmness, vigilance, of which he was believed altogether incapable. These qualities, joined to dexterity and judgment, conducted him happily thro' the many shoals, which surrounded him; and he was at last able to make the storm fall on the heads of those who had blindly raised, or artificially conducted it.

One chief step, which the King took, towards gratifying and appeasing his people and Parliament, was, desiring the Duke to withdraw beyond sea, that no farther suspicion might remain of the influence of popish councils. The Duke readily complied; but first required an order for that purpose, signed by the King; lest his absence should be interpreted as a proof of fear or of guilt. He also desired, that his brother should satisfy him, as well as the public, by a public declaration of the illegitimacy of the Duke of Monmouth.

Duke of Monmouth.

James Duke of Monmouth was the King's natural son by Lucy Walters, and born about ten years before the restoration. He possessed all the qualities, which could engage the affections of the populace; a distinguished valour, an affable address, a thoughtless generosity, a graceful person. He rose still higher in the public favour, by reason of the universal hatred, to which the Duke, on account of his religion, was exposed. Monmouth's capacity was mean; his temper pliant: So that, notwithstanding his great popularity, he had never been dangerous, had he not implicitly resigned himself over to the guidance of Shaftesbury, a man of such a restless temper, such subtle wit, and such abandoned principles. That daring politician had flattered Monmouth with the hopes of succeeding to the crown. The story of a contract of marriage, passed between the King and Monmouth's mother, and secretly kept in a certain *black box*, had been industriously spread abroad, and was greedily received by the multitude. As the horrors of popery still pressed harder on them, they might be induced, either to adopt that fiction, as they had already done

done many others more incredible, or to commit open violation on the right of ſucceſſion. And it would not be difficult, it was hoped, to perſuade the King, who was extremely fond of his ſon, to give him the preference above a brother, who by his imprudent bigotry, had involved him in ſuch inextricable difficulties. But Charles, in order to cut off all ſuch expectations, as well as to remove the Duke's apprehenſions, took care, in full council, to declare Monmouth's illegitimacy, and to deny all promiſe of marriage to his mother. The Duke, being gratified in ſo reaſonable a requeſt, willingly complied with the King's deſire, and retired to Bruſſels. Chap. V. 1679. Duke of York retires to Bruſſels. 6th of March.

But the King ſoon found, that, notwithſtanding this precaution, notwithſtanding his concurrence in the proſecution of the popiſh plot, notwithſtanding the zeal, which he expreſſed, and even at this time exerciſed againſt the Catholics; he had nowiſe obtained the confidence of his Parliament. The refractory humour of the Commons appeared in the firſt ſtep, which they took upon their aſſembling. It had ever been uſual for the Commons, in the election of their ſpeaker, to conſult the inclinations of the Sovereign; and even the long Parliament in 1641 had not thought proper to depart from ſo eſtabliſhed a cuſtom. The King now deſired, that the choice ſhould fall on Sir Thomas Meres: But Seymour, ſpeaker to the laſt Parliament, was inſtantly called to the chair, by a vote which ſeemed unanimous. The King, when Seymour was preſented to him for his approbation, rejected him, and ordered the Commons to proceed to a new choice. A great flame was excited. The Commons maintained, that the King's approbation was merely a form, and that he could not, without giving a reaſon, reject the ſpeaker choſen: The King, that, ſince he had the power of rejecting, he might, if he pleaſed, keep the reaſon in his own breaſt. As the queſtion had never before been ſtarted, it might ſeem difficult to find principles, upon which it could be decided *. By way of compromiſe, it was agreed to ſet aſide both candidates. Gregory, a lawyer, was choſen; and the election was ratified by the King. It has ever ſince been underſtood, that the choice of the ſpeaker lies in the Houſe; but that the King retains the power of rejecting any one diſagreeable to him. New Parliament.

Seymour was deemed a great enemy to Danby; and it was the influence of that nobleman, as commonly ſuppoſed, which had engaged the King to enter into this ill-timed controverſy with the Commons. The impeachment, therefore, of Danby was on that account the ſooner revived; and it was maintained by the Commons, that, notwithſtanding the intervening diſſolution, every part of that procedure ſtood in the ſame condition in which it had been left by the laſt parliament: A Danby's impeachment.

* In 1566, the Speaker ſaid to Q. Elizabeth, that without her allowance the election of the Houſe was of no ſignificance. D'Ewes's Journal, p. 97. In the Parliament 1592, 1593, the Speaker, who was Sir Edward Coke, advances a like poſition. D'Ewes, p. 459. Townſhend, p. 35. So that this pretenſion of the Commons ſeems to have been ſomewhat new; like many of their other powers and privileges.

Chap. V. 1679.

pretenſion, which, tho' unuſual, ſeems tacitly to have been yielded them. The King had before-hand had the precaution to grant a pardon to Danby; and in order to ſcreen the chancellor from all attacks by the Commons, he had taken the ſeal into his own hand, and had himſelf affixed it to the parchment. He told the Parliament, that as Danby had acted in every thing by his orders, he was nowiſe criminal; that his pardon, however, he would inſiſt upon; and if it ſhould be found any way defective in form, he would renew it again and again, till it ſhould be rendered entirely compleat: But that he was reſolved to deprive him of all employments, and to remove him from court.

THE Commons were nowiſe ſatisfied with this conceſſion. They pretended, that no pardon of the Crown could be pleaded in bar of an impeachment by the Commons. The prerogative of mercy had been hitherto underſtood to be altogether unlimited in the King; and this pretenſion of the Commons, it muſt be confeſſed, was entirely new. It was however very ſuitable to the genius of a Monarchy, ſtrictly limited; where the King's miniſters are ſuppoſed to be for ever accountable to national aſſemblies, even for ſuch abuſes of power as they may commit by orders from their maſter. The preſent emergence, while the nation was ſo highly inflamed, was the proper time for puſhing ſuch popular claims; and the Commons failed not to avail themſelves of this advantage. They ſtill inſiſted on the impeachment of Danby. The Peers, in compliance with them, departed from their former ſcruples, and ordered Danby to be taken into cuſtody. Danby withdrew. The Commons paſſed a bill, appointing him to ſurrender himſelf before a certain day, or, in default of it, attainting him. A bill had paſſed the upper Houſe, mitigating the penalty to baniſhment; but after ſome conferences, the Peers thought proper to yield to the violence of the Commons; and the bill of attainder was carried. Rather than undergo ſuch ſevere penalties, Danby appeared, and was immediately committed to the Tower.

Popiſh plot.

WHILE a proteſtant nobleman met with ſuch ſevere proſecution, it was not likely that the Catholics would be over-looked by the zealous Commons. The credit of the popiſh plot ſtill ſtood upon the oaths of a few infamous witneſſes. Tho' ſuch immenſe preparations were ſuppoſed to have been made in the very bowels of the kingdom, no traces of them, after the moſt rigorous enquiry, had as yet appeared. Tho' ſo many thouſands, both abroad and at home, had been engaged in the dreadful ſecret; neither hope, nor fear, nor remorſe, nor levity, nor ſuſpicions, nor private reſentment had engaged any-one to confirm the evidence. Tho' the Catholics, particularly the jeſuits, were repreſented as guilty of the utmoſt indiſcretion, inſomuch that they talked of the King's murder as common news, and wrote of it in plain terms by the common poſt; yet, among the great number of letters ſeized, no-one contained any part of ſo complicated a conſpiracy. Tho' the informers

pre-

pretended, that, even after they had reſolved to betray the ſecret, many treaſonable commiſſions and papers had paſſed thro' their hands; they had not had the precaution to keep any one of them, in order to fortify their evidence. But all theſe difficulties, and a thouſand more, were not found too hard of digeſtion by the nation and Parliament. The proſecution and farther diſcovery of the plot were ſtill the object of general concern. The Commons voted, that, if the King ſhould come to an untimely end, they would revenge his death upon the Papiſts; not reflecting that that ſect were not his only enemies. They promiſed rewards to new diſcoverers; not conſidering the danger, which they incurred, of granting bribes to perjury. They made Bedloe a preſent of 500 pounds; and particularly recommended the care of his ſafety to the duke of Monmouth. Colonel Sackville, a member, having, in a private company, ſpoke opprobriouſly of thoſe who affirmed that there was any plot, was expelled the Houſe. The Peers gave power to their committees to ſend for and examine ſuch as would maintain the innocence of thoſe condemned for the plot. A pamphlet having been publiſhed to diſcredit the informers, and to vindicate the catholic lords in the Tower, theſe lords were required to diſcover the author, and thereby to expoſe their own advocate to proſecution. And both Houſes concurred in renewing the former vote, that the Papiſts had undoubtedly entered into a *horrid* and *treaſonable* conſpiracy againſt the King, the ſtate, and the proteſtant religion.

It muſt be owned, that this extreme violence, in proſecution of ſo abſurd an impoſture, diſgraces the noble cauſe of liberty, in which the Parliament was engaged. We may even conclude, from ſuch impatience of contradiction, that the proſecutors themſelves retained a ſecret ſuſpicion, that the general belief was but ill grounded. The politicians among them were afraid to let in light, leſt it might put an end to ſo uſeful a deluſion: The weaker and leſs diſhoneſt party took care, by turning their eyes aſide, not to ſee a truth, ſo oppoſite to thoſe furious paſſions, by which they were actuated, and in which they were determined obſtinately to perſevere.

Sir William Temple had been lately recalled from his foreign employments; and the King, who, after the removal of Danby, had no-one with whom he could ſo much as diſcourſe with freedom of public affairs, was reſolved, upon Coventry's diſmiſſion, to make him one of his ſecretaries of ſtate. But that philoſophical patriot, too little intereſted for the intrigues of a court, too full of ſpleen and delicacy, for the noiſy turbulence of popular aſſemblies, was alarmed at the univerſal diſcontents and jealouſies, which prevailed, and was determined to make his retreat, as ſoon as poſſible, from a ſcene, which threatened ſuch confuſion. Meanwhile, he could not refuſe the confidence with which his maſter honoured him; and he reſolved to

Chap. V. 1679.

employ it to the public ſervice. He repreſented to the King, that, as the jealouſies of the nation were extreme, it was neceſſary to cure them by ſome new remedy, and to reſtore that confidence, ſo requiſite for the ſafety both of King and people: That to refuſe every thing to the Parliament in their preſent diſpoſition, or to yield every thing, was equally dangerous, to the conſtitution and to public tranquility: That if the King would introduce into his councils ſuch men as enjoyed the confidence of his people, fewer conceſſions would probably be required; or if exorbitant demands were made, the King, under the ſanction of ſuch counſellors, might be enabled, with the greater ſafety, to refuſe them: And that the heads of the popular party, being gratified with the King's favour, would probably abate of that violence, by which they endeavoured at preſent to pay court to the multitude.

New council.

THE King aſſented to all theſe reaſons; and, in concert with Temple, he laid the plan of a new privy-council, without whoſe advice he declared himſelf determined for the future to take no meaſures of importance. This council was to conſiſt of thirty perſons, and was never to exceed that number. Fifteen of the chief officers of the crown were to be continued, who, it was ſuppoſed, would adhere to the King, and, in caſe of any extremity, oppoſe the exorbitancies of faction. The other part of the council was to be compoſed, either of men of character, detached from the court, or of thoſe who poſſeſſed chief credit in both Houſes. And the King, in filling up the names of his new council, was glad to find, that the members, in land and offices, poſſeſſed to the amount of 300,000 pounds a year; a ſum nearly equal to the whole property of the Houſe of Commons, againſt whoſe violence the new council was intended as a barrier to the throne †.

THIS experiment was tried, and ſeemed at firſt to give ſome ſatisfaction to the public. The earl of Eſſex, a nobleman of the popular party, ſon to that lord Capel, who had been beheaded a little after the late King, was made treaſurer in place of Danby. The earl of Sunderland, a man of intrigue and great capacity, was made ſecretary of ſtate: The viſcount Halliſax, a fine genius, poſſeſſed of learning, eloquence, induſtry, but ſubject to inquietude, and fond of refinements, was admitted into the council. Theſe three, together with Temple, who often joined them, tho' he kept himſelf more detached from public buſineſs, formed a kind of ca-

† Their names were: Prince Rupert, the archbiſhop of Canterbury, lord Finch chancellor, earl of Shafteſbury preſident, earl of Angleſea, privy ſeal, duke of Albemarle, duke of Monmouth, duke of Newcaſtle, duke of Lauderdale, duke of Ormond, marqueſs of Wincheſter, marqueſs of Worceſter, earl of Arlington, earl of Saliſbury, earl of Bridgewater, earl of Sunderland, earl of Eſſex, earl of Bath, viſcount Falconberg, viſcount Halliſax, biſhop of London, lord Robarts, lord Hollis, lord Ruſſel, lord Cavendiſh, ſecretary Coventry, Sir Francis North, chief juſtice, Sir Henry Capel, Sir John Erneley, Sir Thomas Chichely, Sir William Temple, Edward Seymour, Henry Powle.

binet

binet council, from which all affairs received their firſt digeſtion. Shafteſbury was made preſident of the council; contrary to the advice of Temple, who foretold the conſequence of admitting a man of ſo dangerous a character into any part of the public adminiſtration. Chap. V. 1679.

As Temple foreſaw, it happened. Shafteſbury, finding, that he poſſeſſed no more than the appearance of court-favour, was reſolved ſtill to adhere to the popular party, by whoſe confidence he enjoyed an undiſputed ſuperiority in the lower Houſe, and poſſeſſed great influence over the other. The very appearance of court-favour, empty as it was, tended to render him more dangerous. His partizans, obſerving the progreſs which he had already made, hoped, that he would ſoon acquire the entire aſcendant; and he conſtantly flattered them, that, if they perſiſted in their purpoſes, the King, from indolence, and neceſſity, and fondneſs for Monmouth, would at laſt be induced, even at the expence of his brother's right, to make them every conceſſion.

Besides, the antipathy to popery, as well as jealouſy of the King and Duke, had taken too faſt poſſeſſion of men's minds, to be removed by ſo feeble a remedy, as this new council, projected by Temple. The Commons, ſoon after the declaration of that council, proceeded ſo far as to vote unanimouſly, "That the Duke "of York's being a papiſt, and the hopes of his coming to the crown, had given "the higheſt countenance to the preſent conſpiracies and deſigns of the papiſts "againſt the King and the proteſtant religion." It was expected, that a bill for excluding him the throne would ſoon be brought in. To prevent this bold meaſure, the King concerted ſome limitations, which he propoſed to the Parliament. He introduced his plan by the following gracious expreſſions: "And "to ſhew you, that, while you are doing your parts, my thoughts have not been "miſemployed, but that it is my conſtant care to do every thing, that may pre-"ſerve your religion, and ſecure it for the future in all events, I have commanded "my lord chancellor to mention ſeveral particulars; which, I hope, will be an "evidence, that, in all things, which concern the public ſecurity, I ſhall not "follow your zeal, but lead it."

The limitations projected were of the utmoſt importance, and deprived the ſucceſſor of the chief branches of royalty. A method was there chalked out, by which the nation, on every new reign, could be enſured of having a Parliament, which the King ſhould not, for a certain time, have it in his power to diſſolve. In caſe of a popiſh ſucceſſor, the prince was to forfeit the right of conferring any eccleſiaſtical preferments: No member of the privy council, no judge of the common law or in chancery, was to be put in or diſplaced but by conſent of Parliament: And the ſame precaution was extended to the military part of the government; to the lord- Limitations on a popiſh ſucceſſor.

Chap. V. 1679.

lord lieutenant and deputy lieutenant of the counties, and to all officers of the navy. The chancellor, of himſelf added, "It is hard to invent another reſtraint; conſidering how much the revenue will depend upon the conſent of Parliament, and how impoſſible it is to raiſe money without ſuch conſent. But yet, if any thing elſe can occur to the wiſdom of the Parliament, which may farther ſecure religion and liberty againſt a popiſh ſucceſſor, without defeating the right of ſucceſſion itſelf, his majeſty will readily conſent to it."

It is remarkable, that when theſe limitations were firſt laid before the council, Shafteſbury and Temple were the only members, who argued againſt them. The reaſons, which they employed, were diametrically oppoſite. Shafteſbury's opinion was, that the reſtraints were inſufficient; and that nothing but the total excluſion of the duke could give a proper ſecurity to the kingdom. Temple on the other hand thought, that the reſtraints were ſo rigorous as even to ſubvert the conſtitution; and that ſhackles, put upon a popiſh ſucceſſor, would not afterwards be eaſily caſt off by a proteſtant. It is certain, that the Duke was extremely alarmed when he heard of this ſtep taken by the King, and that he was better pleaſed even with the bill of excluſion itſelf, which, he thought, by reaſon of its violence and injuſtice, could never poſſibly take place. There is alſo reaſon to believe, that the King would not have gone ſo far, had he not expected, from the extreme fury of the Commons, that his conceſſions would be rejected, and that the blame of not forming a reaſonable accommodation would by that means lie entirely at their door.

It ſoon appeared, that Charles had entertained a juſt opinion of the diſpoſition of the Houſe. So much were the Commons actuated by the cabals of Shafteſbury and other malecontents; ſuch violent antipathy prevailed againſt popery, that the King's conceſſions, tho' much more important than could reaſonably have been expected, were not embraced. A bill was brought in for the total excluſion of the Duke from the crown of England and Ireland. It was declared that the ſovereignty of theſe kingdoms, upon the King's death or reſignation, ſhould devolve to the perſon next in ſucceſſion after the Duke; that all acts of royalty, which that Prince ſhould afterwards perform, ſhould not only be void, but be deemed treaſon; and that if he ſo much as entered any of theſe dominions, he ſhould be deemed guilty of the ſame offence; and that all who ſupported his title, ſhould be puniſhed as rebels and traitors. This important bill, which implied baniſhment as well as excluſion, paſſed the lower Houſe by a majority of ſeventy-nine.

Bill of excluſion.

The Commons were not ſo wholly employed about the excluſion-bill as to overlook all other ſecurities to liberty. The country-party, during all the laſt Parliament, had exclaimed much againſt the bribery and corruption of the members: and

and the ſame reproach had been renewed againſt the preſent Parliament. An enquiry was made into a complaint, which was ſo dangerous to the honour of that aſſembly; but very little foundation was found for it. Sir Stephen Fox, who was the paymaſter, confeſſed to the Houſe, that nine members received penſions to the amount of three thouſand four hundred pounds: And after a very rigorous enquiry by a ſecret committee, eight more penſioners were diſcovered. A ſum alſo, about twelve thouſand pounds, had been occaſionally given or lent to others. The writers of that age pretend, that Clifford and Danby had adopted very oppoſite maxims, with regard to pecuniary influence. The former endeavoured to gain the leaders and orators of the Houſe, and deemed the others of no conſequence. The latter thought it ſufficient to gain a majority, however compoſed. It is likely, that the means, rather than the intentions, were wanting to both theſe miniſters. Chap. V. 1679.

Penſions and bribes, tho' it be difficult entirely to exclude them, are dangerous expedients for government; and cannot be too carefully guarded againſt, nor too vehemently decried, by every one who has a regard to the virtue and liberty of a nation. The influence, however, which the Crown acquires from the diſpoſal of places, honours, and preferments, is to be eſteemed of a different nature. This engine of power may become too forcible, but it cannot altogether be aboliſhed, without the total deſtruction of monarchy, and even of all regular authority. But the Commons at this time were ſo jealous of the Crown, that they brought in a bill, which was twice read, excluding from the lower Houſe all who poſſeſſed any lucrative offices.

The ſtanding army and the King's guards were by the Commons voted to be illegal: A new pretenſion, it muſt be confeſſed; but very neceſſary for the full ſecurity of liberty and a limited conſtitution.

Arbitrary impriſonment is a grievance, which, in ſome degree, has place almoſt in every government, except in that of Britain; and our abſolute ſecurity from it, we owe chiefly to the preſent Parliament; a merit, which makes great atonement for the faction and violence, into which their prejudices had, in other particulars, betrayed them. The great charter had laid the foundation of this valuable part of liberty; the petition of right had renewed and extended it; but many proviſions were ſtill wanting, to render it complete, and prevent all evaſion or delay from miniſters and judges. The act of *habeas corpus*, paſſed this ſeſſion, ſerved theſe uſeful purpoſes. By this act, it was prohibited to ſend any one to priſons beyond ſea. No judge, under ſevere penalties, muſt refuſe to any priſoner a writ of *habeas corpus*, by which the gaoler was directed to produce in court the body of the priſoner (whence the writ has its name) and to certify the cauſe of his Habeas corpus bill.

Chap. V. 1679. his detainer and impriſonment. If the gaol lay within twenty miles of the judge, the writ muſt be obeyed in three days; and ſo proportionably for greater diſtances: Every priſoner muſt be indicted the firſt term after his commitment, and brought to trial in the ſubſequent term. And no man, after being enlarged by order of court, can be recommitted for the ſame offence. This law is eſſentially neceſſary for the protection of liberty in a mixed monarchy; and as it has not place in any other form of government, this conſideration alone may induce us to prefer our preſent conſtitution to all others. It muſt, however, be confeſſed, that there is ſome difficulty to reconcile with ſuch extreme liberty the regular police of a ſtate, eſpecially that of great cities.

DURING theſe zealous efforts for the protection of liberty, no complaiſance for the Crown was diſcovered by this Parliament. The King's revenue lay under great debts and anticipations: Thoſe branches, granted in the year 1669 and 1670, were ready to expire: And the fleet was repreſented by the King to be in great decay and diſorder. But the Commons, inſtead of being affected by theſe diſtreſſes of the Crown, truſted chiefly to them for paſſing the excluſion-bill, and for puniſhing and diſplacing all the miniſters, who were diſagreeable to them. They were therefore in no haſte to relieve the King; and grew only the more aſſuming on account of his complaints and uneaſineſs. Jealous however of the army, they granted the ſame ſum of 206,000 pounds, which had been voted for diſbanding it by the laſt Parliament; tho' the vote, by reaſon of the ſubſequent prorogation and diſſolution, joined to ſome ſcruples of the Lords, had not been carried into an act. This money was appropriated by very ſtrict clauſes; but the Commons inſiſted not, as formerly, upon its being paid into the chamber of London.

THE impeachment of the five popiſh lords in the Tower, with that of the earl of Danby, was carried on with great vigour. The power of that miniſter and his credit with the King, made him extremely obnoxious to the popular leaders; and the Commons hoped, that if he was puſhed to extremity, he would be obliged, in order to juſtify his own conduct, to lay open the whole intrigue of the French alliance, which they ſuſpected to contain a ſecret of the moſt dangerous nature. The King on his ſide, apprehenſive of the ſame conſequences, and deſirous to protect his miniſter, who was become criminal merely by obeying orders, employed his whole intereſt to ſupport the validity of that pardon, which had been granted him. The Lords appointed a day for the examination of this queſtion, and agreed to hear council on both ſides: But the Commons would not ſubmit their pretenſions to the diſcuſſion of argument and enquiry. They voted, that whoever ſhould preſume, without their leave, to maintain before the Houſe of Peers the validity of Danby's pardon, ſhould be accounted a betrayer of the liberties of the Engliſh Commons. And they made a demand,

that

that the biſhops, whom they knew to be devoted to the court, ſhould be removed, not only when the trial of the earl ſhould come on, but alſo when the validity of his pardon ſhould be diſcuſſed. Chap. V. 1679.

THE biſhops, before the reformation, had always enjoyed a ſeat in Parliament: But ſo far were they antiently from regarding that dignity as a privilege, that they affected rather to form a ſeparate order in the ſtate, quite independant of the civil magiſtrate, and accountable only to the pope and to their own order. By the conſtitutions, however, of Clarendon, enacted during the reign of Henry II. they were obliged to give their preſence in Parliament; but as the canon law prohibited them from aſſiſting in the trials of life and death, they were allowed in ſuch caſes the privilege of abſenting themſelves. A practice, which was at firſt merely voluntary, became afterwards a rule; and on the earl of Strafford's trial, the biſhops, who would gladly have attended, and who were no longer bound by the canon law, were yet obliged to withdraw. It had always been uſual for them to enter a proteſtation of their right to ſit; and this proteſtation, being conſidered as a mere form, was always admitted and diſregarded. But here was ſtarted a new queſtion of no ſmall importance. The Commons, who were now enabled, by the violence of the people, and the neceſſities of the crown, to make new acquiſitions of powers and privileges, inſiſted, that the biſhops had no more title to vote in the queſtion of the earl's pardon than in the impeachment itſelf. The biſhops aſſerted, that the pardon was merely a preliminary; and that, neither by the canon-law nor the practice of Parliament, were they ever obliged, in capital caſes, to remove, till the very commencement of the trial itſelf. If their abſence was conſidered as a privilege, which was its real origin, it depended on their own choice, how far they would inſiſt upon it. If regarded as a diminution of their right of peerage, ſuch unfavourable cuſtoms ought never to be extended beyond the very circumſtance eſtabliſhed by them; and all arguments, from a pretended parity of reaſon, were in that caſe of little or no authority.

THE Houſe of Lords were ſo much influenced by theſe reaſons, that they admitted the biſhops' right to vote, when the validity of the pardon ſhould be examined. The Commons inſiſted ſtill on their withdrawing; and thus a quarrel being commenced between the two Houſes, the King, who expected nothing but freſh inſtances of violence from this Parliament, began to entertain thoughts of laying hold of ſo favourable a pretence, and of finiſhing the ſeſſion by a prorogation. While in this diſpoſition, he was alarmed with ſudden intelligence, that the Houſe of Commons were preparing a remonſtrance, in order to inflame the nation ſtill farther upon the favourite topics of the plot and of popery. He haſtened, therefore, to execute his intention, even without conſulting his new council, by whoſe 27th of May.

Chap. V. 1679.

advice he had promiſed to regulate his whole conduct. And thus were diſappointed all the projects of the malecontents, who were extremely enraged at this vigorous meaſure of the King. Shaftesbury publicly threatened, that he would have the head of whoever had adviſed it. The Parliament was ſoon after diſſolved without advice of council; and a new Parliament ordered to be choſen. The King was willing to try every means, which gave a proſpect of more compliance in his ſubjects; and in caſe of failure, the blame, he hoped, would lie on thoſe whoſe obſtinacy forced him to extremities.

Prorogation and diſſolution of the Parliament, 10th of July.

But even during the receſs of Parliament, there was no interruption to the proſecution of the Catholics accuſed of the plot. The King, contrary to his own judgment, found himſelf obliged to give way to this popular fury. Whitebread, provincial of the jeſuits, Fenwic, Gavan, Turner, and Harcourt, all of them of the ſame order, were firſt brought to their trial. Beſides Oates and Bedloe, Dugdale, a new witneſs, appeared againſt the priſoners. This man had been ſteward to lord Aſton, and, tho' poor, poſſeſſed ſomewhat a more reputable character than the other two: But his account of the intended maſſacres and aſſaſſinations was equally monſtrous and incredible. He even aſſerted, that 200,000 Papiſts in England were ready to take arms. The priſoners proved by ſixteen witneſſes from St. Omer's, ſtudents, and moſt of them young men of family, that Oates was in that ſeminary, at the time when he ſwore that he was in London: But as they were Catholics and diſciples of the jeſuits, their teſtimony, both with the judges and the jury, was totally diſregarded. Even the reception, which they met with in court, was full of outrage and mockery. One of them ſaying, that Oates always continued at St. Omer's, if he could believe his ſenſes: "You Papiſts," ſaid the Chief juſtice, "are taught "not to believe your ſenſes." It muſt be confeſſed, that Oates, in oppoſition to the ſtudents of St. Omer's, found means to bring evidence of his having been at that time in London: But this evidence, tho' it had, at the time, the appearance of ſome ſolidity, was afterwards diſcovered, when Oates himſelf was tried for perjury, to be altogether deceitful. In order farther to diſcredit that witneſs, the jeſuits proved by undoubted teſtimony, that he had perjured himſelf in father Ireland's trial, whom they ſhowed to have been in Staffordſhire at the very time when Oates ſwore, that he was committing treaſon in London. But all theſe pleas availed them nothing againſt the general prejudices. They received ſentence of death; and were executed, perſiſting to their laſt breath in the moſt ſolemn, earneſt, and deliberate, tho' diſregarded proteſtations of their innocence.

Trial and execution of the five jeſuits.

The next trial was that of Langhorne, an eminent lawyer, by whom all the concerns of the jeſuits were managed. Thro' his hands, Oates and Bedloe ſwore, all the papal commiſſions paſſed; by which the chief offices in England were ſupplied

And of Langhorne.

plied with Catholics. When verdict was given againſt the priſoner, the audience expreſſed their ſavage joy by loud acclamations. So high indeed had the popular rage mounted, that the witneſſes for this unhappy man, on approaching the court, were almoſt torn in pieces by the rabble: One in particular was bruiſed to ſuch a degree, as to put his life in danger. And another, a woman, declared, that, unleſs the court could afford her protection, ſhe durſt not give evidence: But as the judges could go no farther than promiſe to puniſh ſuch as ſhould injure her, the priſoner himſelf had the humanity to wave her teſtimony. Chap. V. 1679.

So far the informers had proceeded with ſucceſs: Their accuſation was hitherto equivalent to a ſentence of death. The firſt check, which they received, was on the trial of Sir George Wakeman, the Queen's phyſician, whom they accuſed of an intention to poiſon the King. It was a ſtrong circumſtance in favour of Wakeman, that Oates, in his firſt information before the council, had accuſed him only upon hear-ſay; and when aſked by the chancellor, whether he had any thing farther to charge him with, he added; "God forbid I ſhould ſay any thing againſt Sir "George: For I know nothing more againſt him." On the trial he gave poſitive evidence of the priſoner's guilt. There were many other circumſtances which favoured Wakeman: But what chiefly contributed to his acquittal, was the connexion of his cauſe with that of the Queen, whom no-one, even during the higheſt prejudices of the times, could ſincerely believe guilty. The great importance of the trial made men recollect themſelves, and recall that good ſenſe and humanity, which ſeemed during ſome time to have abandoned the nation. The Chief juſtice himſelf, who had hitherto favoured the witneſſes, exaggerated the plot, and railed againſt the priſoners, was obſerved to be conſiderably mollified, and to give a favourable charge to the jury. Oates and Bedloe had the aſſurance to attack him to his face, and even to accuſe him of partiality before the council. The whole party, who had formerly much extolled his conduct, made him the great object of their reſentment. Wakeman's acquittal was indeed a ſenſible mortification to the furious proſecutors of the plot, and fixed an indelible ſtain upon the witneſſes. But Wakeman, after he recovered his liberty, finding himſelf expoſed to ſuch inveterate enmity, and being threatened with farther proſecutions, thought it prudent to retire beyond ſea: And his flight was interpreted as a proof of guilt, by thoſe who were ſtill reſolved to perſiſt in the belief of the conſpiracy. Wakeman acquitted. 18th of July.

The great diſcontents in England, and the refractory diſpoſition of the Parliament excited the hopes of the Scots covenanters, and gave them ſome proſpect of an end to thoſe grievous oppreſſions, under which they had ſo long laboured. It was ſuſpected to have been the policy of Lauderdale and his aſſociates to puſh theſe unhappy men to extremity, and force them into rebellion, with a view of reaping State of affairs in Scotland.

Chap. V. 1679.

profit from the forfeitures and attainders, which would enſue upon it. But the covenanters, aware of this policy, had hitherto forborne all acts of hoſtility; and that tyrannical miniſter had failed of his purpoſe. An incident at laſt happened, which brought on an inſurrection in that country.

THE covenanters were much enraged againſt Sharpe, the primate, whom they conſidered as an apoſtate from their principles, and whom they experienced to be an unrelenting perſecutor of all thoſe who diſſented from the eſtabliſhed worſhip. He had an officer under him, one Carmichael, no leſs zealous than himſelf againſt all conventicles, and who by his violent proſecutions had rendered himſelf extremely obnoxious to the fanatics. A company of theſe had way-laid him on the
3d of May. road near St. Andrews, with an intention, if not of killing him, at leaſt of beating him ſo ſeverely as would afterwards render him more cautious in perſecuting the Non-conformiſts †. While looking out for their prey, they were ſurprized at ſeeing the archbiſhop's coach paſs by; and they immediately interpreted this incident as a declaration of the ſecret purpoſe of Providence againſt him. But when they obſerved, that almoſt all his ſervants, by ſome accident, were abſent, they no longer doubted, that heaven had here delivered their capital enemy into their hands. Without farther deliberation, they fell upon him; dragged him from his coach; tore him from the arms of his daughter, who interpoſed with cries and tears: and piercing him with redoubled wounds, left him dead on the ſpot, and immediately diſperſed themſeves.

THIS atrocious action ſerved the miniſtry as a pretence for a more violent perſecution againſt the fanatics, on whom, without diſtinction, they laid the guilt of thoſe furious aſſaſſins. It is indeed certain, that the murder of Sharpe had excited an univerſal joy among the covenanters; and that their blind zeal had often led them, in their books and ſermons, to praiſe and recommend the aſſaſſination of their enemies, whom they conſidered as the enemies of all true piety and godlineſs. The ſtories of Jael and Siſera, of Ehud and Eglon, reſounded from every pulpit. The officers, quartered in the weſt, received more ſtrict orders to find out and diſperſe all conventicles; and for that reaſon the covenanters, inſtead of meeting in ſmall bodies, were obliged to celebrate their worſhip in numerous aſſemblies, and to bring arms for their ſecurity. At Rutherglen, a ſmall borough near Glaſgow, they openly ſet forth a declaration againſt prelacy, and in the market-place burned ſeveral acts of Parliament and acts of council, which had eſtabliſhed prelacy, and prohibited all conventicles. For this inſult on government, they purpoſely choſe the 29th of May, the anniverſary of the reſtoration; and previouſly extinguiſhed the bonfires, which had been kindled for that ſolemnity.

† Wodrow's hiſtory of the ſufferings of the church of Scotland, vol. ii. p. 28.

CAPTAIN

Chap. V. 1679.

CAPTAIN Graham, afterwards viſcount Dundee, an active and enterprizing officer, attacked a great conventicle upon Loudon-hill, and was repulſed with the loſs of thirty men. The covenanters finding that they were unwarily involved in ſuch deep guilt, were engaged to perſevere, and to ſeek from their valour and fortune alone for that indemnity, which the ſeverity of the government left them no hopes of ever being able otherwiſe to obtain. They puſhed on to Glaſgow, and tho' at firſt repulſed, they afterwards made themſelves maſters of that town; diſpoſſeſſed all the eſtabliſhed clergy; and iſſued proclamtions, in which they declared, that they fought againſt the King's ſupremacy, againſt popery and prelacy, and againſt a popiſh ſucceſſor.

HOWEVER accidental this inſurrection might appear, there is reaſon to think, that ſome great men, in combination with the popular leaders in England, had ſecretly inſtigated the covenanters to proceed to ſuch extremities †, and hoped for the ſame effects as had forty years before enſued from the diſorders in Scotland. The King alſo, apprehenſive of like conſequences, immediately diſpatched Monmouth with a ſmall body of Engliſh cavalry. He joined the Scots guards, and ſome regiments of militia, levied from the well-affected counties; and with great celerity marched towards the weſt in queſt of the rebels. They had taken poſt at Bothwel-bridge between Hamilton and Glaſgow; where there was no acceſs to them but over the bridge, which a ſmall body was able to defend againſt the King's forces. They ſhowed great judgment in the choice of their poſt; but diſcovered neither judgment nor valour in any other ſtep of their conduct. No nobility and few gentry had joined them: The miniſters were in reality the commanders; and the whole army never exceeded 8000 men. Monmouth attacked the bridge; and the body of inſurgents who defended it, maintained their poſt, as long as their ammunition laſted. When they ſent for more, they received orders to abandon their ground, and to retire backwards. This imprudent meaſure ruined the army of the covenanters. Monmouth paſſed the bridge without oppoſition, and drew up in order, oppoſite to the enemy. His cannon alone put them to rout. About 700 fell in the purſuit: For properly ſpeaking there was no action. Twelve hundred were taken priſoners; and were treated by Monmouth with an humanity, which they had never experienced in their own countrymen. Such of them as would promiſe to live peaceably under the government were diſmiſſed. About three hundred, who were ſo obſtinate as to refuſe this eaſy condition, were ſhipped for Barbadoes; but unfortunately periſhed in the voyage. Two of their clergy were hanged. Monmouth was of a generous diſpoſition; and beſides, aimed at popularity in Scotland. The King intend-

Battle of Bothwel-bridge.

22d of June.

† Algernon Sidney's letters, p. 90.

Chap. V. 1679.

ed to intruſt the affairs of that kingdom into his hands. He had married a Scots lady, heireſs of one of the moſt conſiderable families, and allied to all the chief nobility. And Lauderdale, as he was now declining in his parts, and was much decayed in his memory, began to loſe with the King that influence, which he had maintained during ſo many years; notwithſtanding all the efforts of his numerous enemies both in Scotland and England, and notwithſtanding the many violent and tyrannical actions, of which he had been guilty. Even at preſent, he retained ſo much influence as to poiſon all the good intentions, which the King, either of himſelf or by Monmouth's ſuggeſtion, had formed with regard to Scotland. An act of indemnity was granted; but the miniſter took care, that it ſhould rather afford protection to himſelf and his aſſociates, than to the unhappy covenanters. And tho' orders were given to connive thenceforwards at all conventicles, he found means, under a variety of pretences, to elude the execution. It muſt be owned however to his praiſe, that he was the chief perſon, who by his council haſtened the expeditious march of the forces and the prompt orders to Monmouth; and thereby diſappointed all the expectations of the Engliſh malecontents, who, reflecting on the diſpoſitions of mens minds in both kingdoms, had entertained great hopes from the progreſs of the Scots inſurrection.

CHAP. VI.

State of parties.——State of the miniſtry.——Meal-tub plot.——Whig and Tory.——A new Parliament.——Violence of the Commons.——Excluſion-bill.——Arguments for and againſt the Excluſion.——Excluſion-bill rejected.——Trial of Stafford.——His Execution.——Violence of the Commons.——Diſſolution of the Parliament.——New Parliament at Oxford.——Fitzharris's caſe.——Parliament diſſolved.——Victory of the Royaliſts.——

1679.

THE King, obſerving that the whole nation concurred at firſt in the belief and proſecution of the popiſh plot, had found it abſolutely requiſite for his own ſafety to pretend, in all public ſpeeches and tranſactions, an entire belief and acquieſcence in that famous abſurdity, and by this artifice he had eluded the violent

violent and irreſiſtible torrent of the people. When a little time and recollection, as well as the execution of the pretended conſpirators, had ſomewhat moderated the general fury, he was now enabled to form a conſiderable party, devoted to the intereſts of the crown, and determined to oppoſe the pretenſions of the malecontents. Chap. VI. 1679. State of parties.

In all mixt governments, ſuch as that of England, the bulk of the nation will always incline to preſerve the entire frame of the conſtitution; but, according to the various prejudices, intereſts, and diſpoſitions of men, ſome will ever attach themſelves with more paſſion to the regal, others to the popular part of the government. Tho' the King, after his reſtoration, had endeavoured to aboliſh the diſtinction of parties, and had choſen his miniſters from among all denominations; no ſooner had he loſt his popularity, and expoſed himſelf to general jealouſy, than he found it requiſite to court the old cavalier party, and to promiſe them full compenſation for that neglect, of which they had hitherto complained. The preſent emergence made it ſtill more neceſſary for him to apply for their ſupport; and there were many circumſtances, which determined them, at this time, to fly to the aſſiſtance of the crown, and to the protection of the royal family.

A party ſtrongly attached to monarchy will naturally be jealous of the right of ſucceſſion, by which alone, they believe, ſtability to be preſerved in the government, and a barrier fixed to the encroachments of popular aſſemblies. The project, openly embraced of excluding the Duke, appeared to that party a dangerous innovation: And the deſign, ſecretly projected, of advancing Monmouth, made them apprehenſive, leſt the inconveniencies of a diſputed ſucceſſion ſhould be propagated to all poſterity. While the jealous lovers of liberty maintained, that a King, whoſe title depended on the Parliament, would naturally be more regardful of the intereſts and humours of the people; the paſſionate admirers of monarchy conſidered this dependance as a degradation of kingly government, and a great ſtep towards the eſtabliſhment of a commonwealth in England.

But tho' the union of the political Royaliſts brought great acceſſion of force to the crown, Charles derived no leſs ſupport from the confederacy, which he had, at this time, the addreſs to form with the church of England. He repreſented to the church the great number of Preſbyterians and other ſectaries, who had entered into the popular party; the encouragement and favour which they met with; the loudneſs of their cries with regard to popery and arbitrary power. And he made the eſtabliſhed clergy and their adherents apprehend, that the old ſcheme for the abolition of prelacy as well as monarchy was revived, and that the ſame miſeries and oppreſſions threatened them, to which, during the civil wars and uſurpations, they had ſo long been expoſed.

Chap. VI. 1679.

THE memory alſo of theſe diſmal times united many indifferent and impartial perſons to the Crown, and begot a dread, leſt the zeal for liberty ſhould engraft itſelf on fanaticiſm, and ſhould once more kindle a civil war in the kingdom. Had not the King ſtill retained the prerogative of diſſolving the Parliament, there was indeed reaſon to apprehend the renewal of all the pretenſions and violences, which had uſhered in the laſt commotions. The one period appeared an exact counterpart to the other: But ſtill diſcerning judges could perceive, both in the ſpirit of the parties and in the genius of the Prince, a very material difference; by means of which Charles was enabled at laſt, tho' with the imminent peril of liberty, to preſerve the peace of the nation.

THE cry againſt popery was very loud; but it proceeded leſs from religious than from party zeal, in thoſe who propagated, and even in thoſe who adopted it. The ſpirit of enthuſiaſm had occaſioned ſo much miſchief, and had been ſo ſucceſsfully exploded, that it was not poſſible, by any artifice, again to revive and ſupport it. Cant had been ridiculed; hypocriſy detected; the pretenſions to a more thorough reformation, and to greater purity, had become ſuſpicious; and inſtead of denominating themſelves the *godly* party, the appellation affected at the beginning of the civil wars, the preſent patriots were contented to call themſelves the *good* and the *honeſt* party †: A ſure prognoſtic, that their meaſures were not to be ſo furious, nor their pretenſions ſo exorbitant.

THE King too, tho' not endowed with the integrity and ſtrict principles of his father, was happy in a more amiable manner, and more popular addreſs. Far from being diſtant, ſtately, or reſerved, he had not a grain of pride or vanity in his whole compoſition ‡; but was the moſt affable, beſt bred man alive. He treated his ſubjects like noblemen, like gentlemen, like freemen; not like vaſſals or boors. His profeſſions were plauſible, his whole behaviour engaging; ſo that he won upon the hearts, even while he loſt the good opinion of his ſubjects, and often balanced their judgment of things by their perſonal inclination §. In his public conduct likewiſe, tho' he had ſometimes embraced meaſures dangerous to the liberty and religion of his people, he had never been found to perſevere obſtinately in them, but had always returned into that path, which their united opinion ſeemed to point out to him. And upon the whole, it ſeemed to many, cruel and even iniquitous, to remark too rigorouſly the failings of a prince, who diſcovered ſo much facility in correcting his errors, and ſo much lenity in pardoning the offences committed againſt himſelf.

† Temple, vol. i. p. 335.
‡ Temple, vol. i. p. 449.
§ Diſſertation on Parties, letter vii.

THE

Chap. VI. 1679.

THE general affection, which was borne the King, appeared ſignally about this time. He fell ſick at Windſor; and had two or three fits of a fever, ſo violent as made his life be thought in danger. A general amazement ſeized all ranks of men, encreaſed by the apprehenſions entertained of his ſucceſſor. In the preſent diſpoſition of men's minds, the King's death, to uſe an expreſſion of Sir William Temple *, was regarded as the end of the world. The malecontents, it was feared, would proceed to extremities, and immediately kindle a civil war in the kingdom. Either their entire ſucceſs, or entire failure, or even the balance and conteſt of parties, ſeemed all of them events equally fatal. The King's chief counſellors, therefore, Eſſex, Halifax, and Sunderland, who ſtood on very bad terms with Shafteſbury and the popular party, adviſed him to ſend ſecretly for the Duke, that, in caſe of any ſiniſter accident, that Prince might be ready to aſſert his right againſt the oppoſition, which he was likely to meet with. When the Duke arrived, he found his brother out of danger; and it was agreed to conceal the invitation, which he had received. His journey, however, was attended with very important conſequences. He prevailed on the King to diſgrace Monmouth, whoſe projects were now known and avowed; to deprive him of his command in the army; and to ſend him beyond ſea. He himſelf returned to Bruſſels; but made a very ſhort ſtay in that place. He obtained leave to retire to Scotland, under pretence ſtill of quieting the apprehenſions of the Engliſh nation; but really with a purpoſe of ſecuring that kingdom in his intereſts.

State of the miniſtry.

2d of September.

THO' Eſſex and Halifax had concurred in the reſolution of inviting over the Duke, they ſoon found, that they had not obtained his confidence, and that even the King, while he made uſe of their ſervice, had no ſincere regard for their perſons. Eſſex in diſguſt reſigned the Treaſury: Halifax retired to his country-ſeat: Temple, deſpairing of any accommodation among ſuch enraged parties, withdrew almoſt entirely to his books and his gardens. The King, who changed miniſters as well as meaſures with great indifference, beſtowed at this time his chief confidence on Hyde, Sunderland, and Godolphin. Hyde ſucceeded Eſſex in the treaſury.

ALL the King's miniſters, as well as himſelf, were extremely averſe to the meeting of the new Parliament, which they expected to find as refractory as any of the preceding. The elections had gone moſtly in favour of the country party. The terrors of the plot had ſtill a mighty influence over the populace; and the apprehenſions of the Duke's bigotted principles and arbitrary character, weighed with all men of ſenſe and reflection. The King therefore reſolved to prorogue the Parlia-

* Vol. i. p. 342.

Chap. VI. 1679.

ment, that he might try, whether time would allay thoſe humours, which, by every other expedient, he had in vain attempted to mollify. In this meaſure he did not expect the concurrence of his council. He knew, that thoſe popular leaders, whom he had admitted, would zealouſly oppoſe a reſolution, which diſconcerted all their ſchemes; and that the royaliſts would not dare, by ſupporting it, to expoſe themſelves to the vengeance of the Parliament, when it ſhould be aſſembled. Theſe reaſons obliged him to take this ſtep entirely of himſelf; and he only declared his reſolution in council. It is remarkable, that, tho' the King had made profeſſion never to embrace any meaſure without advice of his council, he had often broke that reſolution, and had been neceſſitated in affairs of the greateſt conſequence, to controul their opinion. Many of them in diſguſt threw up about this time; particularly lord Ruſſel, the moſt popular man in the nation, as well from the mildneſs and integrity of his manners, as from his zealous attachment to the religion and liberties of his country. Tho' carried into ſome extremes, his intentions were ever eſteemed upright; and being heir to the moſt opulent fortune in the kingdom, as well as void of ambition, men believed, that nothing but the laſt neceſſity would ever engage him to embrace any deſperate meaſures. Shafteſbury, who was, in moſt particulars, of an oppoſite character, was removed by the King from the office of preſident of the council; and the earl of Radnor, a man who poſſeſſed whimſical talents and ſplenetic virtues, was ſubſtituted in his place.

It was the favour and countenance of the Parliament, which had chiefly encouraged the rumour of plots; but the nation had got ſo much into that vein of credulity, and every neceſſitous villain was ſo much incited by the ſucceſs of Oates and Bedloe, that even during the prorogation the people were not allowed to remain in tranquillity. There was one Dangerfield, a fellow who had been burned in the hand for crimes, tranſported, whipped, pilloried four times, fined for cheats, outlawed for felony, convicted of coining, and expoſed to all the public infamy, which the laws could inflict on the baſeſt and moſt ſhameful enormities. The credulity of the people, and the humour of the times, enabled even this man to become a perſon of conſequence. He was the author of a new incident, called the *Meal tub plot*, from the place where ſome papers, regarding it, were found. The bottom of this affair it is difficult, and not very material, to diſcover. It only appears, that Dangerfield, under pretence of betraying the conſpiracies of the Preſbyterians, had been countenanced by ſome Catholics of condition, and had even been admitted to the Duke's preſence and the King's. And that under pretence of revealing new popiſh plots, he had obtained acceſs to Shafteſbury and ſome of the popular leaders.

Meal-tub plot.

leaders. Which ſide he intended to cheat, is uncertain; or whether he did not rather mean to cheat both: But he ſoon found, that the belief of the nation was much more open to a popiſh than a preſbyterian plot; and he reſolved to ſtrike in with the prevailing humour. Tho' no weight could be laid on his teſtimony, great clamour was raiſed; as if the Court, by way of retaliation, had intended to load the Preſbyterians with the guilt of a falſe conſpiracy. It muſt be confeſſed, that the preſent period, by the prevalence and ſuſpicion of ſuch mean and ignoble arts on all ſides, throws a great ſtain on the Britiſh annals. Chap. VI. 1679.

One of the moſt innocent artifices, practiſed by party-men at this time, was the additional ceremony, pomp, and expence, with which a pope-burning was celebrated in London: This ſpectacle ſerved to entertain, and amuſe, and enflame the populace. The duke of Monmouth likewiſe came over without leave, and made a triumphant proceſſion thro' many parts of the kingdom, extremely careſſed and admired by the people. All theſe arts ſeemed requiſite to ſupport the general prejudices, during the long interval of Parliament. Great endeavours were alſo uſed to obtain the King's conſent for the meeting of that aſſembly. Seventeen peers preſented a petition to that purpoſe. Many of the corporations imitated this example. Notwithſtanding ſeveral marks of diſpleaſure, and even a menacing proclamation from the King, petitions came from all parts, earneſtly inſiſting on a ſeſſion of Parliament. The danger of popery, the terrors of the plot, were never forgot in any of theſe addreſſes. 17th of November. 1680.

Tumultuous petitioning was one of the chief artifices, by which the malecontents in the laſt reign had attacked the Crown: And tho' the manner of ſubſcribing and delivering petitions was now ſomewhat limited by act of Parliament, the thing itſelf ſtill remained; and was an admirable expedient for infeſting the Court, for ſpreading diſcontent, and for uniting the nation in any popular clamour. As the King found no law, by which he could puniſh thoſe importunate, and, as he eſteemed them, undutiful ſolicitations, he was obliged to encounter them by popular applications of a contrary tendency. Wherever the church and court party prevailed, addreſſes were framed, containing expreſſions of the higheſt regard to his Majeſty, the moſt entire acquieſcence in his wiſdom, the moſt dutiful ſubmiſſion to his prerogative, and the deepeſt *abhorrence* of thoſe, who endeavoured to encroach on it, by preſcribing to him any time for aſſembling the Parliament. Thus the nation came to be diſtinguiſhed into *Petitioners* and *Abhorrers*. Factions indeed were at this time extremely animated againſt each other. The very names, by which each party denominated its antagoniſt, diſcover the virulence and rancour, which prevailed. For beſides Petitioner and Abhorrer, appellations which were

Chap. VI. 1680. Whig and Tory.

ſoon forgot, this year is remarkable for being the epoch of the well-known epithets of WHIG and TORY, by which, and ſometimes without any very material difference, this iſland has been ſo long divided. The court party reproached their antagoniſts with their affinity to the fanatical conventiclers in Scotland, who were known by the name of Whigs: The country party found a reſemblance between the courtiers and the popiſh banditti in Ireland, to whom the appellation of Tory was affixed. And after this manner, theſe fooliſh terms of reproach came into public and general uſe; and even at preſent ſeem not nearer their end than when they were firſt invented.

THE King uſed every art to encourage his partizans, and to reconcile the people to his government. He perſevered in the great zeal which he affected againſt popery. He even allowed ſeveral prieſts to be put to death, for no other crime but their having received orders in the Romiſh church. It is ſingular, that one of them, called Evans, was playing at tennis, when the warrant for his immediate execution was notified to him: He ſwore, that he would play out his ſet firſt. Charles, with the ſame view of acquiring popularity, formed an alliance with Spain; and alſo offered an alliance to Holland: But the Dutch, terrified with the great power of France, and ſeeing little reſource in a country ſo diſtracted as England, declined acceptance. He had ſent for the Duke from Scotland, but deſired him to return, when the time of aſſembling the Parliament began to approach.

IT was of great conſequence to the popular party, while the meeting of the Parliament depended on the King's will, to keep the law, whoſe operations are perpetual, entirely on their ſide. The ſheriffs of London by their office return the juries: It had been uſual for the mayor to nominate one ſheriff by drinking to him; and the common hall had ever without diſpute confirmed the mayor's choice. Sir Robert Clayton, the mayor, named one who was not acceptable to the popular party: The common hall rejected him; and Bethel and Corniſh, two independants, and republicans, and of conſequence deeply engaged with the male-contents, were choſen by a majority of voices. In ſpite of all remonſtrances and oppoſition, the citizens perſiſted in their choice; and the court party were obliged for the preſent to acquieſce.

JURIES however were not ſo partial in the city, but that reaſon and juſtice, even when the popiſh plot was in queſtion, could ſometimes prevail. The earl
23d of June. of Caſtlemaine, huſband to the famous dutcheſs of Cleveland, was acquitted about this time; tho' accuſed by Oates and Dangerfield of an intention to aſſaſſinate the King. Sir Thomas Gaſcoigne, a very aged gentleman in the north, being

being accuſed by two ſervants, whom he had diſmiſſed for diſhoneſty, received a like verdict. Theſe trials were great blows to the plot, which now began to ſtagger in the judgment of moſt men, except thoſe who were devoted to the country party. But in order ſtill to preſerve alive the zeal againſt popery, the earl of Shafteſbury appeared in Weſtminſter-hall, attended by the earl of Huntington, the lords Ruſſel, Cavendiſh, Gray, Brandon, Sir Henry Caverly, Sir Gilbert Gerrard, Sir William Cooper, and other perſons of diſtinction, and preſented to the grand jury of Middleſex reaſons for indicting the Duke of York as a popiſh recuſant. While the jury were deliberating on this extraordinary preſentment, the chief juſtice ſent for them up, and ſuddenly, even ſomewhat irregularly, diſmiſſed them. Shafteſbury however obtained the end, for which he had undertaken this bold meaſure: He ſhowed to all his followers the deſperate reſolution, which he had embraced, never to admit of any accommodation or compoſition with the Duke. By ſuch daring conduct he aſſured them, that he was fully determined not to deſert their cauſe, and he engaged them to a like devoted perſeverance in all the meaſures, which he ſhould ſuggeſt to them. Chap. VI. 1680.

As the kingdom was regularly and openly divided into two zealous parties, it was not difficult for the King to know, that the majority of the new Houſe of Commons was engaged in intereſts oppoſite to the Court: But that he might leave no expedient untried, which could compoſe the unhappy differences among his ſubjects, he reſolved at laſt, after a very long interval, to aſſemble the Parliament. In his ſpeech, he told them, that the ſeveral prorogations, which he had made, had been very advantageous to his neighbours, and very uſeful to himſelf: That he had employed that time in perfecting with the Crown of Spain an alliance, which had been often deſired by former Parliaments, and which, he doubted not, would be extremely agreeable to them: That in order to give weight to this meaſure, and render it beneficial to Chriſtendom, it was neceſſary to avoid all domeſtic diſſenſions, and to unite themſelves firmly in the ſame views and purpoſes: That he was determined, that nothing on his part ſhould be wanting to ſuch a ſalutary end; and provided the ſucceſſion be preſerved in its due and legal courſe, he would concur in any new expedients for the ſecurity of the proteſtant religion: That the farther examination of the popiſh plot and the puniſhment of the criminals, were requiſite for the ſafety both of King and kingdom: And after recommending to them the neceſſity of providing, by ſome ſupplies, for the ſafety of Tangiers, he proceeded in theſe words: "But that which I value above all the treaſure in the world, and which I am ſure "will give us greater ſtrength and reputation both at home and abroad than any "treaſure can do, is, a perfect union among ourſelves. Nothing but this can re- 21ſt of October. A new Parliament.

"ſtore

Chap. VI. 1680.

" ſtore the kingdom to that ſtrength and vigour which it ſeems to have loſt, and " raiſe us again to that conſideration, which England hath uſually poſſeſſed. All " Europe have their eyes upon this aſſembly, and think their own happineſs and " miſery, as well as ours, will depend upon it. If we ſhould be ſo unhappy as to " fall into miſunderſtandings among ourſelves to that degree as would render our " friendſhip unſafe to truſt to, it will not be wondered at, if our neighbours ſhould " begin to take new reſolutions, and perhaps ſuch as may be fatal to us. Let us " therefore take care, that we do not gratify our enemies, and diſcourage our " friends, by any unſeaſonable diſputes. If any ſuch do happen, the world will " ſee, that it was no fault of mine: For I have done all that it was poſſible for " me to do, to keep you in peace, while I live, and to leave you ſo, when I die. " But from ſo great prudence and ſo good affection as yours, I can fear nothing " of this kind; but do rely upon you all, that you will do your beſt endeavours " to bring this Parliament to a good and happy concluſion."

Violence of the Commons.

ALL theſe mollifying expreſſions had no influence with the Commons. Every ſtep, which they took, betrayed that zeal, with which they were animated. They voted, that it was the undoubted right of the ſubject to petition the King for the calling and ſitting of Parliament. Not contented with this deciſion, which ſeems very juſtifiable in a mixt Monarchy, they fell with the utmoſt violence on all thoſe *Abhorrers*, who, in their addreſſes to the Crown, had expreſſed their diſapprobation of thoſe petitions. They did not reflect, that it was as lawful for one party of men, as for another, to expreſs their ſentiments of public affairs, and that the beſt eſtabliſhed right, in particular circumſtances, may be abuſed, and even the exerciſe of it become an object of abhorrence. For this offence, they expelled Sir Thomas Withens. They appointed a committee for farther enquiry into ſuch members as had been guilty of a like crime; and complaints were lodged againſt lord Paſton, Sir Robert Malverer, Sir Bryan Stapleton, Taylor and Turner. They addreſſed the King againſt Sir George Jefferies, recorder of London, for his activity in the ſame cauſe; and they frightened him into a reſignation of his office, in which he was ſucceeded by Sir George Treby, a great leader of the popular party. They voted an impeachment againſt North, chief juſtice of the common pleas, for drawing the proclamation againſt tumultuous petitions: But upon examination found the proclamation ſo cautiouſly worded, that it afforded them no handle againſt him. A petition had been preſented to the King from Taunton: " How dare you deliver " me ſuch a paper?" ſaid the King to the perſon who preſented it. " Sir," replied he, " my name is DARE." For this ſaucy reply, but under other pretences, he had been tried, and fined, and committed to priſon. The Commons now addreſſed the

the King for his liberty and for the remittance of his fine. Some printers alſo and authors of ſeditious libels, they took under their protection. Chap. VI. 1680.

GREAT numbers of the Abhorrers, from all parts of England, were ſeized by order of the Commons, and committed to cuſtody. The liberty of the ſubject, which had been ſo carefully guarded by the great charter, and by the late law of Habeas Corpus, was every day violated by their arbitrary and capricious commitments. The chief jealouſy, 'tis true, of the Engliſh conſtitution is naturally and juſtly directed againſt the Crown; nor indeed have the Commons any other way of ſecuring their privileges but by commitments, which, as they cannot beforehand be exactly determined by law, muſt always appear in ſome degree arbitrary. Senſible of theſe reaſons, the people had hitherto, without murmuring, ſeen this diſcretionary power exerciſed by the Houſe: But as it was now carried to extremes, and was abuſed to ſerve the purpoſes of a faction, great complaints againſt it were heard from all quarters. At laſt, the vigour and courage of one Stowel of Exeter, an Abhorrer, put an end to the practice. He refuſed to obey the ſerjeant at arms, ſtood upon his defence, and ſaid that he knew of no law, by which they pretended to commit him. The Houſe, finding it equally dangerous to proceed or to recede, got off by an evaſion: They inſerted in their votes, that Stowel was indiſpoſed, and that a month's time was allowed him for his recovery.

BUT the chief violence of the Houſe of Commons appeared in all their tranſactions with regard to the plot, which they proſecuted with the ſame zeal and the ſame credulity as their predeceſſors. They renewed the former vote, which affirmed the reality of the horrid popiſh plot; and in order the more to terrify the people, they even aſſerted, that, notwithſtanding the diſcovery, the plot ſtill ſubſiſted. They expelled Sir Robert Can and Sir Robert Yeomans, who had been complained of, for ſaying, that there was no popiſh, but there was a preſbyterian plot. And they greatly lamented the death of Bedloe, whom they called a material witneſs, and on whoſe teſtimony they much depended. He had been ſeized with a fever at Briſtol, had ſent for chief juſtice North, confirmed all his former evidence, except that with regard to the Duke and the Queen, and deſired North to apply to the King for ſome money to relieve him in his neceſſities. A few days after he died; and the whole party triumphed extremely in this incident: As if ſuch a teſtimony could be eſteemed the affirmation of a dying man, as if his confeſſion of perjury in ſome inſtances could aſſure his veracity in the reſt, and as if the perſeverance of one profligate could outweigh the laſt words of ſo many men, guilty of no other crime but that of popery.

THE Commons even endeavoured, by their countenance and protection, to purge off the extreme infamy, with which Dangerfield was loaded, and to reſtore him to

Chap. VI. 1680.

a capacity of being a witneſs. The whole tribe of informers, they applauded and rewarded: Jenniſon, Turberville, Dugdale, Smith, la Faria, appeared before them; and their teſtimony, however frivolous or abſurd, met with a favourable reception: The King was applied to in their behalf for penſions and pardons: Their narratives were printed with that ſanction, which aroſe from the approbation of the Houſe. Dr. Tongue was recommended for the firſt conſiderable church preferment, which ſhould become vacant. Conſidering mens determined reſolution to believe, inſtead of admiring that a palpable falſhood ſhould be maintained by witneſſes, it may juſtly appear wonderful, that no better evidence was ever produced againſt the Catholics.

Excluſion-bill.

THE principal reaſons, which ſtill ſupported the clamour of the popiſh plot, were the apprehenſions, ſo juſtly entertained by the people, of the Duke of York, and the reſolution, embraced by their leaders, of excluding him from the throne. Shafteſbury, and many conſiderable men of the party, had rendered themſelves totally irreconcileable with him, and could find their ſafety no way but in his ruin. Monmouth's friends hoped, that the excluſion of that Prince would make way for their patron. The reſentment againſt the Duke's apoſtacy, the love of liberty, the zeal for religion, the attachment to faction; all theſe motives incited the country party. And above all, what ſupported the reſolution of adhering to the excluſion, and rejecting all expedients offered, was the hope artificially encouraged, that the King would at laſt be obliged to yield to their demand. His revenues were extremely burdened; and even if free, could ſcarce ſuffice for the neceſſary charges of government, much leſs for that pleaſure and expence, to which he was ſtrongly inclined. Tho' he had withdrawn his countenance from Monmouth, he was known ſecretly to retain a great affection for him. On no occaſion had he ever been found to perſiſt obſtinately againſt difficulties and importunity. And as his beloved miſtreſs, the dutcheſs of Portſmouth, had been engaged, either from lucrative views, or the hopes of making the ſucceſſion fall on her own children, to unite herſelf with the popular party; this incident was regarded as a favourable prognoſtic of their ſucceſs. Sunderland, ſecretary of ſtate, who had linked his intereſt with that of the dutcheſs, had concurred in the ſame meaſure.

BUT beſides friendſhip to his brother and a regard to the right of ſucceſſion, there were many ſtrong reaſons, which had determined Charles to perſevere in oppoſing the excluſion. All the royaliſts and the devotees to the church, that party by which alone Monarchy was ſupported, regarded the right of ſucceſſion as inviolable; and if abandoned by the King, in ſo capital an article, it was to be feared, that they would, in their turn, deſert his cauſe, and deliver him over to the pretenſions and uſurpations of the country party. The country party, or the

Whigs, as they were called, if they did not ſtill retain ſome propenſity towards a republic, were at leaſt affected with a violent jealouſy of regal power; and it was equally to be dreaded, that, being enraged with oppoſition, and animated with ſucceſs, they would, if they prevailed in this pretenſion, be willing, as well as able, to reduce the prerogative within very narrow limits. All menaces therefore, all promiſes were in vain employed againſt the King's reſolution: He never would be prevailed with to deſert his friends, and put himſelf into the hands of his enemies. And having voluntarily made ſuch important conceſſions, and offered, over and over again, ſuch ſtrong limitations, he was well pleaſed to find them rejected by the obſtinacy of the Commons; and hoped, that, after the ſpirit of oppoſition had ſpent itſelf in fruitleſs violence, the time would come, when he might ſafely appeal againſt his Parliament to his people. Chap. VI. 1680.

So much were the popular leaders determined to carry matters to extremity, that in leſs than a week after the commencement of the ſeſſion, a motion was made for bringing in an excluſion-bill, and a committee was appointed for that purpoſe. This bill differed in nothing from the former, but in two articles, which ſhowed ſtill an increaſe of zeal in the Commons: The bill was to be read to the people twice a year in all the churches of the kingdom, and every one, who ſhould ſupport the Duke's title, was rendered incapable of pardon but by act of Parliament.

The debates were carried on with great violence on both ſides. The bill was defended by Sir William Jones, who had now reſigned his office of attorney-general, by lord Ruſſel, by Sir Francis Winnington, Sir Harry Capel, Sir William Pulteney, by colonel Titus, Treby, Hambden, Montague. It was oppoſed by Sir Leoline Jenkins, ſecretary of ſtate, Sir John Erneley, chancellor of the Exchequer, by Hyde, Seymour, Temple. The arguments, tranſmitted to us may be reduced to the following topics. 10th of November.

In every government, ſaid the excluſioniſts, there is ſomewhere an authority abſolute and ſupreme; nor can any determination, however unuſual, which receives the ſanction of the legiſlature, ever afterwards admit of diſpute or controul. The liberty of any conſtitution, ſo far from diminiſhing this abſolute power, ſeems rather to add force to it, and to give it greater influence over the people. The more parts of the ſtate concur in any legiſlative deciſion, and the more free their voice; the leſs likelihood is there that any oppoſition will be made to thoſe meaſures, which receive the final ſanction of their authority. In England the legiſlative power is lodged in King, Lords, and Commons, which comprehend every order of the community: And there is no pretext for exempting any circumſtance Arguments for and againſt the excluſion.

Chap. VI. 1680.

of government, not even the ſucceſſion of the Crown, from ſo full and deciſive a juriſdiction. Even expreſs declarations have, in this particular, been made of parliamentary authority: Inſtances have occurred, where it has been exerted: And tho' prudential reaſons may juſtly be aleged, why ſuch innovations ſhould never be attempted but on extraordinary occaſions, the power and right are for ever veſted in the community. But if any occaſion can be deemed extraordinary, if any emergence can require unuſual expedients, it is the preſent; when the heir to the Crown has renounced the religion of the ſtate, and has zealouſly embraced a faith, totally hoſtile and incompatible. A prince of that communion can never put truſt in a people, ſo prejudiced againſt him: The people muſt be equally diffident of ſuch a prince. Foreign and deſtructive alliances will ſeem to the one the only protection of his throne: Perpetual jealouſy, oppoſition, faction, even inſurrections will be employed by the other as the ſole ſecurities for their liberty and religion. Tho' theological principles, when ſet in oppoſition to paſſions, have often ſmall influence on mankind in general, ſtill leſs on princes; yet when they become ſymbols of faction, and marks of party diſtinctions, they concur with one of the ſtrongeſt paſſions in the human frame, and are then capable of carrying men to the greateſt extremities. Notwithſtanding the better judgment and milder diſpoſition of the King; how much has the influence of the Duke already diſturbed the tenor of government? How often engaged the nation into meaſures totally deſtructive of their foreign intereſts and honour, of their domeſtic repoſe and tranquillity? The more the abſurdity and incredibility of the popiſh plot are inſiſted on, the ſtronger reaſon it affords for the excluſion of the Duke; ſince the univerſal belief of it diſcovers the extreme antipathy of the nation to his religion, and the utter impoſſibility of ever bringing them to acquieſce peaceably under the dominion of ſuch a Sovereign. The prince, finding himſelf in ſo perilous a ſituation, muſt ſeek for ſecurity by deſperate remedies, and by totally ſubduing the privileges of a nation, who had betrayed ſuch hoſtile diſpoſitions towards himſelf, and towards every thing which he deems the moſt ſacred. It is in vain to propoſe limitations and expedients. Whatever ſhare of authority is left in the Duke's hands, will be employed to the deſtruction of the nation; and even the additional reſtraints, by diſcovering the public diffidence and averſion, will ſerve him as incitements to put himſelf in a condition entirely abſolute and independent. And as the laws of England ſtill make reſiſtance treaſon, and neither do nor can admit of any poſitive exceptions; what folly to leave the kingdom in ſo perilous and abſurd a ſituation; where the greateſt virtue will be expoſed to the moſt ſevere proſcription, and where the laws can only

be

be ſaved by expedients, which theſe ſame laws have declared the higheſt crime and enormity? Chap. VI. 1680.

THE court party reaſoned in an oppoſite manner. An authority, they thought, entirely abſolute and uncontroulable is a mere chimera, and is no where to be found in any human inſtitutions. All government is founded on opinion and a ſenſe of duty; and wherever the ſupreme magiſtrate, by any law or poſitive preſcription, ſhocks an opinion regarded as fundamental, and eſtabliſhed with equal firmneſs as his own authority, he ſubverts the principle, by which he himſelf is eſtabliſhed, and can no longer hope for obedience. In European monarchies, the right of ſucceſſion is juſtly eſteemed a fundamental; and even tho' the whole legiſlature be veſted in a ſingle perſon, it would never be permitted him, by an edict, to diſinherit his lawful heir, and call a ſtranger or more diſtant relation to the Throne. Abuſes in other parts of government are capable of redreſs, from more diſpaſſionate enquiry or better information of the Sovereign, and till then ought patiently to be endured: But violations of the right of ſucceſſion draw ſuch terrible conſequences after them as are not to be paralleled by any other grievance or inconvenience. Vainly is it pleaded, that England is a mixed Monarchy, and that a law, framed by King, Lords, and Commons, is enacted by the concurrence of every part of the ſtate: It is plain, that there remains a very powerful party, who may indeed be out-voted, but who never will deem a law, ſubverſive of hereditary right, to be anywiſe valid or obligatory. Limitations, ſuch as are propoſed by the King, give no ſhock to the conſtitution, which, in many particulars, is already limited; and they may be ſo calculated as to ſerve every purpoſe, which is ſought for by an excluſion. If the antient barriers againſt regal authority have been able, during ſo many ages, to remain impregnable; how much more, thoſe additional ones, which, by depriving the Monarch of power, tend ſo far to their own ſecurity? The very ſame jealouſy too of religion, which has engaged the people to lay theſe reſtraints upon the ſucceſſor, will leſſen extremely the number of his partizans, and make it utterly impracticable for him, either by force or artifice, to break the fetters, impoſed upon him. The King's age and vigorous ſtate of health promiſe him a long life: And can it be prudent to tear the whole ſtate in pieces, in order to provide againſt a contingency, which, it is very likely, may never happen? No human ſchemes can ſecure the public in all poſſible events; and the bill of excluſion itſelf, however accurately framed, leaves room for very obvious and very natural ſuppoſitions, to which it pretends not to provide any remedy. Should the Duke have a ſon, after the King's death; muſt that ſon, without any default of his own, forfeit his title?

Chap. VI. 1680.

Or muſt the princeſs of Orange deſcend from the Throne, in order to give place to the lawful ſucceſſor? But were all theſe reaſonings falſe, it ſtill remains to be conſidered, that in public deliberations we ſeek not the expedient, which is beſt in itſelf, but the beſt of ſuch as are practicable. The King willingly conſents to limitations, and has already offered ſome which are of the utmoſt importance: But he is determined to endure any extremity rather than allow the right of ſucceſſion to be invaded. Let us beware of that factious violence, which leads us to demand more than will be granted; leſt we loſe the advantage of thoſe beneficial conceſſions, and leave the nation, on the King's deceaſe, at the mercy of a zealous Prince, irritated with the ill uſage, which he imagines, he has already met with.

In the Houſe of Commons, the reaſoning of the excluſioniſts appeared the moſt convincing; and the bill paſſed by a great majority. It was in the Houſe of Peers that the King expected to oppoſe it with ſucceſs. The court party was there ſo prevalent, that it was carried only by a majority of two to pay ſo much reſpect to the bill as even to commit it. When it came to be debated, the conteſt was very violent. Shafteſbury, Sunderland, and Eſſex argued for it: Halifax chiefly conducted the debate againſt it, and diſplayed an extent of capacity and a force of eloquence, which had never been ſurpaſſed in that aſſembly. He was animated, as well by the greatneſs of the occaſion, as by a rivalſhip to his uncle Shafteſbury; whom, during that day's debate, he ſeemed, in the judgment of all, to have totally eclipſed. The King was preſent during the whole debate, which was prolonged till eleven at night. The bill was thrown out by a conſiderable majority. All the biſhops, except three, voted againſt it. Beſides the influence of the Court over them; the church of England, they imagined or pretended, was in much greater danger from the prevalence of Preſbterianiſm than of Popery, which, tho' favoured by the Duke and even by the King, was extremely repugnant to the genius of the nation.

15th of November.

Excluſion bill rejected.

The Commons diſcovered much ill humour upon this diſappointment. They immediately voted an addreſs for the removal of Halifax from the King's councils and preſence for ever. Tho' the pretended cauſe was his adviſing the late frequent prorogations of Parliament, the real reaſon was apparently his vigorous oppoſition to the excluſion-bill. When the King applied for money to enable him to defend Tangiers, which he declared his preſent revenues totally unable to ſupport; inſtead of complying, they voted ſuch an addreſs as was in reality a remonſtrance, and one little leſs violent, than that famous remonſtrance, which uſhered in the civil wars. All the abuſes of government, from the beginning almoſt of the

reign,

reign, are there inſiſted on; the Dutch war, the alliance with France, the prorogations and diſſolutions of Parliament; and as all theſe meaſures, as well as the *damnable* and *helliſh* plot, are aſcribed to the machinations of the Papiſts, it was plainly inſinuated, that the King had, all along, lain under the influence of that party, and was in reality the chief conſpirator againſt the religion and liberties of his people.

THE Commons, tho' they conducted the great buſineſs of the excluſion with extreme violence and even imprudence, had yet much reaſon for that jealouſy, which gave riſe to it: But their vehement proſecution of the popiſh plot, even after ſo long an interval, diſcovers ſuch a ſpirit, either of credulity or injuſtice, as admits of no apology. The impeachment of the Catholic lords in the Tower was revived; and as the viſcount Stafford, from his age, infirmities, and narrow capacity, was eſteemed the leaſt capable of defending himſelf, it was determined to make him the firſt victim, that his condemnation might pave the way for a ſentence againſt the reſt. The chancellor, now created earl of Nottingham, was appointed lord high-ſteward for conducting this trial. 30th of November.

THERE were three witneſſes produced againſt the priſoner; Oates, Dugdale, and Turberville. Oates ſwore, that he ſaw Fenwic, the jeſuit, deliver to Stafford a commiſſion ſigned by de Oliva, general of the jeſuits, conſtituting him paymaſter to the papal army, which was to be levied for the ſubduing of England: For this ridiculous impoſture ſtill maintained its credit with the Commons. Dugdale gave teſtimony, that the priſoner, at Tixal, a ſeat of lord Aſton's, had endeavoured to engage him in the deſign of murdering the King; and had promiſed him, beſides the honour of being ſainted by the church, a reward of 500 pounds for that ſervice. Turberville affirmed, that the priſoner, in his own houſe at Paris, had made him a like propoſal. To offer money for murdering a King, without laying down any ſcheme, by which the aſſaſſin may enſure ſome probability or poſſibility of eſcape, is ſo incredible in itſelf, and may ſo eaſily be maintained by any proſtitute evidence, that an accuſation of that nature, not accompanied with circumſtances, ought very little to be attended to by any court of judicature. But notwithſtanding the ſmall hold, which the witneſſes afforded, the priſoner was able, in many very material particulars, to diſcredit their teſtimony. It was ſworn by Dugdale, that Stafford had aſſiſted in a great conſult of the Catholics held at Tixal; but Stafford proved by undoubted teſtimony, that at the time aſſigned he was in Bath, and in that neighbourhood. Turberville had ſerved a noviciate among the Dominicans; but having deſerted the convent, he had inliſted as a trooper in the French army; and being diſmiſſed that ſervice, he now lived in London, Trial of Stafford.

Chap. VI. 1680.

London, abandoned by all his relations, and expoſed to great poverty. Stafford proved by the evidence of his gentleman and his page, that Turberville had never, either at Paris or at London, been ſeen in his company; and it might juſtly appear ſtrange, that a perſon, who had ſo important a ſecret in his keeping, was ſo long entirely neglected by him.

The clamour and outrage of the populace, during the trial, were extreme: Great ability and eloquence were diſplayed by the managers, Sir William Jones, Sir Francis Winnington, ſerjeant Maynard: Yet did the priſoner, under all theſe diſadvantageous circumſtances, make a better defence than was expected, either by his friends or his enemies: The unequal conteſt, in which he was engaged, was a plentiful ſource of compaſſion to every mind, ſeaſoned with humanity. He repreſented, that, during a courſe of forty years, from the very commencement of the civil wars, he had, thro' many dangers, difficulties, and loſſes, ſtill maintained his loyalty: And was it credible, that now in his old age, eaſy in his circumſtances, but diſpirited by infirmities, he would belye the whole courſe of his life, and engage, againſt his royal maſter, from whom he had ever received kind treatment, in the moſt deſperate and moſt bloody of all conſpiracies? He remarked the infamy of the witneſſes; the contradictions and abſurdities of their teſtimony; the extreme indigence in which they had lived, tho' engaged, as they pretended, in a conſpiracy with Kings, Princes, and nobles; the credit and opulence, to which they were at preſent raiſed. With a ſimplicity and tenderneſs more perſuaſive than the greateſt oratory, he ſtill made proteſtations of his innocence, and could not forbear, every moment, expreſſing the moſt lively ſurprize and indignation at the audacious impudence of the witneſſes.

It will juſtly appear aſtoniſhing to us, as it did to Stafford himſelf, that the Peers, after a ſolemn trial of ſix days, ſhould, by a majority of twenty-four voices, pronounce ſentence againſt him. He received however with reſignation the fatal verdict. *God's holy name be praiſed*, was the only exclamation, which he uttered. When the high ſteward told him, that the Peers would intercede with the King for remitting the more cruel and ignominious parts of the ſentence, hanging and quartering; he burſt into tears: But he told the Lords, that he was moved to this weakneſs, by his ſenſe of their goodneſs, not by any terror of that fate which he was doomed to ſuffer.

It is remarkable, that after Charles, as is uſual in ſuch caſes, had remitted to Stafford the hanging and quartering, the two ſheriffs, Bethel and Corniſh, indulging their own republican humour, and complying with the prevalent ſpirit of

of their party, ever jealous of Monarchy, ſtarted a doubt with regard to the King's power of exerciſing even this ſmall degree of lenity. "Since he cannot "pardon the whole," ſaid they, "how can he have power to remit part of the "ſentence?" They propoſed the doubt to both houſes: The Peers pronounced it ſuperfluous; and even the Commons, apprehenſive leſt a queſtion of this nature might make way for Stafford's eſcape, gave this ſingular anſwer. "This Houſe "is *content*, that the ſheriffs do execute William late viſcount Stafford by ſever-"ing his head from his body *only*." Nothing can be a ſtronger proof of the fury of the times, than that lord Ruſſel, notwithſtanding the virtue and humanity of his character, ſeconded in the Houſe this barbarous ſcruple of the ſheriffs. Chap. VI. 1680.

In the interval between the ſentence and execution, many efforts were made to ſhake the reſolution of the infirm and aged priſoner, and to bring him to ſome confeſſion of that treaſon, for which he was now condemned. It was even rumoured, that he had confeſſed; and the zealous partymen, who, no doubt, had ſecretly, notwithſtanding their credulity, entertained ſome ſcruple with regard to the popiſh conſpiracy, expreſſed great triumph on this occaſion. But Stafford, when again called before the Houſe of Peers, diſcovered many ſchemes, which had been laid by himſelf and others for procuring a toleration to the Catholics, at leaſt a mitigation of the penal laws, enacted againſt them: And he proteſted, that this was the ſole treaſon, of which he had ever been guilty.

Stafford now prepared himſelf for death with that intrepidity, which became his birth and ſtation, and which was the natural reſult of the innocence and integrity, which, during the courſe of a long life he had ever maintained: His mind ſeemed even to collect new force from the violence and oppreſſion, under which he laboured. When going to execution, he called for a cloak to defend him againſt the rigour of the ſeaſon. "Perhaps," ſaid he, "I may ſhake with "cold; but, I truſt in God, not for fear." On the ſcaffold, he continued with re-iterated and earneſt aſſeverations, to make proteſtations of his innocence: All his fervour was exerciſed on that point: When he mentioned the witneſſes, whoſe perjuries had bereaved him of life, his expreſſions were full of mildneſs and of charity. He ſolemnly diſavowed all thoſe immoral principles, which over-zealous Proteſtants had aſcribed without diſtinction to the church of Rome: And he hoped, he ſaid that the time was now approaching, when the preſent deluſion would be diſſipated; and when the force of truth, tho' late, would engage the whole world to make reparation to his injured honour. 29th of December. and execution.

The populace, who had exulted at Stafford's trial and condemnation, were now melted into tears, at the ſight of that tender fortitude, which ſhone forth in

Chap. VI. 1680.

each feature, and motion, and accent of this aged noble. Their profound silence was only interrupted by sighs and groans: With difficulty they found speech to assent to those protestations of innocence, which he frequently repeated: "We "believe you, my lord! God bless you, my lord!" These expressions with a faultering accent flowed from them. The executioner himself was touched with sympathy. Twice he lifted up the ax, with an intent to strike the fatal blow; and as often felt his resolution to fail him. A deep sigh was heard to accompany his last effort, which laid Stafford for ever at rest. All the spectators seemed to feel the blow. And when the head was held up to them with the usual cry, *This is the head of a traitor*, no clamour of assent was uttered. Pity, remorse, and astonishment had taken possession of every heart, and displayed itself in every countenance.

This is the last blood which was shed on account of the popish plot: An incident, which, for the credit of the nation, it were better to bury in eternal oblivion; but which it is necessary to perpetuate, as well to maintain the truth of history, as to warn, if possible, their posterity and all mankind never again to fall into so shameful and so barbarous a delusion.

The execution of Stafford gratified the prejudices of the country party; but it contributed nothing to their power and security: On the contrary, by exciting commiseration, it tended still farther to encrease that disbelief of the whole plot, which began now to prevail. The Commons, therefore, not to lose the present occasion, resolved to make both friends and enemies sensible of their authority. They passed a bill for easing the Protestant Dissenters, and for repealing the persecuting statute of the thirty-fifth of Elizabeth: This laudable bill was likewise carried thro' the House of Peers. The chief justice was very obnoxious for dismissing the grand jury in an irregular manner, and thereby preventing that bold measure of Shaftesbury and his friends, who had presented the Duke as a Recusant. For this crime the Commons sent up an impeachment against him; as also against Jones and Weston, two of the judges, who, in some speeches from the bench, had gone so far as to give to many of the first Reformers the denomination of Fanatics.

The King, in rejecting the exclusion bill, had sheltered himself securely behind the authority of the House of Peers; and the Commons had been deprived of the usual pretence to attack the Sovereign himself, under colour of attacking his ministers and counsellors. In prosecution however of the scheme, which he had formed, of throwing the blame on the Commons, in case of any rupture, he made them a new speech. After warning them, that a neglect of this opportunity would never be retrieved, he added these words: "I did promise you the fullest satisfaction,

"which

" which your hearts could wiſh, for the ſecurity of the proteſtant religion, and " to concur with you in any remedies, which might conſiſt with preſerving the ſuc- " ceſſion of the Crown in its due and legal courſe of deſcent. I do again, with " the ſame reſervations, renew the ſame promiſes to you: And being thus ready " on my part to do all that can reaſonably be expected from me, I ſhould be glad " to know from you, as ſoon as may be, how far I ſhall be aſſiſted by you, and " what it is you deſire from me." Chap. VI. 1680.

THE moſt reaſonable objection againſt the limitations propoſed by the King, is, that they introduced too conſiderable an innovation in the government, and almoſt totally annihilated the power of the Monarch. But conſidering the preſent diſpoſition of the Commons and their leaders, we may fairly preſume, that this objection would have ſmall weight with them, and that their diſguſt againſt the Court would rather incline them to diminiſh than ſupport regal authority. They ſtill hoped, from the King's urgent neceſſities, and his uſual facility, that he would throw himſelf wholly into their hands; and that thus, without waiting for the acceſſion of the Duke, they might immediately render themſelves abſolute maſters of the government. The Commons, therefore, beſides inſiſting ſtill on the excluſion, proceeded to bring in bills of a very important, and ſome of them of a very alarming nature: One to renew the triennial act, which had been ſo inadvertently repealed in the beginning of the reign: A ſecond to make the office of judge during good behaviour: A third to declare the levying of money, without conſent of Parliament, to be high treaſon: A fourth to order an aſſociation for the ſafety of his Majeſty's perſon, for defence of the proteſtant religion, for the preſervation of the proteſtant ſubjects againſt all invaſions and oppoſition whatſoever, and for preventing the Duke of York, or any Papiſt, from ſucceeding to the Crown. The memory of the covenant was too recent for men to overlook the conſequences of ſuch an aſſociation: And the King, who was particularly converſant in Davila, could not fail of recollecting a memorable foreign inſtance to fortify this domeſtic experience. Violence of the Commons.

THE Commons alſo paſſed many votes, which, tho' they had not the authority of laws, ſerved however to diſcover the temper and diſpoſition of the Houſe. They voted, that whoever had adviſed his Majeſty to refuſe the excluſion bill, were promoters of popery and enemies to the King and kingdom. In another vote, they named the marqueſs of Worceſter, the earls of Clarendon, Feverſham, and Halifax, Laurence Hyde, and Edward Seymour, as thoſe dangerous enemies, and they requeſted his Majeſty to remove them from his perſon and councils for ever: They voted, that, till the excluſion bill was paſſed, they could not, conſiſtent with the truſt repoſed in them, grant the King any manner of ſupply. And

Chap. VI. 1680.

leſt he ſhould be enabled, by any other expedient, to ſupport the government, and preſerve himſelf independent, they paſſed another vote, in which they declared, that whoever ſhould hereafter lend, by way of advance, any money upon thoſe branches of the King's revenue, ariſing from cuſtoms, exciſe, or hearth money, ſhould be judged a hinderer of the ſitting of Parliament, and be reſponſible for the ſame in Parliament.

THE King might preſume, that the Peers, who had rejected the excluſion bill, would ſtill continue to defend the Throne, and that none of the dangerous bills, introduced into the other Houſe, would ever be preſented for the royal aſſent and approbation. But as there remained no hopes of bringing the Commons to any compoſure, and as their farther ſitting ſerved only to keep faction alive, and to perpetuate the general ferment of the nation, he came ſecretly to a reſolution of proroguing them. They got intelligence about a quarter of an hour before the black rod came to their door. Not to loſe ſuch precious time, they paſſed in a very tumultuous manner ſome very extraordinary reſolutions. They voted, *that* whoſoever adviſed his Majeſty to prorogue this Parliament, to any other purpoſe than in order to paſs the bill of excluſion, was a betrayer of the King, of the proteſtant religion, and of the kingdom of England; a promoter of the French intereſt, and a penſioner of France: *That* thanks be given to the city of London for their manifeſt loyalty and for their care and vigilance in the preſervation of the King and of the proteſtant religion: *That* it is the opinion of this Houſe, that that city was burned in the year 1666 by the Papiſts, deſigning thereby to introduce arbitrary power and popery into the kingdom: *That* humble application be made to his Majeſty to reſtore the duke of Monmouth to all his offices and commands, from which, it appears to the Houſe, he had been removed by the influence of the duke of York. And *that* it is the opinion of the Houſe, that the proſecution of the Proteſtant diſſenters upon the penal laws is at this time grievous to the ſubject, a weakening of the proteſtant intereſt, an encouragement of popery, and dangerous to the peace of the kingdom.

1681. 10th of January. Diſſolution of the Parliament.

THE King paſſed ſome laws of no great importance: But the bill for repealing the thirty-fifth of Elizabeth, he privately ordered the clerk of the Crown not to preſent to him. By this artifice, which was equally diſobliging to the country party as if the bill had been rejected, and at the ſame time implied ſome meanneſs and timidity in the King, that ſalutary act was for the preſent eluded. The King had often of himſelf attempted, and ſometimes by irregular means, to give indulgence to Nonconformiſts: but beſides, that he had uſually expected to comprehend the Catholics in this liberty, the preſent refractory diſpoſition of the Sectaries had much incenſed him againſt them, and he was ſtill reſolved, if poſſible, to keep them at mercy.

THE

Chap. VI. 1681.

THE laſt votes of the Commons ſeemed to be an attempt of forming indirectly an aſſociation againſt the Crown, after they found, that their aſſociation bill could not paſs: The diſſenting intereſt, the city, and the duke of Monmouth, they endeavoured to connect with the country party. A civil war indeed never appeared ſo likely as at preſent; and it was high time for the King to diſſolve a Parliament, which ſeemed to have entertained ſuch dangerous projects. Soon after, he ſummoned another. Tho' he obſerved, that the country party had eſtabliſhed their intereſt ſo ſtrongly in all the electing burroughs, that he could not hope for any diſpoſition more favourable in the new Parliament, this expedient was ſtill a proſecution of his former project, of trying every method, by which he might form an accommodation with the Commons: And if all failed, he hoped, that he could the better juſtify to his people, at leaſt to his party, a final breach with them.

IT had always been much regreted by the Royaliſts during the civil wars, that the Long Parliament had been aſſembled at Weſtminſter, and had thereby received force and encouragement from the neighbourhood of a potent and factious city, which had zealouſly embraced their party. Tho' the King was now poſſeſſed of guards, which, in ſome meaſure, over-awed the populace, he was determined ſtill farther to obviate all inconvenience; and he ſummoned the new Parliament to meet at Oxford. The city of London ſhowed how juſt a judgment he had formed of their diſpoſition. Beſides re-electing the ſame members, they voted thanks to them for their former behaviour, in endeavouring to diſcover the depth of the *horrid* and *helliſh* popiſh plot, and to exclude the Duke of York, the principal cauſe of the ruin and miſery, impending over the nation. Monmouth with fifteen Peers preſented a petition againſt aſſembling the Parliament at Oxford, "where the two "Houſes," they ſaid, "could not be in ſafety; but would be eaſily expoſed to the "ſwords of the Papiſts and their adherents, of whom too many had crept into his "Majeſty's guards." Theſe inſinuations, which ſtruck ſo evidently at the King himſelf, were not calculated to perſuade him, but to inflame the people.

THE Excluſioniſts might have concluded, both from the King's diſſolution of the laſt Parliament, and from his ſummoning of the preſent to meet at Oxford, that he was determined to maintain his declared reſolution of rejecting their favourite bill: But they ſtill flattered themſelves, that his urgent neceſſities would influence his eaſy temper, and finally gain them the aſcendant. The leaders came to Parliament, attended not only with their ſervants, but with numerous bands of their followers and partizans. The four city members in particular were followed by great multitudes, wearing ribbons, in which were woven theſe words, *No Popery! No Slavery!* The King had his guards regularly muſtered: His party likewiſe endeavoured to make

Chap. VI. 1681.

a ſhow of their ſtrength: And on the whole, the aſſembly at Oxford bore more the appearance of a tumultuous Poliſh diet, than of a regular Engliſh Parliament.

21ſt of March.

New Parliament at Oxford.

THE King, who had hitherto employed the moſt gracious expreſſions to all his Parliaments, particularly the two laſt, thought proper to addreſs himſelf to the preſent, in a more authoritative manner. He complained of the unwarrantable proceedings of the former Houſe of Commons; and ſaid, that, as he would never uſe arbitrary government himſelf, neither would he ever ſuffer it in others. By calling however this Parliament ſo ſoon, he had ſufficiently ſhown, that no paſt irregularities could inſpire him with a prejudice againſt thoſe aſſemblies. He now afforded them, he added, another opportunity of providing for the public ſafty; and to all the world had given one evidence more, that on his part he had not neglected the duty incumbent on him.

THE Commons were not over-awed with the magiſterial air of the King's ſpeech. They conſiſted almoſt entirely of the ſame members; they choſe the ſame ſpeaker; and they inſtantly fell into the ſame meaſures, the impeachment of Danby, the repeal of the perſecuting ſtatute of Elizabeth, the enquiry into the popiſh plot, and the bill of excluſion. So violent were they on this laſt article, that no expedient, however plauſible, could ſo much as be hearkened to. Ernely, one of the King's miniſters, propoſed, that the Duke ſhould be baniſhed, during life, five hundred miles from England, and that on the King's demiſe the next heir ſhould be conſtituted regent, with regal power: Yet even this expedient, which left the Duke only the bare title of King, could not, tho' ſeconded by Sir Thomas Lyttelton and Sir Thomas Mompeſſon, obtain the attention of the Houſe. The paſt diſappointments of the country party, and the oppoſition made by the court, had only rendered them more united, more haughty, and more determined. No other method but their own, of excluding the Duke, could give them any ſatisfaction.

Fitz-harris's caſe.

THERE was one Fitz-harris, an Iriſh Catholic, who had inſinuated himſelf into the dutcheſs of Portſmouth's acquaintance, and had been very buſy in conveying to her intelligence of any libel wrote by the country party, or of any deſigns entertained againſt her or againſt the court. For ſervices of this kind, and perhaps too, from a regard to his father, Sir Edward Fitz-harris, who had been an eminent royaliſt, he had received from the King a preſent of 250 pounds. This man met with one Everard, a Scotſman, a ſpy of the excluſioniſts, and an informer of the popiſh plot; and he propoſed to him to write a libel againſt the King, the Duke, and the whole adminiſtration. What Fitz-harris's intentions were, cannot well be aſcertained: It is probable, as he afterwards aſſerted, that he meant to carry this libel to his patron, the dutcheſs, and to make a merit of the diſcovery. Everard, who

ſuſ-

Chap. VI. 1681.

ſuſpected ſome other deſign, and who was pleaſed on his ſide to have the merit of a diſcovery with his patrons, reſolved to betray his friend: He poſted Sir William Waller, a noted juſtice of peace, and two perſons more behind the hangings, and gave them an opportunity of ſeeing and hearing the whole tranſaction. The libel, ſketched out by Fitz-harris, and executed partly by him, partly by Everard, was the moſt furious, indecent, and outragious performance imaginable; and ſuch as was fitter to hurt than ſerve any party, which ſhould be ſo imprudent as to adopt it. Waller carried the intelligence to the King, and obtained a warrant for committing Fitz-harris, who happened, at that very time, to have a copy of the libel in his pocket. Finding himſelf now delivered over to the law, he reſolved to pay court to the popular party, who were alone able to protect him, and by whom he obſerved almoſt all trials to be governed and directed. He ſaid, that he had been employed by the court to write the libel, in order to throw the odium of it on the excluſioniſts: But this account, which was within the bounds of credibility, he diſgraced by circumſtances, which were altogether abſurd and improbable. The intention of the miniſters, he ſaid, was to ſend about copies to all the heads of the country party; and the moment they received them, they were to be arreſted, and a conſpiracy to be imputed to them. That he might merit favour by ſtill more important intelligence, he commenced a diſcoverer of the great popiſh plot; and he failed not to confirm all the tremendous circumſtances, inſiſted on by his predeceſſors. He ſaid, that the ſecond Dutch war was entered into with a view of extirpating the proteſtant religion, both abroad and at home; that father Parry, a jeſuit, on the diſappointment by the peace, told him, that the Catholics reſolved to deſtroy the King, and had even engaged the Queen in that deſign; that the envoy of Modena offered him 10,000 pounds to kill the King, and upon his refuſal the envoy ſaid, that the dutcheſs of Mazarine, who was as expert at poiſoning as her ſiſter, the counteſs of Soiſſons, would, with a little phial, execute that deſign; that upon the King's death the army in Flanders were to come over, and maſſacre the Proteſtants; that money was raiſed in Italy for recruits and ſupplies, and there ſhould be no more Parliaments; and that the Duke was privy to this whole plan, and had even entered into the deſign of Godfrey's murder, which was afterwards executed in the manner related by Prance.

The popular leaders had, all along, been very deſirous of having an accuſation againſt the Duke; and tho' Oates and Bedloe, in their firſt intelligence, had not dared to go ſo far, both Dugdale and Dangerfield had afterwards been encouraged to ſupply ſo material a defect, by comprehending him in the conſpiracy. The Commons, therefore, finding that Fitz-harris was alſo willing to ſerve this purpoſe, were not aſhamed to adopt his evidence, and reſolved for that end to ſave him

Chap. VI. 1681.

him from the deſtruction, with which he was at preſent threatened. The King had removed him from the city priſon, where he was expoſed to be tampered with by the excluſioniſts; had ſent him to the Tower; and had ordered him to be proſecuted by an indictment at common law. In order to prevent his trial, and execution, an impeachment was voted by the Commons againſt him, and ſent up to the Lords. That they might ſhow the greater contempt of the Court, they ordered, by way of deriſion, that the impeachment ſhould be carried up by ſecretary Jenkins; who was ſo provoked by the intended affront, that he at firſt refuſed obedience; tho' afterwards, being threatened with commitment, he was induced to comply. The Lords voted to remit the affair to the ordinary courts of judicature, before whom, as the attorney-general informed them, it was already determined to try Fitz-harris. The Commons maintained, that the Peers were obliged to receive every impeachment from the Commons; and this indeed ſeems to have been the firſt inſtance of their refuſal: They therefore voted, that the Lords, in rejecting their impeachment, had denied juſtice, and had violated the conſtitution of Parliament. They alſo declared, that whatever inferior court ſhould proceed againſt Fitz-harris, or any one that lay under impeachment, would be guilty of a high breach of privilege. Great heats were likely to enſue; and as the King found no likelikood of any better temper in the Commons, he gladly laid hold of the opportunity, afforded by a quarrel between the two Houſes, and he proceeded to a diſſolution of the Parliament. The ſecret was ſo well kept, that the Commons had no intimation of it, till the black rod came to their door, and ſummoned them to attend the King at the Houſe of Peers.

Parliament diſſolved.

THIS vigorous meaſure, tho' it might have been foreſeen, excited ſuch aſtoniſhment in the country party, as deprived them of all ſpirit, and reduced them to abſolute deſpair. They were ſenſible, tho' too late, that the King had finally taken his reſolution, and was determined to endure any extremity rather than ſubmit to thoſe terms, which they had reſolved to impoſe upon him. They found, that he had patiently waited till affairs ſhould come to full maturity; and having now engaged a national party on his ſide, had boldly ſet his enemies at defiance. No Parliaments, they knew, would be ſummoned for ſome years; and during that long interval, the Court, tho' perhaps at the head of an inferior party, yet being poſſeſſed of all authority, would have every advantage over a body, diſperſed and diſunited. Theſe reflections crowded upon every one; and all the excluſioniſts were terrified, leſt Charles ſhould ſecond the blow by ſome action more violent, and immediately take vengeance on them for their long and obſtinate oppoſition to his meaſures. The King on his part was no leſs apprehenſive, leſt deſpair might engage

gage them to have recourſe to force, and make ſome ſudden attempt upon his perſon. Both parties therefore hurried away from Oxford; and in an inſtant, that city, ſo crowded and buſy, was left in its uſual emptineſs and tranquillity. Chap. VI. 1681.

THE court party gathered force from the diſperſion and aſtoniſhment of their antagoniſts, and adhered more firmly to the King, whoſe reſolutions, they now ſaw, could be entirely depended on. The violence of the excluſioniſts were every where exclaimed againſt and aggravated; and even the reality of the plot, that great engine of their authority, was openly called in queſtion. The clergy eſpecially were buſy in this great revolution; and being moved, partly by their own fears, partly by the inſinuations of the Court, they repreſented all their antagoniſts as Sectaries and Republicans, and rejoiced in eſcaping all thoſe perils, which they believed to have been hanging over them. Principles, the moſt oppoſite to civil liberty, were every where inforced from the pulpit; and adopted in numerous addreſſes; where the King was flattered in his preſent meaſures, and congratulated on his eſcape from Parliaments. Could words have been depended on, the nation appeared to be running faſt into voluntary ſervitude, and ſeemed even ambitious of reſigning into the King's hands all the privileges, tranſmitted to them, thro' ſo many ages, by their gallant anceſtors. Victory of the Royaliſts.

BUT Charles had ſagacity enough to diſtinguiſh between men's real internal ſentiments, and the language, which zeal and oppoſition to a contrary faction may ſometimes extort from them. Notwithſtanding all theſe profeſſions of duty and obedience, he was reſolved not to truſt, for a long time, the people with a new election, but to depend intirely on his own œconomy for alleviating thoſe neceſſities, under which he laboured. Great retrenchments were made in the houſhold: Even his favourite navy was neglected: Tangiers, tho' it had coſt great ſums of money, was a few years after abandoned and demoliſhed. The mole was entirely deſtroyed; and the garriſon, being brought over to England, ſerved to augment that ſmall army, which the King relied on, as one ſolid baſis of his authority. It had been happy for the nation, had Charles uſed his victory with juſtice and moderation, equal to the prudence and dexterity, with which he obtained it.

THE firſt ſtep, taken by the Court, was the trial of Fitz-harris. Doubts were raiſed by the jury with regard to their power of trying him, after the concluding vote of the Commons: But the judges took upon them to decide the queſtion in the affirmative; and the jury were obliged to proceed. The writing the libel was clearly proved upon Fitz-harris: The only queſtion was with regard to his intentions. He aſſerted, that he was a ſpy of the Court, and had accordingly carried the libel to the dutcheſs of Portſmouth; and he was deſirous, that the jury ſhould, in this

Chap. VI. 1681.

transaction, conſider him as a cheat, not as a traitor. He failed however ſomewhat in the proof; and was brought in guilty of treaſon by the jury.

FINDING himſelf entirely in the hands of the King, he now retracted all his former impoſtures with regard to the popiſh plot, and even endeavoured to attone for them by new impoſtures againſt the country party. He affirmed, that theſe fictions had been extorted from him by the ſuggeſtion and artifices of Treby the recorder, and of Bethel and Corniſh, the two ſheriffs. This account he perſiſted in even at his execution; and tho' men knew, that nothing could be depended on, which came from one ſo corrupt, and ſo loſt to all ſenſe of honour; yet were they inclined, from his perſeverance, to rely ſomewhat more on his veracity in theſe laſt aſſeverations. But it appears that his wife had ſome connections with Mrs. Wall, the favourite maid of the dutcheſs of Portſmouth; and Fitz-harris hoped, if he perſiſted in a ſtory agreeable to the Court, that ſome favour might on that account be ſhown to his family.

IT is amuſing to reflect on the ſeveral lights, in which this ſtory has been repreſented by the oppoſite factions. The country party affirmed, that Fitz-harris had been employed by the Court, in order to throw the odium of the libel on the excluſioniſts, and thereby give riſe to a proteſtant plot: The court party maintained, that the excluſioniſts had found out Fitz-harris, a ſpy of the miniſters, and had ſet him upon this undertaking, from an intention of loading the Court with the imputation of ſuch a deſign upon the excluſioniſts. Rather than acquit their antagoniſts, both ſides were willing to adopt an account the moſt intricate and incredible. It was a ſtrange ſituation, in which the people, at that time, were placed; to be every day tortured with theſe perplexed ſtories, and inflamed with ſuch dark ſuſpicions againſt their fellow-citizens. This was no leſs than the fifteenth falſe plot, or ſham plot, as they were then called, with which the court, it was imagined, had endeavoured to load their adverſaries *.

THE country party had intended to make uſe of Fitz-harris's evidence againſt the Duke and the Catholics; and his execution was therefore a great mortification to them. But the King and his miniſters were reſolved not to be contented with ſo ſlender an advantage. They were determined to proſecute the victory, and to employ againſt the excluſioniſts thoſe very offenſive arms, however unfair, which that party had laid up in ſtore againſt their antagoniſts. The whole gang of ſpies, witneſſes, informers, ſuborners, who had ſo long been ſupported and encouraged by the leading patriots, finding now that the King was entirely maſter, turned ſhort upon their old patrons, and offered their ſervice to the miniſters. To the diſgrace

* College's trial.

of

of the Court and of the age, they were received with hearty welcome; and their teſtimony or rather perjury made uſe of, in order to commit legal murder upon the oppoſite party. With an air of triumph and deriſion it was aſked, "Are "not theſe men good witneſſes, who have eſtabliſhed the popiſh plot, upon whoſe "teſtimony Stafford and ſo many Catholics have been executed, and whom you "yourſelves have ſo long celebrated as men of credit and veracity? You have "admitted them into your boſom: They are beſt acquainted with your treaſons: "They are determined in another ſhape to ſerve their King and country: And "you cannot complain, that the ſame meaſure, which you meted to others, "ſhould now, by a righteous doom or vengeance, be meaſured out to you." Chap. VI. 1681.

It is certain, that the principle of retaliation may ſerve in ſome caſes as a full apology, in others as an alleviation, for a conduct which would otherwiſe be expoſed to great blame. But theſe infamous arts, which poiſon juſtice in its very ſource, and break all the bands of human ſociety, are ſo deteſtable and dangerous, that no pretence of retaliation can be pleaded as an apology, or even an alleviation for the crime incurred by them. On the contrary, the greater indignation the King and his miniſters felt, when formerly expoſed to the perjuries of abandoned men, the more reluctance ſhould they now have diſcovered againſt employing the ſame inſtruments of vengeance upon their antagoniſts.

The firſt perſon, on whom the miniſters fell, was one College, a London joiner, who had become extremely noted for his zeal againſt popery, and was very much connected with Shafteſbury and all the leaders of the country party: For as they relied much upon the populace, men of College's rank and ſtation were very uſeful to them. College had been in Oxford armed with ſword and piſtol during the ſitting of the Parliament; and this was made the foundation of his crime. It was pretended that a conſpiracy had been entered into to ſeize the King's perſon, and retain him in confinement, till he ſhould make the conceſſions demanded of him. The ſheriffs of London were in ſtrong oppoſition to the Court; and it was not ſtrange, that the grand jury named by them rejected the bill againſt College. The priſoner was therefore ſent to Oxford, where the treaſon was ſaid to have been committed. Lord Norris, a courtier, was ſheriff of the county; and the inhabitants were in general extremely devoted to the court party. A jury was named, conſiſting entirely of Royaliſts; and tho' they were men of credit and character, yet ſuch was the factious rage, which prevailed, that little juſtice could be expected by the priſoner. Some papers, containing hints and directions for his defence, were taken from him, as he was conducted to his trial: An iniquity, which ſome pretended to juſtify by alleging, that a like violence had been committed againſt a

Chap. VII. 1681.

priſoner during the fury of the popiſh plot. Such wild notions of retaliation were at that time propagated by the court party.

THE witneſſes produced againſt College were Dugdale, Turbervile, Haynes, Smith; men who had before given evidence againſt the Catholics, and whom the jury, for that very reaſon, regarded as the moſt perjured lyars. College, tho' beſet with ſo many toils, oppreſſed with ſo many iniquities, defended himſelf with ſpirit, courage, capacity, preſence of mind; and he invalidated the evidence of the Crown, by the moſt convincing arguments and the moſt undoubted teſtimony: Yet did the jury, after half an hour's deliberation, bring in a verdict againſt him. The inhuman ſpectators received the news with a ſhout of applauſe: But the priſoner was nowiſe diſmayed. At his execution, he maintained the ſame manly fortitude, and ſtill denied the crime imputed to him. His whole conduct and demeanour prove him to have been a man led aſtray only by the fury of the times, and to have been governed by a very honeſt, but indiſcreet zeal for his country and his religion.

THUS the two parties, actuated by mutual rage, but cooped up within the narrow limits of the law, levelled with poiſoned daggers the moſt deadly blows againſt each other's breaſt, and buried in their factious diviſions all regard to truth, honour, and morality.

CHAP. VII.

State of affairs in Ireland.——Shafteſbury acquitted.——Argyle's trial.——State of affairs in Scotland.——State of the miniſtry in England.——New nomination of ſheriffs.——Quo warrantos.——Great power of the Crown.——A conſpiracy.——Shafteſbury retires and dies.——Rye-houſe plot.——Conſpiracy diſcovered.——Execution of the conſpirators.——Trial of lord Ruſſel.——His execution.——Trial of Algernon Sidney.——His execution.——State of the nation.——State of foreign affairs.——King's ſickneſs and death,——and character.

1681. State of affairs in Ireland.

WHEN the Cabal entered into the myſterious alliance with France, they took care to remove the duke of Ormond from the committee of foreign affairs; and nothing tended farther to encreaſe the national jealouſy, entertained againſt

againſt the new meaſures, than to ſee a man of ſo much loyalty, as well as probity and honour, excluded from all their councils. They had even ſo great intereſt with the King as to get Ormond recalled from the government of Ireland; and lord Robarts, afterwards earl of Radnor, ſucceded him in that important employment. Lord Berkeley ſucceeded Robarts; and the earl of Eſſex, Berkeley. At laſt in the year 1677, Charles caſt his eyes again upon Ormond, whom he had ſo long neglected; and ſent him over lieutenant to Ireland. "I have done every "thing," ſaid the King, "to diſoblige that man; but it is not in my power to "make him my enemy." Ormond, during his diſgrace, had never joined the malecontents, nor encouraged thoſe clamours, which, with too much reaſon, but often for bad purpoſes, were raiſed againſt the King's meaſures. He even thought it his duty, regularly, tho' with dignity, to pay his court at Whitehall; and to prove that his attachments were founded on gratitude, inclination and principle, not on any temporary advantages. All the expreſſions, which dropped from him, while neglected by the Court, ſhowed more of good humour, than any prevalence of ſpleen and indignation. "I can do you no ſervice," ſaid he to his friends, "I have only the power left by my applications to do you ſome hurt." When colonel Cary Dillon ſolicited him to ſecond his pretenſions at Court, and urged that he had no friends but God and his grace. "Alas! poor Cary," replied the duke, "I pity thee: Thou couldſt not have two friends, that poſſeſs leſs "intereſt at Court. I am thrown by," ſaid he, on another occaſion, "like an old "ruſty clock; yet even that neglected machine twice in twenty-four hours points "right." Chap. VII. 1681.

When Charles found it his intereſt to ſhow favour to the old Royaliſts and to the church of England, Ormond, who was extremely revered by that whole party, could not fail of recovering, together with the government of Ireland, his former credit and authority. His adminiſtration, when lord lieutenant, was correſpondent to the general tenor of his life; and tended equally to promote the intereſt of Prince and people, of Proteſtant and Catholic. Ever firmly attached to the eſtabliſhed religion, he was able, even during theſe jealous times, to eſcape ſuſpicion, tho' he gratified not vulgar prejudices by any perſecution of the popiſh party. He encreaſed the revenue of Ireland to three hundred thouſand pounds a year: He maintained a regular army of ten thouſand men: He ſupported a well diſciplined militia of twenty thouſand; And tho' the act of ſettlement had ſo far been infringed, that Catholics were permitted to live in corporate towns, they were guarded with ſo careful an eye, that the moſt timorous Proteſtant never apprehended any danger from them.

The chief object of Eſſex's ambition was to return to the ſtation of lord lieutenant, where he had behaved with honour and integrity: Shafteſbury and Buckingham bore

Chap. VII. 1681.

an extreme hatred to Ormond, both from perſonal and party conſiderations: The great aim of the anti-courtiers was to throw reflections on every part of the King's government. It could be no ſurprize, therefore, to the lord lieutenant to learn, that his adminiſtration was attacked in Parliament, particularly by Shafteſbury; but he had the ſatisfaction, at the ſame time, to hear of the keen, tho' polite defence, made by his ſon, the generous Oſſory. After juſtifying ſeveral particulars of Ormond's adminiſtration againſt that intriguing patriot, Oſſory proceeded in the following words: "Having ſpoke of what the lord lieutenant has "done, I preſume, with the ſame truth, to tell your lordſhips what he has not done. "He never adviſed the breaking of the triple league; he never adviſed the ſhut-"ting up of the Exchequer; he never adviſed the declaration for a toleration; "he never adviſed the falling out with the Dutch and the joining with France: "He was not the author of that moſt excellent poſition *Delenda eſt Carthago*, "that Holland, a proteſtant country, ſhould, contrary to the true intereſt of Eng-"land, be totally deſtroyed. I beg, that your lordſhips will be ſo juſt as to "judge of my father and all men, according to their actions and their councils." Theſe few ſentences, pronounced by a plain and gallant ſoldier, noted for probity, had a ſurprizing effect upon the audience, and confounded all the rhetoric of his eloquent and factious adverſary. The prince of Orange, who eſteemed the former character as much as he deſpiſed the latter, could not forbear congratulating by letter the earl of Oſſory on this new ſpecies of victory, which he had obtained.

OSSORY, tho' he ever kept at a great diſtance from faction, was the moſt popular man in the kingdom; tho' he never made any compliance with the corrupt views of the Court, was extremely beloved and reſpected by the King. An univerſal grief appeared on his death, which happened about this time, and which the populace, as is uſual wherever they are much affected, fooliſhly aſcribed to poiſon. Ormond bore the loſs with patience and dignity; tho' he ever retained a pleaſing, however melancholy, ſenſe of the ſignal merit of Oſſory. "I would not ex-"change my dead ſon," ſaid he, "for any living ſon in Chriſtendom."

THESE particularities may appear a digreſſion; but 'tis with pleaſure, I own, that I relax myſelf for a moment in the contemplation of theſe humane and virtuous characters, amidſt that ſcene of fury and faction, fraud and violence, in which at preſent our narration has unfortunately engaged us.

BESIDES the general intereſt of the country party to decry the conduct of all the King's miniſters, the prudent and peaceable adminiſtration of Ormond was in a particular manner diſpleaſing to them. In England, where the Catholics were ſcarce one to a hundred, means had been found to excite an univerſal panic, on account of inſurrections and even maſſacres, projected by that ſect; and it could

not

not but ſeem ſtrange that in Ireland, where they exceeded the Proteſtants ten to one, there ſhould no ſymptoms appear of any combination or conſpiracy. Such an incident, when duly conſidered, might even in England ſhake the credit of the plot, and diminiſh the authority of thoſe leaders, who had ſo long, with ſuch induſtry, inculcated the belief of it on the nation. Rewards therefore were publiſhed in Ireland to any that would bring intelligence or become witneſſes; and ſome profligates were ſent over to that kingdom, with a commiſſion to ſeek out evidence againſt the Catholics. Under pretence of ſearching for arms or papers, they broke into houſes, and plundered them: They threw innocent men into priſon, and took bribes for their releaſe: And after all their diligence, it was with difficulty, that that country, commonly fertile enough in witneſſes, could furniſh them with any fit for their purpoſe.

At laſt, a certain Fitzgerald appeared, followed by two Macnamaras, Ivey, Sanſon, Dennis, Bourke, and ſome others. Theſe men were immediately ſent over to England; and tho' they poſſeſſed neither character, ſufficient to gain belief even for truth, nor ſenſe to invent a credible falſhood, they were careſſed, rewarded, ſupported, and recommended by the earl of Shafteſbury. Oliver Plunket, the titular primate of Ireland, a man of very peaceable diſpoſitions, was condemned and executed upon ſuch teſtimony. And the Oxford-Parliament entered ſo far into the matter as to vote, that they were entirely ſatisfied in the reality of the *horrid* and *damnable* Iriſh plot. But ſuch deciſions, tho' at firſt regarded as infallible, had now loſt much of their authority; and the public ſtill remained ſomewhat indifferent and incredulous.

After the diſſolution of the Parliament, and the ſubſequent victory of the Royaliſts, Shafteſbury's evidences, with Turberville, Smith, and others, addreſſed themſelves to the miniſters, and gave information of high treaſon againſt their former patron. It is ſufficiently ſcandalous, that intelligence, conveyed by ſuch men, ſhould have been attended to; but there is ſome reaſon to think, that the Court agents, nay the miniſters, nay the King himſelf *, went farther, and were active in endeavouring, tho' in vain, to find more reputable perſons to ſupport the blaſted credit of the Iriſh witneſſes. Shafteſbury was committed to priſon, and his indictment was preſented to the grand jury. The new ſheriffs of London, Shute and Pilkington, were engaged as deeply as their predeceſſors in the country party; and they took care to name a jury extremely devoted to the ſame cauſe: A precaution quite requiſite, when it was ſcarce poſſible to find men indifferent or attached to neither party. As far as ſwearing could go, the treaſon was clearly proved againſt Shafteſbury; or rather ſo clearly as to merit no kind of cre-

* See captain Wilkinſon's Narrative.

dit

Chap. VII. 1681. Shaftesbury acquitted.

dit or attention. That veteran leader of a party, enured from his early youth to faction and intrigue, to cabals and conspiracies, was represented as opening without reserve his treasonable intentions to these obscure banditti, and throwing out such violent and outrageous reproaches upon the King, as none but men of low education, like themselves, could be supposed to employ. The draught of an association, it is true, against popery and the Duke, was found in Shaftesbury's cabinet; and dangerous inferences might be drawn from many clauses of that paper. But it did not appear, that it had been framed by Shaftesbury, or so much as approved by him. And as projects of an association had been proposed in Parliament, it was very natural for that nobleman to be thinking of some plan, which it might be proper to lay before that assembly. The grand jury, therefore, after weighing all these circumstances, rejected the indictment; and the people, who attended the hall, testified their joy, by the loudest acclamations, which were echoed thro' the whole city.

ABOUT this time a scheme of oppression was laid in Scotland, after a manner still more flagrant, against a nobleman much less obnoxious than Shaftesbury; and as that country was reduced almost to a state of total subjection, the project had the fortune to succeed.

Argyle's trial.

THE earl of Argyle, from his youth, had distinguished himself by his loyalty, and his attachment to the royal family. Tho' his father was head of the Covenanters, he refused to concur in any of their measures; and when a commission of colonel was given him by the convention of states, he forbore to act upon it, till it should be ratified by the King. By his respectful behaviour, as well as by his services, he made himself very acceptable to Charles, when that Prince was in Scotland; and even after the battle of Worcester, all the misfortunes, which attended the royal cause, could not engage him to desert it. Under Middleton he obstinately persevered to harrass and infest the victorious English; and it was not till he received orders from that general, that he would submit to accept of a capitulation. Such jealousy of his loyal attachments was entertained by the Commonwealth and Protector, that a pretence was soon after fallen upon to commit him to prison; and his confinement was rigorously continued till the restoration. The King, sensible of his services, had remitted to him his father's forfeiture, and created him earl of Argyle; and when a most unjust sentence was passed upon him by the Scots Parliament, Charles had anew remitted it. In the subsequent part of the reign, Argyle behaved himself dutifully; and tho' he seemed not disposed to go all lengths with the Court, he always appeared, even in his opposition, a man of mild dispositions and peaceable deportment.

A PARLIAMENT

A PARLIAMENT was ſummoned at Edinburgh this ſummer, and the Duke was appointed commiſſioner. Beſides granting money to the King and voting the indefeaſible right of ſucceſſion, this Parliament enacted a teſt, which all perſons, poſſeſſed of offices, civil, military, or eccleſiaſtical, were bound to take. In this teſt, the King's ſupremacy was affirmed, the covenant renounced, paſſive obedience aſſented to, and all obligations diſclaimed of endeavouring any alterations in church or ſtate. This was the ſtate of the teſt, as propoſed by the courtiers; but the country party propoſed alſo a clauſe of adherence to the proteſtant religion, which could not with decency be refuſed. The whole was of an enormous length conſidered as an oath; and what was worſe, a confeſſion of faith was there ratified, which had been impoſed a little after the reformation, and which contained a great many articles, altogether forgot by the Parliament and nation. Among others, the doctrine of reſiſtance was inculcated; ſo that the teſt, being voted in a hurry, was found on examination to be a medley of contradiction and abſurdity. Several perſons, the moſt attached to the Crown, ſcrupled to take it: The biſhops and many of the clergy remonſtrated: The earl of Queenſberry refuſed to ſwear, except he might be allowed to add an explanation: And even the privy council thought it neceſſary to publiſh for general ſatisfaction a ſolution of ſome difficulties, attending the teſt. Chap. VII. 1681.

THO' the courtiers could not reject the clauſe of adherence to the proteſtant religion, they propoſed, as a requiſite mark of reſpect, that all Princes of the blood ſhould be exempted from taking that oath. This exception was zealouſly oppoſed by Argyle, who obſerved, that the ſole danger to be dreaded for the proteſtant religion muſt proceed from the perverſion of the royal family. By inſiſting on ſuch topics, he drew on himſelf the ſecret indignation of the Duke, of which he ſoon felt the fatal effects.

WHEN Argyle took the teſt as a privy counſellor, he ſubjoined, in the Duke's preſence, an explanation, which he had beforehand communicated to that Prince, and which he believed to have been approved by him. It was in theſe words. "I have conſidered the teſt, and am very deſirous of giving obedience as far as "I can. I am confident, that the Parliament never intended to impoſe contra- "dictory oaths: Therefore I think no man can explain it but for himſelf. Ac- "cordingly, I take it as far as it is conſiſtent with itſelf, and the proteſtant religion. "And I do declare, that I mean not to bind up myſelf, in my ſtation, and in a "lawful way, from wiſhing and endeavouring any alteration, which I think to the "advantage of church or ſtate, and not repugnant to the proteſtant religion and "my loyalty: And this I underſtand as a part of my oath." The Duke, as was natural,

Chap. VII. 1681.

natural, heard theſe words with great tranquillity: No one took the leaſt offence: Argyle was admitted to ſit that day in council: And it was impoſſible to imagine, that a capital offence had been committed, where occaſion ſeemed not to have been given, ſo much as for a frown or reprimand.

ARGYLE was much ſurprized, a few days after, to find that a warrant was iſſued for committing him to priſon; that he was indicted for high treaſon, leaſing-making and perjury; and that from theſe innocent words an accuſation was extracted, by which he was to forfeit honours, life, and fortune. It is needleſs to enter into particulars, where the iniquity of the whole is ſo apparent. Tho' the ſword of juſtice was diſplayed, even her ſemblance was not put on; and the forms alone of law were preſerved, in order to ſanctify, or rather aggravate the oppreſſion. Of five judges, three did not ſcruple to find the guilt of treaſon and leaſing-making to be incurred by the priſoner: A jury of fifteen noblemen gave verdict againſt him: And the King, being conſulted, ordered the ſentence to be pronounced; but the execution of it to be ſuſpended, till farther pleaſure.

IT was pretended by the Duke and his creatures, that Argyle's life and fortune were not in any danger, and that the ſole reaſon for puſhing the trial to ſuch extremities againſt him was in order to make him renounce ſome hereditary juriſdictions, which gave his family a dangerous authority in the Highlands, and checked the courſe of public juſtice. But allowing the end to be juſtifiable, the means were infamous; and ſuch as were incompatible, not only with a free, but a civilized, government. Argyle had therefore no reaſon to truſt any longer to the juſtice or mercy of ſuch enemies: He made his eſcape from priſon; and till he ſhould find a ſhip for Holland, he concealed himſelf during ſome time in London. The King heard of his lurking-place, but would not allow him to be arreſted*. All the parts however of his ſentence, ſo far as the government in Scotland had power, were rigorouſly executed; his eſtate confiſcated, his arms reverſed and torn.

State of affairs in Scotland.

IT would ſeem, that the genuine paſſion for liberty was at this time totally extinguiſhed in Scotland: There was only preſerved a ſpirit of mutiny and ſedition, encouraged by a miſtaken zeal for religion. Cameron and Cargil, two furious preachers, went a ſtep beyond all their brethren: They publicly excommunicated the King for his tyranny and his breach of the covenant, and renounced all allegiance to him. Cameron was killed by the troops in an action at Airs-Moſs: Cargil was taken and hanged. Many of their followers were tried and convicted. Their lives were offered them if they would ſay, *God ſave the King:* But they would only agree to pray for his repentance. This obſtinacy was much inſiſted on

* Burnet, vol. i. p. 522.

as an apology for the rigours of the adminiſtration: But, if duly conſidered, it will rather afford reaſon for a contrary inference. Such unhappy deluſion is an object rather of commiſeration than of anger: And it is almoſt impoſſible, that men could have been carried to ſuch a degree of madneſs, unleſs provoked by a long train of violence and oppreſſion. Chap. VII. 1681.

As the King was maſter in England, and no longer dreaded the clamours of the country party, he permitted the Duke to pay him a viſit; and was ſoon after prevailed on to allow of his return to England, and of his bearing a part in the adminiſtration. The Duke went to Scotland in order to bring up his family, and ſettle the government of that country; and he choſe to take his paſſage by ſea. The ſhip ſtruck on a ſand-bank and was loſt: The Duke eſcaped in the barge; and it is pretended, that, while many perſons of rank and quality were drowned, and among the reſt, Hyde, his brother-in-law, he was very careful to ſave ſeveral of his dogs and prieſts: For theſe two ſpecies of favourites are coupled together by ſome writers. It has likewiſe been aſſerted, that the barge might ſafely have held more perſons, and that ſome who ſwam to it were thruſt off, and even their hands cut in order to diſengage them. But every action of every eminent perſon, during this period, is ſo liable to be miſinterpreted and miſrepreſented by faction, that we ought to be very cautious of paſſing our judgment on too ſlight an evidence. It is remarkable, that the ſailors on board the ſhip, tho' they felt themſelves ſinking, and ſaw inevitable death before their eyes, yet ſo ſoon as they obſerved the Duke to be in ſafety, gave a loud ſhout, in teſtimony of their joy and ſatisfaction. 1682.

The Duke, during his abode in Scotland, had behaved with great civility towards the gentry and nobility; and by his courtly demeanor had much won upon their affections: But his treatment of the enthuſiaſts was ſtill ſomewhat rigorous; and in many inſtances he appeared to be a man of a ſevere, if not an unrelenting temper. It is even aſſerted, that he uſually aſſiſted with his preſence at the torture of criminals, and looked on with tranquillity, as if he were conſidering ſome curious experiment *. He left the authority in the hands of the earl of Aberdeen, chancellor, and the earl of Queenſbury, treaſurer: A very arbitrary ſpirit appeared in their adminiſtration. A gentleman of the name of Weir was tried, becauſe he had kept company with one who had been in the rebellion; tho' that perſon had never been marked out by proceſs or proclamation. The inferences upon which Weir was condemned (for a proſecution by the government and a condemnation were in Scotland the ſame thing) hung upon each other, after the following

* Burnet, vol. i. p. 583. Wodrow, vol. ii. p. 169. This laſt author, who is much the better authority, mentions only one inſtance, that of Spreul, which ſeems to have been an extraordinary one.

Chap. VII. 1682.

manner. No man, it was ſuppoſed, could have been in a rebellion, without being expoſed to ſuſpicion in the neighbourhood: If the neighbourhood ſuſpected him, it was to be preſumed, that each individual had likewiſe heard of the grounds of ſuſpicion: Every man was bound to declare to the government his ſuſpicion againſt every man, and to avoid the company of traitors: To fail in this duty was to participate in the treaſon: The concluſion on the whole was, You have converſed with a rebel, therefore you are yourſelf a rebel. A reprieve was with ſome difficulty procured for Weir; but it was ſeriouſly determined to make uſe of the precedent. Courts of judicature were erected in the ſouthern and weſtern counties, and a ſtrict inquiſition carried on againſt this new ſpecies of crime. The term of three years was preſcribed for the continuance of theſe courts; after which an indemnity was promiſed. Whoever would take the teſt, was inſtantly intitled to the benefit of this indemnity. The Preſbyterians, alarmed with ſuch tyranny, from which no man could deem himſelf ſafe, began to think of leaving the country; and ſome of their agents were ſent to England, in order to treat with the proprietors of Carolina for a ſettlement in that colony. Any condition ſeemed preferable to the living in their native country, which, by the prevalence of perſecution and violence, was become as inſecure to them as a den of robbers.

ABOVE two thouſand perſons were out-lawed on pretence of their converſing or having intercourſe with rebels *, and they were continually hunted in their retreats by ſoldiers, ſpies, informers, and oppreſſive magiſtrates. It was uſual to put enſnaring queſtions to people, living peaceably in their own houſes; ſuch as, "Will "you renounce the Covenant? Do you eſteem the riſing at Bothwel to be rebel"lion? Was the killing the archbiſhop of St. Andrews a murder?" And when the poor deluded creatures refuſed to anſwer, capital puniſhments were inflicted on them †. Even women were brought to the gibbet for this pretended crime. A number of fugitives, rendered frantic by oppreſſion, had publiſhed a ſeditious declaration; renouncing allegiance to Charles Stuart, whom they called, as they, for their parts, had indeed ſome reaſon to eſteem him, a tyrant. This incident afforded the privy council a pretence for a very unuſual kind of oppreſſion. Soldiers were diſperſed over the country, and power was given to all commiſſion officers, even the moſt inferior, to oblige every one whom they met with, to abjure the declaration; and upon refuſal, inſtantly, without farther queſtions, to ſhoot the delinquent ‡. It were endleſs, as well as ſhocking, to enumerate all the inſtances of perſecution, or in other words, of abſurd tyranny, which at that time prevailed in Scotland. One of them however is ſo ſingular, that I cannot forbear relating it.

* Wodrow, vol. ii. Append. 94. † Id. vol. ii. paſſim. ‡ Id. vol. ii. p. 434.

THREE

Chap. VII. 1682.

THREE women were ſeized *; and the cuſtomary oath was tendered to them, by which they were to abjure the ſeditious declaration above-mentioned. They all refuſed, and were condemned to a capital puniſhment by drowning. One of them was an elderly woman: The other two were very young; one eighteen years of age, the other only thirteen. Even theſe violent perſecutors were aſhamed to put the youngeſt to death: But the other two were conducted to the place of execution, and were tied to ſtakes within the ſea-mark at low water: A contrivance, which rendered their death lingering and dreadful. The elderly woman was placed fartheſt in, and by the riſing of the waters was firſt ſuffocated. The younger, partly terrified with the view of her companion's death, partly ſubdued by the entreaty of her friends, was prevailed with to ſay, *God ſave the King*. Immediately the ſpectators called out, that ſhe had ſubmitted; and ſhe was looſened from the ſtake. Major Winram, the officer who guarded the execution, again required her to ſign the abjuration; and upon her refuſal, he ordered her inſtantly to be plunged in the water, where ſhe was ſuffocated.

THE ſeverity of the adminiſtration in Scotland is in part to be aſcribed to the Duke's temper, to whom the King had conſigned over the government of that country, and who gave ſuch attention to affairs as to allow nothing of importance to eſcape him. Even the government of England from the ſame cauſe began ſomewhat to be infected with the ſame ſeverity. The Duke's credit was very great at Court. Tho' neither ſo much beloved nor eſteemed as the King, he was more dreaded; and thence an attendance more exact, as well as a ſubmiſſion more obſequious, was paid him. The ſaying of Waller was remarked, that Charles, in ſpite to the Parliament, who had determined, that the Duke ſhould not ſucceed him, was reſolved, that he ſhould reign even in his lifetime.

State of the Miniſtry in England.

THE King however, who loved to maintain a balance in his councils, ſtill ſupported Hallifax, whom he created a marqueſs, and made lord privy ſeal; tho' ever in oppoſition to the Duke. This man, who poſſeſſed the fineſt genius and moſt extenſive capacity, of all employed in public affairs during the preſent reign, affected a ſpecies of neutrality between the parties, and was eſteemed the head of that ſmall body, known by the denomination of *Trimmers*. This conduct, which is much more natural to men of integrity than of ambition, could not however procure him the former character; and he was always, with reaſon, regarded as an intriguer rather than a patriot. Sunderland, who had promoted the excluſion-bill, and who had been diſplaced on that account, was again, with the Duke's conſent, brought into the adminiſtration. The extreme duplicity, at leaſt variableneſs, of this man's conduct thro' the whole courſe of his life, made it be ſuſpected, that it was by the

* Wodrow, vol. ii. p. 505.

Chap. VII. 1682.

King's direction he had mixed with the country party. Hyde, created earl of Rocheſter, was firſt commiſſioner of the treaſury, and was entirely in the Duke's intereſt.

THE King himſelf was obliged to act as the head of a party; a diſagreeable ſituation for a Prince, and always the ſource of much injuſtice and oppreſſion. He knew how obnoxious the diſſenters were to the church; and he reſolved, contrary to the maxims of toleration, which he had hitherto ſupported in England, to gratify his friends by the perſecution of his enemies. The laws againſt conventicles were now rigorouſly executed; an expedient, which, the King knew, would neither diminiſh the numbers nor influence of the Nonconformiſts; and which is therefore to be deemed more the reſult of paſſion than of policy. Scarce any perſecution ſerves the intended purpoſe but ſuch as amounts to a total extermination.

THO' the King's authority made every day great advances, it ſtill met with conſiderable obſtacles, chiefly from the city, which was entirely in the hands of the malecontents. The juries, in particular, named by the ſheriffs, were not likely to be impartial judges between the Crown and the people, and after the experiments already made in the caſe of Shafteſbury, and that of College, treaſon, it was apprehended, might there be committed with impunity. There could not therefore be a more important ſervice to the Court than to put affairs upon a different footing. Sir John Moor, lord mayor, was gained by ſecretary Jenkins, and encouraged to inſiſt upon the cuſtomary privilege of his office, of naming one of the ſheriffs. Accordingly, when the time of election came, he drank to North, a Levant merchant, who accepted that expenſive office. The country party ſaid, that, being lately returned from Turkey, he was, on account of his recent experience, better qualified to ſerve the purpoſes of the Court. A poll was opened for the election of another ſheriff; and here began the conteſt. The majority of the common-hall, headed by the two ſheriffs of the former year, refuſed to acknowlege the mayor's right of nominating one ſheriff, but inſiſted that both muſt be elected by the liveries. Papillon and Dubois were the perſons whom the country party agreed to elect: Box was pointed out by the courtiers. Books were accordingly opened for the poll; but as the mayor would not allow the elections to proceed for two vacancies, the ſheriffs and he ſeparated, and each carried on the poll apart. The country party, who voted with the ſheriffs for Papillon and Dubois, were much more numerous than thoſe who voted with the mayor for Box: But as the mayor inſiſted, that his books were the only legal ones, he declared Box to be duly elected. All difficulties however were not ſurmounted. Box, apprehenſive of the conſequences of ſo dubious an election, fined off; and the mayor found it requiſite to proceed to a new election. When the matter was propoſed to the common-hall, a loud cry

New nomination of ſheriffs.

24th of June.

was raiſed, No election! No election! The two ſheriffs already elected, Papillon and Dubois, were inſiſted on as the only legal magiſtrates. But as the mayor ſtill maintained, that Box alone had been legally choſen, and that it was now requiſite to ſupply his place, he opened books anew, and during the tumult and confuſion of the citizens, a few of the mayor's partizans elected Rich, unknown to and unheeded by the reſt of the liveries. North and Rich were accordingly ſworn ſheriffs for the enſuing year; but it was neceſſary to ſend a guard of the train bands to protect them in the entering upon their office. A new mayor of the court party was ſoon after choſen by means, as is pretended, much more violent and irregular. Chap. VII. 1682. 25th of October.

THUS the country party were diſlodged from their ſtrong hold in the city; where, ever ſince the commencement of factions in the Engliſh government, they had, without interruption, almoſt without moleſtation, maintained a ſuperiority. It had been happy, had the partialities, hitherto objected to juries, been corrected, without giving place to partialities of an oppoſite kind: But in the preſent diſtracted ſtate of the nation, an equitable neutrality was almoſt impoſſible to be attained. The court and church party, who were now named on juries, made juſtice ſubſervient to their factious views; and the King had a proſpect of obtaining full revenge on his enemies. It was not long before the effects of theſe alterations were ſeen. When it was firſt reported, that the Duke intended to leave Scotland, Pilkington, at that time ſheriff, a very violent man, had broke out in theſe terms, "He has already burned the city, and is he now coming to cut all our throats?" For theſe ſcandalous expreſſions, the Duke ſued Pilkington; and enormous damages, to the amount of 100,000 pounds, were decreed him. By the law of England, ratified in the great charter, no fine ought to extend to the total ruin of a criminal. Sir Patience Ward, formerly mayor, who gave evidence for Pilkington, was ſued for perjury, and condemned to the pillory: A ſevere ſentence, and ſufficient to deter all witneſſes from appearing in favour of thoſe, who were proſecuted by the court.

BUT tho' the crown had obtained ſo great a victory in the city, it was not quite deciſive; and the conteſt might be renewed every year at the election of magiſtrates. An important project therefore was formed, not only to make the King maſter of the city, but by that example to gain him the aſcendant in all the corporations of England, and thereby give the greateſt wound to the legal conſtitution, which the moſt powerful and moſt arbitrary Monarchs had ever yet been able to inflict. All the Royaliſts, tho' Engliſhmen, and even, to a certain degree, lovers of liberty, were yet induced, from enmity to the oppoſite faction, and from the deſire of ſuperiority, to concur in this violent meaſure. A writ of *quo warranto* 1683. Quo warranto's.

Chap. VII. 1683.

warranto was iſſued againſt the city; that is, an enquiry into the validity of their charter. It was pretended, that the city had forfeited all its privileges, and ought to be declared no longer a corporation, on account of two offences, which the court of aldermen and common council had committed. After the great fire in 1666, all the markets had been rebuilt, and had been fitted up with many conveniencies; and in order to defray the expence, the magiſtrates had impoſed a ſmall toll on ſuch as brought any goods to market. In the year 1679, they had addreſſed the King againſt the prorogation of Parliament, and had employed the following terms. "Your petitioners are greatly ſurprized at the late prorogation, whereby "the proſecution of the public juſtice of the kingdom, and the making neceſſary "proviſions for the preſervation of your Majeſty and your proteſtant ſubjects, "have received interruption." Theſe words were pretended to contain a ſcandalous reflection on the King and his meaſures. The cauſe of the city was defended againſt the attorney and ſollicitor generals by Treby and Pollexfen.

THESE laſt pleaded, that, ſince the foundation of the Monarchy, no corporation had ever yet been forfeited, and the thing itſelf implied an abſurdity: That a corporation, as ſuch, was incapable of all crime or offence, and none was anſwerable for any iniquity but the perſons themſelves, who committed it: That the members, in chooſing magiſtrates, had entruſted them only with legal powers; and where the magiſtrates had exceeded theſe powers, their acts were void, but could never involve the body itſelf in any criminal imputation: That ſuch had ever been the practice of England, except at the Reformation, when the monaſteries were forfeited; but this was an extraordinary caſe; and it was even thought neceſſary afterwards to ratify the whole tranſaction by act of Parliament: That corporate bodies, framed for public good, and calculated for perpetual duration, ought not to be annihilated for the temporary faults of their members, who might themſelves, without hurting their community, be queſtioned for their offences: That even a private eſtate, if entailed, could not be forfeited to the Crown, on account of treaſon, committed by the tenant for life; but upon his demiſe went to the next in remainder: That the offences, objected to the city, far from deſerving ſo ſevere a puniſhment, were not even worthy of the ſmalleſt reprehenſion: That all corporations were inveſted with the power of making bye-laws; and the ſmalleſt burrough in England had ever been allowed to carry the exerciſe of this power farther than London had done in the inſtance complained of: That the city, having at their own expence, repaired the markets, which were built too on their own eſtates, might as lawfully claim a ſmall recompence from ſuch as brought commodities thither, as a man might require rent for a houſe, which he was poſſeſſed of: That thoſe who diſliked the condition, might abſtain from the market; and whoever paid, had done it

voluntarily: That it was an avowed right of the ſubjects to petition; nor had the city in their addreſs abuſed this privilege: That the King himſelf had often declared, the Parliament often voted, the nation to be in danger from the popiſh plot; which, it is evident, could not be fully proſecuted but in a parliamentary manner: That the impeachment of the popiſh lords was certainly obſtructed by the frequent prorogations; as was alſo the enacting of neceſſary laws, and providing for the defence of the nation: That the loyalty of the city, no leſs than their regard to ſelf-preſervation, might prompt them to frame the petition; ſince it was acknowledged, that the King's life was every moment expoſed to the moſt imminent danger from the popiſh conſpiracy: That the city had not accuſed the King of obſtructing juſtice, much leſs of having any ſuch intention; ſince it was allowed, that evil counſellors were alone anſwerable for all the pernicious conſequences of any meaſure: And that it was unaccountable, that two public deeds, which had not, during ſo long a time, ſubjected to any, even the ſmalleſt penalty, the perſons guilty of them, ſhould now be puniſhed ſo ſeverely upon the corporation, which always was, and always muſt be innocent. Chap. VII. 1683.

It is evident, that thoſe who would apologize for the meaſures of the Court, muſt, in this caſe, found their arguments, not on law, but reaſons of ſtate. The judges, therefore, who condemned the city, are totally inexcuſable; ſince the ſole juſtifiable object of their determinations muſt ever be the pure principles of juſtice and equity. But the place of judge was at that time held during pleaſure; and it was impoſſible, that any cauſe, where the Court bent its force, could ever be carried againſt it. After ſentence was pronounced, the city applied in a very humble manner to the King; and he agreed to reſtore their charter, but in return they were obliged to ſubmit to the following regulations: That no lord mayor, ſheriff, recorder, common ſerjeant, town clerk, or coroner ſhould be admitted to the exerciſe of his office without his Majeſty's approbation: That if the King diſapprove twice of the mayor or ſheriffs elected, he may by commiſſion appoint theſe magiſtrates: That the lord mayor and court of aldermen may, with his Majeſty's leave, diſplace any magiſtrate: And that no alderman, in caſe of a vacancy, ſhall be elected without conſent of the court of aldermen, who, if they diſapprove twice of the choice, may fill the vacancy. 12th of June.

All the corporations in England, having the example of London before their eyes, ſaw how vain it would prove to ſtruggle with the Court, and were, moſt of them, ſucceſſively induced to ſurrender their charters into the King's hands. Conſiderable ſums were exacted for reſtoring the charters; and all the offices of power and profit were left at the diſpoſal of the crown. Thoſe who judge of the actions of princes by the rules of policy alone, could excuſe thoſe meaſures of the King Great power of the Crown.

Chap. VII. 1683.

King, by which he much extended his authority, and acquired a great aſcendant in every burrough and corporation. But it ſeems ſtrange, that the independant royaliſts, who never meant to make the Crown abſolute, ſhould yet be ſo elated with the victory obtained over their adverſaries, as to approve of a precedent, which left no national privileges in ſecurity, but enabled the King, under like pretences, and by means of like inſtruments, to recall anew all thoſe charters, which at preſent he was pleaſed to grant. And every friend to liberty muſt allow, that the nation, whoſe conſtitution was thus ſhattered in the ſhock of faction, had a right, by every prudent expedient, to recover that ſecurity, of which it was ſo unhappily bereaved.

WHILE ſo great a faction adhered to the Crown, it is apparent, that reſiſtance, however juſtifiable, could never be prudent; and all wiſe men ſaw no other expedient but peaceably to ſubmit to the preſent grievances. There was however a party of malecontents, ſo turbulent in their diſpoſition, that even before this laſt iniquity, which laid the whole conſtitution at the mercy of the King, they had meditated plans of reſiſtance; at a time when it could be as little juſtifiable as prudent. In the ſpring 1681 †, a little before the Oxford Parliament, the King was ſeized with a fit of ſickneſs at Windſor, which gave great alarm to the public. The Duke of Monmouth, lord Ruſſel, lord Grey, inſtigated by the reſtleſs Shafteſbury, had agreed, in caſe the King's ſickneſs ſhould prove mortal, to riſe in arms and oppoſe the ſucceſſion of the Duke. Charles recovered; but theſe dangerous projects were not laid aſide. The ſame conſpirators, together with Eſſex and Saliſbury, were determined to continue the Oxford Parliament, after the King, as was daily expected, ſhould diſſolve it; and they engaged ſome leaders among the Commons in the ſame deſperate meaſure. They went ſo far as to detain ſeveral lords in the Houſe, under pretence of ſigning a proteſtation againſt rejecting Fitz-harris's impeachment: But hearing that the Commons had broke up in great conſternation, they were likewiſe obliged at laſt to ſeparate. Shafteſbury's impriſonment and trial put an end for ſome time to theſe machinations; and it was not till the new ſheriffs were impoſed on the city that they were revived. The leaders of the country party began then to apprehend themſelves in imminent danger; and they were well pleaſed to find, that the citizens were ſtruck with the ſame terror, and were thence inclined to undertake the moſt perilous enterprizes. Beſides the city, applications were made to the gentry and nobility in ſeveral counties of England to riſe in arms. Monmouth

A conſpiracy.

† Lord Grey's ſecret hiſtory of the Rye houſe plot. This is the moſt full and authentic account of all theſe tranſactions; but is in the main confirmed by biſhop Sprat, and even Burnet, as well as by the trials and dying confeſſions of the conſpirators: So that nothing can be more unaccountable than that any one ſhould pretend, that this conſpiracy was an impoſture like the popiſh plot. Monmouth's declaration publiſhed in the next reign, confeſſes a conſult for extraordinary remedies.

engaged

engaged the earl of Macclesfield, lord Brandon, Sir Gilbert Gerrard, and other gentlemen in Cheshire: Lord Russel fixed a correspondence with Sir William Courtney, Sir Francis Rowles, Sir Francis Drake, who promised to raise the West; and Trenchard in particular, who had great interest in the disaffected town of Taunton, assured him of considerable assistance from that neighbourhood. Shaftesbury and his emissary, Ferguson, an independant clergyman and a restless plotter, managed the correspondence in the city, upon which the confederates chiefly relied. The whole train was ready to take fire; but was prevented by the caution of lord Russel, who induced Monmouth to delay the enterprize. Shaftesbury in the mean time was so affected with the sense of his danger, that he had left his house, and secretly lurked in the city; meditating all those desperate schemes, which disappointed revenge and ambition could dictate. He exclaimed loudly against delay, and represented to his confederates, that having gone so far, and entrusted the secret into so many hands, there was no safety for them but in a bold and desperate prosecution of their purpose. The projects were therefore renewed: Meetings of the conspirators were appointed in different houses, particularly in Shepard's, an eminent wine-merchant in the city: A plan of the insurrection was laid in London, Cheshire, Devonshire, and Bristol: The several places of rendezvous in the city were concerted; and the whole operations fixed: The state of the guards was even viewed by Monmouth and Armstrong, and an attack on them pronounced very practicable: A declaration to justify the enterprize to the public was read and agreed to: And every circumstance seemed now to render an insurrection unavoidable; when a new delay was procured by Trenchard, who delared, that the rising in the West could not for some weeks be in sufficient forwardness. Chap. VII. 1683.

SHAFTESBURY was enraged at these perpetual cautions and delays in an enterprize, which, he thought, nothing but courage and celerity could render effectual: He threatened to commence the insurrection with his friends in the city alone; and he boasted, that he had ten thousand *brisk boys*, as he called them, who, on a motion of his finger, were ready to fly to arms. Monmouth, Russel, and the other conspirators were, during some time, in apprehensions, lest despair should push him into some dangerous measure; when they heard, that, after a long struggle between fear and rage, he had at last abandoned all hopes of success, and had retired into Holland. He lived in a private manner at Amsterdam; and for greater security desired to be admitted into the magistracy of that city: But his former violent councils against the Dutch commonwealth were remembered, and all applications from him were rejected. He died soon after; and his end gave neither sorrow to his friends, nor joy to his enemies. His furious temper, notwithstanding his capacity, had Shaftesbury retires and dies.

Chap. VII. 1683.

done great injury to the cauſe, in which he was engaged. The violences and iniquities, which he ſuggeſted and encouraged, were greater than even faction itſelf could endure; and men could not forbear ſometimes remembering, that the ſame perſon, who was become ſo zealous a patriot, was once a moſt proſtitute courtier. It is remarkable, that this man, whoſe principles and conduct were, in all other reſpects, ſo exceptionable, proved an excellent chancellor; and that all his decrees, while he poſſeſſed that eminent office, were equally remarkable for juſtneſs and for integrity. So difficult it is to find in hiſtory a character either wholly bad or perfectly good; tho' the prejudices of party make writers run frequently into the extremes both of panegyric and of ſatyre!

AFTER Shafteſbury's departure, the conſpirators found ſome difficulty in renewing the correſpondence with the city malecontents, who had been accuſtomed to depend ſolely on that nobleman. Their common views, however, as well as common apprehenſions, made them at laſt have recourſe to each other; and a regular project of an inſurrection was again formed. A council of ſix was erected, conſiſting of Monmouth, Ruſſel, Eſſex, Howard, Algernon Sidney, and John Hambden, grandſon to the great parliamentary leader. Theſe men entered into an agreement with Argyle and the Scots malecontents, who engaged, that, upon the payment of 10,000 pounds for the purchaſe of arms in Holland, they would bring the Covenanters into the field. Inſurrections likewiſe were anew projected in Cheſhire and the Weſt, as well as in the city; and ſome meetings of the leaders were held, in order to reduce theſe projects into form. The conſpirators differed extremely in their views. Sidney was paſſionate for a commonwealth. Eſſex had embraced the ſame project. But Monmouth had entertained hopes of acquiring the Crown for himſelf. Ruſſel, as well as Hambden, was much attached to the antient conſtitution, and propoſed only the excluſion of the Duke and the redreſs of grievances. Lord Howard was a man of abandoned principles, and was ready to embrace any party, which his immediate intereſt ſhould recommend to him. But notwithſtanding this difference of characters and of views, their common hatred of the Duke and the preſent adminiſtration united them into one party; and the dangerous experiment of an inſurrection was fully reſolved on.

Rye houſe plot.

WHILE theſe ſchemes were concerting among the leaders, there was an inferior order of conſpirators, who frequently met together, and with the inſurrection, carried on projects quite unknown to Monmouth, and the cabal of ſix. Among theſe men were colonel Rumſey, an old republican officer, who had diſtinguiſhed himſelf in Portugal, and had been recommended to the King by Mareſchal Schomberg; lieutenant colonel Walcot, likewiſe a republican officer; Goodenough, under ſheriff of London, a zealous and noted party-man; Weſt, Tyley, Norton, Ayloffe,

lawyers; Ferguſon, Rouſe, Hone, Keiling, Holloway, Bourne, Lee, Rumbald. Moſt of theſe laſt were merchants or tradeſmen; and the only perſons of this confederacy, who had acceſs to the leaders of the party, were Rumſey and Ferguſon. When theſe men were met together in their cabals, they indulged themſelves in the moſt deſperate and moſt criminal diſcourſe: They frequently mentioned the aſſaſſination of the King and the Duke, to which they had given the familiar appellation of *lopping*: They even went ſo far as to have thought of a ſcheme for that purpoſe. Rumbald, who was a malſter, poſſeſſed a farm, called the Rye-houſe, which lay on the way to Newmarket, whither the King commonly went once a year, for the diverſion of the races. A plan of this farm had been laid before ſome of the conſpirators by Rumbald, who ſhowed them how eaſy it would be, by over-turning a cart, to ſtop at that place the King's coach; while they might fire upon him from the hedges, and be eaſily enabled afterwards, thro' bye lanes and croſs the fields, to make their eſcape. But tho' the plauſibility of this ſcheme gave great pleaſure to the conſpirators, no concerted deſign was as yet laid, nor any men, horſes, or arms provided: The whole was little more than looſe diſcourſe, the over-flowings of their zeal and rancour. The houſe in which the King lived at Newmarket, took fire accidentally; and he was obliged to leave that place eight days ſooner than he intended. To this circumſtance his ſafety was afterwards aſcribed, when the conſpiracy was diſcovered; and the court party could not ſufficiently admire the wiſe diſpenſations of Providence. It is indeed certain, that, as the King had thus unexpectedly left Newmarket, he was much worſe attended than uſual; and Rumbald informed his confederates with regret what a fine opportunity was thus unfortunately loſt.

Chap. VII. 1683.

Among the conſpirators I have mentioned Keiling, a ſalter in London. This man had been engaged in a very bold meaſure, of arreſting the mayor of London, at the ſuit of Papillon and Dubois, the outed ſheriffs; and being liable to proſecution for that action, he thought it ſafeſt to purchaſe a pardon, by revealing the conſpiracy, in which he was deeply concerned. He brought to ſecretary Jenkins intelligence of the aſſaſſination plot; but as he was a ſingle evidence, the ſecretary, whom many falſe plots had probably rendered incredulous, ſcrupled to iſſue warrants for the commitment of ſo great a number of perſons. Keiling therefore, in order to fortify his teſtimony, engaged his brother in treaſonable diſcourſe with Goodenough, one of the conſpirators; and Jenkins began now to give more attention to the intelligence. The conſpirators had got ſome hint of the danger, in which they were involved; and all of them concealed themſelves. One perſon alone, of the name of Barber, an inſtrument-maker, was ſeized; and as his confeſſion concurred in many particulars with Keiling's information, the

Conſpiracy diſcovered.

12th of June.

Chap. VII. 1683.

affair ſeemed to be put out of all queſtion; and a more diligent ſearch was every where made after the conſpirators.

WEST, the lawyer, and colonel Rumſey, finding the perils to which they were expoſed in endeavouring to eſcape, reſolved to ſave their own lives at the expence of their companions; and accordingly ſurrendered themſelves with an intention of becoming evidence. Weſt could do little more than confirm the teſtimony of Keiling with regard to the aſſaſſination plot; but Rumſey, beſides additional confirmation of the ſame deſign, was at laſt, tho' with much difficulty, led to give an account of the meetings at Shepard's. Shepard was immediately apprehended; and had not courage to maintain fidelity to his confederates. Upon his information, orders were iſſued for arreſting the great men engaged in the conſpiracy. Monmouth abſconded: Ruſſel was ſent to the Tower: Gray was arreſted, but eſcaped from the meſſenger: Howard was taken, while he concealed himſelf in a chimney; and being a man of moſt profligate morals, as well as indigent circumſtances, he ſcrupled not, in hopes of a pardon, to reveal the whole conſpiracy. Eſſex, Sidney, Hambden were immediately apprehended upon his evidence. Every day ſome of the conſpirators were detected in their lurking-places, and thrown into priſon.

Execution of the conſpirators.

LIEUTENANT-COLONEL WALCOT was firſt brought to his trial. This man, who was once noted for bravery, had been ſo far overcome by the love of life, that he had wrote to ſecretary Jenkins, and had offered upon promiſe of pardon to turn evidence: But no ſooner had he taken this mean ſtep, than he felt more generous ſentiments ariſe in him; and he endeavoured, tho' in vain, to conceal himſelf. The witneſſes againſt him were Rumſey, Weſt, Shepard, together with one Bourne, a brewer. His own letter to the ſecretary was produced, and rendered the teſtimony of the witneſſes unqueſtionable. Hone and Rouſe were alſo condemned to die. Theſe two men, as well as Walcot, at their execution, acknowleged the juſtice of the ſentence; and from their trial and confeſſion it is ſufficiently apparent, that the plan of an inſurrection had been regularly formed, and that even the aſſaſſination had been often talked of, and not without the approbation of many of the conſpirators.

Trial of lord Ruſſel.

THE condemnation of theſe criminals was probably intended as a preparative to the trial of lord Ruſſel, and ſerved to impreſs the public with a thorough belief of the conſpiracy, as well as a horror againſt it. The witneſſes produced againſt the noble priſoner were Rumſey, Shepard, and lord Howard. Rumſey ſwore, that he himſelf had been introduced to the cabal at Shepard's, where Ruſſel was preſent; and had delivered them a meſſage from Shafteſbury, urging them to haſten the intended inſurrection: But had received for anſwer, that it was found neceſſary to delay the deſign,

and that Shafteſbury muſt therefore, for ſome time, reſt contented. This anſwer, he ſaid, was delivered by Ferguſon, but was aſſented to by the priſoner. He added, that ſome diſcourſe had been entered into about taking a ſurvey of the guards; and he thought, that Monmouth, Grey and Armſtrong undertook to view them. Shepard ſwore, that his houſe had been beforehand beſpoke by Ferguſon for the ſecret meeting of the conſpirators, and that he had been careful to keep all his ſervants from approaching them, and had ſerved them himſelf. Their diſcourſe, he ſaid, ran chiefly upon the means of ſurprizing the guards; and it was agreed that Monmouth and his two friends ſhould take a ſurvey of them. The report, which they brought next meeting, was, that the guards were remiſs, and that the deſign was very practicable: But he did not affirm, that any reſolution was taken of executing it. The priſoner, he thought, was preſent at both theſe meetings; but he was ſure, that at leaſt he was preſent at one of them. A declaration, he added, had been read by Ferguſon in Ruſſel's preſence: The reaſons of the intended inſurrection were there ſet forth, and all the public grievances fully diſplayed. Chap. VII. 1683.

Lord Howard had been one of the cabal of ſix after Shafteſbury's flight; and two meetings had been held of the conſpirators, one at Hambden's, another at Ruſſel's. Howard ſwore, that, at the firſt meeting, it was agreed to begin the inſurrection in the country before the city; the places were fixed, the proper quantity and kind of arms agreed on, and the whole plan of operations concerted: That at the ſecond meeting, the converſation turned chiefly upon their correſpondence with Argyle and the diſcontented Scots, and that the principal management of that affair was intruſted to Sidney, who had ſent one Aaron Smith into Scotland with proper inſtructions. He added, that in theſe conſults no queſtion was put nor votes collected: But there was no contradiction, and, as he took it, all of them, and the priſoner among the reſt, gave their conſent.

Rumsey and Shepard were very unwilling witneſſes againſt lord Ruſſel; and it appears from Gray's Secret Hiſtory *, that, if they had pleaſed, they could have given a more explicit teſtimony againſt him. This reluctance, together with the difficulty of collecting circumſtances in a converſation, which had paſſed above eight mo[illegible]fore, and which the perſons had not at that time any intention to diſcover, [illegible]et ſome ſlight objection to their evidence. But on the whole, it [illegible]roved, that the inſurrection had been deliberated on, by the [illegible]ſolved; the ſurpriſal of the guards deliberated on, but not [illegible]at an aſſaſſination had never once been mentioned or ima[illegible]r the matter of fact ſeems certain: But ſtill, with regard to [illegible] difficulty, and that of a very important nature.

* Page 43.

The

Chap. VII. 1683.

THE Engliſh laws of treaſon, both in the manner of defining that crime and in the proof required, are the mildeſt and moſt indulgent, and conſequently the moſt equitable, that are any where to be found. The two chief ſpecies of treaſon, contained in the law of Edward the third, are the compaſſing and intending the King's death, and the actual levying war againſt him; and by the law of Mary the crime muſt be proved by the concurring teſtimony of two witneſſes, to ſome overt act, tending to theſe purpoſes. But the lawyers, partly deſirous of paying court to the Sovereign, partly convinced of ill conſequences, which might attend ſuch narrow limitations, had introduced a greater latitude, both in the proof and definition of the crime. It was not required, that the two witneſſes ſhould teſtify the ſame preciſe overt act: It was ſufficient, that they both teſtified ſome overt act of the ſame treaſon; and tho' this evaſion may ſeem a ſubtilty, it had long prevailed in the courts of judicature, and had at laſt been ſolemnly fixed by Parliament at the trial of lord Stafford. The lawyers had uſed the ſame freedom, tho' perhaps after a more exceptionable manner, with the law of Edward the third. They had obſerved, that, by that famous ſtatute, if a man ſhould enter into a conſpiracy for a rebellion, ſhould even fix a correſpondence with foreign powers for that purpoſe, ſhould provide arms and money, yet, if he was detected and no rebellion enſued, he could not be tried for treaſon. To prevent this inconvenience, which it had been better to remedy by a new law, they had commonly laid their indictment for intending the death of the King, and had produced the intention of a rebellion as a proof of that other intention. But tho' this form of indictment and trial was very frequent, and many criminals had received ſentence upon it, it was conſidered as irregular, and was plainly confounding, by a ſophiſm, two ſpecies of treaſon, which the ſtatute had moſt accurately diſtinguiſhed. What made this refinement ſtill more inexcuſable; a law had paſſed ſoon after the reſtoration, where the conſulting or intending a rebellion, was, during Charles's lifetime, declared treaſon; and it was required that the proſecution ſhould be made within ſix months after the crime was committed. But notwithſtanding this ſtatute, the lawyers had perſevered, as they ſtill do perſevere, in the old form of indictment; and both Sir Harry Vane and Oliver Plunket, titular primate of Ireland, had been tried by it. Such was the general horror, entertained againſt the old republicans, and the popiſh conſpirators, that no one had murmured againſt this interpretation of the ſtatute; and the lawyers thought, that they might follow the precedent even in the caſe of the popular and beloved lord Ruſſel. Ruſſel's crime fell plainly under the ſtatute of Charles the 2d; but the facts ſworne to by Rumſey and Shepard were without the ſix months required by law, and to the other facts Howard was a ſingle witneſs. To make the indictment, therefore, more extenſive, the intention of murdering the King was comprehended in it; and

and for proof of this intention the conſpiracy for raiſing a rebellion was aſſigned; and what ſeemed to bring the matter ſtill nearer, the deſign of attacking the King's guards. Chap. VII. 1683.

Russel perceived this irregularity, and deſired to have the point argued by council: The chief juſtice told him, that that privilege could not be granted, unleſs he previouſly confeſſed the facts charged upon him. The artificial confounding the two ſpecies of treaſon, tho' a practice ſupported by many precedents, is the chief, but not the only hardſhip, of which Ruſſel had reaſon to complain on his trial. His defence was very feeble; and he contented himſelf with proteſting, that he never had entertained any deſign againſt the King's life: His candour would not allow him to deny the conſpiracy for an inſurrection. The jury were men of fair and irreproachable characters, but zealous Royaliſts: After a ſhort deliberation, they brought in the priſoner guilty.

Applications were made to the King for a pardon: Even money, to the amount of an hundred thouſand pounds, was offered to the dutcheſs of Portſmouth by the old earl of Bedford, father to Ruſſel. The King was inexorable. He had been extremely harraſſed with the violence of the country party, and he had obſerved, that the priſoner, beſides his ſecret deſigns, had always been carried to the higheſt extremity of oppoſition in Parliament. He had even adopted a ſentiment, ſimilar to what we meet with in a letter of the younger Brutus. Had his father, he ſaid, adviſed the King to reject the excluſion bill, he would be the firſt to move for a parliamentary impeachment againſt him. When ſuch determined reſolution was obſerved, his popularity, his humanity, his juſtice, his very virtues became ſo many crimes, and were uſed as arguments againſt ſparing him. Charles therefore would go no farther than remit the more ignominious part of the ſentence, which the law requires to be pronounced againſt traitors. "My lord Ruſſel," ſaid he, "ſhall find, that I am poſſeſſed of that prerogative, which, in the caſe "of lord Stafford, he thought fit to deny me." As the fury of the country party had rendered it impoſſible for the King, without the moſt imminent danger of his throne, to pardon ſo many Catholics, whom he firmly believed to be innocent, and even affectionate and loyal to him; he probably thought, that, ſince the edge of the law was now ready to fall upon that party themſelves, they could not reaſonably expect, that he would interpoſe to ſave them.

Russel's conſort, a woman of great merit, daughter and heireſs of the good earl of Southampton, threw herſelf at the King's feet, and pleaded with many tears the merits and loyalty of her father, as an atonement for thoſe errors, into which honeſt, however miſtaken principles had ſeduced her huſband. Theſe ſupplications were the laſt inſtance of female weakneſs (if they deſerve the name) which

ſhe

Chap. VII. 1683.

she betrayed. Finding all applications vain, she collected courage, and not only fortified herself against the fatal blow, but endeavoured by her example to strengthen the resolution of her unfortunate lord. With a tender and decent composure they took leave of each other on the day of his execution. "The bitterness of death "is now passed," said he, when he turned from her. Lord Cavendish had lived in the closest intimacy with Russel, and deserted not his friend in the present calamity. He gallantly offered to manage his escape, by changing cloaths with him, and remaining at all hazards in his place. Russel refused to save his own life, by an expedient which might expose his friend to so many hardships. When the duke of Monmouth by message offered to surrender himself, if Russel thought, that that measure would any way contribute to his safety; "It will be no advantage to "me," he said, "to have my friends die with me." Some of his expressions discover, not only composure, but good humour in this melancholy extremity. The day before his execution he was seized with a bleeding at the nose. "I shall not "now let blood to divert this distemper," said he to doctor Burnet who attended him, "that will be done to-morrow." A little before the sheriffs conducted him to the scaffold, he wound up his watch; "Now I have done," said he, "with "time, and henceforth must think solely of eternity."

21st of July.

The scaffold was erected in Lincoln's-Inn-Fields, a place very distant from the Tower; and it was probably intended, by conducting Russel thro' so many streets, to show the mutinous city their beloved leader, once the object of all their confidence, now exposed to the utmost rigours of the law. As he was the most popular among his own party; so was he ever the least obnoxious to the opposite faction: And his melancholy fate united every heart, sensible of humanity, in a tender compassion for him. Without the least change of countenance, he laid his head on the block; and at two strokes, it was severed from his body.

and execution.

In the speech, which he delivered to the sheriffs, he was very anxious to clear his memory from any imputation of ever intending the King's death or any alteration in the government: He could not explicitely confess the projected insurrection without hurting his friends, who might still be called in question for it; but he did not purge himself of that design, which, in the present condition of the nation, he regarded as no crime. By many passages in his speech, he seems to the last to have lain under the influence of party zeal; a passion, which being nourished by a social temper, and cloathing itself under the appearance of principle, it is almost impossible for a virtuous man, who has acted in public life, ever thoroughly to eradicate. He professed his entire belief in the popish plot: And he said, that, tho' he had often heard the seizure of the guards mentioned, he had ever disapproved of that attempt. To which he added, that the massacring so many innocent men in cold blood

blood was so like a popish practice, that he could not but abhor it. Upon the whole, the integrity and virtuous intentions, rather than the capacity, of this unfortunate nobleman, seem to have been the shining parts of his character. Chap. VII. 1683.

ALGERNON SIDNEY was next brought to his trial. This gallant person, son to the earl of Leicester, had entered deeply into the war against the late King; and tho' no way tainted with enthusiasm, he had so far shared in all the councils of the independant republican party, as to have been named on the high court of justice, which tried and condemned that Monarch: He thought not proper, however, to take his seat among the judges. He ever opposed Cromwel's usurpation with zeal and courage; and after employing all his efforts against the restoration, he resolved to take no benefit of the general indemnity, but chose voluntary banishment, rather than submit to a government and family, which he abhorred. As long as the republican party had any existence, he was active in every scheme, however unpromising, which tended to promote their cause: But at last, in 1677, finding it necessary for his private affairs to return into England, he had applied for the King's pardon, and had obtained it. When the factions, arising from the popish plot, began to run high, Sidney, full of those ideas of liberty, which he had imbibed from the great examples of antiquity, joined the popular party; and was even willing to seek a second time, thro' all the horrors of civil war, for his adored republic. Trial of Algernon Sidney.

FROM this imperfect sketch of the character and conduct of this illustrious personage, it may easily be conceived how obnoxious he was become to the court and ministry: What alone renders them inexcusable was the illegal method, which they took, of effecting their purpose against him. On Sidney's trial they produced a great number of witnesses, who proved the reality of a plot in general; and when the prisoner exclaimed, that all these evidences said nothing of him, he was answered, that this method of proceeding, however irregular, had been practised in the prosecutions of the popish conspirators: A topic more fit to condemn one party than to justify the other. The only witness, who deposed against Sidney, was lord Howard; but as the law required two witnesses, a strange expedient was fallen on to supply this deficiency. In ransacking the prisoner's closet, some discourses on government were found; where he had maintained principles, favourable indeed to liberty, but such as the best and most dutiful subjects in all ages have been known to embrace; the original contract, the source of power from a consent of the people, the lawfulness of resisting tyrants, the preference of liberty to the government of a single person. These papers were asserted to be equivalent to a second witness, and even to many witnesses. The prisoner replied, that there

Chap. VII. 1683.

was no other reaſon for aſcribing theſe papers to him beſides a ſimilitude of hand; a proof, which was never admitted in criminal proſecutions: That allowing him to be the author, he had compoſed them ſolely for his private amuſement, and had never publiſhed them to the world, or even communicated them to any ſingle perſon: That, when examined, they appeared by the colour of the ink to have been wrote many years before, and were in vain produced as evidences of a preſent conſpiracy againſt the government: And that where the law poſitively requires two witneſſes, one witneſs, attended with the moſt convincing circumſtances, could never ſuffice; much leſs, when ſupported by a circumſtance ſo weak and precarious. All theſe arguments, tho' urged by the priſoner with great courage and pregnancy of reaſon, had no influence. The violent and inhuman Jefferies was now chief juſtice; and by his direction a partial jury was eaſily prevailed on to give verdict againſt Sidney. His execution followed a few days afterwards: He complained, and with reaſon, of the iniquity of the ſentence; but he had too much greatneſs of mind to deny thoſe conſults with Monmouth and Ruſſel, in which he had been engaged. He rather gloried, that he now ſuffered for that *good old cauſe*, in which, from his earlieſt youth, he ſaid, he had inliſted himſelf.

17th of December. His execution.

THE execution of Sidney is regarded as one of the greateſt blemiſhes of the preſent reign. The evidence againſt him, it muſt be confeſſed, was not legal; and the jury, who condemned him, were, for that reaſon, very blameable. But that after ſentence paſſed by a court of judicature, the King ſhould interpoſe and pardon a man, who, tho' otherwiſe poſſeſſed of great merit, was undoubtedly guilty, who had ever been a moſt inflexible and moſt inveterate enemy to the royal family, and who lately had even abuſed the King's clemency, might be an act of heroic generoſity, but can never be regarded as a neceſſary and indiſpenſible duty.

HOWARD was alſo the ſole evidence againſt Hambden; and his teſtimony was not ſupported by any very material circumſtance. The crown-lawyers therefore found it in vain to try the priſoner for treaſon: They laid the indictment only for miſdemeanours, and obtained ſentence againſt him. The fine impoſed was exorbitant; no leſs than forty thouſand pounds.

HOLLOWAY, a merchant of Briſtol, one of the conſpirators, had fled to the Weſt Indies, and was now brought over. He had been outlawed; but the year, allowed him for preſenting himſelf, was not expired. A trial was therefore offered him: But as he had at firſt confeſſed his being engaged in a conſpiracy for an inſurrection, and even allowed that he had heard ſome diſcourſes of an aſſaſſination, tho' he had not approved of them, he thought it more expedient to

throw himſelf on the King's mercy. He was executed, perſiſting in the ſame confeſſion. Chap. VII. 1683.

Sir Thomas Armstrong, who had been ſeized in Holland by Chidley, the King's miniſter, and ſent over, was preciſely in the ſame ſituation with Holloway: But the ſame favour, or rather juſtice, was refuſed him. The lawyers pretended, that, unleſs he voluntarily came in before the expiration of the time aſſigned, he could not claim the privilege of a trial; not conſidering, that the ſeizure of his perſon ought in equity to be ſuppoſed the accident which prevented him. The King bore a great enmity againſt this gentleman, by whom he believed the duke of Monmouth to have been ſeduced from his duty: He alſo aſſerted, that Armſtrong had once promiſed Cromwel to aſſaſſinate him; tho' it muſt be confeſſed, that the priſoner juſtified himſelf from this imputation by very ſtrong arguments. Theſe were the reaſons of that injuſtice, which was now done him. It was apprehended, that ſufficient evidence of his guilt could not be produced; and that even the partial juries, which were now returned, and which allowed themſelves to be entirely directed by Jefferies and other violent judges, would not give ſentence againſt him.

On the day that Ruſſel was tried, Eſſex, a man eminent both for virtues and abilities, was found in the Tower with his throat cut. The coroner's inqueſt brought in their verdict, *ſelf murther:* Yet becauſe two children of ten years of age (one of whom too departed from his evidence) had affirmed, that they heard a great noiſe from his window, and that they ſaw a hand throw out a bloody razor, theſe circumſtances were laid hold of, and the murder was aſcribed to the King and the Duke, who happened that morning to pay a viſit to the Tower. Eſſex was ſubject to fits of deep melancholy, and had been ſeized with one immediately upon his commitment: He was accuſtomed to maintain the lawfulneſs of ſuicide: And his counteſs, upon a ſtrict enquiry, which was committed to the care of Dr. Burnet, found no reaſon to confirm the ſuſpicion: Yet could not all theſe circumſtances, joined to many others, entirely remove the imputation. It is no wonder, that faction is ſo productive of vices of all kinds: For, beſides that it inflames all the paſſions, it tends much to remove thoſe great reſtraints, honour and ſhame; when men find, that no iniquity can loſe them the applauſe of their own party, and no innocence ſecure them againſt the calumnies of the oppoſite.

But tho' there is no reaſon to think, that Eſſex had been murdered by any orders from court, it muſt be acknowledged, that a very unjuſtifiable uſe in Ruſſel's trial was made of that incident. The King's council mentioned it in their pleadings as a

Chap. VII. 1683.

ſtrong proof of the conſpiracy; and it is ſaid to have had great weight with the jury. It was inſiſted on in Sidney's trial for the ſame purpoſe.

State of the nation.

SOME memorable cauſes, tried about this time, tho' they have no relation to the Rye-houſe conſpiracy, ſhow the temper of the bench and the juries. Oates was convicted of having called the Duke a popiſh traitor; was fined to the amount of one hundred thouſand pounds; and was condemned to priſon till he ſhould make payment. A like illegal ſentence was paſſed upon Dutton-Colt for a like offence. Sir Samuel Barnardiſton was fined ten thouſand pounds; becauſe, in ſome private letters, which had been intercepted, he had reflected on the government. This gentleman was obnoxious; becauſe he had been foreman of that jury, which rejected the bill againſt Shafteſbury. A pretence was therefore fallen upon for puniſhing him; tho' ſuch a precedent may juſtly be eſteemed a very unuſual act of ſeverity, and ſufficient to deſtroy all confidence in private friendſhip and correſpondence.

THERE is another remarkable trial, which ſhows the diſpoſition of the courts of judicature, and which, tho' it paſſed in the enſuing year, it may not be improper to relate here. One Roſewel, a preſbyterian preacher, was accuſed by three women of having ſpoke treaſonable words in a ſermon. They ſwore to two or three periods, and agreed ſo exactly together, that there was not the ſmalleſt variation in their depoſitions. Roſewel on the other hand made a very good defence. He proved, that the witneſſes were leud and infamous perſons: He proved, that, even during Cromwell's uſurpation, he had always been loyal; that he prayed conſtantly for the King in his family; and that in his ſermons he often inculcated the obligations of loyalty. And as to the ſermon, of which he was accuſed, ſeveral witneſſes, who heard it, and ſome who wrote it in ſhort-hand, depoſed that he had uſed no ſuch expreſſions as thoſe objected to him. He offered his own notes as a farther proof. The women could not ſhow by any circumſtance or witneſſes, that they were at his meeting. And the expreſſions, which they ſwore againſt him, were ſo groſs, that no man in his ſenſes could be ſuppoſed to employ them before a mixt audience. It was alſo urged, that it was next to impoſſible for three women to remember ſo long a period upon one ſingle hearing, and to remember it ſo exactly, as to agree to a tittle in their depoſitions with regard to it. The priſoner offered to put the whole upon this iſſue: He would pronounce, with his uſual tone of voice, a period as long as that which they had ſworn to; and then let them try to repeat it, if they could. What was more unaccountable, they had forgot even the text of his ſermon; nor did they remember any ſingle paſſage, but the words, which they depoſed to. After ſo ſtrong a defence, the ſollicitor-general thought not proper to make any reply: Even Jefferies went no farther than ſome general declamations

againſt conventicles and Preſbyterians: Yet ſo violent were party-prejudices, that the jury gave a verdict againſt the priſoner; which however appeared ſo palpably unjuſt, that it never was executed. Chap. VII. 1683.

The duke of Monmouth had abſconded on the firſt diſcovery of the conſpiracy, and the Court could get no intelligence of him. At laſt, Halifax, who began to apprehend the too great prevalence of the royal party, and who thought, that Monmouth's intereſt would prove the beſt counterbalance to the Duke's, diſcovered his retreat, and prevailed with him to write two letters to the King, full of the tendereſt and moſt ſubmiſſive expreſſions. The King's fondneſs was revived; and he permitted Monmouth to come to court. He even endeavoured to mediate a reconciliation between his ſon and his brother; and having promiſed Monmouth, that his teſtimony ſhould never be employed againſt any of his friends, he engaged him to give a full account of the plot. But in order to put the country party to ſilence, he called next day an extraordinary council; and informed them that Monmouth had ſhowed great penitence for the ſhare, which he had had in the late conſpiracy, and had expreſſed his reſolutions never more to engage in ſuch criminal enterprizes. He went ſo far as to give orders, that a paragraph to the like purpoſe ſhould be inſerted in the Gazette. Monmouth kept ſilence 'till he had obtained his pardon in form: But finding, that, by taking this ſtep, he was entirely diſgraced with his party, and that, even tho' he ſhould not be produced in court as an evidence, his teſtimony, being ſo publicly known, might have weight with juries, on any future trial, he reſolved at all hazards to retrieve his honour. His emiſſaries, therefore, received orders to deny, that he had ever made any ſuch confeſſion as that aſcribed to him; and the party cried aloud, that the whole was a fiction of the Court. The King, provoked at this conduct, baniſhed Monmouth his preſence, and afterwards ordered him to depart the kingdom.

The Court were well aware, that the malecontents in England had held a correſpondence with thoſe in Scotland; and that Baillie of Jerviſwood, a man of merit and learning, with two gentlemen of the name of Campbel, had come to London, under pretence of negociating the ſettlement of the Scots Preſbyterians in Carolina, but really with a view to concert meaſures with the Engliſh conſpirators. Baillie was ſent priſoner to Edinburgh; and as no evidence appeared againſt him, the council required him to ſwear, that he would anſwer all queſtions, which ſhould be propounded to him. Baillie refuſed to ſubmit to ſo iniquitous a condition; and a fine of ſix thouſand pounds was impoſed upon him. At laſt, two perſons, Spence and Carſtares, being put to the torture, gave evidence which involved the earl of Tarras and ſome others, who, in order to ſave themſelves from attainder, were reduced to accuſe Baillie. He was brought to trial; and being in

ſo

Chap. VII. 1683. so languiſhing a condition from the cruel treatment, which he had met with in priſon, that it was feared he would not ſurvive that night, he was ordered to be executed the very afternoon, on which he received ſentence.

THE ſeverities, exerciſed during this part of the preſent reign, were much contrary to the uſual tenor of the King's conduct; and tho' thoſe who ſtudied his character more narrowly, have pronounced, that towards great offences he was rigid and inexorable, the nation were more inclined to aſcribe every unjuſt or hard meaſure to the prevalence of the Duke's councils, into whoſe hands the King had, from indolence, not from any opinion of his brother's ſuperior capacity, reſigned the reins of government. The Crown indeed gained great advantages from the detection of the conſpiracy, and loſt none by the rigorous execution of the conſpirators: The horror entertained againſt the aſſaſſination-plot, which was commonly confounded with the deſign of an inſurrection, rendered the whole party unpopular, and reconciled the nation to the meaſures of the Court. The moſt loyal addreſſes came from all parts of the kingdom; and the doctrine of ſubmiſſion to the civil magiſtrates, and even of an unlimited paſſive obedience, became the reigning principle of the times. The univerſity of Oxford paſſed a ſolemn decree, condemning ſome doctrines, which they denominated republican, but which indeed are, moſt of them, the only tenets, on which liberty and a limited conſtitution can be founded. The faction of the excluſioniſts, lately ſo numerous, powerful, and zealous, were at the King's feet; and were as much fallen in their ſpirit as in their credit with the nation. Nothing, which had the leaſt appearance of oppoſition to the Court, could be hearkened to by the public.

1684. THE King endeavoured to encreaſe his preſent popularity by every art; and knowing, that the ſuſpicion of popery was of all others the moſt dangerous, he judged it proper to marry his niece, the Lady Anne, to Prince George, brother to the King of Denmark. All the credit, however, and perſuaſion of Hallifax, could not engage him to call a Parliament, or truſt the nation with the election of a new repreſentative. Tho' his revenues were extremely burthened, he choſe rather to ſtruggle with the preſent difficulties, than try an experiment, which, by raiſing afreſh ſo many diſcontented humours, might prove dangerous to his repoſe. The Duke likewiſe zealouſly obſtructed this propoſal, and even engaged the King in meaſures which could have no other tendency, than to render any accommodation with a Parliament altogether impracticable. Williams, who had been ſpeaker during the two laſt Parliaments, was proſecuted for warrants, iſſued by him, in obedience to orders of the Houſe: A breach of privilege, which, it ſeemed not likely,

any

any future House of Commons would leave unpunished. Danby and the popish lords, who had so long been confined to the Tower, and who saw no prospect of a trial in Parliament, were admitted to bail: A measure very just in itself, but deemed a great encroachment on the privileges of that assembly. The Duke, contrary to law, was restored to the office of high admiral, without taking the test. Chap. VII. 1684.

HAD the least grain of jealousy or emulation been mixed in the King's character; had he been actuated by that concern for his people's or even for his own honour, which his high station demanded, he would have hazarded many domestic inconveniencies rather than allow France to domineer in so haughty a manner as that which at present she assumed in every negotiation. The peace of Nimeguen, imposed by the Dutch on their unwilling allies, had disjointed the whole confederacy; and all the powers, engaged in it, had disbanded their supernumerary troops, which they found such difficulty to subsist. Lewis alone still maintained a very powerful army, and by his preparations rendered himself every day more formidable. He now acted as if he were the sole Sovereign in Europe, and as if all other Princes were soon to become his vassals. Courts or chambers were erected in Metz and Brisac, for re-uniting such territories as had ever been members of any part of his new conquests. They made inquiry into titles buried in the most remote antiquity. They cited the neighbouring Princes to appear before them, and issued decrees, expelling them from the contested territories. The important town of Strasbourg, an antient and a free state, was seized by Lewis: Alost was demanded of the Spaniards, on a most frivolous, and even ridiculous pretence; and upon their refusal to yield it, Luxembourg was blockaded, and soon after taken. Genoa had been bombarded, because the Genoese had stipulated to build some gallies for the Spaniards; and in order to avoid a more severe fate, that republic was obliged to yield to the most mortifying conditions. The empire was insulted in its head and principal members; and used no other expedient for redress, but impotent complaints and remonstrances. State of foreign affairs.

SPAIN was so enraged at the insolent treatment which she met with, that, without considering her present weak condition, she declared war against her haughty enemy: She hoped, that the other powers of Europe, sensible of the common danger, would fly to her assistance. The Prince of Orange, whose ruling passions were the love of war and animosity against France, seconded every where the applications of the Spaniards. In the year 1681, he even made a journey to England, in order to engage the King into closer measures with the confederates. He also proposed to the States to make an augmentation of their forces; but several of the provinces, and even the town of Amsterdam, had been gained by the French, and the

Chap. VII. 1684. the propoſal was rejected. The Prince's enemies derived the moſt plauſible reaſons of their oppoſition from the ſituation of England, and the known and avowed attachments of the Engliſh Monarch.

No ſooner had Charles diſmiſſed his Parliaments, and embraced the reſolution of governing by prerogative alone, than he dropped his new alliance with Spain, and returned to his former dangerous connections with Lewis. That Prince had even offered to make him arbiter of his differences with Spain; and this latter power, ſenſible of Charles's partiality, had refuſed to ſubmit to ſuch a diſadvantageous propoſal. Whether any money was now remitted to England, we do not certainly know: But we may fairly preſume, that the King's neceſſities were in ſome degree relieved by France. And tho' Charles had reaſon to apprehend the utmoſt danger from the great, and ſtill encreaſing, naval power of that kingdom, joined to the weak condition of the Engliſh fleet, no conſideration was able to rouze him from his preſent lethargy.

It is here we are to fix the point of the higheſt exaltation, which the power of Lewis or that of any European Prince, ſince the age of Charlemagne, had ever attained. The only Monarch, capable of oppoſing his progreſs, was entirely engaged in his intereſts; and the Turks, invited by the malecontents of Hungary, were preparing to invade the Emperor, and to diſable that Prince from making head againſt the progreſs of the French power. Lewis may even be accuſed of overſight, in not making ſufficient advantage of ſuch favourable opportunities, which he was never afterwards able to recall. But that Monarch, tho' more governed by motives of ambition than by thoſe of juſtice or moderation, was ſtill more actuated by the ſuggeſtions of vanity. He contented himſelf with inſulting and domineering over all the Princes and free States of Europe; and he thereby provoked their reſentment without ſubduing their power. While every one, who approached his perſon, and behaved with ſubmiſſion to his authority, was treated with the higheſt politeneſs; all the neighbouring potentates had ſucceſſively felt the effects of his haughty imperious diſpoſition. And by indulging his poets, orators, and courtiers in their flatteries, and in their prognoſtications of univerſal empire, he conveyed faſter, than by the proſpect of his power alone, the apprehenſion of a general conqueſt and ſubjection.

1685. The French greatneſs, never, during his whole reign, inſpired Charles with any apprehenſions; and Clifford, 'tis ſaid, one of his moſt favoured miniſters, went ſo far as to affirm, that it were better for the King to be Viceroy under a great and generous Monarch, than a ſlave to five hundred of his own inſolent ſubjects.

The

The ambition therefore and uncontrouled power of Lewis were no diminution of Charles's happineſs; and in other reſpects his condition ſeemed at preſent more eligible than it had ever been ſince his reſtoration. A mighty faction, which had ſhook his throne, and menaced his family, was totally ſubdued, and by their precipitant indiſcretion had expoſed themſelves both to the rigour of the laws and to public hatred. He had recovered his former popularity in the nation; and what probably pleaſed him more than having a compliant Parliament, he was enabled to govern altogether without one. But it is certain, that the King, amidſt all theſe promiſing circumſtances, was not happy nor ſatisfied. Whether he found himſelf expoſed to difficulties for want of money, or dreaded a recoil of the popular humour from the preſent arbitrary meaſures, is uncertain. Perhaps the violent, imprudent temper of the Duke, by puſhing him upon dangerous attempts, gave him apprehenſion and uneaſineſs. He was overheard to ſay one day, in oppoſing ſome of the Duke's haſty councils, "Brother, I am too old to go again to my travels: You may, if you chooſe it." Whatever was the cauſe of the King's diſſatisfaction, it ſeems very probable, that he was meditating ſome change of meaſures, and had formed a new plan of adminiſtration. He was determined, 'tis thought, to ſend the Duke to Scotland, to recall Monmouth, to ſummon a Parliament, to diſmiſs all his unpopular miniſters, and to throw himſelf entirely on the goodwill and affection of his ſubjects. Amidſt theſe truly wiſe and virtuous deſigns, he was ſeized with a ſudden fit, which reſembled an apoplexy; and tho' he was recovered from it by bleeding, he languiſhed only for a few days, and then expired, in the fifty-fifth year of his age, and twenty-fifth of his reign. He was ſo happy in a good conſtitution of body, and had ever been ſo remarkably careful of his health, that his death ſtruck as great a ſurprize into his ſubjects, as if he had been in the flower of his youth. And their inexpreſſible concern for him, owing to their affection for his perſon, as well as the dread of his ſucceſſor, very naturally, when joined to the critical time of his death, begot the ſuſpicion of poiſon. All circumſtances however conſidered, this ſuſpicion muſt be allowed to vaniſh; like many others, of which all hiſtories are full.

Chap. VII. 1685.

King's ſickneſs and death, 6th of February.

During the few days of the King's illneſs, clergymen of the church of England attended him; but he diſcovered a total indifference towards their devotions and exhortations. Catholic prieſts were brought, and he received the ſacrament from them, accompanied with all the other rites of the Romiſh church. Two papers were found in his cloſet, wrote with his own hand, and containing arguments in favour of that communion. The Duke had the imprudence immediately to publiſh theſe papers; and thereby both confirmed all the reproaches of thoſe who had been

Chap. VII. 1685.

the greateſt enemies to his brother's meaſures, and afforded to the whole world a ſpecimen of his own bigotry.

and character.

If we ſurvey the character of Charles the Second in the different lights, which it will admit of, it will appear very various, and give riſe to different and even oppoſite ſentiments. When conſidered as a companion, he appears the moſt amiable and engaging of men; and indeed, in this view, his deportment muſt be allowed altogether unexceptionable. His love of raillery was ſo tempered with good breeding, that it was never offenſive: His propenſity to ſatyre was ſo checked with diſcretion, that his friends never dreaded their becoming the object of it: His wit, to uſe the expreſſion of one, who knew him well, and who was himſelf an exquiſite judge*, could not be ſaid ſo much to be very refined or elevated, qualities apt to beget jealouſy and apprehenſion in company, as to be a plain, gaining, well-bred, recommending kind of wit. And tho' perhaps he talked more than ſtrict rules of behaviour might permit, men were ſo pleaſed with the affable, communicative deportment of the Monarch, that they always went away contented both with him and with themſelves. This indeed is the moſt ſhining part of the King's character; and he ſeems to have been ſenſible of it: For he was fond of dropping the formality of ſtate, and of relapſing every moment into the companion.

In the duties of private life, his conduct, tho' not free from exception, was, in the main, laudable. He was an eaſy generous lover, a civil obliging huſband, a friendly brother, an indulgent father, and a good natured maſter†. The voluntary friendſhips, however, which this Prince contracted, nay, even his ſenſe of gratitude, were feeble; and he never attached himſelf to any of his miniſters or courtiers with a very ſincere affection. He believed them to have no other motive for ſerving him but ſelf-intereſt, and he was ſtill ready, in his turn, to ſacrifice them to preſent eaſe or convenience.

With a detail of his private character we muſt ſet bounds to our panegyric on Charles. The other parts of his conduct may admit of ſome apology, but can deſerve ſmall applauſe. He was indeed ſo much fitted for private life, preferably to public, that he even poſſeſſed order, frugality, œconomy in the former; was profuſe, thoughtleſs, negligent in the latter. When we conſider him as a Sovereign, his character, tho' not altogether void of virtues, was in the main dangerous to his people, and diſhonourable to himſelf. Negligent of the intereſts of the nation, careleſs of its glory, averſe to its religion, jealous of its liberty, laviſh of its trea-

* Marqueſs of Halifax. † Duke of Buckingham.

ſure,

ſure, ſparing only of its blood; he expoſed it by his meaſures, tho' he appeared ever but in ſport, to the dangers of a furious civil war, and even to the ruin and ignominy of a foreign conqueſt. Yet may all theſe enormities, if fairly and candidly examined, be imputed, in a great meaſure, to the indolence of his temper; a fault, which, however unfortunate in a Monarch, it is impoſſible for us to regard with great ſeverity. Chap. VII. 1685.

It has been remarked of this King, that he never ſaid a fooliſh thing, nor ever did a wiſe one: A cenſure, which, tho' too far carried, ſeems to have ſome foundation in his character and deportment.

If we reflect on the appetite for power, inherent in human nature, and add to it, the King's education in foreign countries, and among the Cavaliers, a party which would naturally exaggerate the late uſurpations of popular aſſemblies upon the rights of Monarchy; it is not ſurpriſing, that civil liberty ſhould not find in him a very zealous patron. Haraſſed with domeſtic factions, weary of calumnies and complaints, oppreſſed with debts, ſtraitened in his revenue, he ſought, tho' with feeble efforts, for a form of government, more ſimple in its ſtructure and more eaſy in its management. But his attachment to France, after all the pains which we have taken, by enquiry and conjecture, to fathom it, contains ſtill ſomething, it muſt be confeſſed, myſterious and inexplicable. The hopes of rendering himſelf abſolute by Lewis's aſſiſtance ſeem ſo chimerical, that they could ſcarce be retained with ſuch obſtinacy by a Prince of Charles's penetration: And as to pecuniary ſubſidies, he ſurely ſpent much greater ſums in one ſeaſon, during the ſecond Dutch war, than were remitted from France during the courſe of his whole reign. I am apt therefore to imagine, that Charles was in this particular guided chiefly by inclination, and by a prepoſſeſſion in favour of the French nation. He conſidered that people as gay, ſprightly, polite, elegant, courteous, devoted to their Prince, and attached to the catholic faith; and for theſe reaſons he cordially loved them. The oppoſite character of the Dutch had rendered them the objects of his averſion; and even the uncourtly humours of the Engliſh made him very indifferent towards them. Mens notions of intereſt are much warped by their affections; and it is not altogether without example, that a man may be guided by national prejudices, who has ever been little biaſſed by private and perſonal friendſhip.

The character of this Prince has been very elaborately drawn by two great maſters, perfectly well acquainted with him, the duke of Buckingham and the marqueſs of Halifax; not to mention ſeveral elegant ſtrokes given by Sir William Temple. Dr. Welwood likewiſe and biſhop Burnet have employed their pencil on the ſame ſubject: But the former is ſomewhat partial in his favour; as the latter

Chap. VII. 1685.

is by far too harſh and malignant. Inſtead of finding an exact parallel between Charles the Second and the Emperor Tiberius, as that prelate pretends, it would be more juſt to remark a full contraſt and oppoſition. The Emperor ſeems as much to have ſurpaſſed the King in abilities, as he falls ſhort of him in virtue. Provident, wiſe, active, jealous, malignant, dark, ſullen, unſociable, reſerved, cruel, unrelenting, unforgiving; theſe are the lights, under which the Roman tyrant has been tranſmitted to us. And the only circumſtance, in which it can juſtly be pretended, he was ſimilar to Charles, is his love of women; a paſſion, which is too general to form any ſtriking reſemblance, and which that deteſtable and deteſted monſter ſhared alſo with unnatural appetites.

THE

THE HISTORY OF GREAT BRITAIN.

JAMES II.

CHAP. I.

King's first transactions.——A Parliament.——Arguments for and against a revenue for life.——Oates convicted of perjury.——Monmouth's invasion.——His defeat——and execution.——Cruelties of Kirke——and of Jefferies.——State of affairs in Scotland.——Argyle's invasion,——defeat,——and execution.——A Parliament.——French persecutions.——The dispensing power.——State of Ireland.——Breach between the King and the church.——Court of ecclesiastical commission.——Sentence against the bishop of London.——Suspension of the penal laws.——State of Ireland.——Embassy to Rome.——Attempt upon Magdalen College.——Imprisonment,——trial,——and acquital of the Bishops.——Birth of the Prince of Wales.

THE first act of James's reign was to assemble the privy council; where, after some praises bestowed on the memory of his predecessor, he made professions of his resolution to maintain the established government, both in church and state. Tho' he had been reported, he said, to have imbibed very arbitrary principles, he knew that the laws of England were sufficient to make him as great a Monarch as he could wish; and he was determined never to depart from them. 1685. King's first transactions.

And

Chap. I. 1685. And as he had heretofore ventured his life in defence of the nation, he would ſtill go as far as any man in maintaining all its juſt rights and liberties.

THIS diſcourſe was received with great applauſe, not only by the council, but by the whole nation. The King univerſally paſſed for a man of great ſincerity and great honour; and as the current of favour ran at that time for the Court, men believed, that his intentions were conformable to his expreſſions. "We have now," it was ſaid, "the word of a King; and a word never yet broken." Addreſſes came from all quarters, full of duty, nay, of the moſt ſervile adulation. Every one haſtened to pay court to the new Monarch *: And James had reaſon to think, that, notwithſtanding the violent efforts made by ſo potent a party for his excluſion, no throne in Europe was better eſtabliſhed than that of England.

THE King, however, in the firſt exerciſe of his authority, ſhewed, that either he was not ſincere in his profeſſions of attachment to the laws, or that he had entertained ſo lofty an idea of his own legal power, that even his utmoſt ſincerity would tend very little to ſecure the liberties of the people. All the cuſtoms and the greater part of the exciſe had been voted by Parliament during the late King's life, and conſequently the grant was now expired; nor had the ſucceſſor any right to levy theſe branches of revenue. But James iſſued a proclamation, ordering the cuſtoms and exciſe to be paid as before; and this exertion of power he would not deign to qualify by the leaſt act or even appearance of condeſcenſion. It was propoſed to him, that, in order to prevent the ill effects of any intermiſſion in levying theſe duties, entries ſhould be made, and bonds for the ſums taken of the merchants; but the payment be ſuſpended till the Parliament ſhould give authority to receive it. This precaution was recommended as an expreſſion of deference to that aſſembly, or rather to the laws: But for that very reaſon, probably, it was rejected by the King, who thought, that the Commons would thence be invited to aſſume more authority, and would regard the whole revenue, and conſequently the whole power of the Crown, as dependant on their good will and pleaſure.

THE King likewiſe went openly, and with all the enſigns of his dignity, to maſs, an illegal meeting: And by this imprudence he diſplayed at once his arbitrary diſpoſition, and the bigotry of his principles: Theſe two great characteriſtics of his reign, and bane of his adminiſtration. He even ſent Caryl, as his agent to Rome, to make ſubmiſſions to the Pope, and to pave the way for a ſolemn re-admiſſion of

* The Quakers' addreſs was eſteemed ſomewhat ſingular. It was conceived in theſe terms. "We "are come to teſtify our ſorrow for the death of our good friend Charles, and our joy for thy being "made our governor. We are told thou art not of the perſuaſion of the church of England, no more "than we: Wherefore we hope thou wilt grant us the ſame liberty, which thou alloweſt thyſelf. "Which doing, we wiſh thee all manner of happineſs."

England

England into the boſom of the catholic church. The Pope, Innocent the XIth, very prudently adviſed the King not to be too precipitant in his meaſures, nor raſhly attempt what repeated experience might convince him was abſolutely impracticable. The Spaniſh ambaſſador, Ronquillo, deeming the tranquillity of England very requiſite for the ſupport of Spain, uſed the freedom to make like remonſtrances. He obſerved how buſy the prieſts appeared at court, and adviſed the King not to aſſent with too great facility to their dangerous councils. "Is it not "the cuſtom of Spain," replied James, "for the King to conſult with his confeſſor?" "Yes," ſaid the ambaſſador, "and 'tis for that very reaſon our "affairs ſucceed ſo ill." Chap. I. 1685.

JAMES gave hopes on his acceſſion, that he would hold the balance of power more ſteadily than his predeceſſor; and that France, inſtead of rendering England ſubſervient to her ambitious projects, would now meet with ſtrong oppoſition from that Kingdom. Beſides applying himſelf to buſineſs with great induſtry, he ſeemed jealous of national honour, and expreſſed great care, that no more reſpect ſhould be payed the French ambaſſador than his own received at Paris. But theſe appearances were not ſufficiently ſupported; and he found himſelf by degrees under the neceſſity of falling into an union, at leaſt of preſerving peace, with that great Monarch, who, by his power as well as his zeal, ſeemed alone capable of aſſiſting him, in the projects formed for promoting the catholic religion in England.

NOTWITHSTANDING the King's prejudices, all the chief offices of the Crown continued ſtill in the hands of Proteſtants. Rocheſter was lord high treaſurer; his brother Clarendon lord chamberlain; Godolphin chamberlain to the Queen; Sunderland ſecretary of ſtate; Halifax preſident of the council. This nobleman had ſtood in oppoſition to the King during the laſt years of Charles's reign; and when he attempted, on the acceſſion, to make ſome apology for his late meaſures, James very genteely told him, that he would forget every thing that was paſt, except his behaviour during the excluſion bill. In other reſpects, however, the King appeared not of ſo forgiving a temper. When the principal excluſioniſts came to pay their reſpects to their new Sovereign, they either were not admitted, or were received very coldly, ſometimes even with frowns. This conduct might ſuit the character, which the King ſo much affected, of ſincerity: But by ſhowing, that a King of England could reſent the quarrels of a duke of Yorke, he gave his people no high idea either of his lenity or magnanimity.

ON all occaſions, the King was very free in declaring, that men muſt now look for a more active and more vigilant government, and that he would retain no miniſters, who did not practiſe an unreſerved obedience to his commands. We are not indeed to look for the ſprings of his adminiſtration ſo much in his council and

Chap. I. 1685. chief officers of ſtate; as in his own temper, and in the character of thoſe perſons with whom he ſecretly conſulted. The Queen had great influence over him; a woman of ſpirit, whoſe conduct had been very popular, till ſhe arrived at that high dignity. She was much governed by the prieſts, eſpecially the jeſuits; and as theſe were alſo the King's favourites, all public meaſures were taken originally from the ſuggeſtions of theſe men, and bore evident marks of their ignorance in government, and of the violence of their religious zeal.

THE King however had another attachment, ſeemingly not very conſiſtent with this devoted regard to his Queen and to his prieſts: It was to Mrs. Sedley, whom he ſoon after created counteſs of Dorcheſter, and who expected to govern him with the ſame authority, which the dutcheſs of Portſmouth had poſſeſſed during the former reign. But the King, who had entertained the ambition of converting his people, was told, that the regularity of his life ought to correſpond to the ſanctity of his intentions; and he was prevailed with, at firſt, to remove Mrs. Sedley from Court: A reſolution in which he had not the courage to perſevere. Good agreement between the miſtreſs and the confeſſor of Princes is not commonly a difficult matter to compaſs: But in the preſent caſe theſe two potent engines of command were found very incompatible. Mrs. Sedley, who poſſeſſed all the wit and ingenuity of her father, Sir Charles, made the prieſts and their councils the perpetual objects of her raillery; and it is not to be doubted, but they, on their part, redoubled their exhortations with their penitent to break off ſo criminal an attachment.

HOWEVER little inclination the King, as well as his Queen and prieſts, might bear to an Engliſh Parliament, it was abſolutely neceſſary, at the beginning of a reign, to ſummon that aſſembly. The low condition, into which the Whigs or country party had fallen during the laſt years of Charles's reign, the odium under which they laboured on account of the Rye-houſe conſpiracy; theſe cauſes made that party meet with little ſucceſs in the new elections. The general reſignation too of the charters had made the corporations extremely dependant; and the recommendations of the Court, tho' little aſſiſted, at that time, by pecuniary in-
A Parliament. fluence, were become very prevalent. The new Houſe of Commons therefore conſiſted almoſt entirely of zealous Tories and churchmen; and were of conſequence ſtrongly biaſſed, by their affections, to comply with the meaſures of the Crown.

THE diſcourſe, which the King made to the Parliament, was more fitted to work
19th of May. on their fears than their affections. He repeated indeed, and with great ſolemnity, the promiſe which he had made before the privy council, of governing according to the laws, and of preſerving the eſtabliſhed religion: But at the ſame time he told

told them, that he positively expected they would settle his revenue, and during life too, as in the time of his brother. "I might use many arguments," said he, "to enforce this demand; the benefit of trade, the support of the navy, the necessities of the Crown, and the well-being of the government itself, which I must "not suffer to be precarious: But I am confident, that your own consideration "and your sense of what is just and reasonable will suggest to you whatever on "this occasion might be enlarged upon. There is indeed one popular argument," added he, "which may be urged against compliance with my demand: Men "may think, that by feeding me from time to time with such supplies as they "think convenient, they will better secure frequent meetings of Parliament: But "as this is the first time I speak to you from the throne, I must plainly tell you, "that such an expedient would be very improper to employ with me, and that "the best way to engage me to meet you often is always to use me well." Chap. I. 1685.

It was easy to interpret this language of the King. He plainly intimated, that he had resources in his prerogative for supporting the government, independent of their supplies; and that so long as they complied with his demands, he would have recourse to them; but that any ill usage on their part would set him free from those measures of government, which he seemed to regard more as voluntary than as necessary. It must be confessed, that no Parliament in England was ever placed in a more critical situation, nor where more forcible arguments could be urged, either for their opposition or compliance with the Court.

Reasons for and against a revenue during life.

It was said on the one hand, that jealousy of royal power was the very basis of the English constitution, and the principle to which the nation was beholden for all that liberty, which they enjoy above the subjects of other monarchies. That this jealousy, tho', at different periods, it may be more or less intense, can never safely be laid asleep, even under the best and wisest Princes. That the character of the present Sovereign afforded cause for the highest vigilance, by reason of the arbitrary principles, which he had imbibed; and still more, by reason of his religious zeal, which it is impossible for him ever to gratify, without assuming more authority than the constitution allows him. That power is to be watched in its very first encroachments; nor is any thing ever gained by timidity and submission. That every concession adds new force to usurpation; and at the same time, by discovering the dastardly dispositions of the people, inspires it with new courage and enterprize. That as arms were intrusted altogether in the hands of the Prince, no check remained upon him but the dependant condition of his revenue; a security therefore which it would be the most egregious folly to abandon. That all the other barriers, which, of late years, had been erected against arbitrary power, would be found, without this capital article to be rather pernicious and destructive. That new

Chap. I. 1685.

limitations in the conſtitution ſtimulated the monarch's inclination to ſurmount the laws, and required frequent meetings of Parliament, in order to repair all the breaches, which either time or violence may have made upon that complicated fabric. That recent experience, during the reign of the late King, a Prince who wanted neither prudence nor moderation, had ſufficiently proved the ſolidity of all theſe maxims. That his Parliament, having raſhly fixed his revenue for life, and at the ſame time repealed the triennial bill, found that they themſelves were no longer of importance, and that liberty, not protected by national aſſemblies, was expoſed to every outrage and violation. And that the more openly the King made an unreaſonable demand, the more obſtinately ought it to be refuſed; ſince it is evident, that his purpoſe in making it cannot poſſibly be juſtifiable.

On the other hand it was urged, that the rule of watching the very firſt encroachments of power could only have place, where the oppoſition to it might be regular, peaceful and legal. That tho' the refuſal of the King's preſent demand might ſeem to be of this nature, yet in reality it involved conſequences, which led much farther than at firſt ſight might be apprehended. That the King in his ſpeech had plainly intimated, that he had reſources in his prerogative, which, in caſe of oppoſition from Parliament, he thought himſelf fully intitled to employ. That if the Parliament openly diſcovered an intention of reducing him to dependance, matters muſt preſently be brought to a criſis, at a time the moſt favourable to his cauſe, which his moſt ſanguine wiſhes could ever have promiſed him. That if we caſt our eyes abroad, to the ſtate of affairs on the continent, to the ſituation of Scotland and Ireland; or, what is of more importance, if we conſider the diſpoſition of mens minds at home, every circumſtance would be found adverſe to the cauſe of liberty. That the country party, during the late reign, by their violent, and in many reſpects unjuſtifiable meaſures in Parliament, by their deſperate attempts out of Parliament, had expoſed their principles to public hatred, and had excited extreme jealouſy in all the Royaliſts and zealous churchmen, who now formed the bulk of the nation. That it would not be acceptable to that party to ſee this King worſe treated than his brother in point of revenue, or any attempts made to keep the Crown in dependance. That they thought Parliaments as liable to abuſe as Monarchy, and deſired not to ſee things in a ſituation, where the King could not, if he found it requiſite, either prorogue or diſſolve them. That if the preſent Parliament, by making great conceſſions, could gain the King's confidence, and engage him to obſerve the promiſes now given them, every thing would by gentle methods ſucceed to their wiſhes. That if, on the contrary, after ſuch inſtances of compliance, he formed any deſign on the liberties and religion of the nation, he would in the eyes of all mankind render himſelf entirely inexcuſable,

and the whole people would join in oppoſition to him. That reſiſtance could ſcarce be attempted twice; and there was therefore the greater neceſſity of waiting till time and incidents had prepared the minds of the nation for it. That the King's prejudices in favour of popery, tho' in the main pernicious, yet were ſo far fortunate, that they rendered the connexion inſeparable between the national religion and national liberty. And that if any illegal attempts were afterwards made, the church, which was at preſent the chief ſecurity of the Crown, would ſurely catch the alarm, and would ſoon diſpoſe the people to an effectual reſiſtance. Chap. I. 1685.

THESE laſt reaſons, fortified by the prejudices and affections of party, prevailed in Parliament; and the Commons, beſides thanks for the King's ſpeech, voted unanimouſly, that they would ſettle on the preſent King during life all the revenue enjoyed by the late King at the time of his deceaſe. That they might not detract from this generoſity by any ſymptoms of diſtruſt, they alſo voted unanimouſly, that the Houſe entirely relied on his Majeſty's royal word and repeated declarations to ſupport the religion of the church of England: But they added, that that religion was dearer to them than their lives. The ſpeaker, in preſenting the revenue-bill, took care to inform the King of the Common's vote with regard to religion; but could not, by ſo ſignal a proof of confidence, extort from him one word, in favour of that religion, on which, he told his Majeſty, they ſet ſo high a value. Notwithſtanding the grounds of ſuſpicion, which this ſilence afforded, the Houſe continued in the ſame liberal diſpoſition. The King having demanded a farther ſupply for the navy and other purpoſes, they revived thoſe duties on wines and vinegar, which had been once enjoyed by the late King; and they added ſome impoſitions on tobacco and ſugar. This grant amounted on the whole to about ſix hundred thouſand pounds a year.

THE Houſe of Lords were in a humour no leſs compliant. They even went ſome lengths towards breaking in pieces all the remains of the popiſh plot; that once formidable engine of bigotry and faction.

A LITTLE before the meeting of Parliament, Oates had been tried for perjury on two indictments. One for ſwearing, that he was preſent at a conſult of jeſuits in London the twenty-fourth of April, 1679; another for ſwearing, that father Ireland was in London between the eighth and twelfth of Auguſt, and on the beginning of September in the ſame year. Never criminal was convicted on fuller and more undoubted evidence. Two and twenty perſons, who had been ſtudents at St. Omers, moſt of them men of credit and family, gave evidence, that Oates had entered into that ſeminary about Chriſtmas in the preceding year, and had never been abſent but one night, till the month of July following. Forty-ſeven witneſſes, perſons alſo of untainted character, ſwore that father Ireland, on the third Oates convicted of perjury.

Chap. I. 1685.

of Auguſt, had gone to Staffordſhire, where he reſided till the middle of September; and, what ſome years before would have been regarded as a very material circumſtance, nine of theſe witneſſes were Proteſtants of the church of England. Oates's ſentence was to be fined a thouſand marks on each indictment, to be whipped on two different days from Aldgate to Newgate, and from Newgate to Tyburn, to be impriſoned during life, and to be pilloried five times every year. The impudence of the man ſupported itſelf under the conviction, and his courage under the puniſhment. He made ſolemn appeals to Heaven, and proteſtations of the veracity of his teſtimony: Tho' the whipping was ſo cruel, that it was evidently the intention of the Court to put him to death by that puniſhment, he was enabled, by the care of his friends, to recover: And he lived to King William's reign; when he had a penſion of four hundred pounds a year ſettled on him. A conſiderable number ſtill adhered to him in his diſtreſſes, and regarded him as the martyr of the proteſtant cauſe. The populace were affected with the ſight of a puniſhment, more ſevere than is commonly exerciſed in England. And the ſentence of perpetual impriſonment was deemed illegal.

THE conviction of Oates's perjury was taken notice of by the Houſe of Peers. Beſides freeing the popiſh lords, Powis, Arundel, Bellaſis, and Tyrone, together with Danby, from the former impeachment by the Commons, they went ſo far as to vote a reverſal of Stafford's attainder, on account of the falſhood of that evidence, on which he had been condemned. This bill fixed ſo deep a ſtain on the former proceedings of the excluſioniſts, that it met with great oppoſition among the Lords; and it was at laſt, after one reading, dropped by the Commons. Tho' the reparation of injuſtice be the ſecond honour, which a nation can attain; the preſent emergence ſeemed very improper for granting ſo full a juſtification of the catholics, and throwing ſo ſignal an imputation on the Proteſtants.

Monmouth's invaſion.

THE courſe of parliamentary proceedings was interrupted by the news of Monmouth's arrival on the weſt coaſt with three ſhips from Holland. No ſooner was this intelligence conveyed to the Parliament, than they voted, that they would adhere to his Majeſty with their lives and fortunes. They paſſed a bill of attainder againſt Monmouth: And they granted a ſupply of four hundred thouſand pounds for ſuppreſſing this rebellion. After having thus ſtrengthened the hands of the King they adjourned themſelves.

MONMOUTH, when ordered to depart the kingdom, during the late reign, had retired to Holland; and as it was well known, that he was ſtill much favoured by his indulgent father, all marks of honour and diſtinction were beſtowed upon him by the Prince of Orange. After the acceſſion of James, the Prince thought proper to diſmiſs Monmouth and all his followers; and that illuſtrious fugitive

retired

retired to Bruſſels. Finding himſelf ſtill purſued by the King's ſeverity, he was puſhed, contrary to his judgment as well as inclination, to make a very raſh and premature attempt upon England. He ſaw that the King had lately mounted the Throne, not only without oppoſition, but ſeemingly with the good will and affections of his ſubjects. A Parliament was ſitting, which diſcovered the greateſt diſpoſition to comply with the Court, and whoſe adherence to the Crown, he knew, would give a ſanction and authority to all public meaſures. The grievances of this reign were hitherto inconſiderable; and the people were not as yet in a diſpoſition to remark them with great ſeverity. All theſe conſiderations occurred to Monmouth; but ſuch was the impatience of his followers, ſuch the precipitate humour of Argyle, who ſet out for Scotland a little before him, that no reaſons could be attended to; and this unhappy man was drove upon his fate. Chap. I. 1685.

THE imprudence, however, of this enterprize did not at firſt appear. Tho' on his landing at Lime in Dorſetſhire, he had ſcarce a hundred followers; ſo popular was his name, that in four days he had aſſembled above two thouſand horſe and foot. They were indeed, almoſt all of them, the loweſt of the people; and his declaration was chiefly calculated to ſuit the prejudices of the vulgar, or the moſt bigotted of the whig-party. He called the King, Duke of York; and denominated him a traitor, a tyrant, a murderer, a popiſh uſurper. He imputed to him the fire of London, the murder of Godfrey and of Eſſex, nay the poiſoning the late King. And he invited all the people to join in oppoſition to his tyranny. 11th of June.

THE duke of Albemarle, ſon to him who had reſtored the Royal Family, ſummoned together the militia of Devonſhire to the number of 4000 men, and took poſt at Axminſter, in order to oppoſe the rebels; but obſerving, that his troops bore a great affection to Monmouth, he thought proper to retire. Monmouth, tho' he had formerly given many ſignal proofs of perſonal courage, had not the vigour of mind requiſite for an undertaking of this nature. From an ill-grounded diffidence of his men, he neglected to attack Albemarle; an eaſy enterprize, by which he might both have acquired credit and ſupplied himſelf with arms. Lord Gray, who commanded his horſe, diſcovered himſelf to be a notorious coward; yet ſuch was the ſoftneſs of Monmouth's nature, that Gray was ſtill continued in his command. Fletcher of Salton, a Scotſman, a perſon of ſignal probity and fine genius, had been engaged by his republican principles in this enterprize, and commanded the cavalry together with Gray: But being inſulted by one, who had newly joined the army, and whoſe horſe he had in a hurry made uſe of, he was prompted by paſſion, to which he was much ſubject, to diſcharge a piſtol at the man; and he killed him on the ſpot. This accident obliged him immediately to leave the camp;

Chap. I. 1685.

camp; and the loſs of ſo gallant an officer was a great prejudice to Monmouth's enterprize.

THE next ſtation of the rebels was Taunton, a very diſaffected town, which gladly and even fondly received them, and reinforced them with conſiderable numbers. Twenty young maids of ſome rank preſented Monmouth with a pair of colours of their handiwork, together with a copy of the bible. Monmouth was here perſuaded to take upon him the title of King, and aſſert the legitimacy of his birth; a claim, which he advanced in his firſt declaration, but whoſe diſcuſſion he was determined, he then ſaid, during ſome time to poſtpone. His numbers had now increaſed to ſix thouſand men; and he was obliged every day, for want of arms, to diſmiſs a great many, who crouded to his ſtandard. He entered Bridgewater, Wells, Frome; and was proclaimed in all theſe places: But forgetting, that ſuch deſperate enterprizes can only be rendered ſucceſsful by the moſt adventurous courage, he allowed the expectations of the people to languiſh, without attempting any conſiderable undertaking.

WHILE Monmouth, by his imprudent and ill-timed caution, was thus waſting time in the weſt, the King employed himſelf in making preparations to oppoſe him. Six regiments of Britiſh troops were called over from Holland: The army was conſiderably augmented: And regular forces, to the number of 3000 men, were diſpatched under the command of Feverſham and Churchill, in order to check the progreſs of the rebels.

MONMOUTH, obſerving that no conſiderable men joined him, finding that an inſurrection which was projected in the city had not taken place, hearing that Argyle, his confederate, was already defeated and taken; ſunk into ſuch deſpondency, that he had once reſolved to withdraw himſelf, and leave his unhappy followers to their fate. His followers expreſſed more courage than their leader, and ſeemed determined to adhere to him in every fortune. The negligent diſpoſition made by Feverſham, invited Monmouth to attack the King's army at Sedgemoor near Bridgewater; and his men in this action ſhowed what a native courage and a principle of duty, even when unaſſiſted by diſcipline, is able to perform. They made great impreſſion on the veteran forces; drove them from their ground; continued the fight till their ammunition failed them; and would at laſt have obtained a victory, had not the miſconduct of Monmouth and the cowardice of Gray prevented it. After a conteſt of three hours, the rebels gave way; and were followed with great ſlaughter. About 1500 fell in the battle and purſuit. And thus was concluded in a few weeks this enterprize, raſhly undertaken, and feebly conducted.

5th of July, Monmouth defeated.

MONMOUTH

Monmouth fled from the field of battle above twenty miles, till his horſe ſunk under him. He then changed cloaths with a peaſant, in order to conceal himſelf. The peaſant was found by the purſuers, who now redoubled the diligence of their ſearch. At laſt, the unhappy Monmouth was diſcovered, lying in the bottom of a ditch, and covered with fern: His body depreſſed with fatigue and hunger; his mind by the memory of paſt misfortunes, by the proſpect of future diſaſters. Human nature is unequal to ſuch calamitous ſituations; much more, the temper of a man, ſoftened by early proſperity, and accuſtomed to value himſelf chiefly on military bravery. He burſt into tears, when ſeized by his enemies; and he ſeemed ſtill to indulge the fond hope and deſire of life. Tho' he might have known, from the greatneſs of his own offences, and the ſeverity of James's temper, that no mercy could be expected, he wrote him the moſt ſubmiſſive letters, and conjured him to ſpare the blood of a brother, who had ever been ſo ſtrongly attached to his intereſts. James, finding ſuch ſymptoms of depreſſion and deſpondency in the unhappy priſoner, admitted him to his preſence, in hopes of extorting a diſcovery of his accomplices: But Monmouth would not purchaſe life, however loved, at the price of ſo much infamy. Finding all efforts vain, he aſſumed courage from deſpair, and prepared himſelf for death, with a ſpirit, better ſuited to his rank and character. This favourite of the people was attended to the ſcaffold with a plentiful effuſion of tears. He warned the executioner not to fall into the error, which he had committed in beheading Ruſſel, where it had been neceſſary to redouble the blow. This precaution ſerved only to diſmay the executioner. He ſtruck a feeble blow on Monmouth, who raiſed his head from the block, and looked him in the face, as if reproaching him for his failure. He gently laid down his head a ſecond time; and the executioner ſtruck him again and again to no purpoſe. He at laſt threw aſide the axe, and cried out that he was incapable of finiſhing the bloody office. The ſheriff obliged him to renew the attempt: and at two blows more the head was ſevered from the body.

Chap. 1685.

and executed, 15th of July.

Thus periſhed in the thirty-ſixth year of his age a nobleman, who, in leſs turbulent times, was well qualified to be an ornament to the Court, even to be ſerviceable to his country. The favour of his Prince, the careſſes of faction, the allurements of popularity, ſeduced him into enterprizes, which exceeded his capacity. The goodwill of the people ſtill followed him in every fortune. Even after his execution, their fond credulity flattered them with hopes of ſeeing him once more at their head. They believed, that the perſon executed was not Monmouth, but one, who, having the fortune to reſemble him nearly, was willing to give this proof his extreme attachment, and to ſuffer death in his ſtead.

This

Chap. I. 1685.

THIS victory, obtained by the King in the commencement of his reign, would naturally, had it been prudently managed, have tended much to encreaſe his power and authority. But by reaſon of the cruelty, with which it was proſecuted, and of the temerity, which it afterwards occaſioned, it was a principal cauſe of his ſudden ruin and downfal.

SUCH arbitrary principles had the Court inſtilled into all its ſervants, that Feverſham, immediately after the victory, hanged up above twenty priſoners; and was proceeding in his executions, when the biſhop of Bath and Wells warned him, that theſe unhappy men were now by law entitled to a trial, and that their execution would be deemed a real murder. This remonſtrance however did not ſtop the ſavage nature of colonel Kirke, a ſoldier of fortune, who had long ſerved at Tangiers, and had contracted, from his habitudes with the Moors, an inhumanity leſs known in European and in free countries. At his firſt entry into Bridgewater, he hanged nineteen without the leaſt enquiry into the merits of their cauſe. As if to make ſport with death, he ordered a certain number to be executed, while he and his company ſhould drink to the King's health, or to the queen's, or to judge Jefferies's. Obſerving their feet to ſhake in the agonies of death, he cried that he would give them muſic to their dancing; and he immediately commanded the drums to beat and the trumpets to ſound. By way of experiment, he ordered one man to be hung up three times, queſtioning him at every interval, whether he repented of his crime: But the man obſtinately aſſerting, that, notwithſtanding all the paſt, he would ſtill willingly engage in the ſame cauſe, Kirke ordered him to be hung in chains. One ſtory, commonly told of him, is memorable for the treachery, as well as barbarity, which attended it. A young maid pleaded for the life of her brother, and flung herſelf at Kirke's feet armed with all the charms, which beauty and innocence, bathed in tears, could beſtow upon her. The tyrant was inflamed with deſire, not ſoftened into love or clemency. He promiſed to grant her requeſt, provided that ſhe, in her turn, would be equally compliant to him. The maid yielded to the conditions: But after ſhe had paſſed the night with him, the wanton ſavage, next morning, ſhowed her from the window her brother, the darling object for whom ſhe had ſacrificed her virtue, hanged on a gibbet, which he had ſecretly ordered to be there erected for his execution. Rage and deſpair and indignation took poſſeſſion of her mind, and deprived her for ever of her ſenſes. All the inhabitants of that country, innocent as well as guilty, were expoſed to the ravages of this barbarian. The ſoldiery were let looſe to live on free quarter; and his own regiment, inſtructed by his example, and encouraged by his exhortations, diſtinguiſhed themſelves in a more particular manner by their outrages.

Cruelty of colonel Kirke.

By

Chap. I. 1685.

By way of pleaſantry, he uſed to denominate them *his lambs*; an appellation, which was long remembered with horror in the weſt of England.

The cruel Jefferies ſucceeded after ſome interval; and ſhowed the people, that the rigours of the law might equal, if not exceed, the ravages of military tyranny. This man, who wantoned in cruelty, had already given a ſpecimen of his character in many trials, where he had preſided; and he now ſet out with a ſavage joy, as to a full harveſt of death and deſtruction. He began at Dorcheſter; and thirty rebels being arraigned, he exhorted them, but in vain, to ſave him, by their free confeſſion, the trouble of trying them: And when twenty-nine were found guilty, he ordered them, as an additional puniſhment of their diſobedience, to be led to immediate execution. Moſt of the other priſoners, terrified with this example, pleaded guilty; and no leſs than two hundred and ninety-two received ſentence at Dorcheſter. Of theſe eighty were executed. Exeter was the next ſtage of his cruelty: Two hundred and forty-three were there tried, of whom a great number were condemned and executed. He alſo opened his commiſſion at Taunton and Wells; and every where carried terror and aſtoniſhment along with him. The juries were ſo ſtruck with his menaces, that they gave their verdict with precipitation, and many innocent perſons were involved with the guilty. And on the whole, beſides thoſe butchered by the military commanders, two hundred and fifty-one are computed to have fallen by the hand of juſtice. The whole country were ſtrowed with the heads and limbs of traitors. Every village almoſt beheld the dead carcaſs of a wretched inhabitant. And all the rigours of juſtice, unabated by any appearance of clemency, were fully diſplayed to the people by the inhuman Jefferies.

Of all the executions during this diſmal period, the moſt remarkable were thoſe of Mrs. Gaunt and Lady Liſle, who had been accuſed of harbouring traitors. Mrs. Gaunt was an Anabaptiſt, noted for her beneficence, which ſhe extended to perſons of all profeſſions and perſuaſions. One of the rebels, knowing her humane character, had recourſe to her in his diſtreſs, and was concealed by her. Hearing of the proclamation, which offered an indemnity and rewards to ſuch as diſcovered criminals, he baſely betrayed his benefactreſs, and bore evidence againſt her. He received a pardon for his treachery; ſhe was burned alive for her charity.

Lady Lisle was widow of one of the Regicides, who had enjoyed great favour and authority under Cromwel, and who having fled, after the reſtoration, to Lauzunne in Swiſſerland, was there aſſaſſinated by three Iriſh ruffians, who hoped to make their fortune by this infamous piece of ſervice. His widow was now proſecuted for harbouring two rebels the day after the battle of Sedgemoor; and Jefferies puſhed on the trial with the moſt unrelenting violence. In vain did the aged

Chap. I. 1685.

priſoner plead, that theſe criminals had been put into no proclamation, had been convicted by no verdict; nor could any man be denominated a traitor, till the ſentence of ſome legal court was paſſed upon him: That it appeared not by any proof, that ſhe was ſo much as acquainted with the guilt of the perſons, or had heard of their joining the rebellion of Monmouth: That tho' ſhe might be obnoxious on account of her family, it was well known, that her heart was ever loyal, and that no perſon in England had ſhed more tears for that fatal event, in which her huſband had unfortunately borne too great a ſhare: And that the ſame principles, which ſhe herſelf had ever embraced, ſhe had carefully inſtilled into her ſon, and had, at that very time, ſent him to fight againſt thoſe rebels, whom ſhe was now accuſed of harbouring. Tho' theſe arguments did not move Jefferies, they had influence on the jury. Twice they ſeemed inclined to bring in a favourable verdict: They were as often ſent back with menaces and reproaches; and at laſt were conſtrained to give ſentence againſt the priſoner. Notwithſtanding all applications for pardon, the cruel ſentence was executed. The King ſaid, that he had given Jefferies a promiſe not to pardon her: An excuſe, which could ſerve only to aggravate the blame againſt himſelf.

ONE might have hoped, that, by all theſe bloody executions, a rebellion, ſo precipitate, ſo ill ſupported, and of ſuch ſhort duration, would have been ſufficiently expiated: But nothing could ſatiate the ſpirit of rigour, which poſſeſſed the adminiſtration. Even thoſe multitudes, who received pardon, were obliged to attone for their guilt by fines, which reduced them to beggary; or where their former poverty made them incapable of payment, they were condemned to cruel whippings or ſevere impriſonments. Nor could the innocent eſcape the hands, equally rapacious as cruel, of the chief juſtice. Prideaux a gentleman of Devonſhire, being thrown into priſon, and terrified with the ſevere and arbitrary meaſures, which at that time met with no controul, was obliged to buy his liberty of Jefferies at the price of fifteen thouſand pounds; tho' he could never ſo much as learn the crime of which he was accuſed.

GOODENOUGH, the ſeditious under-ſheriff of London, who had been engaged in the moſt bloody and deſperate part the Rye-houſe conſpiracy, was taken priſoner after the battle of Sedgemoor, and was reſolved to ſave his own life, by an accuſation of Corniſh, the ſheriff, whom he knew to be extremely obnoxious to the Court. Colonel Rumſey joined him in the accuſation; and the proſecution was ſo haſtened, that the priſoner was tried, condemned, and executed in the ſpace of a week. The perjury of the witneſſes appeared immediately after; and the King ſeemed to regret the execution of Corniſh. He granted his eſtate to his family, and condemned the witneſſes to perpetual impriſonment.

THE

Chap. I. 1685.

THE injuſtice of this ſentence againſt Corniſh, was not required to diſguſt the nation againſt the Court: The continued rigour of the other executions had already impreſſed an univerſal hatred towards the miniſters of juſtice, attended with a compaſſion for the unhappy ſufferers, who, as they had been ſeduced into this crime by miſtaken principles, bore their puniſhment with the ſpirit and zeal of martyrs. The people might have been willing, on this occaſion, to diſtinguiſh between the King and his miniſters: But care was taken to prove, that the latter had done nothing but what was agreeable to their maſter. Jefferies, on his return, was immediately, for thoſe eminent ſervices, created a peer; and was ſoon after veſted with the dignity of chancellor. No body could then doubt but the King intended to rule more by fear than love, and that he was not averſe to the cruelties which had been practiſed.

State of affairs in Scotland.

WE muſt now take a view of the ſtate of affairs in Scotland; where the fate of Argyle had been decided before that of Monmouth. Immediately after the King's acceſſion, a Parliament had been ſummoned at Edinburgh; and all affairs were there conducted by the duke of Queenſbery the commiſſioner, and the earl of Perth the chancellor. The former had reſolved to make an entire ſurrender of the liberties of his country; but was determined ſtill to adhere to its religion: The latter entertained no ſcruples of paying court even by the ſacrifice of both. But no courtiers, even the moſt proſtitute, could go farther than the Parliament itſelf, towards a reſignation of their liberties. In a vote, which they called an offer of duty, after adopting the fabulous hiſtory of an hundred and eleven Scots Monarchs, they acknowleged, that all theſe Princes, by the primary and fundamental law of the ſtate, had been veſted with a *ſolid* and *abſolute* authority. They declared their abhorrence of all principles and poſitions, derogatory to the King's ſacred, ſupreme, ſovereign, abſolute power; of which none, they ſaid, whether ſingle perſons or collective bodies, can participate, but in dependance on him and by commiſſion from him. They promiſed, that the whole nation, between ſixty and ſixteen, ſhall be in readineſs for his Majeſty's ſervice, where and as oft as it ſhall be his royal pleaſure to require them. And they annexed the whole exciſe both of inland and foreign commodities for ever to the Crown.

ALL the other acts of this aſſembly ſavoured of the ſame ſpirit. They declared it high treaſon for any perſon to refuſe the teſt, if tendered by the council. To defend the obligation of the covenant, ſubjected a perſon to the ſame penalty. To be preſent at any conventicle, was made puniſhable with death and confiſcation of goods. Even ſuch as refuſed to give teſtimony, either in caſes of treaſon or nonconformity, were declared equally puniſhable as if guilty of thoſe very crimes: An excellent prelude to all the rigours of an inquiſition. It muſt be confeſſed, that nothing could equal

Chap. I. 1685.

the abject ſervility of the Scots nation during this period but the arbitrary ſeverity of the adminiſtration.

Argyle's invaſion,

It was in vain, that Argyle ſummoned a nation, ſo loſt to all ſenſe of liberty, ſo degraded by repeated indignities, to riſe in vindication of their violated laws and privileges. The greater part of thoſe who declared for him, were his own vaſſals; men, who, if poſſible, were ſtill more ſunk in ſlavery than the reſt of the nation. He arrived, after a proſperous voyage, in Argyleſhire, attended by ſome fugitives from Holland; and among the reſt, by Sir Patric Hume, a man of mild diſpoſitions, who had been driven to this extremity by a continued train of oppreſſion. The privy council was apprized of Argyle's intentions. The whole militia of the kingdom, to the number of twenty-two thouſand men, were already in arms; and a third part of them, with all the regular forces, were on their march to oppoſe him. All the conſiderable gentry of his clan were thrown into priſon. And two ſhips of war were on the coaſt to watch his motions. Under all theſe diſcouragements he yet made a ſhift, partly from terror, partly from affection, to collect and arm a body of about two thouſand five hundred men; but ſoon found himſelf ſurrounded on all ſides with inſuperable difficulties. His arms and ammunition were ſeized: His proviſions cut off: The marqueſs of Athole preſſed him on one ſide; lord Charles Murray on another; the duke of Gordon hung upon his rear; the earl of Dunbarton met him in front. His followers daily fell off from him; but Argyle, reſolute to perſevere, broke at laſt, with the ſhattered remains of his troops, into the diſaffected part of the low countries, which he had endeavoured to allure to him by declarations for the covenant. No perſon ſhowed either courage or inclination to join him; and his ſmall and ſtill decreaſing army, after wandering about for a little time, was at laſt defeated and diſſolved without an enemy. Argyle himſelf was ſeized and carried to Edinburgh; where after enduring many indignities with a gallant ſpirit, he was publicly executed. He ſuffered upon the former unjuſt ſentence, which had been paſſed upon him. The reſt of his followers either eſcaped or were pardoned; all except Rombold and Ayloffe, two Engliſhmen, who had attended him on this expedition.

defeat,

and execution.

9th of November. A Parliament.

The King was ſo elated with this continued tide of proſperity, that he began to undervalue even an Engliſh Parliament, at all times formidable to his family; and from his ſpeech to both Houſes, whom he had aſſembled early in the winter, he ſeemed to think himſelf exempted from all rules of prudence or neceſſity of diſſimulation. He plainly told the two Houſes, that the militia, which had formerly been ſo much magnified, was now found, by the experience of the laſt rebellion, to be altogether uſeleſs; and he required a new ſupply, in order to maintain thoſe additional forces, which he had levied. He alſo took notice, that he had employed a

great many catholic officers, and that he had, in their favour, diſpenſed with the law, requiring the teſt to be taken by every one who poſſeſſed any public office. And to cut ſhort all oppoſition, he declared, that, having reaped the benefit of their ſervice during ſuch times of danger, he was determined, neither to expoſe them afterwards to diſgrace, nor himſelf, in caſe of another rebellion, to the want of their aſſiſtance. Chap. I. 1685.

SUCH violent averſion did this Parliament bear to oppoſition; ſo great dread had been inſtilled of the conſequences attending any breach with the King; that it is probable, had he uſed his diſpenſing power without declaring it, no enquiries would have been made, and time might have reconciled the nation to this dangerous exerciſe of the prerogative. But to invade at once their conſtitution, to threaten their religion, to eſtabliſh a ſtanding army, and even to require them, by their concurrence, to contribute towards all theſe meaſures, exceeded the bounds of their patience, and they began, for the firſt time, to diſplay ſome ſmall remains of Engliſh ſpirit and generoſity. When the King's ſpeech was taken into conſideration by the Commons, many ſevere reflections were thrown out againſt the preſent meaſures; and the Houſe was with ſeeming difficulty engaged to promiſe in a general vote, that they would grant ſome ſupply. But inſtead of finiſhing that buſineſs, which could alone render them acceptable to the King, they proceeded to examine the diſpenſing power; and they voted an addreſs to the King againſt it. Before this addreſs was preſented, they reſumed the conſideration of the ſupply; and as one million two hundred thouſand pounds were demanded by the Court, and two hundred thouſand pounds propoſed by the country-party, a middle courſe was choſen, and ſeven hundred thouſand pounds, after ſome diſpute, were at laſt voted. The addreſs againſt the diſpenſing power was expreſſed in the moſt reſpectful and ſubmiſſive manner; yet was it very ill received by the King, and his anſwer contained a flat denial, uttered with great warmth and vehemence. The Commons were ſo daunted with this reply, that they kept ſilence a long time; and when Coke, member for Derby, roſe up and ſaid, "I hope we are all Engliſh-"men, and not to be frighted with a few hard words;" ſo little ſpirit appeared in that aſſembly, often ſo refractory and mutinous, that they ſent him to the Tower for bluntly expreſſing a free and generous ſentiment. They adjourned, without fixing a day for the conſideration of his Majeſty's anſwer; and on their next meeting, they very ſubmiſſively proceeded to the conſideration of the ſupply, and even went ſo far as to eſtabliſh funds for paying the ſum voted, in nine years and a half. The King, therefore, had in effect, almoſt without ſtruggle or violence, obtained a total victory over the Commons; and inſtead of conteſting for their liberties, now expoſed to manifeſt danger, they even conferred an addi-

Chap. I. 1685. additional revenue to the crown, and rendering the King in ſome degree independent, contributed to encreaſe thoſe imminent dangers, with which they had ſo good reaſon to be alarmed.

THE next oppoſition came from the Houſe of Peers, which has not commonly taken the lead on theſe occaſions, and even from the bench of biſhops, whence the Court uſually expects the greateſt complaiſance and ſubmiſſion. The upper Houſe had been engaged, in the firſt days of the ſeſſion, to give general thanks for the King's ſpeech; by which compliment they were underſtood, according to the practice of that time, to have acquieſced in every part of it: Yet notwithſtanding that ſtep, Compton, biſhop of London, in his own name and that of his brethren, moved that a day ſhould be appointed for taking the ſpeech into conſideration: He was ſeconded by Halifax, Nottingham, and Mordaunt. Jefferies, the chancellor, oppoſed this motion; and ſeemed inclined to uſe in that Houſe the ſame arrogance, to which on the bench he had ſo long been accuſtomed: But he was ſoon taught to know his place; and he proved, by his behaviour, that inſolence, when checked, naturally ſinks into meanneſs and cowardice. The biſhop of London's motion prevailed.

THE King might reaſonably have preſumed, that even if the Peers ſhould ſo far recover courage as to make an application againſt his diſpenſing power, the ſame ſteddy anſwer, which he had given the Commons, would make them relapſe into the ſame timidity; and he might by that means have obtained a very conſiderable ſupply, without making any conceſſions in return. But ſo imperious was his temper, ſo lofty the idea which he had entertained of his own authority, ſo violent the ſchemes ſuggeſted by his own bigotry and that of his prieſts; that, without any delay, without waiting for any farther provocation, he immediately proceeded to a prorogation. He continued the Parliament during a year and a half by four more prorogations; but having in vain tried by ſeparate applications to break the obſtinacy of the leading members, he at laſt diſſolved that aſſembly. And as it was plainly impoſſible for him to find, among his proteſtant ſubjects, a ſet of men more devoted to royal authority, it was univerſally concluded, that he intended thenceforth to govern entirely without Parliaments.

NEVER King mounted the throne of England with greater advantages than James; nay, poſſeſſed greater facility, if that were any advantage, of rendering himſelf and his poſterity abſolute: But all theſe fortunate circumſtances tended only, by his own miſconduct, to bring more ſudden ruin upon him. The nation ſeemed diſpoſed of themſelves to reſign their liberties into his hands, had he not, at the ſame time, made an attempt upon their religion: And he might even have ſucceeded in ſurmounting at once their liberties and religion, had he conducted his

his ſchemes with common prudence and diſcretion. Openly to declare to the Parliament, ſo early in his reign, his intention to diſpenſe with the teſts, ſtruck an univerſal alarm thro' the nation; infuſed terror into the church, which had hitherto been the chief ſupport of monarchy; and even diſguſted the army, by whoſe means alone he could now propoſe to govern. The former horror againſt popery was revived by polemical books and ſermons; and in every diſpute the victory ſeemed to be gained by the proteſtant divines, who were heard with more favourable ears, and who conducted the controverſy with more learning and eloquence. But another incident happened at this time, which tended extremely to excite the animoſity of the nation againſt the catholic communion. Chap. I. 1685.

LEWIS the fourteenth, after having long harraſſed and moleſted the Proteſtants, at laſt revoked entirely the edict of Nantz; which had been enacted by Harry the fourth for ſecuring them the exerciſe of their religion; which had been declared irrevocable; and which, during the experience of near a century, had been attended with no ſenſible inconvenience. All the iniquities, inſeparable from perſecution, were exerciſed againſt thoſe unhappy religioniſts; who became obſtinate in proportion to the oppreſſions which they ſuffered, and either covered under a feigned converſion a more violent abhorrence to the catholic communion, or ſought among foreign nations for that liberty, of which they were bereaved in their native country. Above half a million of the moſt uſeful and induſtrious ſubjects deſerted France; and exported, together with immenſe ſums of money, thoſe arts and manufactures, which had chiefly tended to enrich that kingdom. They propagated every where the moſt tragical accounts of the tyranny, exerciſed againſt them, and revived among the Proteſtants all thoſe ſentiments of the bloody and perſecuting ſpirit of popery, to which ſo many incidents in all ages had given too much foundation. Near fifty thouſand refugees paſſed over into England; and all men were diſpoſed from their repreſentations to foſter the utmoſt horror againſt the projects, which they apprehended to be entertained by the King for the abolition of the proteſtant religion. When a Prince of ſo much humanity and of ſuch ſignal prudence as Lewis could be engaged, by the bigotry of his religion alone, without any provocation, to embrace ſuch ſanguinary and impolitic meaſures; what might be dreaded, they aſked, from James, who was ſo much inferior in theſe virtues, and who had already been irritated by ſuch obſtinate and violent oppoſition? In vain did the King affect to throw the higheſt blame on the proſecutions of France: In vain did he afford the moſt real protection and aſſiſtance to the diſtreſſed Hugonots. All theſe ſymptoms of toleration were regarded as fallacious; oppoſite to the

Chap. I. 1685. the avowed principles of his ſect, and bely'd by the ſevere adminiſtration, which he himſelf had exerciſed againſt the Nonconformiſts in Scotland.

1686. THE ſmalleſt approach towards the introduction of popery, muſt, in the preſent diſpoſition of the people, have afforded reaſon of jealouſy; much more ſo wide a ſtep as that of diſpenſing with the teſts, the ſole ſecurity which the nation, being diſappointed of the excluſion-bill, found provided againſt thoſe dreaded innovations. Yet was the King reſolute to perſevere in his purpoſe; and having failed in bringing over the Parliament, he made an attempt, with more ſucceſs, for eſtabliſhing the diſpenſing power, by a verdict of his judges. Sir Edward Hales, a new proſelyte, had accepted a commiſſion of colonel; and directions were given to his coachman to proſecute him for the penalty of five hundred pounds, which the law, eſtabliſhing the teſts, had granted to informers. By this feigned action, the King hoped, both from the authority of the deciſion, and the reaſon of the thing, to put an end to all queſtions with regard to his diſpenſing power.

Diſpenſing power.

IT could not be expected, that the lawyers, appointed to plead againſt Hales, would exert great force on that occaſion: But the cauſe was regarded with ſuch anxiety by the public, that it has been thoroughly diſcuſſed in ſeveral elaborate diſcourſes *; and could men diveſt themſelves of prejudice, there want not ſufficient materials, on which to form a true judgment. The claim and exerciſe of the diſpenſing power is allowed to be very antient, in England; and tho' it ſeems at firſt to have been copied from papal uſurpations, it may plainly be traced up as high as the reign of Henry the third. In the gothic governments, men were more anxious to ſecure their private property than to ſhare in the public adminiſtration; and provided no innovations were attempted on their rights and poſſeſſions, the care of executing the laws, and enſuring general ſafety was without jealouſy entruſted to the Sovereign. Penal ſtatutes were commonly intended to arm the Prince with more authority for that purpoſe; and being in the main calcu'ated for promoting his influence and intereſt as firſt magiſtrate, there ſeemed no danger in allowing him to diſpenſe with their execution, in ſuch particular caſes as might require an exception or indulgence. That practice had ſo much prevailed, that the Parliament itſelf had more than once acknowleged this prerogative of the Crown; particularly during the reign of Henry the fifth, when they enacted the law againſt aliens †, and alſo when they paſſed the ſtatute of proviſors ‡. But tho' the general tenor

* Particularly Sir Edward Herbert's defence in the State Trials, and Sir Robert Atkins's Enquiry concerning the diſpenſing power. † Rot. Parl. 1. Hen. V. n. xv. ‡ Rot. Parl. 1. Hen.

Chap. I. 1686.

tenor of the penal ſtatutes was ſuch as gave the King a ſuperior intereſt in their execution beyond any of his ſubjects; it could not but ſometimes happen in a mixed government, that the Parliament would deſire to enact laws, by which the regal power, in ſome particulars, even where private property was not immediately concerned, might be regulated and reſtrained. In the twenty-third of Henry the ſixth, a law of this kind was enacted, prohibiting any man to ſerve in a county as ſheriff above a year; and a clauſe was inſerted, by which the King was diſabled from granting a diſpenſation. Plain reaſon might have taught, that this law, at leaſt, ſhould be exempted from the King's prerogative: But as the diſpenſing power ſtill prevailed in other caſes, it was ſoon able, aided by the ſervility of the courts of judicature, even to overpower this ſtatute, which the legiſlature had evidently intended to ſecure againſt all violation. In the reign of Henry the ſeventh, the caſe was brought to a trial before all the judges in the Exchequer-chamber; and it was decreed, that, notwithſtanding the ſtrict clauſe abovementioned, the King might diſpenſe with the ſtatute: He could firſt, it was alleged, diſpenſe with the prohibitory clauſe, and then with the ſtatute itſelf. This opinion of the judges, however abſurd, had ever ſince paſſed for undoubted law: The practice of continuing the ſheriffs had ever prevailed: And moſt of the property of England had been fixed by deciſions, which juries, returned by ſuch ſheriffs, had given in the courts of judicature. Many other diſpenſations of a like nature may be produced; not only ſuch as took place by intervals, but ſuch as were uniformly continued. Thus the law was diſpenſed with, which prohibited any man to go a judge of aſſize into his own county; that which rendered all Welchmen incapable of offices in Wales; that which required every one, who received a pardon for felony, to find ſureties for his good behaviour. In the ſecond of James the firſt, a new conſultation of all the judges had been held in the Exchequer-chamber upon a like queſtion: This prerogative of the Crown was again unanimouſly confirmed *: And it became an eſtabliſhed principle in Engliſh juriſprudence, that, tho' the King could not allow of what was morally unlawful, he could permit what was only prohibited by poſitive ſtatute. Even the jealous Houſe of Commons, which extorted the petition of right from Charles the firſt, made no ſcruple, by the mouth of Glanville, their manager, to allow the diſpenſing power in its full extent ‡; and

Hen. V. n. xxii. It is remarkable, however, that in the reign of Richard the ſecond, the Parliament granted the King only a temporary power of diſpenſing with the ſtatute of proviſors. Rot. Parl. 15. Rich. II. n. i. A plain implication that he had not, of himſelf, ſuch a prerogative. So uncertain were many of theſe points at that time.

* Sir Edward Coke's Reports, ſeventh report.

‡ State Trials, vol. vii. firſt edit. p. 205. Parl. Hiſt. vol. viii. p. 132.

Chap. I. 1686.

in the famous trial of ſhip-money, Holborne, the popular lawyer, had freely, and in the moſt expreſs terms, made the ſame conceſſion *. Sir Edward Coke, the great oracle of Engliſh law, had not only concurred with all other lawyers in favour of this prerogative; but ſeems even to believe it ſo inherent in the Crown, that an act of Parliament itſelf could not aboliſh it †. And he particularly obſerves, that no law can impoſe ſuch a diſability of enjoying offices as the King may not diſpenſe with; becauſe the King, from the law of nature, has a right to the ſervice of all his ſubjects. This particular reaſon, as well as all the general principles, is applicable to the queſtion of the teſts; nor can the dangerous conſequence of granting diſpenſations in that caſe be ever received before a court of judicature. Every prerogative of the Crown, it may be ſaid, admits of abuſe: Should the King pardon all criminals, law muſt be totally diſſolved: Should he declare and continue perpetual war againſt all nations, inevitable ruin muſt enſue: Yet theſe powers are entruſted to the Sovereign; and we muſt he contented, as our anceſtors were, to depend upon his prudence and diſcretion in the exerciſe of them.

THO' this reaſoning ſeems founded on ſuch principles as are uſually admitted by lawyers, the people had entertained ſuch violent prepoſſeſſions againſt the uſe, which James here made of his prerogative, that he was obliged, before he brought on Hales's cauſe, to diſplace four of the judges, Jones, Montague, Charleton and Nevil; and even Sir Edward Herbert, the chief juſtice, tho' a man of acknowleged virtue, yet becauſe he here ſupported the pretenſions of the Crown, fell under a great load of infamy. Men deemed a diſpenſing, to be in effect the ſame with a repealing power; and they could not conceive, that leſs authority was requiſite to repeal than to enact any ſtatute. If one penal law was diſpenſed with, any other might undergo the ſame fate: And by what principle could even the laws, which define property, be afterwards ſecured from violation? The teſt act had ever been conceived the great barrier of the eſtabliſhed religion under a popiſh ſucceſſor: As ſuch it had been inſiſted on by the Parliament; as ſuch granted by the King; as ſuch, during the debates with regard to the excluſion, recommended by the chancellor. By what magic, what chicane of law, is it now annihilated, and rendered of no validity? Theſe queſtions were every where aſked; and men, ſtraitened by precedents and deciſions of great authority, were reduced either to queſtion the antiquity of this prerogative itſelf, or to aſſert, that even the practice of near five centuries could not beſtow on it ſufficient authority ‡. It was not con-

* State Trials, vol. v. firſt edit. p. 171. † Sir Edward Coke's Reports, twelfth report, p. 18.
‡ Sir Robert Atkins, p. 21.

ſidered,

Chap. I. 1686.

ſidered, that the preſent difficulty or ſeeming abſurdity had proceeded from late innovations introduced into the government. Ever ſince the beginning of this century, the Parliament had, with the moſt laudable zeal, been acquiring powers and eſtabliſhing principles, favourable to law and liberty: The authority of the Crown had been limited in many important particulars: And penal ſtatutes were often calculated to ſecure the conſtitution againſt the attempts of miniſters, as well as to preſerve general peace and repreſs crimes and immoralities. A prerogative however, derived from very antient, and almoſt uniform practice, the diſpenſing power, ſtill remained, or was ſuppoſed to remain, with the Crown; ſufficient in an inſtant to overturn this whole fabric, and to throw down all the fences of the conſtitution. If this prerogative, which carries, on the face of it, ſuch ſtrong ſymptoms of an abſolute authority in the Crown, had yet, in antient times, ſubſiſted with ſome degree of liberty in the ſubject; this fact only proves, that ſcarce any human government, much leſs one erected in rude and barbarous times, is entirely conſiſtent and uniform in all its parts. But to expect, that the diſpenſing power could, in any degree, be rendered compatible with thoſe accurate and regular limitations, which had of late been eſtabliſhed, and which the people were determined to maintain, was a vain hope; and tho' men knew not upon what principles they could deny that prerogative, they ſaw, that, if they would preſerve their laws and conſtitution, there was an abſolute neceſſity for denying, or at leaſt for aboliſhing it. The revolution alone, which ſoon ſucceeded, happily put an end to all theſe diſputes: By means of it a more uniform edifice was at laſt erected: The monſtrous inconſiſtence, ſo viſible between the antient Gothic parts of the fabric and the recent plans of liberty, was fully corrected: And to their mutual felicity, King and people were finally taught to know their proper limits and boundaries *.

* It is remarkable, that the Convention, ſummoned by the Prince of Orange, did not, even when they had the making of their own terms in *the Declaration of rights*, venture to condemn the diſpenſing power in general, which had been uniformly exerciſed by the former Kings of England. They only condemned it ſo far, *as it had been aſſumed and exerciſed of late*. But in the *Bill of rights*, which paſſed about a twelvemonth after, the Parliament took care to ſecure themſelves more effectually againſt a branch of prerogative, incompatible with all legal liberty and limitations; and they excluded, in poſitive terms, all diſpenſing power in the Crown. Yet even then the Houſe of Lords rejected that clauſe of the bill, which condemned the exerciſe of this power in former Kings, and obliged the Commons to reſt contented with aboliſhing it for the future. There needs no other proof of the irregular nature of the old Engliſh government than the ſubſiſtance of ſuch a prerogative, always exerciſed and never queſtioned, till the acquiſition of real liberty diſcovered, at laſt, the danger of it. See the Journals.

Chap. I. 1686.

WHATEVER topics lawyers might find to defend James's diſpenſing power, the nation thought it dangerous, if not fatal, to liberty; and his reſolution of exerciſing it may on that account be eſteemed equally alarming, as if the power had been founded on the moſt recent and moſt flagrant uſurpation. It was not likely, that an authority, which had been aſſumed thro' ſo many obſtacles, would in his hands lie long idle and unemployed. Four catholic lords were brought into the privy council, Powis, Arundel, Bellaſis, and Dover. Halifax, finding, that notwithſtanding all his paſt merits, he poſſeſſed no real credit or authority, became very refractory in his oppoſition; and his office of privy-ſeal was given to Arundel. The King was open, as well as zealous, in the deſire of making converts; and men plainly ſaw, that the only way to acquire his affection and confidence was by a ſacrifice of their religion. Sunderland, ſome time after, ſcrupled not to gain favour at this price. Rocheſter, the treaſurer, tho' the King's brother-in-law, yet, becauſe he refuſed to give this inſtance of complaiſance, was turned out of his office: The Treaſury was put in commiſſion; and Bellaſis was placed at the head of it. All the courtiers were diſguſted, even ſuch as had little regard to religion. The diſhonour, as well as diſtruſt, attending renegades, made moſt men reſolve, at all hazards, to adhere to their antient faith.

State of Scotland.

IN SCOTLAND, James's zeal for proſelytiſm was more ſucceſsful. The earls of Murray, Perth, and Melfort were brought over to the Court religion; and the two latter noblemen made uſe of a very courtly reaſon for their converſion: They pretended, that the papers, found in the late King's cabinet, had opened their eyes, and had convinced them of the preference due to the Catholic religion. Queenſberry, who diſcovered not the ſame complaiſance, fell into total diſgrace, notwithſtanding his former ſervices, and the unlimited ſacrifices, which he had made to the meaſures of the Court. Theſe merits could not even enſure him of ſafety againſt the vengeance, to which he ſtood expoſed. His rival, Perth, who had been ready to ſink under his ſuperior intereſt, now acquired the aſcendant; and all the complaints, exhibited againſt him, were totally obliterated. His faith, according to a ſaying of Halifax, had made him whole.

State of Ireland.

BUT it was in Ireland chiefly, that the maſk was wholly taken off; and that the King thought himſelf at liberty to proceed to the full extent of his zeal, and his violence. The duke of Ormond was recalled; and tho' the primate and lord Granard, two proteſtants, ſtill poſſeſſed the authority of juſtices, the whole power was lodged in the hands of Talbot, the general, ſoon after created earl of Tyrconnel; a man, who, from the blindneſs of his prejudices and fury of his temper, was tranſported with the moſt immeaſurable ardour for the Catholic cauſe.

cauſe. After the ſuppreſſion of Monmouth's rebellion, orders were given by Tyrconnel to diſarm all the proteſtants, on pretence of ſecuring the public peace, and keeping their arms in a few magazines for the uſe of the militia. Next, the army was new-modelled; and great numbers of officers were diſmiſſed, becauſe it was pretended, that they or their fathers had ſerved under Cromwel and the Republic. The injuſtice was not confined to them. Near three hundred officers more were afterwards broke; tho' many of them had purchaſed their commiſſions: About four or five thouſand private ſoldiers, becauſe they were Proteſtants, were diſmiſſed; and being ſtripped even of their regimentals, were turned out to ſtarve in the ſtreets. While theſe violences were carrying on, Clarendon, who had been named lord lieutenant, came over; but he quickly found, that, as he had refuſed to give the King the deſired pledge of fidelity, by changing his religion, he poſſeſſed no credit nor authority. He was even a kind of priſoner in the hands of Tyrconnel; and as he gave all oppoſition in his power to the precipitant meaſures of the Catholics, he was ſoon after recalled, and Tyrconnel ſubſtituted in his place. The unhappy Proteſtants now ſaw all the legal authority, as well as the military force, transferred into the hands of their inveterate enemies; inflamed with hereditary hatred, and ſtimulated by every motive, which either the paſſion for power, property, or religion could inſpire. Even the barbarous banditti were let looſe to prey on them in their preſent defenceleſs condition. A renewal of the antient maſſacres was apprehended; and great multitudes, ſtruck with the beſt grounded terror, deſerted the kingdom, and infuſed into the Engliſh nation a dread of thoſe violences, to which, after ſome time, they might juſtly, from the prevalence of the Catholics, think themſelves expoſed. Chap. I. 1686.

All judicious perſons of the Catholic communion were diſguſted with theſe violent meaſures, and could eaſily foreſee the conſequences. But James was entirely governed by the raſh councils of the Queen and of his confeſſor, father Peters, a jeſuit, whom he ſoon after created a privy counſellor. He thought too that as he was now in the decline of life, it was neceſſary for him, by haſty ſteps, to carry his deſigns into execution; leſt the ſucceſſion of the Princeſs of Orange ſhould overturn all his projects. In vain did Arundel, Powis, and Bellaſis remonſtrate, and ſuggeſt more moderate and cautious meaſures. Theſe men had ſeen and felt, during the proſecution of the plot, the extreme antipathy which the nation bore to popery; and tho' ſome ſubſequent incidents had ſeemingly allayed that ſpirit, they knew, that the ſettled habits of the people were ſtill the ſame, and that the ſmalleſt incident was ſufficient to renew the former animoſity. A very moderate indulgence therefore to their religion would have ſatisfied them; and all

Chap. I. 1686.

attempts to acquire power, much more to procure a change of the national faith, they deemed dangerous and deſtructive.

Breach between the King and the church.

On the firſt broaching of the popiſh plot, the Church of England had concurred with the ſame violence and credulity as the reſt of the nation, in the proſecution of it: But dreading afterwards the prevalence of republican and preſbyterian principles, they had been engaged to ſupport the meaſures of the court; and to their aſſiſtance James had chiefly owed his ſucceſſion to the crown. Finding that all theſe ſervices were forgot, and that the Catholic religion was the King's ſole darling, the church had commenced an oppoſition to court-meaſures; and popery was now acknowleged the more immediate danger. In order to prevent inflammatory ſermons on this popular ſubject, James revived ſome directions to preachers which had been promulgated by the late King, in the beginning of his reign, when no deſign againſt the national religion was yet formed, or at leaſt apprehended. But in the preſent delicate and intereſting ſituation of the church, there was little reaſon to expect, that orders, founded on no legal authority, would be rigidly obeyed by preachers, who ſaw no ſecurity to themſelves but in preſerving the confidence and regard of the people. Inſtead of avoiding controverſy, according to the King's admonition, the preachers every where declaimed againſt popery; and among the reſt Dr. Sharpe, a clergyman of London, particularly diſtinguiſhed himſelf, and affected to throw great contempt on thoſe who had been induced to change their religion by ſuch pitiful arguments as the Romiſh miſſionaries could ſuggeſt. This topic, being ſuppoſed to reflect on the King, gave great offence at court; and poſitive orders were iſſued to the biſhop of London, his dioceſan, immediately to ſuſpend Sharpe, till his Majeſty's pleaſure ſhould be farther known. The prelate replied, that he could not poſſibly obey theſe commands, and that he was not empowered, in ſuch a ſummary manner, to inflict any puniſhment even upon the greateſt delinquent. But neither of theſe obvious reaſons, nor the moſt dutiful ſubmiſſions, both of the prelate and of Sharpe himſelf, could appeaſe the court. The King was determined to proceed with the utmoſt violence in this cauſe. The biſhop himſelf he reſolved to puniſh for diſobedience to his commands; and the expedient which he employed for that purpoſe, was of a nature at once the moſt illegal and moſt alarming.

Among all the engines of authority formerly employed by the Crown, none had been more dangerous or even deſtructive to liberty, than the court of high commiſſion, which, together with the ſtar-chamber, had been aboliſhed in the reign of Charles I. by act of Parliament; in which a clauſe was alſo inſerted, prohibiting the erection, in all future times, of that court or any of a like nature.

But

But this law was deemed by James no obſtacle; and an eccleſiaſtical commiſſion was anew iſſued, by which ſeven * commiſſioners were veſted with full and unlimited authority over the whole church of England. On this court were beſtowed the ſame inquiſitorial powers, poſſeſſed by the former court of high commiſſion: They might proceed upon bare ſuſpicion; and the better to ſet the law at defiance, it was expreſsly inſerted in their patent itſelf, that they were to exerciſe their juriſdiction, notwithſtanding any law or ſtatute to the contrary. The King's deſign to ſubdue the church was now ſufficiently known; and had he been able to eſtabliſh the authority of this new-erected court, his ſucceſs was infallible. A more ſenſible blow could not be given both to national liberty and religion; and happily the conteſt could not be tried in a cauſe more iniquitous and unpopular than that againſt Sharpe and the biſhop of London.

Chap. I. 1686. Court of eccleſiaſtical commiſſion.

The prelate was cited before the commiſſioners. After denying the legality of the court, after claiming the privilege of all Chriſtian biſhops to be tried by the metropolitan and his ſuffragans; he pleaded in his own defence, that as he was obliged, if he had ſuſpended Sharpe, to act in the capacity of a judge, he could not, conſiſtent either with law or juſtice, pronounce ſentence without a previous citation and trial: That he had by petition repreſented this difficulty to his Majeſty; and not receiving any anſwer, he had reaſon to think, that his petition had given entire ſatisfaction: That in order to ſhew his farther deference, he had adviſed Sharpe to preach no more, till he had juſtified his conduct to the King; an advice, which, coming from a ſuperior, was equivalent to a command, and had accordingly met with the proper obedience: That he had thus in his apprehenſion conformed himſelf to his Majeſty's pleaſure; but if he ſhould ſtill be found wanting to his duty in any particular, he was now contented to crave pardon, and to make reparation. All this ſubmiſſion, both in Sharpe and the prelate, had no effect: The King was determined to have an example: Orders were accordingly ſent to the commiſſioners to proceed: And by a majority of votes the biſhop, as well as the doctor, was ſuſpended.

Sentence againſt the biſhop of London.

Almost the whole of this ſhort reign conſiſts of attempts, always imprudent, often illegal, and ſometimes both, againſt whatever was moſt loved and revered by the nation: Even ſuch ſchemes of the King's as might be laudable in themſelves, were ſo diſgraced with theſe intentions, that they ſerve only to aggravate the charge againſt him. James was become a great patron of toleration, and an enemy

* The perſons named were the archbiſhop of Canterbury, Sancroft; the biſhop of Durham, Crew; of Rocheſter, Sprat; the earl of Rocheſter, Sunderland, chancellor Jefferies, and lord chief juſtice Herbert. The archbiſhop refuſed to act, and the biſhop of Cheſter was ſubſtituted in his place.

Chap. I. 1687. Penal laws ſuſpended.

to all thoſe perſecuting laws, which, from the influence of the church, had been enacted both againſt the diſſenters and Catholics. Not contented with granting diſpenſations to particular perſons, he aſſumed a power of iſſuing a declaration of general indulgence, and of ſuſpending at once all the penal ſtatutes, by which a conformity was required to the eſtabliſhed religion. This was a ſtrain of authority, it muſt be confeſſed, quite inconſiſtent with law and a limited conſtitution; but was ſupported by many ſtrong precedents in the Hiſtory of England. Even after the principles of liberty were become more prevalent, and began to be well underſtood, the late King had, oftner than once, and, without giving much umbrage, exerted this dangerous power: He had in 1662 ſuſpended the execution of a law, which regulated carriages: During the two Dutch wars, he had twice ſuſpended the act of navigation: And the Commons in 1666, being reſolved, contrary to the King's judgment, to enact that iniquitous law againſt Iriſh cattle, found it neceſſary, in order to obviate the exerciſe of this prerogative, which they deſired not at that time entirely to deny or abrogate, to call the importation of that cattle a nuiſance.

THO' the former authority of the King was great in civil affairs, it was ſtill greater in eccleſiaſtical; and the whole deſpotic power of the popes was often believed, in virtue of the ſupremacy, to be devolved to the Crown. The laſt Parliament of Charles the firſt, by depriving the King and convocation of the power of framing canons without conſent of Parliament, had ſomewhat diminiſhed the ſuppoſed extent of the ſupremacy; but ſtill very conſiderable remains of it, at leaſt very important claims, were preſerved, and were occaſionally made uſe of by the Sovereign. In 1662, Charles, pleading both the rights of his ſupremacy and his ſuſpending power, had granted a general indulgence or toleration; and in 1672 he renewed the ſame edict: Tho' the remonſtrances of his Parliament obliged him, on both occaſions, to retract; and in the laſt inſtance, the triumph of law over prerogative was deemed very great and memorable. In general, we may remark, where the exerciſe of the ſuſpending power was agreeable and uſeful, the power itſelf was little queſtioned: Where the exerciſe was thought liable to exceptions, men not only oppoſed it, but proceeded to deny altogether the legality of the prerogative on which it was founded.

JAMES, much more imprudent, head-ſtrong, and arbitrary than his brother, iſſued anew a proclamation, ſuſpending all the penal laws in eccleſiaſtical affairs, and granting a general liberty of conſcience to all his ſubjects. He was not deterred by the conſideration, that this ſcheme of indulgence was already blaſted by two fruitleſs attempts; and that in ſuch a government as that of England, it was not ſufficient that a prerogative be approved of by ſome lawyers and antiquarians:

If

v.6

If it was condemned by the general voice of the nation, and yet was ſtill exerted, the victory over national liberty was equally ſignal, as if obtained by the moſt flagrant injuſtice and uſurpation. Theſe two conſiderations indeed would rather ſerve to recommend this project to James; who deemed himſelf ſuperior in vigour and activity to his brother, and who probably thought, that his people enjoyed no liberties but by his royal conceſſion and indulgence. Chap. I. 1687.

In order to procure a better reception for his edict of toleration, the King, finding himſelf oppoſed by the church, began to pay great court to the Diſſenters; and he imagined, that, by playing one party againſt another, he would eaſily obtain the victory over both; a refined policy which it much exceeded his capacity to conduct. His intention was ſo obvious, that it was impoſſible for him ever to gain the ſincere confidence and regard of the Nonconformiſts. They knew, that the genius of their religion was diametrically oppoſite to that of the Catholics, the ſole object of the King's affection. They were ſenſible, that both the violence of his temper, and the maxims of his religion, were repugnant to the principles of toleration. They had ſeen, that on his firſt acceſſion to the Crown, as well as during his brother's reign, he had courted the church at their expence; and it was not till after his dangerous ſchemes were rejected by the prelates, that he had recourſe to the Nonconformiſts. All his favours, therefore, muſt, to every man of judgment among the ſectaries, have appeared moſt inſidious: Yet ſuch was the pleaſure reaped from preſent eaſe, ſuch the animoſity of the Diſſenters againſt the church, who had ſo long ſubjected them to the rigours of perſecution, that they every where expreſſed the moſt entire duty to the King and compliance with his meaſures; and could not forbear rejoicing extremely in the preſent depreſſion of their enemies.

But had the Diſſenters been ever ſo much inclined to ſhut their eyes with regard to the King's intentions, the manner of conducting his ſcheme in Scotland was ſufficient to diſcover the ſecret. The King firſt applied to the Scots Parliament, and deſired an indulgence for the Catholics alone, without comprehending the Preſbyterians: But that aſſembly, tho' more diſpoſed than even the Parliament of England, to ſacrifice their civil liberties, reſolved likewiſe to adhere pertinaciouſly to their religion; and they now rejected for the firſt time the King's application. James therefore found himſelf obliged to exert his prerogative; and he thought it prudent to intereſt a party of his ſubjects, beſides the Catholics, in ſupporting this act of authority. To the great ſurprize of the harraſſed and perſecuted Preſbyterians, they heard the principles of toleration every where extolled, and found that permiſſion was granted to attend conventicles; an offence, which, even during this reign, had been declared no leſs than a capital crime. The King's declaration, however, of indulgence contained articles, ſufficient to depreſs their joy. As if

Chap. I. 1687.

Popery were already predominant, he declared, "that he never would uſe force "or *invincible neceſſity* againſt any man on account of his perſwaſion or the prote- "ſtant religion:" A promiſe ſurely of toleration given to the Proteſtants with great precaution, and admitting a conſiderable latitude for perſecution and violence. It is likewiſe remarkable, that the King declared in expreſs terms, "that "he had thought fit, by his ſovereign authority, prerogative royal, and *abſolute* "power, which all his ſubjects were to obey *without reſerve*, to grant this royal "toleration." The dangerous deſigns of other Princes are to be collected by a compariſon of their ſeveral actions, by a diſcovery of their more ſecret councils: but ſo blinded was James with zeal, ſo tranſported with his imperious temper, that even his proclamations and public edicts contain expreſſions, which, without any farther enquiry, may ſuffice to his condemnation.

The Engliſh well knew, that the King, by the conſtitution of their government, thought himſelf intitled, as indeed he was, to as ample authority in his ſouthern, as in his northern kingdom; and therefore, tho' the declaration of indulgence publiſhed for England was more cautiouſly worded, they could not but be alarmed by the arbitrary treatment, to which their neighbours were expoſed. It is even remarkable, that the Engliſh declaration contained clauſes of a ſtrange import. The King there promiſed, that he would maintain his loving ſubjects in all their properties and poſſeſſions, as well of church and abbey lands as of any other. Men thought, that, if the full eſtabliſhment of popery was not at hand, this promiſe was quite ſuperfluous; and they concluded, that the King was ſo replete with joy on the proſpect of that glorious event, that he could not, even for a moment, refrain himſelf from expreſſing it.

State of Ireland.

But what afforded the moſt alarming proſpect, was the violent, and precipitant conduct of affairs in Ireland. Tyrconnel was now veſted with full authority; and carried over with him as chancellor one Fitton, a man who was taken from a jail, and who had been convicted of forgery and other crimes, but who compenſated for all his enormities by a headlong zeal for the Catholic religion. He was even heard to ſay from the bench, that the Proteſtants were all rogues, and that there was not one among forty thouſand who was not a traitor, a rebel, and a villain. The whole ſtrain of the adminiſtration was ſuitable to ſuch ſentiments. The Catholics were put in poſſeſſion of the council table, of the courts of judicature, of the bench of juſtices. In order to make them maſters of the Parliament, the ſame violence was exerciſed that had been practiſed in England. The charters of Dublin and of all the corporations were recalled; and new charters were granted, ſubjecting the corporations to the abſolute will of the Sovereign. The Proteſtant freemen were expelled, Catholics introduced, and the latter ſect,

as they always were the majority in number, were now inveſted with the whole power of the kingdom. The act of ſettlement was the only obſtacle to their enjoying the whole property; and Tyrconnel had formed a ſcheme for calling a Parliament, in order to reverſe that act, and empower the King to beſtow all the lands of Ireland on his catholic ſubjects. But in this ſcheme he met with oppoſition from the moderate Catholics in the King's council. Lord Bellaſis went even ſo far as to affirm with an oath, "that that fellow in Ireland was fool and "madman enough to ruin ten kingdoms." The decay of trade, from the deſertion of the Proteſtants, was repreſented; the ſinking of the revenue; the alarm communicated to England: And by theſe conſiderations the King's reſolutions were for ſome time ſuſpended; tho' it was eaſy to foreſee, from the uſual tenor of his conduct, which ſide would at laſt preponderate. Chap. I. 1687.

But the King was not contented with diſcovering in his own kingdoms the imprudence of his conduct: He was reſolved, that all Europe ſhould be witneſs of it. He publicly ſent the earl of Caſtelmaine ambaſſador extraordinary to Rome, in order to expreſs his obeiſance to the Pope, and to reconcile his kingdoms to the catholic communion. Never man, who came on ſo important an errand, met with ſo many neglects and even affronts, as Caſtelmaine. The Pope, inſtead of being pleaſed with this forward ſtep, concluded, that a ſcheme, conducted with ſuch indiſcretion, could never poſſibly be ſucceſsful. And as he was engaged in a violent quarrel with the French monarch, a quarrel which intereſted him much more than the converſion of England, he bore little regard to James, whom he believed too cloſely united with his capital enemy. Embaſſy to Rome.

The only proof of complaiſance, which the King received from his Holineſs, was his ſending a nuncio into England, in return for the embaſſy. By act of Parliament any communication with the Pope was declared high treaſon: Yet ſo little regard did the King pay to the laws, that he gave the nuncio a public and ſolemn reception at Windſor. The duke of Somerſet, one of the lords of the bed-chamber, becauſe he refuſed to aſſiſt at this ceremony, was diſmiſſed from his employments. The nuncio reſided openly in London during all this reign. Four catholic biſhops were publickly conſecrated in the King's chapel, and ſent out, under the title of vicars apoſtolical, to exerciſe the epiſcopal function in their reſpective dioceſes. Their paſtoral letters, directed to the lay Catholics of England, were printed and diſperſed by the expreſs allowance and permiſſion of the King. The regular clergy of that communion appeared at Court in the habits of their order; and ſome of them were ſo indiſcreet as to boaſt, that, in a little time, they hoped to walk in proceſſion thro' the capital.

Chap. I. 1687.

WHILE the King ſhocked in the moſt open manner all the principles and prejudices of his proteſtant ſubjects, he could not ſometimes but be ſenſible, that he ſtood in need of their aſſiſtance for the execution of his deſigns. He had himſelf, by virtue of his prerogative, ſuſpended the penal laws, and diſpenſed with the teſt; but he would gladly have obtained the ſanction of Parliament to theſe acts of power; and he knew, that, without this authority, his edicts alone would never afford ſufficient ſecurity to the Catholics. He had employed, therefore, with the members of Parliament many private conferences, which were then called *cloſetings*; and he uſed every expedient of reaſons, menaces, and promiſes to break their obſtinacy in this particular. Finding all his efforts fruitleſs, he had diſſolved the Parliament, and was reſolved to call a new one, from whom he expected more complaiſance and ſubmiſſion. By the practice of annulling the charters, the King was become maſter of all the corporations, and could at his pleaſure change every where the whole magiſtracy. The church party, therefore, by whom the Crown had been hitherto ſo remarkably ſupported, and to whom the King viſibly owed his own ſucceſſion, were deprived of all authority; and Diſſenters, firſt in London, and afterwards in every other town, were ſubſtituted in their place. Not contented with this violent and dangerous innovation, certain regulators were appointed to examine the qualifications of electors; and directions were given them to exclude all ſuch as adhered to the teſt and penal ſtatutes *. Queries to this purpoſe were openly propoſed in all places, in order to try the ſentiments of men, and enable the King to judge of the proceedings of the future Parliament. The power of the Crown was at this time ſo great; the revenue, managed by James's frugality, ſo conſiderable and independant; that if he had embraced any national party, he had been enſured of infallible ſucceſs, and might have carried his authority to what extent he pleaſed. But the Catholics, to whom he had entirely devoted himſelf, were not the hundredth part of the people. Even the proteſtant Nonconformiſts, whom he ſo much courted, were little more than the twentieth; and what was worſe, repoſed very little confidence in the unnatural alliance contracted with the Catholics, and in the principles of toleration, which, contrary to their uſual practice in all ages, ſeemed at preſent to be adopted by that ſect. The King therefore, finding little hopes of ſucceſs, protracted the election of a Parliament, and proceeded ſtill in the exerciſe of his illegal and arbitrary authority.

* The elections in ſome places, particularly in York, were transferred from the people to the magiſtrates, who, by the new charter, were all named by the Crown. Sir John Reresby's Memoirs, p. 272. This was in reality nothing different from the King's naming the members. The ſame act of authority had been employed in all the burroughs of Scotland.

THE

Chap. I. 1687.

THE whole power in Ireland had been committed to the Catholics. In Scotland, all the miniſters, whom the King chiefly truſted, were converts to that religion. Every great office in England, civil and military, was gradually tranſferred from the Proteſtants. Rocheſter and Clarendon, the King's brothers-in-law, tho' they had been ever faithful to his intereſts, could not, by all their ſervices, attone for their adherence to the national religion; and had been diſmiſſed from their employments. The proſtitute Jefferies himſelf, tho' he had ſacrificed honour and juſtice and humanity to the Court; yet becauſe he refuſed alſo to give up his religion, was very faſt declining in favour and intereſt. Nothing now remained but to open the door in the church and univerſities to the intruſion of the Catholics. It was not long before the King made this violent effort; and by conſtraining the prelacy and eſtabliſhed church to ſeek protection in the principles of liberty, he at laſt left himſelf entirely without friends and adherents.

FATHER Francis, a Benedictine, was recommended by the King's mandate to the univerſity of Cambridge for the degree of maſter of arts; and as it was uſual for the univerſity to confer that degree on perſons eminent for learning, without regard to their religion; and as they had even admitted lately the ſecretary to the ambaſſador of Morocco; the King on that account thought himſelf the better intitled to compliance. But the univerſity conſidered, that there was a great difference between a compliment beſtowed on foreigners, and degrees which gave a title to vote in all the elections and decrees of the univerſity, and which, if conferred on the Catholics, would infallibly in time render that ſect entirely ſuperior. They therefore refuſed to obey the King's mandate, and were cited to appear before the court of eccleſiaſtical commiſſion. The vice-chancellor was ſuſpended; but as the univerſity choſe a man of ſpirit to ſucceed him, the King thought proper for the preſent to drop his pretenſions.

Attempt upon Magdalen college.

THE attempt upon the univerſity of Oxford was proſecuted with more inflexible obſtinacy, and was attended with more important conſequences. This univerſity had lately in their famous decree made a ſolemn profeſſion of paſſive obedience; and the court probably expected, that they would ſhow their ſincerity, when their turn came to practiſe that doctrine; which, tho', if carried to the utmoſt extent, it be contrary both to reaſon and to nature, is apt to meet with the moſt effectual oppoſition from the latter principle. The preſident of Magdalen college, one of the richeſt foundations in Europe, dying about this time, a mandate was ſent in favour of Farmer, a new convert, but one, who, beſides his being a catholic, had not in other reſpects the qualities required by the ſtatutes for enjoying that office. The fellows of the college made very ſubmiſſive applications to the King for recalling his mandate; but before they received an anſwer, the day came, on which, by their

Chap. I. 1687.

their ſtatutes, they were required to proceed to an election. They therefore choſe Dr. Hough, a man of virtue, as well as of the firmneſs and vigour requiſite for maintaining his own rights and thoſe of the univerſity. In order to puniſh the college for this contumacy, as it was called, an inferior eccleſiaſtical commiſſion was ſent down, and the new preſident and the fellows were cited before that court. So little regard had been paid to any other conſideration beſides religion, that Farmer, on enquiry, was found guilty of the loweſt and moſt ſcandalous vices; inſomuch that even the eccleſiaſtical commiſſioners were aſhamed to inſiſt on his election. A new mandate, therefore, was iſſued in favour of Parker, lately created biſhop of Oxford, a man of a proſtitute character, but who, like Farmer, attoned for all his vices by his avowed willingneſs to embrace the catholic religion. The college repreſented, that all preſidents had ever been appointed by election, and there were even few inſtances of the King's interpoſing by his recommendation in favour of any candidate; that having already made a regular election of a preſident, they could not, during his life, deprive him of his office, and ſubſtitute any other in his place; that, even if there was a vacancy, Parker, by the ſtatutes of their founder, could not be choſen; that they had all of them bound themſelves by oath to obſerve theſe ſtatutes, and never on any account to accept of a diſpenſation; and that the college had at all times ſo much diſtinguiſhed itſelf by its loyalty, that nothing but the moſt invincible neceſſity could now oblige them to oppoſe his Majeſty's inclinations. All theſe reaſons availed them nothing. The preſident and all the fellows, except two who complied, were expelled the college; and Parker was put in poſſeſſion of the office. This act of violence, of all thoſe committed during the reign of James, is perhaps the moſt illegal and arbitrary. When the diſpenſing power was the moſt ſtrenuouſly inſiſted on by court lawyers, it had ſtill been allowed, that the ſtatutes, which regard private property, could not legally be infringed by that prerogative: Yet in this inſtance it appeared, that even theſe were not now ſecure from invaſion. The privileges of a college are attacked: Men are illegally diſpoſſeſſed of their property, for adhering to their duty, to their oaths, and to their religion: The fountains of the church are attempted to be poiſoned; nor would it be long, it was concluded, ere all eccleſiaſtical, as well as civil preferments, would be beſtowed on ſuch as, negligent of honour, virtue, and ſincerity, baſely ſacrificed their faith to the reigning ſuperſtition. Such were the general ſentiments; and as the univerſities have an intimate connexion with the eccleſiaſtical eſtabliſhments, and mightily intereſt all thoſe who have there received their education, this arbitrary proceeding begot an univerſal diſcontent againſt the King's adminiſtration.

THE next meaſure of the Court was an inſult ſtill more open on the eccleſiaſtics, and rendered the breach between the King and that powerful body fatal,

as

as well as incurable. It is ſtrange, that James, when he felt, from the ſentiments of his own heart, what a mighty influence religious zeal had over him, ſhould yet be ſo infatuated as never once to ſuſpect, that it might poſſibly have a proportional authority over his ſubjects. Could he have profited from repeated experience, he had ſeen inſtances enough of their ſtrong averſion towards that communion, which, from a violent, imperious diſpoſition, he was determined, by every poſſible expedient, to introduce into his kingdoms. Chap. I. 1687.

THE King publiſhed a ſecond declaration of indulgence, almoſt in the ſame terms with the former; and he ſubjoined an order, that, immediately after divine ſervice, it ſhould be read by the clergy in all the churches. As they were known univerſally to diſapprove of the uſe made of the ſuſpending power, this clauſe, they thought, could be meant only as an inſult upon them; and they were ſenſible, that, by their compliance, they would expoſe themſelves, both to public contempt, on account of their tame behaviour, and to public hatred, by their indirectly patronizing ſo obnoxious a prerogative *. They were determined, therefore, almoſt univerſally to preſerve the regard of the people; their only protection, while the laws were become of ſo little validity, and while the Court was ſo deeply engaged in oppoſite intereſts. In order to encourage them in this reſolution, ſix prelates, to wit, Lloyde biſhop of St. Aſaph, Ken of Bath and Wells, Turner of Ely, Lake of Chicheſter, White of Peterborow, and Trelawney of Briſtol, met privately with the primate, and concerted the form of a petition to the King. They there repreſented in few words, that, tho' poſſeſſed of the higheſt ſenſe of loyalty, a virtue of which the church of England had given ſuch eminent teſtimonies; tho' deſirous of affording eaſe in a legal way to all Proteſtant Diſſenters; yet becauſe the declaration of indulgence was founded on a prerogative, formerly declared illegal by Parliament, they could not, in prudence, honour, or conſcience, ſo far make themſelves parties as the diſtribution of it all over the kingdom would be interpreted to amount to. They therefore beſought the King, that he would not inſiſt upon their reading that declaration †. 1688.

THE

* When Charles diſſolved his laſt Parliament, he ſet forth a declaration giving his reaſons for that meaſure, and this declaration the clergy had been ordered to read to the people after divine ſervice. Theſe orders were agreeable to their party prejudices, and they willingly ſubmitted to them. The contrary was now the caſe.

† The words of the petition were: That the great averſeneſs found in themſelves to their diſtributing and publiſhing in all their churches your Majeſty's late declaration for liberty of conſcience, proceeds neither from any want of duty and obedience to your Majeſty (our holy mother, the church of England, being both in her principles and her conſtant practice unqueſtionably loyal, and having to her

Chap. I. 1688.

THE King was incapable, not only of yielding to the greateſt oppoſition, but of allowing the ſlighteſt and moſt reſpectful contradiction to paſs unpuniſhed. He immediately embraced a reſolution (and his reſolutions, when once embraced, were inflexible) of puniſhing the biſhops, for a petition ſo popular in its matter, and ſo prudent and cautious in the expreſſion. As the petition was delivered him in private, he ſummoned them before the council; and there queſtioned them whether they would acknowledge it. The biſhops ſaw his intention, and ſeemed long deſirous to decline anſwering: But being puſhed by the chancellor, they at laſt owned the petition. On their refuſal to give bail, an order was immediately drawn for their commitment to the Tower; and the Crown lawyers received directions to proſecute them for the ſeditious libel, which, it was pretended, they had compoſed and uttered.

Impriſonment.

THE people were already aware of the danger, to which the prelates were expoſed; and were raiſed to the higheſt pitch of anxiety and attention with regard to the iſſue of this extraordinary affair. But when they beheld theſe fathers of the church brought from court under the cuſtody of a guard, when they ſaw them embarked in veſſels on the river, and conveyed towards the Tower, all their affection for liberty, all their zeal for religion, blazed up at once; and they flew to behold this affecting and animating ſpectacle. The whole ſhore was covered with crowds of proſtrate ſpectators, who at once implored the bleſſing of thoſe holy paſtors, and addreſſed their petitions towards Heaven for protection during this extreme danger, to which their country and their religion ſtood expoſed. Even the ſoldiers, ſeized with the contagion of the ſame ſpirit, flung themſelves on their knees before the diſtreſſed prelates, and craved the benediction of thoſe criminals, whom they were appointed to guard. Some perſons ran into the water, that they might participate more nearly of thoſe bleſſings, which the prelates were diſtributing on all around them. The biſhops themſelves, during this triumphant ſuffering, augmented the general favour, by the moſt lowly ſubmiſſive deportment; and they ſtill

her great honour been more than once publicly acknowleged to be ſo by your gracious Majeſty) nor yet from any want of tenderneſs to Diſſenters, in relation to whom we are willing to come to ſuch a temper as ſhall be thought fit, when the matter ſhall be conſidered and ſettled in Parliament and Convocation. But among many other conſiderations, from this eſpecially, becauſe that declaration is founded upon ſuch a diſpenſing power as hath been often declared illegal in Parliament, and particularly in the years 1662 and 1672, and in the beginning of your Majeſty's reign, and is a matter of ſo great moment and conſequence to the whole nation both in church and ſtate, that your petitioners cannot in prudence, honour, or conſcience ſo far make themſelves parties to it as a diſtribution of it all over the nation, and the ſolemn publication of it once and again, even in God's houſe, and in the time of divine ſervice, muſt amount to in common and reaſonable conſtruction.

exhorted

exhorted the people to fear God, honour the King, and maintain their loyalty; expreſſions more animating than the moſt inflammatory ſpeeches. And no ſooner had they entered the precincts of the Tower than they hurried to chapel, in order to return thanks for thoſe afflictions, which Heaven, in defence of its holy cauſe, had thought them worthy to endure. Chap. I. 1688.

THEIR paſſage when conducted to their trial, was, if poſſible, attended with greater crowds of anxious ſpectators. All men ſaw the dangerous criſis, to which affairs were reduced, and were ſenſible, that the iſſue could not poſſibly be put on a more favourable cauſe, than that in which the King had ſo imprudently engaged. Twenty-nine temporal peers (for the other prelates ſtood aloof) attended the priſoners to Weſtminſter-hall; and ſuch crowds of gentry followed the proceſſion, that ſcarce any room was left for the populace to enter. The lawyers for the biſhops were Sir Robert Sawyer, Sir Francis Pemberton, Pollexfen, Treby, and Sommers. No cauſe, even during the proſecution of the popiſh plot, was ever heard with ſo much zeal and attention. The popular torrent, which, of itſelf, ran fierce and ſtrong, was now farther irritated by the oppoſition of the government. trial.

THE council for the biſhops pleaded, that the law allowed ſubjects, if they thought themſelves aggrieved in any particular, to addreſs themſelves by petition to the King, provided they kept within certain bounds, which the ſame law preſcribed them, and which in the preſent petition the prelates had rigidly obſerved: That an active obedience in caſes, which were contrary to conſcience, was never pretended to be due to government; and law was allowed to be the great meaſure of the compliance and ſubmiſſion of ſubjects: That when any perſon found commands to be impoſed upon him, which he could not obey, it was more reſpectful to offer to the Prince his reaſons for refuſal, than to remain in an obſtinate and refractory ſilence: That it was no breach of duty in ſubjects, even tho' not expreſly called upon, to diſcover their ſenſe of public meaſures, in which every one had ſo intimate a concern: That the biſhops in the preſent caſe were called upon, and muſt either expreſs their approbation by compliance, or their diſapprobation by petition: That it could be no ſedition to deny the prerogative of ſuſpending the laws; becauſe there really was no ſuch prerogative, nor ever could be, in a legal and limited government: That even if this prerogative was real, it had yet been frequently diſputed before the whole nation, both in Weſtminſter-hall, and in both houſes of Parliament; and no one had ever dreamed of puniſhing the denial of it as criminal: That the prelates, inſtead of making any appeal to the people, had applied in private to his Majeſty, and had even delivered their petition ſo ſecretly,

Chap. I. 1688.

that except by the confeſſion, extorted from them before the council, it was found impoſſible to prove them the authors: And that tho' the petition was afterwards printed and diſperſed, it was not ſo much as attempted to be proved, that they had the leaſt knowlege of that publication.

THESE arguments were convincing in themſelves, and were heard with a very favourable diſpoſition by the audience. Even ſome of the judges, tho' their ſeats were held during pleaſure, declared themſelves in favour of the priſoners. The jury however, from what cauſe is not certainly known, took ſeveral hours to deliberate, and kept, during ſo long a time, the people in the moſt anxious expectation. But when the wiſhed for verdict, *not guilty*, was at laſt pronounced, the intelligence was echoed thro' the hall, was conveyed to the crowds without, was carried into the city, and was propagated with infinite joy throughout the kingdom.

17th of June. and acquital of the biſhops.

EVER ſince Monmouth's rebellion, the King had, every ſummer, encamped his army on Hounſlow-heath, that he might both improve their diſcipline, and by ſo unuſual a ſpectacle over-awe the mutinous people. A popiſh chapel was openly erected in the midſt of the camp, and great pains taken, tho' in vain, to bring over the ſoldiers to that communion. The few converts, whom the prieſts had made, were treated with ſuch contempt and ignominy, as deterred every one from following the example. Even the Iriſh officers, whom the King introduced into the army, ſerved rather, from the averſion borne them, to weaken his intereſt among them. It happened that the very day, on which the biſhops' trial was finiſhed, the King had reviewed the troops, and had retired into lord Feverſham, the general's tent; when he was ſurpriſed to hear a great uproar in the camp, attended with the moſt extravagant ſymptoms of tumultuary joy. He ſuddenly enquired the cauſe, and was told by Feverſham, "It was nothing but the rejoicing of the ſoldiers for the acquittal of the biſhops." "Do you call that nothing?" replied he, "but ſo much the worſe for them."

THE King was ſtill determined to ruſh forwards in the ſame courſe, where he was already, by his precipitate career, ſo fatally advanced. Tho' he knew, that every order of men, except a handful of Catholics, were enraged at his paſt meaſures, and ſtill more terrified with the future proſpect; tho' he ſaw that the ſame diſcontents had reached the army, his ſole reſource during the general diſaffection: Yet was he incapable of changing his meaſures, or even of remitting his violence in the proſecution of them. He ſtruck out two of the judges, Powel and Holloway, who had appeared to favour the biſhops: He iſſued orders to proſecute all thoſe clergymen, who had not read his declaration; that is, the whole

church of England, two hundred excepted: He ſent a mandate to the new fellows, whom he had obtruded on Magdalen-college, to elect for preſident, in the room of Parker, lately deceaſed, one Gifford, a doctor of the Sorbonne, and titular biſhop of Madaura: And he is even ſaid to have nominated the ſame perſon to the ſee of Oxford. So great an infatuation is perhaps an object of compaſſion rather than of anger: And is really ſurpriſing in a man, who, in other reſpects, was not deficient in ſenſe and accompliſhments. Chap. I. 1688.

A FEW days before the acquittal of the biſhops, an event happened, which, in the King's ſentiments, much overbalanced all the mortifications, which he had received on that occaſion. The Queen was brought to bed of a ſon, who was baptized by the name of James. This bleſſing was impatiently longed for, not only by the King and Queen, but by all the zealous Catholics both abroad and at home. They ſaw, that the King was paſt middle age; and that on his death the ſucceſſion muſt devolve on the Prince and Princeſs of Orange, two zealous Proteſtants, who would ſoon replace every thing on the antient foundations. Vows therefore were offered at every ſhrine for a male ſucceſſor: Pilgrimages were undertaken, particularly one to Loretto, by the dutcheſs of Modena; and ſucceſs was chiefly attributed to that pious journey. But in proportion as this event was agreeable to the Catholics, it encreaſed the diſguſt of the Proteſtants, by depriving them of that agreeable, tho' ſomewhat diſtant proſpect, in which at preſent they flattered themſelves. Calumny even went ſo far as to aſcribe to the King the deſign of impoſing on the world a ſuppoſititious child, who might be educated in his principles, and after his death ſupport the Catholic religion in his dominions. The nation almoſt univerſally believed him capable, from bigotry, of committing any crime; as they had ſeen, that, from like motives, he was guilty of every imprudence: And the affections of nature, they thought, would be eaſily ſacrificed to the ſuperior motives of propagating a catholic and orthodox faith. The preſent occaſion was not the firſt, when that calumny had been propagated. In the year 1682, the Queen, then Dutcheſs of York, had been pregnant; and rumours were ſpread, that an impoſture would, at that time, be put upon the nation: But happily, the infant proved a female, and thereby ſpared the party all the trouble of ſupporting their improbable fiction †. 10th of June. Birth of the Prince of Wales.

† This ſtory is taken notice of in a weekly paper, the Obſervator, publiſhed at that very time, 23d of Auguſt, 1682. Party zeal is capable of ſwallowing the moſt incredible ſtory; but it is ſurely ſingular, that the ſame calumny, when once baffled, ſhould yet be renewed with ſuch ſucceſs.

CHAP. II.

Conduct of the Prince of Orange.——He forms a league againſt France,——refuſes to concur with the King,——reſolves to oppoſe the King,——is applied to by the Engliſh——Coalition of parties.——Prince's preparations.——Offers of France to the King,——rejected.——Suppoſed league with France.——General diſcontents.——The King retracts his meaſures.——Prince's declaration.——The Prince lands in England.——General commotion.——Deſertion of the army,——and of Prince George,——and of the Princeſs Anne,——King's conſternation,——and flight.——General confuſion,——King ſeized at Feverſham.——Second evaſion.——King's character.——Convention ſummoned.——Settlement of Scotland.——Engliſh convention meets.——Views of the parties.——Free conference between the Houſes.——Commons prevail.——Settlement of the Crown.——Manners and ſciences.

Chap. II. 1688.

WHILE every motive, civil and religious, concurred to alienate from the King every rank and denomination of men, it might be expected, that his throne would, without delay, fall to pieces by its own weight: But ſuch is the influence of eſtabliſhed government; ſo averſe are men from beginning hazardous enterprizes; that had not the nation received ſuccour from abroad, affairs might long have remained in their preſent delicate ſituation, and the King might at laſt have prevailed in his raſh, and ill concerted projects.

Conduct of the Prince of Orange.

THE Prince of Orange, ever ſince his marriage with the Lady Mary, had maintained a very prudent conduct; agreeable to that ſound underſtanding, with which he was ſo eminently endowed. He made it a maxim to concern himſelf very little in Engliſh affairs, and never by any meaſure to diſguſt any of the factions, or give umbrage to the Prince who filled the throne. His natural inclination, as well as his intereſt, led him to employ himſelf with aſſiduous induſtry in the affairs of the continent, and to oppoſe the grandeur of the French Monarch, againſt whom he had long,

long, both from perſonal and political conſiderations, conceived the moſt violent animoſity. By this conduct, he gratified the prejudices of the whole Engliſh nation: But as he croſſed the inclinations of Charles, who ſought peace by compliance with France, he had much declined in the favour and affections of that monarch. Chap. II. 1688.

JAMES on his acceſſion found it ſo much his intereſt to live on good terms with the heir-apparent, that he ſhowed the Prince ſome demonſtrations of friendſhip; and the Prince on his part was not wanting in every inſtance of duty and regard towards the King. On Monmouth's invaſion, he immediately diſpatched over ſix regiments of Britiſh troops, which were in the Dutch ſervice; and he offered to take the command of the King's forces againſt the rebels. However much he might diſapprove the maxims of the King's adminiſtration, he ever kept a total ſilence on that ſubject, and gave no countenance to thoſe diſcontents, which were propagated with ſuch induſtry throughout the nation.

IT was from the application of James himſelf, that the Prince firſt openly took any part in Engliſh affairs. Notwithſtanding the lofty ideas, which the King had entertained of his own prerogative, he found, that the edicts, emitted from it, ſtill wanted much of the authority of laws, and that the continuance of them might in the iſſue become dangerous, both to himſelf and to the Catholics, whom he deſired to favour. An act of Parliament alone could enſure the indulgence or toleration, which he had laboured to eſtabliſh; and he hoped, that, if the Prince would declare in favour of that ſcheme, the members, who had hitherto reſiſted all his own applications, would at laſt be prevailed with to adopt it. The conſent therefore, of the Prince to the repeal of the penal ſtatutes and of the teſt was ſtrongly ſolicited by the King; and in order to engage him to agree to that meaſure, hopes were given †, that England would ſecond him in all thoſe enterprizes, which his active and extenſive genius had with ſuch ſucceſs formed on the continent.

THE Prince knew, that the Emperor and the King of Spain were enraged by the repeated injuries, which they had ſuffered from the ambition of Lewis, and ſtill more, by the frequent inſults, which his pride had made them undergo. He was apprized of the influence of theſe Monarchs over the catholic Princes of the empire: He had himſelf obtained a great authority with the Proteſtant Princes: And he formed a project of uniting Europe in one general league againſt the encroachments of France, which ſeemed ſo nearly to threaten the liberty and independance of all its neighbours. He forms a league againſt France.

† Burnet, vol. i. p. 711. D'Avaux, 15th of April, 1688.

No

Chap. II. 1683.

No characters are more incompatible than thoſe of a conqueror and a perſecutor; and Lewis ſoon found, that, beſides his weakening France by the baniſhment of ſo many uſeful ſubjects, the refugees had enflamed all the proteſtant nations againſt him, and had raiſed him enemies, who, in defence of their religion as well as liberty, were obſtinately reſolved to oppoſe his progreſs. The city of Amſterdam and other towns in Holland, which had before fallen into a dependance on France, being terrified with the accounts, which they every moment received, of the furious perſecutions againſt the Hugonots, had now dropped all private factions, and had entered into an entire confidence with the Prince of Orange †. The proteſtant Princes of the empire had formed a ſeparate league at Magdebourg for the defence of their religion. The Engliſh were anew enraged at the blind bigotry of their Sovereign, and were diſpoſed to embrace the moſt deſperate reſolutions againſt him. From a view of the ſtate of Europe during this period, it appears, that Lewis, beſides ſullying an illuſtrious reign, had wantonly by this perſecution raiſed invincible barriers to his arms, which otherwiſe it had been very difficult, if not impoſſible, to reſiſt.

THE Prince of Orange knew how to avail himſelf of all theſe advantages. By his intrigues and influence a league was formed at Auſbourg, where the whole empire united in its defence againſt the French Monarch. Spain and Holland became parties in the alliance. The acceſſion of Savoy was afterwards obtained. Sweden and Denmark ſeemed to favour the ſame cauſe. But tho' theſe numerous ſtates compoſed the greater part of Europe, the league was ſtill deemed imperfect and unequal to its end; ſo long as England maintained that neutrality, in which ſhe had hitherto perſevered.

JAMES, tho' more prone to bigotry, was more ſenſible to his own and to national honour than his brother; and had he not been confined by the former motive, he would have maintained with more ſpirit the intereſt and independance of his kingdoms. When a proſpect, therefore, appeared of promoting his religious ſchemes by oppoſing the progreſs of France, he was not averſe to that meaſure; and he gave his ſon-in-law room to hope, that, by concurring with his views in England, he might prevail with him to ſecond thoſe projects, which the Prince was ſo ambitious of promoting.

Refuſes to concur with the King.

A MORE tempting offer could not be made to a perſon of his enterprizing character: But the objections to that meaſure, upon deliberation, appeared to him inſuperable. The King, he obſerved, had incurred the moſt violent hatred of his

† D'Avaux, 24th of July, 1681; 10th of June, 15th of October, 11th of November, 1688, vol. iv. p. 30.

OWA

own ſubjects: Great apprehenſions were entertained of his deſigns: The only reſource, which the nation ſaw, was in the future ſucceſſion of the Prince and Princeſs: Should he concur in thoſe dreaded meaſures, he would draw on himſelf all the odium, under which the King laboured: The nation might even refuſe to bear the expence of alliances, which would in that caſe become ſo ſuſpicious: And he might himſelf incur danger of loſing a ſucceſſion, which was awaiting him, and which the egregious indiſcretion of the King ſeemed even to give him hopes of reaping before it ſhould devolve to him by the courſe of nature. The Prince, therefore, would go no farther than to promiſe his conſent to the repeal of the penal ſtatutes, by which the Nonconformiſts as well as Catholics were expoſed to puniſhment. The teſt he eſteemed a ſecurity abſolutely requiſite for the eſtabliſhed religion.

The King did not remain ſatisfied with a ſingle trial. There was one Stuart, a Scots lawyer, who had been baniſhed for treaſonable practices; but who had afterwards obtained a pardon, and had been recalled. By the King's directions, Stuart wrote ſeveral letters to penſionary Fagel, with whom he had contracted an acquaintance in Holland; and beſides urging all the motives for an unlimited toleration, he deſired, that his reaſons ſhould, in the King's name, be communicated to the Prince and Princeſs of Orange. Fagel during a long time made no reply; but finding, that his ſilence was conſtrued into an aſſent, he at laſt expreſſed his own ſentiment and that of their Highneſſes. He ſaid, that it was their fixed opinion, that no man, merely becauſe he differed from the eſtabliſhed faith, ſhould ever, while he remained a peaceable ſubject, be expoſed to any puniſhment or even moleſtation: That the Prince and Princeſs of Orange gave heartily their conſent for repealing legally all the penal ſtatutes, as well thoſe enacted againſt the Catholics as againſt the Proteſtant Nonconformiſts; and would concur with the King in any meaſure for that purpoſe. That the teſt was not to be conſidered as a penalty inflicted on the profeſſors of any religion, but as a ſecurity provided for the eſtabliſhed worſhip. That it was no puniſhment on men to be excluded from public offices, and to live peaceably on their own revenues or induſtry. That even in the United Provinces, which were ſo often cited as models of toleration, tho' all ſects were admitted, yet civil offices were only enjoyed by the profeſſors of the eſtabliſhed religion. That military commands, indeed, were ſometimes beſtowed on Catholics; but as they were conferred with great precaution, and ſtill lay under the controul of the magiſtrate, they could give no juſt reaſon for umbrage. And that their Highneſſes, however deſirous of gratifying the King, and of endeavouring, by every means, to render his reign peaceable and happy, could not agree to any meaſure, which would expoſe their religion to ſuch imminent danger.

Chap. II. 1688.

WHEN this letter was publiſhed, as it ſoon was, it inſpired great courage into the Proteſtants of all denominations, and ſerved to keep them united in their oppoſition to the encroachments of the Catholics. On the other hand, the King, who was not contented with a ſimple toleration for his own religion, but was reſolved, that it ſhould enjoy great credit, if not an abſolute ſuperiority, was extremely diſguſted, and took every occaſion to expreſs his diſpleaſure, as well againſt the Prince of Orange as the United Provinces. He gave the Algerine pyrates, who preyed on the Dutch, a reception in his harbours, and liberty to diſpoſe of their prizes. He revived ſome complaints of the Eaſt-India company with regard to the affair of Bantam †. He required the ſix Britiſh regiments in the Dutch ſervice to be ſent over. He began to put his navy in a formidable condition. And from all his movements, the Hollanders entertained apprehenſions, that he ſought only an occaſion and pretence for making war upon them.

Reſolves to oppoſe the King.

THE Prince in his turn reſolved to puſh affairs with more vigour, and to preſerve all the Engliſh Proteſtants in his intereſts, as well as maintain them firm in their preſent union againſt the Catholics. He knew that the men of education in England were, many of them, retained in their religion more by honour than by principle ‡; and that, tho' every one was aſhamed to be the firſt proſelyte, yet, if the example was once ſet by ſome eminent perſons, intereſt would every day make conſiderable converſions to a communion, which was ſo zealouſly encouraged by the Sovereign. Dykvelt therefore was ſent over as envoy to England; and the Prince gave him inſtructions, beſides publicly remonſtrating with the King on his conduct both at home and abroad, to apply in his name, after a proper manner, to every ſect and denomination. To the church party he ſent aſſurances of favour and regard, and proteſted, that his education in Holland had nowiſe prejudiced him againſt epiſcopal government. The Nonconformiſts he exhorted not to be deceived by the fallacious careſſes of a popiſh Court, but to wait patiently, till, in the maturity of time, laws enacted by Proteſtants, ſhould give them that toleration, which, with ſo much reaſon, they had long claimed and demanded. Dykvelt executed his commiſſion with ſuch dexterity, that all orders of men caſt their eyes towards Holland, and expected thence a deliverance from thoſe dangers, with which their religion and liberty were ſo nearly threatened.

Is applied to by the Engliſh.

MANY of the moſt conſiderable perſons, both in church and ſtate, made ſecret applications to Dykvelt, and thro' him to the Prince of Orange. Admiral Herbert too, tho' a man of great expence, and ſeemingly of little religion, had thrown up his employments, and retired to the Hague, where he aſſured the

† D'Avaux, 21ſt of January, 1687. ‡ Burnet.

Prince

Prince of the diſaffection of the ſeamen, by whom that admiral was extremely beloved. Admiral Ruſſel, couſin-german to the unfortunate lord of that name, paſſed frequently between England and Holland, and kept the communication open with all the great men of the proteſtant party. Henry Sidney brother to Algernon, and uncle to the earl of Sunderland, came over under pretence of drinking the waters at Spaw, and conveyed ſtill ſtronger aſſurances of an univerſal combination againſt the meaſures of the King. Lord Dunblaine, ſon to the earl of Danby, being maſter of a frigate, made ſeveral voyages to Holland, and carried from many of the nobility tenders of duty, and even conſiderable ſums of money †, to the Prince of Orange. Chap. II. 1688.

THERE remained, however, ſome reaſons, which retained all parties in awe, and kept them from breaking out into immediate violence. The Prince, on the one hand, was afraid of hazarding, by his invaſion, an inheritance, which the laws enſured to the Princeſs; and the Engliſh Proteſtants, on the other hand, from the proſpect of her ſucceſſion, ſtill entertained hopes of obtaining at laſt a peaceable and a ſafe redreſs of all their grievances. But when the Prince of Wales was born, both the Prince and the Engliſh nation were reduced to deſpair, and ſaw no reſource but in a confederacy for their mutual intereſts. And thus the event which the King had ſo long made the object of his moſt ardent prayers, and from which he expected the firm eſtabliſhment of his throne, proved the immediate cauſe of his ruin and downfal.

ZUYLESTEIN, who had been ſent over to congratulate the King on the birth of his ſon, brought the Prince formal invitations from moſt of the great men in England, to aſſiſt them, by his arms, in the recovery of their laws and liberty. The biſhop of London, the earls of Danby, Nottingham, Devonſhire, Dorſet, the duke of Norfolk, the marqueſs of Hallifax, the lords Lovelace, Delamere, Paulet, Eland, Mr. Hambden, Powle, Leſter, beſides many eminent citizens of London; all theſe perſons, tho' of the moſt oppoſite parties, concurred in their applications to the Prince. The Whigs, ſuitable to their antient principles of liberty, which had led them to attempt the excluſion bill, eaſily agreed to oppoſe a King, whoſe conduct had verified whatever his worſt enemies had prognoſticated of his ſucceſſion. The Tories and the church-party, finding their paſt ſervices forgotten, their rights invaded, their religion threatened, agreed to drop for the preſent all over-ſtrained doctrines of ſubmiſſion, and attend to the great and powerful dictates of nature. The Nonconformiſts, dreading the careſſes of known and inveterate enemies, deemed the offers of toleration more ſecure from a Prince, educated in thoſe principles, and accuſtomed to that practice. And thus all faction was for a Coalition of parties.

† D'Avaux, 14th and 24th of September, 8th and 15th of October, 1688.

Chap. II. 1688.

time laid asleep in England; and rival parties, forgetting their animosity, had secretly concurred in a design of opposing their unhappy and misguided Sovereign. The earl of Shrewsbury, who had acquired great popularity by deserting, at this time, the Catholic religion, in which he had been educated, left his regiment, mortgaged his estate for forty thousand pounds, and made a tender of his sword and purse to the Prince of Orange. Lord Wharton, notwithstanding his age and infirmities, had taken a journey for the same purpose. Lord Mordaunt was at the Hague, and pushed on the enterprize with that ardent and courageous spirit, for which he was so eminent. Even Sunderland, the King's favourite minister, is believed to have entered into a correspondence with the Prince; and at the expence of his own honour and his master's interest, to have secretly embraced a cause, which, he foresaw, was likely soon to predominate †.

The Prince was easily determined to yield to the applications of the English, and to embrace the defence of a nation, which, during its present fears and distresses, regarded him as its sole protector. The great object of his ambition was to be placed at the head of a confederate army, and by his valour to avenge the injuries, which himself, his country, and his allies had sustained from the haughty Lewis. But while England remained under the present government, he despaired of ever forming a league, which would be able, with any probability of success, to make opposition against that powerful Monarch. The tyes of affinity could not be supposed to have great influence over a person of the Prince's rank and temper; much more, as he knew, that they were at first unwillingly contracted by the King, and had never since been cultivated by any essential favours or good offices. Or should any reproach remain upon him for violating the duties of private life; the glory of delivering oppressed nations would, he hoped, be able, in the eyes of all reasonable men, to make ample compensation. He could not well expect, on the commencement of his enterprize, that it would lead him to mount the throne of England: But he undoubtedly foresaw, that its success would establish his authority in that kingdom. And so egregious was James's temerity, that there was no advantage, so great or obvious, which that Prince's indiscretion might not afford his enemies.

The Prince of Orange, throughout his whole life, was peculiarly happy in the situations, in which he was placed. He saved his own country from ruin, he restored the liberties of these kingdoms, he supported the general independency

† D'Avaux was always of that opinion. See his Negotiations 6th and 20th of May, 18th, 27th of September, 22d of November, 1688. But it is pretended, that that lord always suggested moderate councils to the King; a sure proof, if true, of his fidelity. See his defence.

of

of Europe. And thus, tho' his virtue, it is confeſſed, be not the pureſt, which we meet with in hiſtory, it will be difficult to find any perſon, whoſe actions and conduct have contributed more eminently to the general intereſts of ſociety and of mankind. Chap. II. 1688.

The time, when the Prince entered on his enterprize, was very well choſen; as the people were then in the higheſt ferment, on account of the inſult, which the impriſonment and trial of the biſhops had put upon the church, and indeed upon all the Proteſtants of the nation. His method of conducting the preparations was no leſs wiſe and politic. Under other pretences, he had beforehand made conſiderable augmentations to the Dutch fleet; and the ſhips were at that time lying in harbour. Some additional troops were alſo levied; and ſums of money, raiſed for other purpoſes, were diverted by the Prince to the uſe of this expedition. The ſtates had given him their entire confidence; and partly from terror of the exorbitant power of France, partly from diſguſt at ſome reſtraints laid on their commerce in that kingdom, were ſenſible how neceſſary ſucceſs in this enterprize was become to their domeſtic happineſs and ſecurity. Many of the neighbouring Princes regarded him as their guardian and protector, and were guided by him in all their councils. He held conferences with Caſtanaga, governor of the Spaniſh Netherlands, with the Electors of Brandenburgh and Saxony, with the Landgrave of Heſſe-Caſſel, with the whole houſe of Lunenbourg. It was agreed, that theſe Princes ſhould replace the troops employed againſt England, and ſhould protect the United Provinces during the abſence of the Prince of Orange. Their forces were already on their march for that purpoſe: A conſiderable encampment of the Dutch army was formed near Nimeguen: Every place was in motion; and tho' the roots of this conſpiracy reached from one end of Europe to the other, ſo ſecret were the Prince's councils, ſo fortunate was the diſpoſition of affairs, that he ſtill could cover his preparations under other pretences; and little ſuſpicion was entertained of his real intentions. Prince's preparations.

The King of France, menaced by the league of Auſbourg, had reſolved to ſtrike the firſt blow againſt the allies; and having ſought a quarrel with the Emperor and the Elector Palatine, he had invaded Germany with a great army, and had laid ſiege to Philipſbourg. The Elector of Cologne, who was alſo Biſhop of Liege and Munſter, and whoſe territories almoſt entirely ſurrounded the United Provinces, had died about this time; and the candidates for that rich ſucceſſion were Prince Clement of Bavaria, ſupported by the houſe of Auſtria, and the cardinal of Furſtembourg, a prelate entirely dependant on France. The Pope, who favoured the allies, was able to throw the balance between the parties, and Prince Clement was choſen; a circumſtance which contributed extremely to the ſecurity of

Chap. II. 1688.

of the States. But as the cardinal kept poſſeſſion of many of the fortreſſes, and had applied to France for ſuccours, the neighbouring territories were all in motion; and by this means the preparations of the Dutch and their allies ſeemed intended merely for their own defence againſt the enterprizes of Lewis.

ALL the artifices, however, of the Prince could not entirely conceal his real intentions from the ſagacity of the French court. D'Avaux, Lewis's envoy at the Hague, had been able, by a compariſon of circumſtances, to trace the purpoſes of the preparations in Holland; and he inſtantly informed his maſter of the diſcovery. Lewis conveyed the intelligence to James; and accompanied the information with a very important offer. He was willing to join a ſquadron of French ſhips to the Engliſh fleet; and to ſend over any number of troops, which James ſhould judge requiſite for his ſecurity. When this propoſal was rejected, he again offered to raiſe the ſiege of Philipſbourg, to march his army into the Netherlands, and by the terror of his arms to detain the Dutch forces in their own country. This propoſal met with no better reception.

Offers of France to the King.

Rejected.

JAMES was not, as yet, entirely convinced, that his ſon-in-law intended an invaſion upon England. Fully perſuaded, himſelf, of the ſacredneſs of his own authority, he fancied, that a like belief had made deep impreſſion on his ſubjects; and notwithſtanding the ſtrong ſymptoms of diſcontent which broke out, ſuch an univerſal combination in rebellion appeared to him nowiſe credible. His army, in which he truſted, and which he had conſiderably augmented, would be eaſily able, he thought, to repel foreign force, and to ſuppreſs any ſedition among the populace. A ſmall number of French troops, joined to theſe, might tend only to breed diſcontent; and afford them a pretence for mutinying againſt foreigners, ſo much feared and hated by the nation. A great body of auxiliaries might indeed ſecure him, both againſt an invaſion from Holland, and againſt the rebellion of his own ſubjects; but would be able afterwards to reduce him to total dependence, and render his authority entirely precarious. Even the French invaſion of the Low Countries might be attended with very dangerous conſequences; and would ſuffice, in theſe jealous times, to revive the old ſuſpicion of a combination againſt Holland, and againſt the proteſtant religion; a ſuſpicion, which had already produced ſuch diſcontents in England. Theſe were the views ſuggeſted by Sunderland; and it muſt be confeſſed, that the reaſons, on which they were founded, were ſufficiently plauſible; as indeed the ſituation, to which the King had reduced himſelf, was, to the laſt degree, delicate and perplexing.

STILL Lewis was unwilling to abandon a friend and ally, whoſe intereſt he regarded as cloſely connected with his own. By the ſuggeſtion of Skelton, the King's

miniſter

miniſter at Paris, orders were ſent to D'Avaux to remonſtrate with the States in Lewis's name againſt thoſe preparations, which they were making to invade England. The ſtrict amity, ſaid the French miniſter, which ſubſiſts between the two monarchs will make Lewis regard every attempt againſt his ally as an act of hoſtility againſt himſelf. This remonſtrance had a very bad effect, and put the States in a flame. What is this alliance, they aſked, between France and England, which has been ſo carefully concealed from us? Is it of the ſame nature with the former; meant for our deſtruction and for the extirpation of the proteſtant religion? If ſo, it is high time for us to provide for our own defence, and to anticipate thoſe projects, which are forming againſt us.

EVEN James was diſpleaſed with this officious ſtep taken by Lewis for his ſervice. He was not reduced, he ſaid, to the condition of the cardinal of Furſtemberg, and obliged to ſeek the protection of France. He recalled Skelton, and threw him into the Tower for his raſh conduct. He ſolemnly diſavowed D'Avaux's memorial; and proteſted, that no alliance ſubſiſted between him and Lewis, but what was public and known to all the world †. The States, however, ſtill affected to appear incredulous on that article; and the Engliſh extremely prepoſſeſſed againſt their Sovereign, firmly believed, that a project was concerted with Lewis for their entire ſubjection. Portſmouth, it was ſaid, was to be put into the hands of that ambitious monarch: England was to be filled with French and Iriſh troops: And every man, who was not willing to embrace the Romiſh ſuperſtition, was by theſe bigotted Princes devoted to ſudden deſtruction.

THESE ſuggeſtions were every where ſpread abroad, and tended extremely to augment the diſcontents, of which both the fleet and army, as well as the people, betrayed every day the moſt evident ſymptoms. The fleet had begun to mutiny; becauſe Stricland, the admiral, a Roman Catholic, introduced the maſs aboard his ſhip, and diſmiſſed the proteſtant chaplain. It was with ſome difficulty they could be appeaſed; and they ſtill perſiſted in declaring, that they would not fight againſt the Dutch, whom they called friends and brethren; but would willingly engage the French, whom they regarded as national enemies. The King had intended to augment his army with Iriſh recruits, and he reſolved to try the experiment on the regiment of the Duke of Berwic, his natural ſon; but Beaumont, the lieutenant-colonel, refuſed to admit them; and to this oppoſition five captains ſteadily ad-

† That there really was no new alliance formed between France and England appears both from Sunderland's apology, and from D'Avaux's negotiations, lately publiſhed: See Vol. IV. p. 18. Eng. Tranſlation. 27th of September, 1687. 16th of March, 6th of May, 10th of Auguſt, 2d, 23d, and 24th of September, 5th and 7th of October, 11th of November, 1688.

hered.

Chap. II. 1688.

hered. They were all caſhiered; and had not the diſcontents of the army on this occaſion become very apparent, it was reſolved to have tried and puniſhed thoſe officers for mutiny.

THE King made a trial of the diſpoſitions of his army, in a manner ſtill more undiſguiſed. Finding oppoſition from all the civil and eccleſiaſtical powers of the kingdom, he reſolved to appeal to the military, who, if unanimous, were able alone to ſerve all his purpoſes, and enforce univerſal obedience. His intention was to engage all the regiments one after another, to give their conſent to the repeal of the teſt and penal ſtatutes; and accordingly the major of Lichfield's drew out the battalion before the King, and told them, that they were required either to enter into his Majeſty's views, in theſe particulars, or to lay down their arms. The King was ſurprized to find, that, two captains and a few popiſh ſoldiers excepted, the whole battalion immediately embraced the latter part of the alternative. For ſome time, he remained ſpeechleſs; but having recovered from his aſtoniſhment, he commanded them to take up their arms; adding with a ſullen, diſcontented air, "That for the future, he would not do them the honour to aſk their advice."

23d of September.

WHILE the King was diſmayed with theſe ſymptoms of general diſaffection, he received a letter from the marqueſs of Albeville, his miniſter at the Hague; which informed him with certainty that he was ſoon to look for a powerful invaſion from Holland, and that Penſionary Fagel had at laſt acknowleged, that the ſcope of all the Dutch preparations was to tranſport forces into England. Tho' James could reaſonably expect no other intelligence, he was aſtoniſhed at the news: He grew pale, and the letter dropped from his hand: His eyes were now opened, and he found himſelf on the brink of a frightful precipice, which his deluſions had hitherto concealed from him. His miniſters and counſellors, equally aſtoniſhed with himſelf, ſaw no reſource but in a ſudden and precipitant retraction of all thoſe fatal meaſures, by which he had created himſelf ſo many enemies, foreign and domeſtic. He paid court to the Dutch, and offered to enter into any alliance with them for common ſecurity: He replaced in all the counties the deputy-lieutenants and juſtices who had been deprived of their commiſſions for their adherence to the teſt and the penal laws: He reſtored the charters of London and of all the corporations: He annulled the court of eccleſiaſtical commiſſion: He took off the biſhop of London's ſuſpenſion: He re-inſtated the expelled preſident and fellows of Magdalen college: And he was even reduced to careſs thoſe biſhops, whom he had ſo lately proſecuted and inſulted. All theſe meaſures were regarded as ſymptoms of fear, not of repentance. The biſhops, inſtead of promiſing ſuccour, or ſuggeſting comfort, re-capitulated to him all the inſtances of his mal-adminiſtration, and adviſed him thenceforwards to follow more ſalutary council. And as intelligence arrived of

The King retracts his meaſures.

a great disaster which had befallen the Dutch fleet, it is commonly believed, that the King recalled, for some time, the concessions, which he had ordered to be made to Magdalen college: A very bad sign of his sincerity in his other concessions. Nay, so prevalent were his unfortunate prepossessions, that, amidst all his present distresses, he could not forbear at the baptism of the young Prince, from appointing the Pope to be one of the godfathers. Chap. II. 1688.

THE report, that a suppositious child was to be imposed on the nation, had been widely spread, and greedily received, before the Prince of Wales's birth: But the King, who, without seeming to take notice of the matter, might easily have quashed that ridiculous rumour, had, from an ill-timed haughtiness, totally neglected it. He disdained, he said, to satisfy those, who could deem him capable of so base and villainous an action. Finding that the calumny still gained ground, and had made deep impression on his subjects, he was now obliged to submit to the mortifying office of ascertaining the reality of that birth. Tho' no particular attention had been beforehand given to ensure proof, the evidence, both of the Queen's pregnancy, and delivery, was rendered indisputable; and so much the more, as no argument or proof of any importance, nothing but popular rumour and surmize, could be thrown into the opposite scale.

MEANWHILE, the Prince of Orange's declaration was dispersed over the kingdom, and met with universal approbation. All the grievances of the nation were there enumerated: The dispensing and suspending power; the court of ecclesiastical commission; the filling all offices with Catholics, and the raising a jesuit to be a privy-counsellor; the open encouragement given to popery, by building every where churches, colleges, seminaries for that sect; the displacing of judges, if they refused to give sentence according to orders, received from Court; the annulling the charters of all the corporations, and the subjecting the election of members to arbitrary will and pleasure; the treating petitions, even the most modest, and from persons of the highest rank, as criminal and seditious; the committing the whole authority of Ireland, civil and military, into the hands of papists; the assuming an absolute power over the religion and laws of Scotland, and openly exacting in that kingdom an obedience without reserve; and the violent presumptions against the legitimacy of the Prince of Wales. In order to redress all these grievances, the Prince said, that he intended to come over into England with an armed force, which might protect him from the King's evil counsellors: And that his sole aim was to have a legal and free Parliament summoned, who might provide for the safety and liberty of the nation, as well as examine the proofs of the Prince of Wales's legitimacy. No-one, he added, could entertain such hard thoughts of him as to imagine, Prince's declaration.

Chap. II. 1688.

gine, that he had formed other deſigns than to procure the full and laſting ſettlement of the religion, liberty, and property of the ſubject. The force, which he intended to bring with him, was totally diſproportioned to any views of conqueſt; and it were abſurd to ſuſpect, that ſo many perſons of high rank, both in church and ſtate, would have given him ſo many ſolemn invitations for ſuch a pernicious purpoſe. Tho' the Engliſh miniſters, terrified with his enterprize, had pretended to redreſs ſome of the grievances complained of; there ſtill remained the foundation of all grievances, that upon which they could in an inſtant be again erected, an arbitrary and deſpotic power in the Crown. And for this uſurpation there was no poſſible remedy, but by a full declaration of all the rights of the ſubject in a free Parliament.

So well concerted were the Prince's meaſures, that, in three days, above four hundred tranſports were hired; the army quickly fell down the rivers and canals from Nimeguen; the artillery, arms, ſtores, horſes were embarked; and the Prince ſet ſail from Helvoet-Sluice, with a fleet of near five hundred veſſels, and an army of above fourteen thouſand men. He firſt encountered a ſtorm, which drove him back: But his loſs being ſoon repaired, the fleet put to ſea under the command of admiral Herbert, and made ſail with a fair wind towards the weſt of England. The ſame wind detained the King's fleet in the river, and enabled the Dutch to paſs the Straits of Dover without moleſtation. Both ſhores were covered with multitudes of people, who, beſides admiring the grandeur of the ſpectacle, were held in anxious ſuſpence by the proſpect of an enterprize, the moſt important, which, during ſome ages, had been undertaken in Europe. The Prince had a proſperous voyage, and landed his army ſafely in Torbay on the fifth of November, the anniverſary of the gun-powder treaſon.

21ſt of October.

The Dutch army marched firſt to Exeter; and the Prince's declaration was there publiſhed. That whole county was ſo terrified with the executions, which had enſued upon Monmouth's rebellion, that nobody for ſeveral days joined the Prince. The biſhop of Exeter in a fright fled to London, and carried to Court intelligence of the invaſion. As a reward of his zeal, he received the archbiſhopric of York, which had long been kept vacant, with an intention, as was univerſally believed, of beſtowing it on ſome Catholic. The firſt perſon who joined the Prince, was major Burrington; and he was quickly followed by the gentry of the counties of Devon and Somerſet. Sir Edward Seymour made propoſals for an aſſociation, which every one ſigned. By degrees, the earl of Abington, Mr. Ruſſel, ſon to the earl of Bedford, Mr. Wharton, Godfrey, Howe came to Exeter. All England was in commotion. Lord Delamere took arms in Cheſhire, the earl of Danby ſeized York, the earl of Bath governor of Plymouth, declared

General commotion.

clared for the Prince, the earl of Devonſhire made a like declaration in Derby. The nobility and gentry of Nottingham embraced the ſame cauſe; and every day there appeared ſome effect of that univerſal combination, into which the nation had entered againſt the meaſures of the King. Even thoſe who took not the field againſt him, were able to embarraſs and confound his councils. A petition for a free parliament was ſigned by twenty-four biſhops and peers of the greateſt diſtinction, and was preſented to the King. No one thought of oppoſition or reſiſtance againſt the invader. Chap. II. 1688.

Desertion of the army.

But the moſt dangerous ſymptom was the diſaffection, which, from the general ſpirit of the nation, not from any particular reaſon, had crept into the army. The officers ſeemed all diſpoſed to prefer the intereſts of their country and of their religion before thoſe principles of honour and fidelity, which are commonly eſteemed the moſt ſacred tyes by men of that profeſſion. Lord Colcheſter, ſon to the earl of Rivers, was the firſt officer, who deſerted to the Prince; and he was attended by a few of his troops. Lord Lovelace made a like effort; but was intercepted by the militia under the duke of Beaufort, and taken priſoner: Lord Cornbury, ſon to the earl of Clarendon, was more ſucceſsful. He attempted to carry over three regiments of cavalry; and he actually brought a conſiderable part of them to the Prince's quarters. Several officers of diſtinction informed Feverſham, the general, that they could not in conſcience fight againſt the Prince of Orange.

Lord Churchhill had been raiſed from the rank of a page, had been inveſted with a high command in the army, had been created a peer, and had owed his whole fortune to the King's bounty: Yet even this perſon could reſolve, during the preſent extremity, to deſert his unhappy maſter, who had ever repoſed entire confidence in him. He carried with him the duke of Grafton, natural ſon to the late King, colonel Berkeley, and ſome troops of dragoons. This conduct was a ſignal ſacrifice to public virtue of every duty in private life; and required for ever after, the moſt upright, the moſt diſintereſted, and the moſt public-ſpirited behaviour to render it juſtifiable.

The King had arrived at Saliſbury, the head quarters of his army, when he received this fatal news. That Prince, tho' a ſevere enemy, had ever appeared a warm, ſteady, and ſincere friend; and he was extremely ſhocked with this, as well as with many other inſtances of ingratitude, to which he was now expoſed. There remained none, in whom he could confide. As the whole army had diſcovered ſymptoms of diſcontent, he concluded it full of treachery; and being deſerted by thoſe whom he had moſt favoured and obliged, he no longer expected that others would hazard their lives in his ſervice. During this diſtraction and perplexity, 25th of November.

Chap. II. 1688.

plexity, he embraced a ſudden reſolution of drawing off his army, and retiring towards London: A meaſure, which could ſerve only to betray his fears, and provoke farther treachery.

and of Prince George,

and of the Princeſs Anne.

But Churchhill had prepared a ſtill more mortal blow for his diſtreſt benefactor. His lady and he had an entire aſcendant over the family of Prince George of Denmark; and the time now appeared ſeaſonable for overwhelming the unhappy King, who was already ſtaggering with the violent ſhocks, which he had received. Andover was the firſt ſtage of his Majeſty's retreat towards London; and there, Prince George, together with the young duke of Ormond, Sir George Huet, and ſome other perſons of diſtinction, deſerted him in the night-time, and retired to the Prince's camp. No ſooner had this news reached London, than the Princeſs Anne, pretending fear of the King's diſpleaſure, withdrew herſelf in the company of the biſhop of London and lady Churchhill. She fled to Nottingham; where the earl of Dorſet received her with great reſpect, and the gentry of the county quickly formed a troop for her protection.

King's conſternation,

The late King, in order to gratify the nation, had entruſted the education of his nieces entirely to Proteſtants; and as theſe Princeſſes were deemed the chief reſource of the eſtabliſhed religion after their father's defection, great care had been taken to inſtill into them, from their earlieſt infancy, the ſtrongeſt prejudices againſt popery. During the violence too of ſuch popular currents, as now prevailed in England, all private conſiderations are commonly loſt in the general paſſion; and the more principle any perſon poſſeſſes, the more apt is he, on ſuch occaſions, to neglect and abandon his domeſtic duties. Tho' theſe cauſes may account for the Princeſs's behaviour, they had no way prepared the King to expect ſo aſtoniſhing an event. He burſt into tears, when the firſt intelligence of it was conveyed to him. Undoubtedly he foreſaw in this incident the total expiration of his royal authority: But the nearer and more intimate concern of a parent laid hold of his heart; when he found himſelf abandoned in his uttermoſt diſtreſs by a child, and a virtuous child, whom he had ever regarded with the moſt tender affection. "God help me," cried he, in the extremity of his agony, "my own children "have forſaken me!" It is indeed ſingular, that a Prince, whoſe chief blame conſiſted in imprudences and miſguided principles, ſhould be expoſed, from religious antipathy, to ſuch treatment, as even Nero, Domitian, or the moſt enormous tyrants, that have diſgraced the records of hiſtory, never met with from their friends and family.

So violent were the prejudices, which at this time prevailed, that this unhappy father, who had been deſerted by his favourite child, was believed, upon her diſ-

appearance, to have put her to death: And it was fortunate, that the truth was timely discovered; otherwise the populace, even the King's guards themselves, might have been engaged, in revenge, to commence a massacre of the priests and Catholics.

The King's fortune now exposed him to the contempt of his enemies; and his behaviour was not such as could procure him the esteem of his friends and adherents. Unable to resist the torrent, he preserved not presence of mind in yielding to it; but seemed in this emergence as much depressed with adversity, as he had before been vainly elated by prosperity. He called a council of all the peers and prelates who were in London; and followed their advice in issuing writs for a new Parliament, and in sending Halifax, Nottingham, and Godolphin, as commissioners to treat with the Prince of Orange. But these were the last acts of royal authority which he exerted. He even hearkened to imprudent council, by which he was prompted to desert the throne, and to gratify his enemies beyond what their fondest hopes could have promised them.

The Queen, observing the fury of the people, and knowing how much she was the object of general hatred, was struck with the deepest terror, and began to apprehend a parliamentary impeachment, from which, she was told, the Queens of England were not exempted. The popish courtiers, and above all, the priests, were aware, that they would be the first sacrifice, and that their perpetual banishment was the smallest penalty, which they must expect from national resentment. They were therefore desirous of carrying the King along with them; whose presence, they knew, would still be some resource and protection to them in foreign countries, and whose restoration, if it ever happened, would again re-instate them in power and authority. The general defection of the Protestants made the King regard the Catholics, as his only subjects, on whose council he could rely; and the fatal catastrophe of his father afforded them a plausible reason for making him apprehend a like fate. The infinite difference of circumstances was not, during men's present distraction, sufficiently weighed. Even after the people were inflamed by a long civil war, the execution of Charles the first could not be deemed a national deed: It was perpetrated by a fanatical army, pushed on by a daring and enthusiastic leader; and the whole kingdom had ever entertained, and did still entertain, a most violent abhorrence against that enormity. The situation of public affairs, therefore, no more resembled what they were forty years before, than the Prince of Orange, either in birth, character, fortune, or connexions, could be supposed a parallel to Cromwel.

Chap. II. 1688.

THE emiſſaries of France, and among the reſt, Barillon, the French ambaſſador, were buſy about the King; and they had entertained a very falſe notion, which they inſtilled into him, that nothing would more certainly retard the public ſettlement, and beget univerſal confuſion, than his deſertion of the kingdom. The Prince of Orange had with good reaſon embraced a contrary opinion; and he deemed it extremely difficult to find expedients for ſecuring the nation, ſo long as the King kept poſſeſſion of the crown. Actuated, therefore, by this public motive, and no leſs, we may well preſume, by private ambition, he was determined to uſe every expedient, which might intimidate the King, and make him deſert that throne, which he himſelf was alone enabled to fill. He declined a perſonal conference with the King's commiſſioners, and ſent the earls of Clarendon and Oxford to treat with them: The terms, which he propoſed, implied almoſt a preſent participation of the ſovereignty: And he ſtopped not a moment the march of his army towards London.

THE news, which the King received from all quarters, helped to continue the panic, into which he was fallen, and which his enemies expected to improve to their advantage. Colonel Copel, deputy-governor of Hull, made himſelf maſter of that important fortreſs; and threw into priſon lord Langdale, the governor, a Catholic; together with lord Montgomery, a nobleman of the ſame religion. The town of Newcaſtle received the lord Lumly, and declared for the Prince of Orange and a free Parliament. The duke of Norfolk, lord lieutenant of the county of that name, engaged it in the ſame meaſure. The Prince's declaration was read at Oxford by the duke of Ormond, and was received with great applauſe by that loyal Univerſity, who alſo made an offer of their plate to the Prince. Every day, ſome perſon of quality or diſtinction, and among the reſt, the duke of Somerſet, went over to the enemy. A very violent declaration was diſperſed in the Prince's name, but not with his participation; in which every one was commanded to ſeize and puniſh all papiſts, who, contrary to law, pretended either to carry arms, or exerciſe any act of authority. It may not be unworthy of notice, that a merry ballad, called Lilliballero, being at this time publiſhed in deriſion of the Papiſts and the Iriſh, it was greedily received by the people, and was univerſally ſung by all ranks of men, even by the King's army, who were ſtrongly ſeized with the national ſpirit. This incident both diſcovered, and ſerved to encreaſe, the general diſcontent of the kingdom.

THE contagion of mutiny and diſobedience had alſo reached Scotland, whence the regular forces, contrary to the advice of Balcarras, the treaſurer, were withdrawn, in order to re-inforce the Engliſh army. The marqueſs of Athole, together with the viſcount Tarbat, and others, finding the opportunity favourable,

began to form intrigues againſt Perth, the chancellor; and the Preſbyterians and other malecontents flocked from all quarters to Edinburgh. The chancellor, apprehenſive of the conſequences, found it expedient to withdraw; and the populace, as if that event were a ſignal for their inſurrection, immediately roſe in arms, and rifled the popiſh chapel in the King's palace. All the Catholics, even all the zealous Royaliſts, were obliged to conceal themſelves; and the privy council, inſtead of their former ſubmiſſive ſtrains of addreſs to the King, and violent edicts againſt their fellow-ſubjects, now made applications to the Prince of Orange, as the ſole reſtorer of law and liberty. Chap. II. 1688.

THE King every moment alarmed, more and more, with theſe proofs of a general diſaffection, not daring to repoſe truſt in any but thoſe who were expoſed to more danger than himſelf, agitated by indignation towards ingratitude, by diſdain of infidelity, impelled by his own fears and thoſe of others, precipitantly embraced the reſolution of withdrawing to France; and he ſent off beforehand the Queen and the infant Prince, under the conduct of count Lauzun, an old favourite of the French Monarch. He himſelf diſappeared in the night-time, attended only by Sir Edward Hales, a new convert; and made the beſt of his way to a ſhip, which waited for him near the mouth of the river. As if this meaſure had not been the moſt grateful to his enemies of any which he could adopt, he had carefully concealed his intention from all the world; and nothing could equal the ſurpriſe, which ſeized the city, the court, the kingdom, upon diſcovery of this ſtrange event. Men beheld, all on a ſudden, the reins of government thrown up by the hand which held them; and ſaw none, who had any right, or even pretenſion, to take poſſeſſion of them. and flight. 12th of December.

THE more effectually to involve every thing in confuſion, the King appointed not any one, who ſhould, in his abſence, exerciſe any part of the adminiſtration; he threw the great ſeal into the river; and he recalled all thoſe writs, which had been iſſued for the elections of the new Parliament. It is often ſuppoſed, that the ſole motive, which impelled him to this ſudden deſertion, was his reluctance to meet a free Parliament, and his reſolution not to ſubmit to thoſe terms, which his ſubjects would deem requiſite for the ſecurity of their liberties and their religion. But it muſt be conſidered, that his ſubjects had firſt deſerted him, and entirely loſt his confidence; that he might reaſonably be ſuppoſed to entertain fears for his liberty, if not for his life; and that the conditions would not probably be moderate, which the nation, ſenſible of his inflexible temper, enraged with the violation of their laws and the danger of their religion, and foreſeeing his reſentment on account of their paſt oppoſition, would, in his preſent circumſtances, exact from him.

By

Chap. II. 1688.

By this temporary diſſolution of government, the populace were now maſters; and there was no diſorder, which, during their preſent ferment, might not be dreaded from them. They roſe in a tumult and deſtroyed all the maſs-houſes. They even attacked and rifled the houſes of the Florentine envoy and Spaniſh ambaſſador, where many of the Catholics had lodged their moſt valuable effects. Jefferies, the chancellor, who had diſguiſed himſelf, in order to fly the kingdom, was diſcovered by them, and ſo abuſed, that he died in a little time afterwards. Even the army, which ſhould have ſuppreſſed thoſe tumults, would, it was apprehended, ſerve rather to encreaſe the general diſorder. Feverſham had no ſooner heard of the King's retreat, than he diſbanded the troops in the neighbourhood, and without either diſarming or paying them, let them looſe to prey upon the country.

In this extremity, the biſhops and peers, who were in town, being the only remaining authority of the ſtate (for the privy council, compoſed of the King's creatures, was totally diſregarded) thought proper to aſſemble, and to interpoſe for the preſervation of the community. They choſe the marqueſs of Halifax their ſpeaker: They gave directions to the mayor and aldermen for keeping the peace of the city: They iſſued orders, which were readily obeyed, to the fleet, the army, and all the garriſons: And they made applications to the Prince, whoſe enterprize they highly applauded, and whoſe ſucceſs they joyfully congratulated.

The Prince on his part was not wanting to the tide of ſucceſs, which flowed in upon him, nor backward in aſſuming that authority, which the preſent exigency had put into his hands. Beſides the general popularity, attending his cauſe, a new incident made his approach to London ſtill more welcome. In the preſent trepidation of the people, a rumour aroſe, either from chance or deſign, that the diſbanded Iriſh had taken arms, and had commenced an univerſal maſſacre of all the Proteſtants in England. This ridiculous belief was ſpread all over the kingdom on one day; and begot every where the deepeſt conſternation. The alarum bells were rung; the beacons fired; men fancied that they ſaw at a diſtance the ſmoke of the burning cities, and heard the groans of thoſe who were ſlaughtered in their neighbourhood. It was ſurpriſing, that the Catholics did not all periſh, in the rage which naturally ſucceeds ſuch popular panics.

King ſeized at Feverſham.

While every one, either from principle, intereſt, or animoſity, turned their back on the unhappy King, who had abandoned his own cauſe, the unwelcome news arrived, that he had been ſeized by the populace at Feverſham, while he was making his eſcape in diſguiſe; that he had been very much abuſed, till he was known; but that the gentry had then interpoſed and protected him, tho' they ſtill refuſed

refuſed to conſent to his eſcape. This intelligence threw all parties into confuſion. The Prince ſent Zuyleſtein with orders, that the King ſhould approach no nearer than Rocheſter; but the meſſage came too late. He was already arrived in London, where the populace, moved by compaſſion for his unhappy fate, and actuated by their own levity, had received him with ſhouts and acclamations. Chap. II. 1688.

During the King's abode at Whitehall, little attention was paid him by the nobility or any perſons of diſtinction. They had, all of them, been previouſly diſguſted on account of his blind partiality to the Catholics; and they knew, that they were now become more criminal in his eyes by their late public applications to the Prince of Orange. He himſelf ſhewed not any ſymptoms of ſpirit, nor diſcovered any intention of reſuming the reins of government, which he had once thrown aſide. His authority was now plainly expired; and as he had exerciſed his power, while poſſeſſed of it, with very precipitant and haughty councils, he relinquiſhed it by a deſpair, equally precipitant and puſillanimous.

Nothing remained for the now ruling powers but to deliberate how they ſhould diſpoſe of his perſon. Beſides, that the Prince may juſtly be ſuppoſed to have poſſeſſed more generoſity than to think of offering violence to any unhappy Monarch, ſo nearly related to him, he knew, that nothing would ſo effectually promote his own views as the King's retreat into France, a country at all times ſo obnoxious to the Engliſh. It was determined, therefore, to puſh him into that meaſure, which, of himſelf, he ſeemed ſufficiently inclined to embrace. The King having ſent lord Feverſham on a civil meſſage to the Prince, deſiring a conference for an accommodation in order to the public ſettlement, that nobleman was put in arreſt, under pretence of his wanting a paſſport: The Dutch guards were ordered to take poſſeſſion of Whitehall, where the King then lodged, and to diſplace the Engliſh: And Halifax, Shrewſbury, and Delamere, brought a meſſage from the Prince, which they delivered to the King in bed after midnight, ordering him to leave his palace next morning, and depart for Ham, a ſeat of the dutcheſs of Lauderdale's. He deſired permiſſion, which was eaſily granted, of retiring to Rocheſter, a town near the ſea-coaſt. It was perceived, that the artifice had taken effect; and that the King, terrified with this harſh treatment, had renewed his former reſolution of leaving the kingdom.

He lingered, however, ſome days at Rocheſter, under the protection of a Dutch guard, and ſeemed deſirous of an invitation ſtill to keep poſſeſſion of the throne. He was undoubtedly ſenſible, that, as he had, at firſt, truſted too much to his people's loyalty, and in confidence of their ſubmiſſion, had offered the higheſt violence to their principles and prejudices; ſo had he, at laſt, on finding his diſappointment, gone too far into the other extreme, and had haſtily ſuppoſed them void of

Chap. II. 1688.

of all ſenſe of duty or allegiance. But obſerving, that the church, the nobility, the city, the country, all concurred in neglecting him, and leaving him to his own councils, he ſubmitted to his melancholy fate; and being urged by earneſt letters from the Queen, he privately embarked on board a frigate which waited for him, and he arrived ſafely at Ambleteuſe in Picardy, whence he haſtened to St. Germains. Lewis received him with the higheſt generoſity, ſympathy, and regard; a conduct, which, more than his moſt ſignal victories, contributes to the honour of that great Monarch.

Second evaſion. 23d of December.

King's character.

THUS ended the reign of a Prince, whom, if we conſider his perſonal character rather than his public conduct, we may ſafely pronounce to have been more unfortunate than criminal. He had many of thoſe qualities which form a good citizen: Even ſome of thoſe, which, had they not been ſwallowed up in bigotry and arbitrary principles, ſerve to compoſe a good ſovereign. In domeſtic life, his conduct was irreproachable, and is intitled to our approbation. Severe, but open in his enmities, ſteady in his councils, diligent in his ſchemes, brave in his enterprizes, faithful, ſincere, and honourable in his dealings with all men: Such was the character, with which the duke of York mounted the throne of England. In that high ſtation, his frugality of public money was remarkable, his induſtry exemplary, his application to naval affairs ſucceſsful, his encouragement of trade judicious, his jealouſy of national honour laudable: What then was wanting to make him an excellent Sovereign? A due regard and affection to the religion and conſtitution of his country. Had he been poſſeſſed of this eſſential quality, even his midling talents, aided by ſo many virtues, would have rendered his reign honourable and happy. When it was wanting, every excellency, which he poſſeſſed, became dangerous and pernicious to his kingdoms.

THE ſincerity of this Prince (a virtue, on which he highly valued himſelf) has been much queſtioned in thoſe reiterated promiſes, which he made of preſerving the liberties and religion of the nation. It muſt be confeſſed, that his reign was one continued invaſion of both; yet is it known, that, to his laſt breath, he perſiſted in aſſerting, that he never meant to ſubvert the laws, or procure more than a toleration and an equality of privileges to his catholic ſubjects. This queſtion can only affect the perſonal character of the King, not our judgment of his public conduct. Tho' by a ſtretch of candour we ſhould admit of his ſincerity in theſe profeſſions, the people were equally juſtifiable in their reſiſtance of him. So lofty was the idea, which he had entertained of his *legal* authority, that it left his ſubjects little or no right to liberty, but what was dependant on his ſovereign will and pleaſure. And ſuch was his zeal of proſelytiſm, that, whatever he might have intended, he plainly ſtopped not at toleration and equality: He confined all power,

encouragement,

encouragement, and favour to the Catholics: Converts from intereſt would ſoon have multiplied upon him: If not the greateſt, at leaſt the beſt part of the people, he would have flattered himſelf, were brought over to his religion: And he would in a little time have thought it juſt, as well as pious, to beſtow on it all the public eſtabliſhments. Rigours and perſecutions againſt heretics would ſpeedily have followed; and thus liberty and the proteſtant religion would in the iſſue have been totally ſubverted; tho' we ſhould not ſuppoſe, that James, on the commencement of his reign, had ſeriouſly formed a plan for that purpoſe. And on the whole, allowing this King to have poſſeſſed good qualities and good intentions, his conduct ſerves only, on that very account, as a ſtronger proof, how dangerous it is to allow any Prince, infected with that ſuperſtition, to wear the crown of theſe kingdoms. Chap. II. 1688.

After this manner, the courage and abilities of the Prince of Orange, ſeconded by ſurprizing fortune, had effected the deliverance of this iſland; and with very little effuſion of blood (for only one officer of the Dutch army and a few private ſoldiers fell in an accidental ſkirmiſh) had expelled from the throne a great Prince, ſupported by a formidable fleet and a numerous army. Still the more difficult taſk remained, and what perhaps the Prince regarded as not the leaſt important: The obtaining for himſelf that crown, which had fallen from the head of his father-in-law. Some lawyers, intangled in the ſubtilties and forms of their profeſſion, could think of no expedient; but that the Prince ſhould claim the crown by right of conqueſt; ſhould aſſume immediately the title of Sovereign; and ſhould call a Parliament, which, being thus legally ſummoned by a King in poſſeſſion, could ratify whatever had been tranſacted before they aſſembled. But this meaſure, being deſtructive of all principles of liberty, the only principles on which his future throne could be eſtabliſhed, was prudently rejected by the Prince, who, finding himſelf poſſeſſed of the goodwill of the nation, reſolved to leave them entirely to their own guidance and direction. The peers and biſhops, to the number of near ninety, made an addreſs, deſiring him to ſummon a convention by circular letters; to aſſume, in the mean time, the management of all public affairs; and to concert meaſures for the ſecurity of Ireland. At the ſame time, they refuſed reading a letter, which the King had left in order to apologize for his late deſertion, by the violence which had been put upon him. This ſtep was a ſufficient indication of their intentions with regard to that unhappy Monarch.

The Prince ſeemed ſtill unwilling to act upon an authority, which might be deemed ſo imperfect: He was deſirous of obtaining a more expreſs declaration of the public conſent. A very judicious expedient was fallen on for that purpoſe. All the members, who had ſat in the Houſe of Commons during any Parliament of Charles the ſecond (the only Parliaments whoſe election was regarded as free) were

Chap. II. 1688.

invited to meet; and to them were added the mayor, aldermen, and fifty of the common council of the city. This was the moſt proper repreſentative of the people, which could be ſummoned during the preſent emergence. They unanimouſly voted the ſame addreſs with the Lords: And the Prince, being thus ſupported by all the legal authority, which could poſſibly be obtained in this critical juncture, wrote circular letters to the counties and corporations of England; and his orders were univerſally complied with. A moſt profound tranquillity prevailed throughout the kingdom; and the Prince's adminiſtration was ſubmitted to, as if he had ſucceeded in the moſt regular manner to the vacant throne. The fleet received his orders: The army, without murmur or oppoſition, allowed him to new-model them. And the city ſupplied him with a loan of two hundred thouſand pounds.

Convention ſummoned.

1689. 7th of January. Settlement of Scotland.

THE conduct of the Prince with regard to Scotland, was founded on the ſame prudent and moderate maxims. Finding, that there were many Scotſmen of rank at that time in London, he ſummoned them together, laid before them his intentions, and aſked their advice in the preſent emergency. This aſſembly, conſiſting of thirty noblemen, and about fourſcore gentlemen, choſe duke Hamilton for preſident; a man, who, being of a temporizing character, was determined to pay court to the preſent authority. His eldeſt ſon, the earl of Arran, profeſſed an adherence to King James; a uſual policy in Scotland, where the father and ſon, during civil commotions, are often obſerved to take oppoſite ſides; in order to ſecure at all adventures the family from forfeiture. Arran propoſed to invite back the King upon conditions; but as he was vehemently oppoſed in this motion by Sir Patric Hume, and ſeconded by nobody, the aſſembly made an offer to the Prince of the preſent adminiſtration, which he willingly accepted. To anticipate a little in our narration; a convention, by circular letters from the Prince, was ſummoned at Edinburgh on the twenty-ſecond of March; where it was ſoon viſible, that the intereſt of the malecontents would entirely prevail. The more zealous Royaliſts, regarding this aſſembly as illegal, had forborn to appear at elections; and the other party were returned from moſt places. The revolution was not, in Scotland as in England, effected by the coalition of Whig and Tory: The former party alone had over-powered the government, and were too much enraged by the paſt injuries, which they had ſuffered, to admit of any compoſition with their former maſters. So ſoon as the purpoſe of the convention was diſcovered, the earl of Balcarras and viſcount Dundee, the leaders of the Tories, withdrew from Edinburgh; and the convention having paſſed a vote, that King James, by his mal-adminiſtration, and his abuſe of power, had *forfeited* all title to the

crown, they made a tender of the royal dignity to the Prince and Princeſs of Orange. Chap. II. 1689.

THE Engliſh convention was aſſembled; and it immediately appeared, that the Houſe of Commons, both from the prevailing humour of the people, and from the influence of preſent authority, were moſtly choſen from among the whig party. After thanks were unanimouſly given by both Houſes to the Prince of Orange for the deliverance, which he had brought them, a memorable vote was in a few days paſſed by a great majority of the Commons, and ſent up to the Houſe of Peers for their concurrence. It was contained in theſe words. "That King James the ſe- "cond, having endeavoured to ſubvert the conſtitution of the kingdom, by break- "ing the original contract between King and people, and having, by the advice of "Jeſuits and other wicked perſons, violated the fundamental laws, and with- "drawn himſelf out of the kingdom, has abdicated the government, and that the "throne is thereby vacant." This vote, when carried to the upper Houſe, met with great oppoſition; of which it is here neceſſary for us to explain the reaſon. 22d of January. Engliſh convention meets.

THE Tories and the High-church-men, finding themſelves at once menaced with a ſubverſion of their laws and of their religion, had zealouſly promoted the national revolt, and had on this occaſion departed from thoſe principles of non-reſiſtance, of which, while the King favoured them, they had formerly made ſuch loud profeſſions. Their preſent apprehenſions had prevailed over their political tenets; and the unfortunate James, who had too much relied on thoſe general declarations, which never will be reduced to practice, found in the iſſue that both parties were ſecretly united in oppoſition to him. But no ſooner was the danger paſſed, and the general fear ſomewhat allayed, than party prejudices reſumed, in ſome degree, their former authority; and the Tories were aſhamed of that victory which their antagoniſts, during the late tranſactions, had obtained over them. They were inclined, therefore, to ſteer a middle courſe; and, tho' generally determined to oppoſe the King's return, they reſolved not to conſent to the dethroning him, or altering the line of ſucceſſion. A regent with kingly power was the expedient, which they propoſed; and a late inſtance in Portugal ſeemed to give ſome authority and precedent to that plan of government. Views of the parties.

IN favour of this ſcheme the Tories urged, that, by the uniform tenor of the Engliſh laws, the right of the crown was ever regarded as ſacred, and could, on no account, and by no mal-adminiſtration, be forfeited by the Sovereign: That to dethrone a King and to elect his ſucceſſor, was a practice quite unknown to the conſtitution, and had a tendency to render kingly power entirely dependant and precarious: That where the Prince, from his tender years, from lunacy, or from other natural infirmity, was incapacitated to hold the reins of government, both

Chap. II. 1689.

the laws and former practice agreed in appointing a regent, who, during the interval, was inveſted with the whole power of the adminiſtration: That the inveterate and dangerous prejudices of King James had rendered him as unfit to ſway the Engliſh ſcepter, as if he had fallen into lunacy; and it was therefore natural for the people to have recourſe to the ſame remedy: That the election of one King was a precedent for the election of another; and the government, by that means, would either degenerate into a republic, or what was worſe, into a turbulent and ſeditious Monarchy: That the caſe was ſtill more dangerous, if there remained a Prince, who claimed the crown by right of ſucceſſion, and diſputed, on ſo plauſible a ground, the title of the preſent Sovereign: That tho' the doctrine of non-reſiſtance might not, in every poſſible circumſtance, be abſolutely true, yet was the belief of it extremely expedient; and to eſtabliſh a government, which ſhould have the contrary principle for its baſis, was to lay the foundation of perpetual revolutions and convulſions: That the appointment of a regent was indeed expoſed to many inconveniences; but ſo long as the line of ſucceſſion was preſerved entire, there was ſtill a proſpect of putting an end, ſome time or other, to the public diſorders: And that ſcarce any inſtance occurred in hiſtory, eſpecially in the Engliſh hiſtory, where a diſputed title had not, in the iſſue, been attended with much greater ills, than all thoſe, which the people had ſought to ſhun, by departing from the lineal ſucceſſor.

THE leaders of the whig-party, on the other hand, aſſerted, that, if there was any ill in the precedent, that ill would reſult as much from the eſtabliſhing a regent, as from the dethroning one King, and appointing his ſucceſſor; nor would the one expedient, if wantonly and raſhly embraced by the people, be leſs the ſource of public convulſions than the other: That if the laws gave no expreſs permiſſion to depoſe the Sovereign, neither did they authorize the reſiſting his authority, or ſeparating the power from the title: That a regent was unknown, except where the Prince, by reaſon of his tender age or his infirmities, was incapable of a will; and in that caſe, his will was ſuppoſed to be involved in that of the regent: That it would be the height of abſurdity to try a man for acting upon a commiſſion, received from a Prince, whom we ourſelves acknowlege to be the lawful Sovereign; and no jury would decide ſo contrary both to law and to common ſenſe, as to condemn ſuch a criminal: That even the proſpect of being delivered from this monſtrous inconvenience was, in the preſent ſituation of things, more diſtant than that of putting an end to a diſputed ſucceſſion: That allowing the young Prince to be the legitimate heir, he had been carried abroad; he would be educated in principles deſtructive of the conſtitution and eſtabliſhed religion; and he would probably leave a ſon, liable to the ſame inſuperable objection: That if the whole line were cut off by law, the people would in time forget or neglect their claim; an advantage, which could not

be hoped for, while the adminiſtration was conducted in their name, and while they were ſtill acknowleged to poſſeſs the legal title: And that a nation thus perpetually governed by regents or protectors approached much nearer to a republic, than one ſubject to Monarchs, whoſe hereditary regular ſucceſſion, as well as preſent authority, was fixed and appointed by the people. Chap. II. 1689.

THIS queſtion was agitated with great zeal by the oppoſite parties in the Houſe of Peers. The chief ſpeakers among the Tories were Clarendon, Rocheſter, and Nottingham; among the Whigs, Halifax and Danby. The queſtion was carried for a King by two voices only, fifty-one againſt forty-nine. All the prelates, except two, the Biſhops of London and Briſtol, voted for a regent. The primate, a diſintereſted but puſillanimous man, kept at a diſtance, both from the Prince's court and from Parliament.

THE Houſe of Peers proceeded next to examine piece-meal the vote, ſent up to them by the Commons. They debated, "Whether there was an original contract "between King and people," and the affirmative was carried by fifty-three againſt forty-ſix; a proof that the Tories were already loſing ground. The next queſtion was, "Whether King James had broke that original contract?" and after a ſlight oppoſition the affirmative prevailed. The Lords proceeded to take into conſideration the word, *abdicated*; and it was carried that *deſerted* was more proper. The concluding queſtion was, "Whether King James, having broke the original con-"tract, and *deſerted* the government, the throne was thereby vacant?" This queſtion was debated with more heat and contention than any of the former; and upon a diviſion, the Tories prevailed by eleven voices, and it was carried to omit the laſt article with regard to the vacancy of the throne. The vote was ſent back to the Commons with theſe amendments.

THE earl of Danby had embraced the project of beſtowing the Crown ſolely upon the Princeſs of Orange, and of admitting her as hereditary legal ſucceſſor to King James: Paſſing by the infant Prince as illegitimate or ſuppoſititious. His change of party in the laſt queſtion gave the Tories ſo conſiderable a majority in the number of voices.

THE Commons ſtill inſiſted on their vote, and ſent up reaſons, why the Lords ſhould depart from their amendments. The Lords were not convinced; and it was neceſſary to have a free conference, in order to ſettle this controverſy. Never national debate ſurely was more important, nor managed by more able ſpeakers; yet is one ſurprized to find the topics, inſiſted on by both ſides, ſo very frivolous; more reſembling the verbal diſputes of the ſchools than the ſolid reaſonings of ſtateſmen and legiſlators. In public tranſactions of ſuch conſequence, the true motives, which produce any meaſure, are ſeldom avowed. The Whigs, now the ruling Free conferences between the Houſes.

Chap. II. 1689. ruling party, having united with the Tories, in order to bring about the revolution, had ſo much deference for their new allies, as not to inſiſt, that the crown ſhould be declared *forfeited*, on account of the King's mal-adminiſtration: Such a declaration, they thought, would imply too expreſs a cenſure of the old tory principles, and too open a preference of their own. They agreed therefore to confound together the King's abuſing his power and his withdrawing from the kingdom; and they called the whole an *abdication*; as if he had given a virtual, tho' not a verbal, conſent to his dethronement. The Tories took advantage of this obvious impropriety, which had been occaſioned merely by the complaiſance or prudence of the Whigs; and they inſiſted upon the word, *deſertion*, as much more ſignificant and intelligible. It was retorted on them, that, however that expreſſion might be juſtly applied to the King's withdrawing himſelf, it could not, with any propriety, be extended to his violation of the fundamental laws. And thus both parties, while they warped their principles from regard to their antagoniſts, and from prudential conſiderations, loſt the praiſe of conſiſtence and uniformity.

THE managers for the Lords next inſiſted, that even allowing the King's abuſe of power to be equivalent to an abdication, or in other words, to a civil death, it could operate no otherwiſe than his voluntary reſignation or his natural death; and could only make way for the next ſucceſſor. It was a maxim of Engliſh law, *that the throne was never vacant*; but inſtantly upon the deceaſe of one King was filled with his legal heir, who was entitled to all the authority of his predeceſſor. And however young or unfit for government the ſucceſſor, however unfortunate in his ſituation, tho' he were even a captive in the hands of public enemies; yet no juſt reaſon, they thought, could be aſſigned, why, without any default of his own, he ſhould loſe a crown, to which, by birth, he was fully intitled. The managers of the Commons might have oppoſed this reaſoning by many ſpecious and even ſolid arguments. They might have ſaid, that the great ſecurity for allegiance being merely opinion, any ſcheme of ſettlement ſhould be adopted, in which, it was moſt probable, the people would acquieſce and perſevere. That tho' upon the natural death of one King, whoſe adminiſtration had been agreeable to the laws, many and great inconveniencies would be endured rather than exclude his lineal ſucceſſor; yet the caſe was not the ſame, when the people had been obliged, by their revolt, to dethrone a Prince, whoſe illegal meaſures had, in every circumſtance, violated the conſtitution. That in theſe extraordinary revolutions, the government returned to its firſt principles, and the community acquired a right of providing for the public intereſt by expedients, which, on other occaſions, might be deemed violent and irregular. That the recent uſe of one extraordinary remedy familiarized the people to the practice of another, and more reconciled their minds

to

to ſuch licences than if the government had run on in its uſual tenor. And that King James, having carried abroad his ſon, as well as withdrawn himſelf, had given ſuch juſt provocation to the kingdom, had voluntarily involved it in ſuch difficulties, that the intereſts of his family were juſtly ſacrificed to the public ſettlement and tranquillity. Tho' theſe topics ſeem reaſonable, they were intirely forborne by the whig managers; both becauſe they implied an acknowlegement of the infant Prince's legitimacy, which, it was agreed, to keep in obſcurity, and becauſe they contained too expreſs a condemnation of tory principles. They were contented to maintain the vote of the Commons by ſhifts and evaſions; and both ſides parted at laſt without coming to any agreement.

But it was impoſſible for the public to remain long in the preſent ſituation. The perſeverance, therefore, of the Lower Houſe obliged the Lords to comply; and by the deſertion of ſome Peers to the whig party, the vote of the Commons, without any alteration, paſſed by a ſmall majority in the Upper Houſe, and received the ſanction of every part of the legiſlature, which then ſubſiſted.

It happens unluckily for thoſe, who maintain an original contract between the magiſtrate and people, that great revolutions of government, and new ſettlements of civil conſtitutions, are commonly conducted with ſuch violence, tumult and diſorder, that the public voice can ſcarce ever be heard; and the opinions of the citizens are at that time leſs attended to than even in the common courſe of adminiſtration. The preſent tranſactions in England, it muſt be confeſſed, are a very ſingular exception to this obſervation. The new elections had been carried on with great tranquillity and freedom: The Prince had ordered the troops to depart from all the towns, where the voters aſſembled: A tumultuary petition to the two Houſes having been promoted, he took care, tho' the petition was calculated for his own advantage, effectually to ſuppreſs it: He entered into no intrigues, either with the electors or the members: He kept himſelf in a total ſilence, as if he had been nowiſe concerned in theſe tranſactions: And ſo far from forming cabals with the leaders of parties, he diſdained even to beſtow careſſes on thoſe, whoſe aſſiſtance might be uſeful to him. This conduct was highly meritorious, and diſcovered great moderation and magnanimity; even tho' the Prince unfortunately, thro' the whole courſe of his life, and on every occaſion, was noted for an addreſs, ſo cold, dry, and diſtant, that it was very difficult for him, on account of any intereſt, to ſoften or familiarize it.

At laſt, the Prince deigned to break ſilence, and to expreſs, tho' in a private manner, his ſentiments on the preſent ſituation of affairs. He called together Halifax, Shrewſbury, Danby, and a few more; and he told them, that having been

Chap. II. 1689.

been invited over to reſtore their liberty, he had engaged in this enterprize, and had at laſt happily effected this purpoſe: That it belonged to the Parliament, now choſen and aſſembled with freedom, to concert meaſures for the public ſettlement; and he pretended not to interpoſe in their determinations. That he heard of ſeveral ſchemes propoſed for eſtabliſhing the government: Some inſiſted on a regent; others were deſirous of beſtowing the Crown on the Princeſs: It was their concern alone to chooſe that plan of adminiſtration which was moſt agreeable or advantageous to them. That if they choſe to ſettle a regent, he had no objection: He only thought it incumbent on him to inform them, that he was determined not to be the regent, nor ever to engage in a ſcheme, which, he knew, would be expoſed to ſuch inſuperable difficulties. That no man could have a juſter or deeper ſenſe of the Princeſs's merit than he was impreſſed with; but he would rather remain a private perſon than enjoy a crown, which muſt depend on the will or life of another. And that they muſt therefore make account, if they were inclined to either of theſe two plans of ſettlement, that it would be totally out of his power to aſſiſt them in carrying it into execution: His affairs abroad were too important to be abandoned for ſo precarious a dignity, or even to allow him ſo much leiſure as would be requiſite to introduce order into their disjointed government.

THESE views of the Prince were ſeconded by the Princeſs herſelf, who, as ſhe poſſeſſed many virtues, was a moſt obſequious wife to a huſband, who, in the judgment of the generality of her ſex, would have appeared ſo little attractive and amiable. All conſiderations were neglected, when they came in competition with what ſhe deemed her duty to the Prince. When Danby and others of her partizans wrote her an account of their ſchemes and proceedings, ſhe expreſſed great diſpleaſure; and even tranſmitted their letters to her huſband, as a ſacrifice to conjugal fidelity. The Princeſs Anne alſo concurred in the ſame plan for the public ſettlement; and being promiſed an ample revenue, was contented to be poſtponed in the ſucceſſion to the crown. And as the title of her infant brother, in the preſent eſtabliſhment, was entirely neglected, ſhe might, on the whole, eſteem herſelf, in point of intereſt, a great gainer by this revolution.

Settlement of the crown.

ALL parties, therefore, being agreed, the Convention paſſed a bill, where they ſettled the crown on the Prince and Princeſs of Orange, the ſole adminiſtration to remain in the Prince: The Princeſs of Denmark to ſucceed after the death of the Prince and Princeſs of Orange; her poſterity after thoſe of the Princeſs, but before thoſe of the Prince by any other wife. The Convention annexed to this ſettlement of the crown a declaration of rights, where all the points, which had, of late years, been diſputed between King and people, were finally determined; and the powers of

of royal prerogative were more narrowly circumſcribed and more exactly defined, than in any former period of the Engliſh government. Chap. II. 1689.

* * * * * * * * * * * * *

Manners, arts and ſciences.

THUS we have ſeen, thro' the courſe of four reigns, a continued ſtruggle maintained between the crown and the people: Privilege and Prerogative were ever at variance: And both parties, beſides the preſent object of diſpute, had many latent claims, which, on a favourable occaſion, they produced againſt their adverſaries. Governments too ſteady and uniform, as they are ſeldom free, ſo are they, in the judgment of ſome, attended with another ſenſible inconvenience: They abate the active powers of men; depreſs courage, invention, and genius; and produce an univerſal lethargy in the people. Tho' this opinion may be juſt, the fluctuation and conteſt, it muſt be allowed, of the Engliſh government were, during theſe reigns, much too violent both for the repoſe and ſafety of the people. Foreign affairs, at that time, were either entirely neglected, or managed to pernicious purpoſes: And in the domeſtic adminiſtration there was felt a continued fever, either ſecret or manifeſt; ſometimes the moſt furious convulſions and diſorders. The revolution forms a new epoch in the conſtitution; and was attended with conſequences much more advantageous to the people, than the barely freeing them from a bad adminiſtration. By deciding many important queſtions in favour of liberty, and ſtill more, by that great precedent of depoſing one King, and eſtabliſhing a new family, it gave ſuch an aſcendant to popular principles, as has put the nature of the Engliſh conſtitution beyond all controverſy. And it may ſafely be affirmed, without any danger of exaggeration, that we in this iſland have ever ſince enjoyed, if not the beſt ſyſtem of government, at leaſt the moſt entire ſyſtem of liberty, that ever was known amongſt mankind.

To decry with ſuch violence, as is affected by ſome, the whole line of Stuart; to maintain, that their adminiſtration was one continued encroachment on the *inconteſtible* rights of the people; is not giving due honour to that great event, which not only put a period to their hereditary ſucceſſion, but made a new ſettlement of the whole conſtitution. The inconveniencies, ſuffered by the people under the two

 firſt

Chap. II. 1689.

first reigns of that family (for in the main they were prosperous) proceeded in a great measure from the unavoidable situation of affairs; and scarce any thing could have prevented those events, but such vigour of genius in the Sovereign, attended with such good fortune, as might have enabled him entirely to overpower the liberties of his people. While the Parliaments, in these reigns, were taking advantage of the necessities of the Prince, and attempting every session to abolish, or circumscribe, or define, some prerogative of the Crown, and innovate in the usual tenor of government: Must it not be expected, that the Prince would defend an authority, which, for above a century, that is, during the whole regular course of the former English government, had been exercised without dispute or controversy? And tho' Charles the second, in 1672, may with reason be deemed the aggressor, nor is it possible to justify his conduct; yet were there some motives surely, which could engage a Prince, so soft and indolent, and at the same time, so judicious, to attempt such hazardous enterprizes. He felt that public affairs had reached a situation, at which they could not possibly remain, without some farther innovation. Frequent Parliaments were become almost entirely necessary to the conduct of public business; yet these assemblies were still, in the judgment of the Royalists, much inferior in dignity to the Sovereign, whom they seemed better calculated to council than controul. The Crown still possessed considerable power of opposing Parliaments; and had not as yet acquired the means of influencing them. Hence a continued jealousy between these parts of the constitution: Hence the inclination mutually to take advantage of each other's necessities: Hence the impossibility under which the King lay of finding ministers, who could at once be serviceable and faithful to him. If he followed his own choice in appointing his servants, without regard to their parliamentary interest, a refractory session was instantly to be expected: If he chose them from among the leaders of popular assemblies, they either lost their influence by adhering to the Crown, or they betrayed the Crown, in order to preserve their influence with the people. Neither Hambden, whom Charles the first was willing to gain at any price; nor Shaftesbury, whom Charles the second, after the popish plot, attempted to engage in his councils, would renounce their popularity for the precarious, and, as they esteemed it, deceitful favour of the Prince. The root of their authority they still thought to lye in the Parliament; and as the power of that assembly was not yet uncontrouleable, they still resolved to augment it, tho' at the expence of the royal prerogatives.

'Tis no wonder, that these events, by the representations of faction, have long been extremely clouded and obscured. No man has yet arose, who has been enabled to pay an entire regard to truth, and has dared to expose her, without covering or disguise, to the eyes of the prejudiced public. Even that party amongst

us, who boaſt of the higheſt regard to liberty, have not poſſeſſed ſufficient liberty of thought in this particular; nor have been able to decide impartially of their own merit compared with that of their antagoniſts. More noble undoubtedly in their ends, and more beneficial to mankind; they muſt alſo be allowed to have been often leſs juſtifiable in the means, and in many of their tranſactions to have payed more regard to political than to moral conſiderations. Being obliged to court the populace, they found it neceſſary to comply with their rage and folly; and have even, on many occaſions, by propagating fictions, by promoting violence, ſerved to infatuate, as well as corrupt that people, to whom they made a tender of liberty and juſtice. Charles the firſt was a tyrant, a Papiſt, and a contriver of the Iriſh maſſacre: The church of England was relapſing faſt into idolatry: Puritaniſm was the only true religion, and the covenant the favourite object of heavenly regard. Thro' theſe deluſions the party proceeded, and, what may ſeem more wonderful, ſtill to the encreaſe of law and liberty; 'till they reached the impoſture of the popiſh plot, a fiction which exceeds the ordinary bounds of vulgar credulity. But however ſingular theſe events may appear, there is really nothing altogether new in any period of modern hiſtory: And it is remarkable, that tribunitian arts, tho' ſometimes uſeful in a free conſtitution, have often been ſuch as men of ſtrict probity and honour could not bring themſelves either to practiſe or approve. The other faction, who, ſince the revolution, have been obliged to court the populace, ſometimes found it requiſite to employ like artifices. Chap. II. 1689.

The whig party, for a courſe of near ſeventy years, have, almoſt without interruption, enjoyed the whole authority of the government; and no honours nor offices could be obtained but by their countenance and protection. But this event, which has been advantageous to the ſtate, has been deſtructive to the truth of hiſtory, and has eſtabliſhed many groſs falſhoods, which it is unaccountable how any civilized nation could have embraced with regard to its domeſtic occurrences. Compoſitions the moſt deſpicable, both for ſtyle and matter, have been extolled, and propagated, and read; as if they had equalled the moſt celebrated remains of antiquity. And becauſe the ruling party had obtained an advantage over their antagoniſts in the philoſophical diſputes concerning ſome of their general principles, they thence aſſumed a right to impoſe on the public their account of all particular tranſactions, and to repreſent the other party as governed entirely by the loweſt and moſt vulgar prejudices. But extremes of all kinds are to be avoided; and tho' no one will ever pleaſe either faction by moderate opinions, it is there we are moſt likely to meet with truth and certainty.

Chap. II. 1689.

We ſhall ſubjoin to this general view of the Engliſh government, ſome account of the ſtate of the finances, arms, trade, manners, arts, between the reſtoration and revolution.

The revenue of Charles the ſecond, as ſettled by the long Parliament, was put upon a very bad footing. It was too ſmall, if they intended to make him independant in the common courſe of his adminiſtration: It was too large, and ſettled during too long a period, if they reſolved to keep him in entire dependance. The large debts of the republic, which were thrown upon that Prince, the neceſſity of ſupplying the naval and military ſtores, which were entirely exhauſted *; that of repairing and furniſhing his palaces: All theſe cauſes involved the King in great difficulties immediately after his reſtoration; and the Parliament were not ſufficiently liberal in ſupplying him. Perhaps too he had contracted ſome debts abroad; and his bounty to the diſtreſſed cavaliers, tho' it did not correſpond either to their ſervices or expectations, could not fail, in ſome degree, to exhauſt his treaſures. The extraordinary ſums, granted the King during the firſt years, did not ſuffice for theſe extraordinary charges; and the exciſe and cuſtoms, the only conſtant revenue, amounted not to nine hundred thouſand pounds a year, and fell very much ſhort of the ordinary charges of the government. The addition of hearth-money in 1662, and of the other two branches in 1669 and 1670, brought up the revenue to one million three hundred fifty-eight thouſand pounds, as we learn from lord treaſurer Danby's account: But the ſame authority informs us, that the yearly expence of the government was at that time one million three hundred eighty ſeven thouſand ſeven hundred and ſeventy pounds †, without mentioning contingencies, which are always very conſiderable, even under the moſt prudent adminiſtration. Thoſe branches of revenue, granted in 1669 and 1670, expired in 1680, and were never renewed by the Parliament: They were computed to be above two hundred thouſand pounds a year. It muſt be allowed, becauſe aſſerted by all cotemporary authors, of both parties, and even confeſſed by himſelf, that King Charles was ſomewhat profuſe and negligent. But it is likewiſe certain, that a very rigid frugality was requiſite to ſupport the government under ſuch difficulties. There is a familiar rule in all buſineſs, that every man ſhould be paid, in proportion to the truſt repoſed in him, and to the power, which he enjoys; and the nation ſoon found reaſon, from Charles's dangerous connexions with France, to repent their tranſgreſſion of that prudential maxim.

* Lord Clarendon's ſpeech to the Parliament, Oct. 9, 1665.

† Ralph's Hiſtory, vol. i. p. 288. We learn from that lord's Memoirs, p. 12, that the receipts of the Exchequer, during ſix years, from 1673 to 1679, was about eight millions two hundred thouſand pounds, or one million three hundred ſixty-ſix thouſand pounds a year. See likewiſe, p. 169.

If we eſtimate the ordinary revenue of Charles the ſecond at one million two hundred thouſand pounds a year during his whole reign, the computation will rather exceed than fall under the true value. The Convention Parliament, after all the ſums, which they had granted the King towards the payment of old debts, threw, the laſt day of their meeting, a debt upon him, amounting to one million ſeven hundred forty-three thouſand two hundred and ſixty-three pounds *. All the extraordinary ſums, which were afterwards voted him by Parliament, amounted to eleven millions four hundred forty-three thouſand four hundred and ſeven pounds; which divided by twenty-four, the number of years, which that King reigned, make four hundred ſeventy-ſix thouſand eight hundred and eight pounds a year. During that time, he had two violent wars to ſuſtain with the Dutch; and in 1678, he made expenſive preparations for a war with France. In the firſt Dutch war, both France and Denmark were allies to the United Provinces, and the naval armaments in England were very great; ſo that it is impoſſible he could have ſecreted any part, at leaſt any conſiderable part, of the ſums, which were then voted him by Parliament.

To theſe ſums we muſt add about one million two hundred thouſand pounds, which had been detained from the bankers on ſhutting up the Exchequer in 1672. The King paid ſix per cent. for this money during all the reſt of his reign †. It is remarkable, that, notwithſtanding this violent breach of faith, the King, two years after, borrowed money at eight per cent. the ſame rate of intereſt, which he had paid before that event ‡. A proof, that public credit, inſtead of being of ſo delicate a nature, as we are apt to imagine, is, in reality, ſo hardy and robuſt, that it is very difficult to deſtroy it.

The revenue of James was raiſed by the Parliament to about one million eight hundred fifty thouſand pounds §; and his income as Duke of York being added, made the whole amount to two millions a year; a ſum well proportioned to the public neceſſities, but enjoyed by him in too independant a manner. The national debt at the revolution amounted to one million fifty-four thouſand nine hundred twenty-five pounds ||.

The militia fell much to decay during theſe two reigns, partly by the policy of the Kings, who had entertained a diffidence of their ſubjects, partly by that ill judged law, which limited the King's power of muſtering and arraying them. In the beginning, however, of Charles's reign, the militia were ſtill deemed formida-

* Journals, 29th of December, 1660. † Danby's Memoirs, p. 7. ‡ Id. p. 65.
§ Journ. 1ſt of March, 1689. || Journ. 20th of March, 1689.

ble.

Chap. II. 1689.

ble. De Wit having propoſed to the French King an invaſion of England during the firſt Dutch war, that Monarch replied, that ſuch an attempt would be entirely fruitleſs, and would tend only to unite the Engliſh. In a few days, ſaid he, after our landing, there will be fifty thouſand men at leaſt upon us *.

CHARLES in the beginning of his reign had in pay near five thouſand men, of guards and garriſons. At the end of his reign, he augmented this number to near eight thouſand. James on Monmouth's rebellion had on foot about fifteen thouſand men; and when the Prince of Orange invaded him, there were no fewer than thirty thouſand regular troops in England.

THE Engliſh navy, during the greateſt part of Charles's reign, made a great figure, for numbers of ſhips, valour of the men, and conduct of the commanders. Even in 1678, the fleet conſiſted of eighty-three ſhips †; beſides thirty, which were at that time on the ſtocks. On the King's acceſſion he found only ſixty-three veſſels of all ſizes ‡. During the latter part of Charles's reign the navy fell conſiderably to decay, by reaſon of the narrowneſs of the King's revenue: But James, ſoon after his acceſſion, reſtored it to its former power and glory; and before he left the throne, carried it much farther. The adminiſtration of the admiralty under Pepys, is ſtill regarded as a model for order and œconomy. The fleet at the revolution conſiſted of one hundred ſeventy-three veſſels of all ſizes; and required forty-two thouſand ſeamen to man it ||. That King, when Duke of York, had been the firſt inventor of ſea ſignals. The military genius, during theſe two reigns, had not totally decayed among the young nobility. Dorſet, Mulgrave, Rocheſter, not to mention Oſſory, ſerved on board the fleet, and were preſent in the moſt furious engagements againſt the Dutch.

THE commerce and riches of England did never, during any period, encreaſe ſo faſt as from the reſtoration to the revolution. The two Dutch wars, by diſturbing the trade of that republic, promoted the navigation of this iſland; and after Charles had made a ſeparate peace with the States, his ſubjects enjoyed unmoleſted the trade of Europe. The only diſturbance, which they met with, was from a few French privateers, who infeſted the channel; and Charles interpoſed not in behalf of his ſubjects with ſufficient ſpirit and vigour. The recovery or conqueſt of New York and the Jerſeys was a very conſiderable acceſſion to the ſtrength and ſecurity of the Engliſh colonies; and together with the ſettlement of Penſilvania and Carolina, which was effected during this reign, extended prodigiouſly the Engliſh

* D'Eſtrades, 20th of October, 1666. † Pepys's Memoirs, p. 4. ‡ Memoirs of Engliſh affairs, chiefly naval. || Lives of the admirals, vol. ii. p. 476.

empire

empire in America. The perſecutions of the Diſſenters, or more properly ſpeaking, the reſtraints impoſed upon them, contributed to augment and people theſe colonies. Dr. Davenant affirms †, that the ſhipping of England doubled during theſe twenty-eight years. Several new manufactures were eſtabliſhed; in iron, braſs, ſilk, hats, glaſs, &c. One Brewer, leaving the Low Countries, when they were threatened with a French conqueſt, brought the art of dying woollen cloth into England, and by that improvement ſaved the nation great ſums of money. The encreaſe of coinage during theſe two reigns was ten millions two hundred ſixty-one thouſand pounds. A board of trade was erected in 1670; and the earl of Sandwich was made preſident. Charles revived and ſupported the charter of the Eaſt-India company; a meaſure whoſe utility is ſomewhat doubtful: He granted a charter to the Hudſon's Bay company; a meaſure evidently hurtful. Chap. II. 1689.

THE French King, about the beginning of Charles's reign, laid ſome impoſitions on Engliſh commodities: And the Engliſh, partly diſpleaſed with this innovation, partly moved by their animoſity againſt France, retaliated, by laying ſuch reſtraints on the commerce with that kingdom as amounted almoſt to a prohibition. They formed calculations, by which they perſwaded themſelves, that they were loſers a million and a half or near two millions a year by the French trade. But no good effects were found to reſult from theſe reſtraints; and in King James's reign they were taken off by the Parliament.

AT the ſame time that the burroughs of England were deprived of their privileges, the like attempt was made on the colonies. King James recalled their charters, by which their liberties were ſecured; and he ſent over governors inveſted with abſolute power. The arbitrary principles of that Monarch appeared in every part of his adminiſtration.

THE people, during theſe two reigns, were, in a great meaſure, cured of that wild fanaticiſm, by which they had formerly been ſo much agitated. Whatever new vices they might acquire, it may be queſtioned, whether, by this change, they were, in the main, much loſers in point of morals. By the example of the King and the cavaliers, licentiouſneſs and debauchery became very prevalent in the nation. The pleaſures of the table were much purſued. Love was treated more as an appetite than a paſſion. The one ſex began to abate of the national character of chaſtity, without being able to inſpire the other with ſentiment or delicacy.

THE abuſes in the former age, ariſing from overſtrained pretenſions of piety, had much propagated the ſpirit of irreligion ‡; and many of the ingenious men of this

† Diſcourſe on the public revenues, part ii. p. 29, 33, 36.

‡ THIS ſophiſm, of arguing from the abuſe of any thing againſt the uſe of it, is one of the groſſeſt, and at the ſame time, the moſt common, to which men are ſubject. The hiſtory of all ages, and none more

Chap. II. 1689.

this period lie under the imputation of Deiſm. Beſides wits and ſcholars by profeſſion, Shafteſbury, Halifax, Buckingham, Mulgrave, Sunderland, Eſſex, Rocheſter, Sidney, Temple, are ſuppoſed to have adopted theſe principles.

THE ſame factions, which formerly diſtracted the nation, were revived, and exerted themſelves in the moſt ungenerous and unmanly enterprizes againſt each other. King Charles, being in his whole deportment a model of eaſy and gentlemanly

more than that of the period, which is our ſubject, offers us examples of the abuſe of religion; and we have not been ſparing to remark them: But whoever would thence draw an inference to the diſadvantage of religion in general, would argue very raſhly and erroneouſly. The proper office of religion is to reform men's lives, to purify their hearts, to inforce all moral duties, and to ſecure obedience to the laws and civil magiſtrate. While it purſues theſe ſalutary purpoſes, its operations, tho' infinitely valuable, are ſecret and ſilent, and ſeldom come under the cognizance of hiſtory. That adulterate ſpecies of it alone, which inflames faction, animates ſedition, and prompts rebellion, diſtinguiſhes itſelf on the open theatre of the world, and is the great ſource of revolutions and public convulſions. The hiſtorian, therefore, has ſcarce occaſion to mention any other kind of religion; and he may retain the higheſt regard for true piety, even while he expoſes all the abuſes of the falſe. He may even think, that he cannot better ſhew his attachment to the former than by detecting the latter, and laying open its abſurdities and pernicious tendency.

IT is no proof of irreligion in an hiſtorian, that he remarks ſome fault or imperfection in each ſect of religion, which he has occaſion to mention. Every inſtitution, however divine, which is adopted by men, muſt partake of the weakneſs and infirmities of our nature; and will be apt, unleſs carefully guarded, to degenerate into one extreme or the other. What ſpecies of devotion ſo pure, noble, and worthy the Supreme Being, as that which is moſt ſpiritual, ſimple, unadorned, and which partakes nothing either of the ſenſes or imagination? Yet is it found by experience, that this mode of worſhip does very naturally, among the vulgar, mount up into extravagance and fanaticiſm. Even many of the firſt reformers are expoſed to this reproach; and their zeal, tho', in the event, it proved extremely uſeful, partook ſtrongly of the enthuſiaſtic genius: Two of the judges in the reign of Charles the ſecond, ſcrupled not to advance this opinion even from the bench. Some mixture of ceremony, pomp, and ornament may ſeem to correct the abuſe; yet will it be found very difficult to prevent ſuch a form of religion from ſinking ſometimes into ſuperſtition. The church of England itſelf, which is perhaps the beſt medium among theſe extremes, will be allowed, at leaſt during the age of archbiſhop Laud, to have been ſomewhat infected with a ſuperſtition, reſembling the popiſh; and to have payed a higher regard to ſome poſitive inſtitutions, than the nature of the things, ſtrictly ſpeaking, would permit. It is the buſineſs of an hiſtorian to remark theſe abuſes of all kinds; but it belongs alſo to a prudent reader to confine the repreſentations, which he meets with, to that age alone of which the author treats. What abſurdity, for inſtance, to ſuppoſe, that the Preſbyterians, Independants, Anabaptiſts, and other ſectaries of the preſent age, partake of all the extravagancies, which we remark in thoſe, who bore theſe appellations in the laſt century? The inference indeed ſeems juſter; where ſects have been noted for fanaticiſm during one period, to conclude, that they will be very moderate and reaſonable in the ſubſequent. For as it is the nature of fanaticiſm to aboliſh all ſlaviſh ſubmiſſion to prieſtly power; it follows, that as ſoon as the firſt ferment is abated, men are naturally in ſuch ſects left to the free uſe of their reaſon, and ſhake off the fetters of cuſtom and authority.

manly behaviour, improved the politeneſs of the nation; as much as faction, which of all things is moſt deſtructive to politeneſs, could poſſibly permit. His courtiers were long diſtinguiſhable in England by their obliging and agreeable manners. Chap. II. 1689.

AMIDST the thick cloud of bigotry and ignorance, which overſpread the nation, during the Commonwealth and Protectorſhip, there were a few ſedate philoſophers, who in the retirement of Oxford, cultivated their reaſon, and eſtabliſhed conferences for the mutual communication of their diſcoveries in phyſics and geometry. Wilkins, a clergyman, who had married Cromwel's ſiſter, and was afterwards created biſhop of Cheſter, promoted theſe philoſophical converſations. Immediately after the reſtoration, theſe men procured a patent, and having enlarged their number, were denominated the *Royal Society*. But this patent was all they obtained from the King. Tho' Charles was a great lover of the ſciences, particularly chymiſtry and mechanics, he animated them by his example alone, not by his bounty. His craving courtiers and miſtreſſes, by whom he was perpetually ſurrounded, engroſſed all his expence, and left him neither money nor attention for literary merit. His contemporary, Lewis, who fell ſhort of the King's genius and knowlege in this particular, much exceeded him in liberality. Beſides penſions conferred on learned men throughout all Europe, his academies were directed by rules and ſupported by ſalaries: A generoſity, which does great honour to his memory; and in the eyes of all the ingenious part of mankind, will be eſteemed an atonement for many of the errors of his reign. We may be ſurprized, that this example ſhould not be more followed by princes; ſince it is certain, that that bounty, ſo extenſive, ſo beneficial, and ſo much celebrated, coſt not that Monarch ſo great a ſum as is often conferred on one ſingle, uſeleſs, overgrown favourite or courtier.

BUT tho' the French academy of ſciences was directed, encouraged, and ſupported by the Sovereign, there aroſe in England ſome men of ſuperior genius, who were more than ſufficient to caſt the balance, and who drew on themſelves and on their native country the regard and attention of all Europe. Beſides Wilkins, Wren, Wallis, eminent mathematicians, Hooke, an accurate obſerver by microſcopes, and Sydenham, the reſtorer of true phyſic; there flouriſhed during this period a Boyle and a Newton; men, who trode, with cautious, and therefore the more ſecure ſteps, the only road, which leads to true philoſophy.

BOYLE improved the pneumatic engine, invented by Otto Guericke, and was thereby enabled to make ſeveral new and curious experiments on the air as well as on other bodies: His chymiſtry is much admired by thoſe acquainted with that art: His hydroſtatics contain a greater mixture of reaſoning and invention with experiment than any other of his works; but his reaſoning is ſtill remote from that boldneſs and temerity, which had led aſtray ſo many philoſophers. Boyle was

Chap. II. 1689. a great partizan of the mechanical philoſophy; a theory, which, by diſcovering ſome of the ſecrets of nature, and allowing us to imagine the reſt, is ſo agreeable to the natural vanity and curioſity of men.

In Newton this iſland may boaſt of having produced the greateſt and rareſt genius that ever aroſe for the ornament and inſtruction of the ſpecies. Cautious, in admitting no principles but ſuch as were founded on experiment; but reſolute to adopt every ſuch principle, however new or unuſual: From modeſty, ignorant of his ſuperiority above the reſt of mankind; and thence, leſs careful to accommodate his reaſonings to common apprehenſions: More anxious to merit than acquire fame: He was from theſe cauſes long unknown to the world; but his reputation at laſt broke out with a luſtre, which ſcarce any writer, during his own life-time, had ever before attained. While Newton ſeemed to draw off the veil from ſome of the myſteries of nature, he ſhowed at the ſame time the imperfections of the mechanical philoſophy; and thereby reſtored her ultimate ſecrets to that obſcurity, in which they ever did and ever will remain.

This age was far from being ſo favourable to polite literature as to the ſciences. Charles, tho' fond of wit, tho' poſſeſſed himſelf of a conſiderable ſhare of it, tho' his taſte of converſation ſeems to have been ſound and juſt; ſerved rather to corrupt than improve the poetry and eloquence of his time. When the theatres were opened at the reſtoration, and freedom was again given to pleaſantry and ingenuity; men, after ſo long an abſtinence, fed on theſe delicacies with leſs taſte than avidity, and the coarſeſt and moſt irregular ſpecies of wit was received by the court as well as by the people. The productions at that time repreſented on the theatre were ſuch monſters of extravagance and folly; ſo utterly devoid of all reaſon or even common ſenſe; that they would be the diſgrace of Engliſh literature, had not the nation made atonement for its former admiration of them, by the total oblivion to which they are now condemned. The duke of Buckingham's Rehearſal, which expoſed theſe wild productions, ſeems to be a piece of ridicule carried to exceſs; yet in reality the copy ſcarce equals ſome of the abſurdities, which we meet with in the originals.

This ſevere ſatyre, together with the good ſenſe of the nation, corrected, after ſome time, the extravagancies of the faſhionable wit; but the productions of literature ſtill wanted much of that correctneſs and delicacy, which we ſo much admire in the antients, and in the French writers, their judicious imitators. It was indeed during this period chiefly, that that nation left the Engliſh behind them in the productions of poetry, eloquence, hiſtory, and other branches of polite letters; and acquired a ſuperiority, which the efforts of Engliſh writers, during the ſubſequent age, did more ſucceſsfully conteſt with them. The arts and ſciences

were imported from Italy into this iſland as early as into France; and made at first more ſurpriſing advances. Spencer, Shakeſpear, Bacon, Johnſon, were much ſuperior to their cotemporaries, who flouriſhed in that kingdom. Milton, Waller, Denham, Cowley, Harvey, were at leaſt equal to their cotemporaries. The reign of Charles the Second, which ſome prepoſterouſly repreſent as our auguſtan age, retarded the progreſs of polite literature in this iſland; and it was then found, that the immeaſurable licentiouſneſs, which was indulged or rather applauded at court, was more deſtructive to the refined arts than even the cant, nonſenſe, and enthuſiaſm of the preceding period. Chap. II. 1689.

Most of the celebrated writers of this age remain monuments of genius, perverted by indecency and bad taſte; but none more than Dryden, both by reaſon of the greatneſs of his talents and the groſs abuſe which he made of them. His plays, excepting a few ſcenes, are utterly disfigured by vice or folly or both. His tranſlations appear too much the offspring of haſte and hunger: Even his fables are ill choſen tales, conveyed in an incorrect, tho' ſpirited verſification. Yet amidſt this great number of looſe productions, the refuſe of our language, there are found ſome ſmall pieces, his Ode to St. Cecilia, the greateſt part of Abſalom and Achitophel, and a few more, which diſcover ſo great genius, ſuch richneſs of expreſſion, ſuch pomp and variety of numbers, that they leave us equally full of regret and indignation, on account of the inferiority or rather great abſurdity of his other writings.

The very name of Rocheſter is offenſive to modeſt ears; yet does his poetry diſcover ſuch energy of ſtyle and ſuch poignancy of ſatyre, as give ground to imagine what ſo fine a genius, had he fallen in a more happy age and had followed better models, was capable of producing. The antient ſatyriſts often uſed great liberty in their expreſſions; but their freedom no more reſembles the licence of Rocheſter, than the nakedneſs of an Indian does that of a common proſtitute.

Wycherley was ambitious of the reputation of wit and libertiniſm; and he attained it: He was probably capable of reaching the fame of true comedy, and inſtructive ridicule. Otway had a genius finely turned to the pathetic; but he neither obſerves ſtrictly the rules of the drama, nor the rules, ſtill more eſſential, of propriety and decorum. By one ſingle piece the duke of Buckingham did both great ſervice to his age and honour to himſelf. The earls of Mulgrave, Dorſet, and Roſcommon, wrote in a good taſte; but their productions are either feeble or careleſs. The marqueſs of Halifax diſcovers a refined genius; and nothing but leiſure and an inferior ſtation ſeem wanting to have procured him great eminence in literature.

Of

Chap. II. 1689.

Of all the conſiderable writers of this age, Sir William Temple is almoſt the only one, who kept himſelf altogether unpolluted by that inundation of vice and licentiouſneſs, which overwhelmed the nation. The ſtyle of this author, tho' extremely negligent, and even mixed with foreign idioms, is agreeable and intereſting. That mixture of vanity, which appears in his works, is rather a recommendation to them. By means of it, we enter into acquaintance with the character of the author, full of honour and humanity; and fancy that we are engaged, not in the peruſal of a book, but in converſation with a companion.

Tho' Hudibras was publiſhed, and probably compoſed, during Charles the Second's reign, Butler may juſtly, as well as Milton, be thought to belong to the foregoing period. No compoſition abounds ſo much as Hudibras in ſtrokes of juſt and inimitable wit; yet are there many performances, which give as great or greater entertainment on the whole peruſal. The alluſions are often dark and far-fetched; and tho' ſcarce any author was ever able to expreſs his thoughts in ſo few words, he often employs too many thoughts on one ſubject, and thereby becomes prolix after an unuſual manner. It is ſurpriſing how much erudition Butler has introduced with ſo good a grace into a work of pleaſantry and humour: Hudibras is perhaps one of the moſt learned compoſitions, that is to be found in any language. The advantage, which the royal cauſe received from this poem, in expoſing the fanaticiſm and falſe pretences of the former parliamentary party, was prodigious. The King himſelf had ſo good a taſte as to be highly pleaſed with the merit of the work, and had even got a great part of it by heart: Yet was he either ſo careleſs in his temper, or ſo little endowed with the virtue of liberality, or, more properly ſpeaking, of gratitude, that he allowed the author, who was a man of virtue and probity, to live in obſcurity and die in want. Dryden is an inſtance of a negligence of the ſame kind. His Abſalom ſenſibly contributed to the victory, which the Tories obtained over the Whigs after the Excluſion-parliaments: Yet could not this merit, aided by his great genius, procure him an eſtabliſhment, which might exempt him from the neceſſity of writing for bread. Otway, tho' a profeſſed Royaliſt, could not even procure bread by his writings; and he had the ſingular fate of dying literally of hunger. Theſe incidents throw a great ſtain on the memory of Charles, who had diſcernment, loved genius, was liberal of money, but attained not the praiſe of true generoſity.

THE END.

INDEX.

N. B. The numerical letters direct to the volume, and the figures to the page.

A.

ABBY-LANDS —— the property of them confirmed to the King by parliament, iii. 234.

Abbot, archbiſhop, ſuſpended, v. 153. his death, 202.

Abbots —— ſeverely treated by H. VIII. iii. 234. are denied a ſeat in the houſe of peers, 237.

Abhorrers and petitioners, what, and how they commenced, vi. 315.

——— Abhorrers impriſoned, and why, 319.

Acca, daughter of Ælla King of the Deïri, her marriage, i. 18.

Acre, a fortreſs beſieged by the kings of France and England, i. 339. taken by them, 340.

Adelfrid, marries Acca, daughter of Ælla King of the Deïri, i. 18. becomes firſt King of Northumberland, ib. his diſquieted life, 19. and violent death, ib.

Adila, daughter of the Conqueror, her iſſue, i. 247.

Adrian, Emperor, builds a ſtrong rampart in Britain, i. 7.

——— choſen Pope, iii. 123. his conduct to the reformers, ib. he grants Ireland to Henry II. 300. is thoroughly reconciled to him, 305. confirms the grant of Ireland, ib.

Ælla, a Saxon chieftain, brings over an army to Britain, i. 16. his ſettlement in Suſſex, ib. he dies, 37. his poſterity holds his kingdom, till it is ſubjected to Weſſex, ib.

——— another Saxon chieftain, becomes King of Deïri, i. 18. the hiſtory of his kingdom, ib.

Agitators, form a military parliament, v. 419. terrify the King, 432. are called Levellers, 434. are forbid to meet, ib. diſſipated by Oliver Cromwel, 435. their pernicious principles, vi. 1. they are finally diſperſed, 9.

Agricola, Julius, made governor of Britain, i. 6. he conquers it all but Caledonia, 7.

Aix-la-chapelle, a treaty of peace concluded there, vi. 186.

Alaſco, John, brings a congregation of reformed into England, iii. 333. who are encouraged, ib.

Albany, duke, choſen regent of Scotland, iii. 99. his ingratitude to Lord Hume, 100. he reſides in France ſome years, 101. confuſions in Scotland during his abſence, ib. ſoon after his return, he declares war againſt England, 125. is forced to return to France, ib. returns to Scotland, and makes another fruitleſs attempt on England, 126. goes again to France, from whence he never returns, 127.

Albemarle, Earl, an account of his rebellion againſt H. III. ii. 8.

——— Duke, his character, vi. 130. he diſcovers Argyle's letters, 141. made an admiral, engages the Dutch fleet, 168. is beaten, 169. ſuccoured by Prince Rupert, 170. purſues the Dutch, 171.

Aldred, Archbiſhop of York, crowns William the Conqueror, i. 167. dies of grief, 183.

Ale, its price in the reign of H. III. ii. 55.

Alexander, pontiff of Rome, encourages the Norman invaſion, i. 133. his expectations from its ſucceſs, 181. he ſends a legate into England, 182. his legate's proceedings, ib.

Alexander and Victor, Popes, they occaſion a ſchiſm in the Church, i. 269. how regarded by the Kings of France and England, 270. the firſt is allowed to exerciſe his authority on England, 271. He annuls the conſtitutions of Clarendon, 279. grants to Henry II. a legatine commiſſion, with an exception, which renders it uſeleſs, 280. the reception which Henry's embaſſy met with from him, 285 how he honoured Becket, ib. he grants to Becket the legatine commiſſion, 287. ſends two legates to Pavia, where Henry reſides, ib. grants him a diſpenſation for the marriage of his third ſon Geoffrey, with the heireſs of Brittany, 288. endeavours a reconciliation with the King, 289. his adminiſtration in Rome,

Rome, 296. he is reconciled to the king, 297. canonizes Becket, ib.
Alexis, Commienus, Emperor of the Greeks, his policy, i. 220.
Alford, battle of, v. 395.
Alfred, natural brother of Egfrid, ſucceeds him in the united kingdom of Northumberland and Mercia, i. 48. he dies, 50.
Alfred is anointed by Leo III. i. 53. defeated by the Danes, 54. while he is treating with the Danes in England, another party of them lands, 55. his adventures under the habit of a peaſant, 56. he ſummons his ſubjects to a ſecret rendezvous, 57. his ſucceſs againſt the Danes, 58. he obtains of them to declare their converſion to Chriſtianity, ib. arms and regiſters his people, 59. rebuilds London and other ruined cities, ib. his care of the navy, 60. he diſtreſſes Haſtings a Dane, ib. his ſucceſs againſt the Danes, 61. and clemency, ib. his ſucceſs againſt both pyratical and ſettled Danes, 62. his character, 63. ſeveral of his wiſe laws, 64. his courts of juſtice, and their ſubordination, 65. his excellent body of laws, 66. ſuppoſed to be the foundation of the common law, ib. the expedients uſed by him to encourage learning, 67. the methods he took to convey moral leſſons, 68. his liberality to learned men, and ſkilled mechanics, ib. the elegancies of life, how brought to him, 69. his children, ib. a remarkable law of his relative to murder, 156.
Alfred, a conſiderable nobleman, his oath, in preſence of the Pope, i. 72. its amazing effect, ib.
Alfred, eldeſt ſon of Ethelred, is murdered by Earl Godwin, i. 111. his brother Henry eſcapes, ib.
Alfrick, his treachery, i. 93. he is truſted again, 94. his ſecond treachery, 100.
Algiers, peace with it, vi. 67.
Aliſon, his trial, v. 204.
Alnwick, battle of, i. 313.
Altar, why removed by the reformers, iv. 507.
Alva, Duke of, joins in a confederacy to extirpate the reformed, iv. 465. is ſent with an army into the low-countries, 534. his arbitrary and violent proceedings there, ib. in reſentment of an affront from Queen Elizabeth, he ſeizes and confiſcates the effects of the Engliſh merchants, 535. his tyranny becomes unſupportable, ib. he opens an intercourſe with the Queen of Scots, 536. agrees to a ſcheme for invading England, 537. his tyranny forces the provinces of Holland and Zealand to revolt, 548. he ſummons the Prince of Orange to appear before his tribunal, 549. confiſcates his poſſeſſions in the low-countries for contumacy, ib. but being finally repulſed, he leaves the low-countries with an execrable character, 550.
Amboyna, maſſacre there, v. 125.
Amerciaments and fines, how numerous in antient times, i. 416.
America, viſited by Sir Francis Drake, iv. 561. again, by the ſame gentleman, 588.
Amiens, a meeting of the ſtates of England and France there, ii. 40.
——— a treaty there, 326.
Anabaptiſts, many of them burnt for hereſy, iii. 230.
Angles, firſt named, i. 15.
Anglia, Eaſt, or Eaſt-Anglia. A kingdom eſtabliſhed in Britain, i. 17. united with Mercia, 33.
Anglo-Saxons, they are united under the name of England, i. 42. a kingdom of that name is erected by them in Britain, 46.
——— Norman government, its nature, i. 410. the king's power there, 411. the ſource of the Norman law, 412. its regulations with reſpect to appeals, ib. the king's conſtant revenues, 413. his other revenues, 414. his power in time of war, ib. his power reſpecting eſcheats, 415. reſpecting fines, forfeitures, and amerciaments, 416. his power relative to juſtice, 417. commerce or induſtry, of any ſort, ib. has various profits, 418. his protection, how obtained, ib. his uſual practices, when great inheritances are diſputed, 419. the authority of his edicts, 421.
Angus, Earl, marries the Queen dowager and regent of Scotland, iii. 99.
——— another, with his brother, joins the Engliſh army againſt the Scots, iii. 253. on his return to Scotland, he oppoſes cardinal Beaton, 256. and ſaves a Scots army, 266.
Anjou, Duke, commands the Catholicks againſt the Hugonots in France, iv. 530. defeats them at Jarnac, ib. a propoſal of marriage is made between him and Lady Elizabeth, princeſs of England, See *Henry*. he makes ſuit to Queen Elizabeth by his embaſſadors, 564. in perſon, ſecretly, 565. he is ſupplied by France with money, for protection of the ſtates in the Netherlands, 566. by England, for the ſame purpoſe, 567. he is choſen governor of the Netherlands by the States, ib. his renewed ſuit is oppoſed by the Queen's friends, 568. it is rejected by the Queen, 569. his death, ib.
Anlaff, rebels againſt Athelſtan, i. 72. flies into Scotland, 73. his ſtratagem to ſee his enemies camp, 74. eſcapes again into Scotland, ib.
Anne, of Cleves, married to Henry VIII. iii. 236. is diſliked by him, 237. divorced from him, 241. her indifference on that occaſion, ib.
Anne, Princeſs of England, married to prince George of Denmark, vi. 366. on the Prince of Orange's landing, ſhe flies from court to Nottingham, 426. where the gentry form a troop for her protection, ib.
Anſelm, a monk, promoted to the ſee of Canterbury, i. 214. his ſermons againſt modes, 215. he quarrels with the King, 216. his temporalities are ſeized, ib. he refuſes to do homage to Henry I. for his temporalities, 226. yet is courted by him, 227. their differences occaſion a meſſage to Rome, 232. the

quarrel

quarrel between the king and primate, encreaſes to ſuch a degree, that the primate leaves the kingdom, 233. on his return, he is careſſed by the king, 234. yet the quarrel continues, 235. it is compromiſed, 236.

Antwerp, great diſorders committed there by the proteſtants, iv. 534.

Apparel, laws regulating it, firſt known in England, ii. 239.

Appeals, how to be brought, by King Alfred's laws, i. 66. an alteration of the order in which they were to be exhibited, ii. 56.

——— to the Pope, are prohibited, 285. again permitted, 305.

Appeals, (of the nature of accuſations) prohibited to be proſecuted in parliament, ii. 274.

Archangel, a paſſage to it diſcovered, iv. 731.

Archy, the King's fool, a remarkable joke of his, v. 210.

Argyle, Earl, attends the Queen Regent, when oppoſing the reformers, iv. 420. adviſes her to an accommodation with them, 422. leaves her, and joins the reformers, 423.

——— his character, v. 225. he embraces the covenant, ib. flies from his army, 394. makes his court to the King, vi. 26. is ſentenced to die, 141. executed, ib.

Ariſtocracy, how interwoven with the Engliſh conſtitution, ii. 445.

Armada, invincible, fitted out in Spain, iv. 631. its ſailors, compared with thoſe of England, 632. its admirals die, when it is ready to ſail, 635. and others being appointed, it ſails, and meeting with a ſtorm, returns, ib. it ſails again, 636. arrives in the channel, 637. is put into confuſion by a ſtratagem of the Engliſh admiral, 638. returns homewards, 639. is overtaken by a ſtorm, ib.

Armagnacks, See *Orleans*.

Arminianiſm, its hiſtory, v. 38. its ſtate in the reign of Charles I. 184.

Armorica, ſhelters the diſtreſſed Britains, i. 14. who ſettle there, 15.

Armſtrong, Sir Thomas, his trial, vi. 363.

Army, its ſtate, while military tenures prevailed, ii. 84. how its then form came gradually into diſuſe, ib. how paid in Edward III's reign, ii. 239. in Henry I's reign, 321. its ſtate under James I. v. 121. from the reſtoration to the revolution, vi. 446.

——— parliamentary, fights at Edge-hill, v. 337. is beaten at Stratton, 344. fights at Lanſdown, 345. is beaten at Roundway down, ib. fights at Newbury, 354. at Marſton-moor, 370. again at Newbury, 373. its generals quarrel among themſelves, 374. its ſtate before the new model, 377. it is new modeled, 396. its officers preach, ib. it routs the royal army at Naſeby, 399. ruins its remains at Cheſter, 492. mutinies againſt the parliament, 418. ſets up a military parliament, 419. ſeizes the King at Holm-bay, 420. brings him to the head-quarters, ib. chuſes Oliver Cromwell commander in chief, 421. impeaches eleven members of the houſe of commons, 425. receives the excluded ſpeakers, 428. ſubdues the parliament, 429. reſtores the diſplaced ſpeakers, ib. brings the King to Hampton-court, 430. mutinies againſt its officers, 434. it is pacified by Oliver Cromwell, ib. beats the Scots army under Hamilton, 446. exacts loans, 447. quells inſurrections, ib. purges the houſe of commons, 449. produces the King before his judges, 453. attends his execution, 457. its ſtate at the commencement of the Republick, vi. 2. it enters Scotland, headed by Oliver Cromwell, 24. beats the Scots at Dunbar, 25. routs them at Worceſter, 29. is diſbanded, 136.

Army, royal, in England. *See* Charles, Prince of Wales, ſon of James I.

——— royal, in Scotland, defeats the covenanters at Perth, v. 293. near Aberdeen, ib. at Inverary, 394. takes Dundee, ib. withdraws to the mountains, 395. vanquiſhes at Inverneſs, ib. and at Alford, ib. marches ſouthwards, 403. beats the covenanters at Kilſyth, ib. is routed at Philiphaugh, and flies to the mountains, ib. lays down its arms, 412. reaſſembled, it keeps in the mountains, vi. 27. is ſubdued by Monk, 36.

——— Scotch, in England, defeats the Engliſh at Newburn upon Tyne, v. 240. levies contributions till it is paid by the Engliſh parliament, 255. diſbanded, 282. re-enters England, 367. joins Fairfax, 368. in conjunction, with him, beats the royaliſts at Marſton-moor, 370. takes York, 371. receives the King at Newark, 410. delivers him up to the parliament's army, 415. leaves England, ib. re-enters it under the marquis of Hamilton, 446. is routed, ib. re-enters England with King Charles II. at their head, vi. 28. is routed at Worceſter, 29.

Arran, Earl, diſappointed of the regency of Scotland, by cardinal Beaton, iii. 255. cabals againſt him, and is made regent, 256. loſes his credit by indolence, 261. his puſillanimity, 266. he prepares to oppoſe Engliſh invaders, 301. the diſpoſition of his army, 302. he is defeated, 303. flies with the Queen Dowager to Sterling, 304. receives ſuccours from France, 308. gets a penſion from that court, and the title of Duke of Chatelrault, 309. is prevailed on to reſign the regency to the Queen Dowager, 395.

——— ſon of the former, arrives in Scotland from France, iv. 424.

Arras, congreſs there, ii. 348. treaty there, 349.

Array, commiſſion of, firſt granted, ii. 321. commiſſions of, granted by King Charles I. v. 325.

Arthur, a poſthumous ſon of Geoffrey, third ſon of Henry II. is inveſted in the dutchy of Britany under the guardianſhip of his grandfather, i. 321.

———, prince of Wales, ſon of Henry VII. married to Catharine of Arragon, iii. 53. he ſoon afterwards dies, 54. See *Catharine*.

Articles, lords of, aboliſhed in Scotland, v. 283. reſtored, vi. 140.

———, ſix, of religion, eſtabliſhed by the parliament in the reign of Henry VIII. iii. 230. a detail of them, ib. 231. great numbers impriſoned by reaſon of not aſſenting to theſe articles, 234. and ſet at liberty by Cromwell's means, ib. The law executed with rigour on diſſenters from theſe articles, 242. mitigated, 263.

Artois, Robert, or Robert D'Artois, his ſhameful crime, ii. 170. his arrival in England occaſions a war between France and England, 171. he is ſent to the relief of the counteſs of Mountfort, 188. dies of a wound, ib.

Arundel, earl, is condemned by the houſe of peers, ii. 262. executed, ib.

Aſcham, the commonwealth's envoy at Madrid, murdered, vi. 65.

Aſcue, Anne, her cruel ſufferings for denying the real preſence, iii. 272.

Aſhley, lord, one of the cabal, vi. 200. his character, ib.

Aſke, Mr. heads an inſurrection againſt Henry VIII. iii. 215. is taken, condemned, and executed, 218.

Aſſaſſins, their prince, his name and authority, i. 342. he cauſes Conrade, marquis of Monferrat, to be aſſaſſinated, 343.

Aſſembly, general, in Scotland, its proceedings, iv. 570. another, v. 223. another, 224. another, 359. another, 439. its proceedings, 440.

——— of divines at Weſtminſter, v. 383.

Athelſtan, eldeſt ſon of Egbert, obtains of his father a part of his dominions, i. 48. and dies in his lifetime, 50.

———, natural ſon and ſucceſſor of Edward the Elder, his liberality to the church, i. 72. he expells his brothers, 73. ſubdues Scotland, ib. his death, 75. his laws, 149.

Athelwold, his paſſion for Elfrida, i. 87. its effects, 88.

Athenians, their politeneſs, v. 400.

Attainder, a ſevere law about it, iii. 233.

Aubigny, count, created earl of Lennox. See *Lennox*.

Audley, lord, heads an inſurrection againſt Henry VII. iii. 45. his party is defeated, 47. and he is taken and executed, ib.

———, Sir Thomas, the ſeals are put into his hands, iii. 173. he preſides as lord high ſteward at the trial of the marquis of Exeter and his accomplices, 228.

Augſburgh, league there, vi. 414.

Auguſtin, a monk, arrives in Britain, i. 24. his correſpondence with pope Gregory, 25. his orders from Rome, 26.

Auguſtine friars, their church granted to German lutherans, iii. 333.

Auras, battle of, ii. 223.

Auſtria, duke of, Leopold, arreſts Richard I. ii. 345. impriſons and loads him with irons, 346. produces him before the diet of Ratiſbon, in order to his being tried there at the ſuit of the French King, 348. is ſtruck with remorſe for his injuſtice to that prince, 351. in his laſt will orders the unpaid part of the ranſom to be remitted, and the hoſtages to be ſet at liberty, 352.

Auvergne, a general council of Chriſtendom convened there, i. 210.

Avſa, daughter of the earl of Gloceſter, an heireſs, is married to prince John, i. 331. divorced from him, 359.

Aſcue, Sir George, reduces the American colonies, vi. 35. fights De Ruyter, 41.

Azincour, battle of, ii. 309. compared with thoſe of Creſſy and Poitiers, 310.

B.

BABINGTON's conſpiracy, iv. 595. how diſcovered, 596. it is aſſented to by Queen Mary, 597. the conſpirators are ſeized and executed, 598.

Bacon, Sir Nicolas, made lord keeper on the acceſſion of Queen Elizabeth, iv. 406. one of the commiſſioners in the conferences concerning Queen Mary, 495. in quality of lord keeper he tells the parliament in the Queen's name, that they are forbid to meddle in affairs of ſtate, 521.

—— Sir Francis, ſon of the former, diſplays the undutiful expreſſions contained in Eſſex's letters, iv. 689. draws up a narrative of the earl's examination in council, 690. reads it to the Queen, 691. his ſevere ſpeech on his trial, 699. his anecdote concerning torture, 719. his humanity, 720. his fall after being made chancellor, v. 76. his ſentence, 77. his character, 131.

Badelſmere, lord, puniſhed for inſolence and brutal cruelty, ii. 139. tried and executed, 141.

Badily defeated, vi. 41.

Badon, battle there, i. 17.

Baillie of Jerviſwood, his trial, vi. 365. ſentence and execution, 366.

Bainham, James, tortured and burnt for hereſy, iii. 188.

Baldwin, earl of Flanders, kindly receives Toſti, elder brother of Harold, i. 127. encourages the Norman invaders, 132. protects King Henry's nephew, William, 238. is ſlain, ib.

Baliol, Edward, ſon and heir of John, late King of Scotland, is brought from France to England, ii. 163. The progreſs of his invaſion of Scotland, 164. he is crowned at Scone, 165. loſes his kingdom by a quick revolution, 166. is once more acknowledged King by a Scots parliament, 167. again expelled, 168.

Ball, John, a ſeditious preacher, his character, ii. 245. he ſcatters the ſparks of ſedition, ib.

Ballard, John, inſtigated to aſſaſſinate Queen Elizabeth, iv. 594. See *Babington*.

Bannockburn, battle of, ii. 135.

Barebones Praiſe-God, his parliament, vi. 50. his hiſtory, 51. the acts of his parliament, ib. it reſigns its authority, 53.

v.6

INDEX.

Bari, a general council of Chriſtendom aſſembled there, i. 216. its proceedings, ib.

Barnardiſton, Sir Samuel, fined, vi. 364.

Barons, their courts, how conſtituted, i. 403. their legal power therein, ib. the regard they paid, and why, to the ſciences, 404. they are, and why, conſtituent members of a feudal parliament, 406. an account of the component members of a barony, 407. the ſtate of a great baron, 421. his oppreſſive power, 422. their ſentiments of government, ii. 3. their anſwer to Henry III. when ſummoned to parliament, 13. their attendance in parliament armed, ib. they complain of their King's attachment to foreigners, 14. and of his partial preference of them, 15. and of their proud behaviour, 16. twenty-four are empowered in parliament to reform the ſtate, 28. their proceedings, 29. they cauſe the King's half-brothers to be baniſhed, ib. their tyrannical acts, 30. they loſe their popularity, 31. they publiſh a new code of ordinances, 32. Their breach of truſt becomes apparent, 33. the adminiſtration is wreſted by the King out of their hands, 35. they acquieſce after one effort, 36. headed by Leiceſter they commence hoſtilities, 38. ſubmit to the arbitration of the French King, 39. reject his award, 40. are unſucceſsful in war againſt the King, 41. give him battle at Lewes, 42. take the King and his brother priſoners, 43. after the victory they renew the ſubmiſſion to the French King, 43. are tyrannized over by their leader, the earl of Leiceſter, 44. the proceedings of the rebel barons aſſembled in parliament, 45. another rebel parliament, to which two knights of the ſhire, and two deputies from each burrough are ſummoned, 46. the arbitrary proceedings of this parliament, 47. the revolting barons are ſubdued by the prince at Eveſham, 50. how the ſeats of barons in parliament were held after this battle, 87. are diſcontented at Gavaſton's power, 127. come armed to parliament, 128. they baniſh Gavaſton in parliament, and exact an oath of him never to return, 129. a junto of barons is, in another armed parliament, aſſigned to enact ordinances for the good of the ſtate, 130. they raiſe an army, 131. cauſe Gavaſton's head to be ſtruck off, tho' a priſoner by capitulation, 132. they are pardoned, ib. the power of the barons declines, and why, 281. their antient ſtate, how gradually changed, 444. their power, how ſubverted, iv. 737.

Baronets, titles of, ſold, v. 40.

Baronies, great, how divided, ii. 86. their influence in the ſtate, ib.

Barnes, Dr. burnt for hereſy, iii. 242. his reſolution on that occaſion, ib.

Barnet, battle of, ii. 408.

Barton. See *Kent*.

Barton, a Scotſman, turns pirate, iii. 83. goes out on a cruiſe againſt the Engliſh, ib. is killed, ib.

Baſilides, John, Czar, how and why favourable to Engliſh merchants, iv. 732.

Baſſardy, law of, ii. 54.

Baſſwick, Dr. tried, v. 206. his ſentence reverſed, 253.

Battle, trial by it, how general, i. 317.

Battles, at Aberdeen, v. 393. Alford, v. 395. Alnwick, i. 303. Auras, ii. 223. Azincour, ii. 309. Badon, i. 17. Bannockburn, ii. 135. Barnet, ii. 408. Baugé, battle of, ii. 317. Blackheath, iii. 46. Blorcheath, i. 376. Boſworth, iii. 1. Bothwell-bridge, vi. 309. Bovines, i. 381. Bradocdown, v. 343. Charmouth, i. 47. Cherington, v. 368. Conſarbick, vi. 227. Crecy, ii. 197. Cropey-bridge, v. 372. Dunbar, vi. 25. Dunes, vi. 84. Edgehill, v. 337. Erne-river, ii. 165. Eveſham, ii. 49. Floudon, iii. 92. Guinegate, iii. 89. Haſtings, i. 138. Hexham, ii. 391. Homeldon, ii. 287. Horncaſtle, v. 356. Jarnac, iv. 530. Inverneſs, v. 305. Kilſyth, v. 403. Lanſdown, v. 345. Leipſick, v. 190. Lewes, ii. 42. Lutzen, v. 191. Marſtonmoor, v. 370. Methuen, ii. 120. Newburn upon Tyne, v. 240. Newbury, firſt battle of, v. 354. ſecond there, 373. Otterburn, ii. 25. Pavia, iii. 136. Perth, v. 393. Philiphaugh, v. 403. Pinkey, iii. 302. Poictiers, ii. 212. Prague, v. 71. Preſton, v. 446. Seneffe, v. 241. St. Albans, firſt battle of, ii. 374. ſecond there, 381. St. Omer, vi. 252. Touton, ii. 386. Verneuil, ii. 329. Wakefield, ii. 380. Warſau, vi. 345. Worceſter, v. 29.

Baugé, battle of, ii. 317.

Bayonne, a league formed there to extirpate the Hugonots of France, iv. 529.

Beaton, cardinal, head of the catholicks in Scotland, iii. 255. is ſaid to have forged a will of James V. appointing him and ſome others regents, ib. he is deprived of the regency by the Earl of Arran, and committed to cuſtody, 256. procures his liberty, and cabals againſt Arran, ib. applies to France for aſſiſtance, 257. his violent perſecution of Wiſhart, 298. who foretels his downfal, ib. the cardinal is murdered in his caſtle, 299. his aſſaſſins protected by Henry VIII. hold out the caſtle for ſome time, ib. but are at laſt forced to ſurrender, 300.

Beauchamp of Holt, Lord, condemned by the houſe of peers, ii. 255. he was the firſt peer that was promoted to a ſeat in the houſe of lords by patent, 292.

Becket, St. *See* Thomas a Becket.

Bedford, Duke, ſon of Henry IV. ii. 297. appointed regent of France by his brother on his death-bed, 319. by the parliament, appointed guardian of the kingdom, 323. his character, 324. he marries a princeſs of the houſe of Burgundy, 325. makes an alliance at Amiens with the dukes of Burgundy and Brittany, 326. he gains great advantages over the French, 327. further ſucceſſes, 328. defeats the French and Scots forces at Verneuil, 329. compoſes differences between the duke of Gloceſter and the biſhop of Winchеſter, 331. obliges the duke of Brittany to renounce his new alliance with France, 344. is obliged to raiſe the ſiege of Lagni, 347.

loſes

loſes the alliance of the Duke of Burgundy, 348. his death and character, 349.
Bedloe's narrative, vi. 286. its effects, 287. his death, 319.
Beer, an exciſe on it firſt granted, v. 365.
Bell, Robert, a member of the houſe of commons, his motion againſt monopolies, iv. 524. he is ſeverely reprimanded for it by the council, ib.
Benedictine monks, a deſcription and hiſtory of them, i. 77. they are expelled out of their monaſteries, 89. ſeveral ſynods are called concerning them, 90.
Benevolences, or loans, firſt levied, ii. 282. juſtified by a ſtatute, iii. 41. how demanded in the reign of Queen Elizabeth, iv. 721. in the reign of James I. v. 96. how enforced in the reign of Charles I. 152. refuſers to comply are impriſoned by order of council, 153. a trial enſues, 154. the judgment of the court, ib. the effect of theſe proceedings on the nation, 155. condemned by the houſe of commons, 164. but ſoon practiſed by them, 255. and by their army, 447.
Berengaria, a princeſs of the houſe of Navarre, is married to Richard I. at Cyprus, i. 338. ſhe attends him to the holy-land, ib.
Berkſtead, his trial, vi. 149.
Bernard, St. preaches a new cruſade, i. 259. divers Engliſh noblemen engage in it, ib.
Berner, Sir James, is condemned to death by the houſe of peers, ii. 255.
Bernicia, the antient name of Northumberland, i. 18.
Bertha, Queen of Kent, her zeal for chriſtianity, i. 22.
Bigod, earl marſhal, ſecretly meets with the high conſtable and other barons, to conſult for the good of the ſtate, ii. 27. has a great hand in making the proviſions of Oxford, 28. joins Prince Edward in ſupport of the royal cauſe, 39. on the loſs of the battle of Lewes, he flies beyond the ſeas, 43. on his return, a violent contention happens between the king, earl marſhal, and the conſtable, 101. the earl marſhal and high conſtable, frame a remonſtrance, mentioning divers breaches of the great charter, 102. they obtain the great charter, and another called the leſſer charter, to be confirmed by the parliament, and by the king, then in Flanders, 103. upon the king's return, they obtain a ſolemn confirmation of theſe charters in parliament, with other ſecurities, 104.
Bible, a tranſlation of it made by Tindal, promotes the reformation, iii. 187. many of them are burnt in Cheapſide, ib. a new tranſlation of it is propoſed by the convocation, 200. arguments, for and againſt tranſl ting it, 201. the tranſlation is finiſhed, and printed in three years, 202. is ordered to be cautiouſly uſed, 219. permitted in every family, 234. propoſals for amending the tranſlation, 250. the uſe of it is reſtrained, 251.
Bilney, Thomas, a prieſt, embraces the reformation, iii. 188. his fortitude in ſuffering, ib.
Biſhops, a conſtituent part of a feudal parliament, i. 406. how oppreſſed by the court of Rome, ii. 22. the king is allowed to create them by letters patent, ii. 305. complain of want of power, 329. a reſolution is taken to deprive thoſe that are catholics, 330. many of them are deprived, 331. the power of biſhops is increaſed by the parliament, 339. they decline to be preſent at the coronation of Queen Elizabeth, iv. 407. regulations, relative to them, are made, 410. on Queen Elizabeth's acceſſion, moſt of them are degraded for non-compliance, 412. their votes in the houſe of peers are aboliſhed, v. 317. reſtored, vi. 144.
Biſhops, twelve, their proteſtation, v. 308. they are impeached, ib.
——— ſix, committed by the privy council, vi. 401. tried in the king's bench, 408. acquitted, 409.
Blackheath, battle of, iii. 46.
Blake, admiral, purſues Prince Rupert, vi. 34. fights Tromp, 40. takes and diſperſes the herring buſſes, 41. fights De Ruyter near the Goodwin ſands, ib. beats Tromp in the channel, 42. ſeizes a ſquadron of French ſhips, 64. terrifies the Duke of Tuſcany, 67. compels the Dey of Algiers to make peace, ib. takes two Spaniſh galleons, 69. burns a Spaniſh fleet, 70. his death and character, ib.
Blood, his conſpiracy againſt Ormond, vi. 207. his attempt to ſteal the regalia, 208. he is pardoned, ib. and becomes a favourite, 209.
Bloreheath, battle of, ii. 376.
Boadicea, Queen of the Iceni, hiſtory of her, i. 6.
Bockland, what, i. 162.
Bohemia, its blind king appears in the army of the French king, at the battle of Crecy, ii. 197. his behaviour, and fate, in the battle, 199. the honour thence accruing to the Princes of Wales, ib. its ſtate before, and when the elector Palatine of the Rhine became its king, v. 68. his acceſſion, 69. the kingdom is ſubdued by the Emperor, 71.
Bohun, high-conſtable, he ſecretly meets with divers barons, to conſult for the ſafety of the kingdom, ii. 27. His confederates obtain the proviſions of Oxford to be made, 28. he joins Prince Edward in the royal cauſe, 39. a violent altercation happens between the king and him, and the earl marſhal, 101. he embraces Lancaſter's party againſt Gavaſton, 131.
Boleyn, Anne, her hiſtory, and introduction to the court of England, iii. 161. the king ſets his affections on her, ib. ſhe undermines Wolſey, ib. is created Marchioneſs of Pembroke, and privately married to the king, 173. becomes ſoon pregnant, 174. her marriage is confirmed by the archbiſhop of Canterbury, 175. her coronation and delivery, ib. ſhe loſes the king's favour, 202. an account of her accuſers, and of the crimes with which ſhe is charged, 203. ſhe is ſent to the Tower, 204. her conceſſions and forlorn ſtate, ib. her affecting letter to the king, 205. her trial and condemnation, 207. her execution,

v.6

execution, and mean burial, 208. ſhe is attainted, together with her accomplices, 210. and her daughter is declared illegitimate, ib.
Bolton Caſtle, Queen Mary is confined there, iv. 492. carried from thence to Fotheringay caſtle, 599.
Bombay, acquired by England, vi. 149.
Bonner, biſhop, deprived of his ſee, and committed for denying the real preſence, iii. 317. reſtored on the acceſſion of Queen Mary, 352. employed to aſſiſt Gardiner in perſecuting the proteſtants, 378. his zeal and cruelty in that employment, ib. he degrades Cranmer at Oxford, with joy and exultation, 389. is ſlighted by Queen Elizabeth, at her acceſſion, and deſpiſed by all men, iv. 404.
Boniface VIII. his character, iv. 98. his bull, 99. its effects in England, ib. he abſolves Edward from his oaths to abſolve the characters, 105. writes to him in behalf of the Scots, 113. his interpoſition for the Scots, proves unſucceſsful, 114. he obtains the firſt fruits in England, diſpenſes with Gavaſton's oath, to abjure the realm for ever, 129.
Booth, Sir George, his inſurrection quelled, vi. 49.
Boſworth-field, battle of, ii. 438. its effect, iii. 1.
Bothwell, Earl, becomes a favourite of Queen Mary of Scotland, iv. 469. procures liberty to the baniſhed lords to return, ib. his character, 473. the ſuſpicions he falls under, on account of his great intereſt with the Queen, ib. and differences with Earl Murray, ib. he is ſuppoſed to be concerned in the murder of Darnly, 474. accuſed by the Earl of Lennox, tried and acquitted, 475. an aſſociation is formed to protect him, 476. Recommended, and why, by the nobility to Queen Mary, as a fit huſband, ib. he ſeizes the Queen, and carries her to Dunbar, where he is ſaid to have raviſhed her, 477. obtains a pardon for all former crimes, ib. and a ſpeedy divorce from his wife in two different courts, 478. conducts the Queen to Edinburgh, where the bans of marriage with her are publiſhed, ib. is married to the Queen by a proteſtant biſhop, 479. attempts to get the young prince into his power, 481. worſted by the forces of the confederated nobility, ib. he flies to the Orkneys, 482. his profligate life, and miſerable death in Denmark, ib.
——— another, a nobleman, deſcended from a natural ſon of King James V. how, and wherefore patronized by Queen Elizabeth, iv. 660.
——— bridge, battle of, vi. 309.
Bouchain, taken by the French king, vi. 249.
Boulogne, Count of Euſtace, murders a townſman of Dover, i. 117. engages under the banner of William, Duke of Normandy, 134. foments an inſurrection againſt him, 172. joins in an inſurrection againſt Robert, Duke of Normandy, 204.
——— Count of, Matthew, commences hoſtilities againſt Henry II. i. 309. is mortally wounded, ib.
——— a city, beſieged and taken by Henry VIII. iii. 265. the French attempting to retake it, are repulſed, 323, 324. it is reſtored to France for a ſum of money, 330.
Bovines, battle of, i. 381.
Boyd, Lord, one of Queen Mary's commiſſioners, appointed to confer with thoſe of Queen Elizabeth, iv. 492.
Brabançons, what, i. 308. the original of a new ſort of armies, ib.
Bradockdown, battle of, v. 343.
Brandenburgh, elector of, takes party with the ſtates, vi. 227. commands the German troops, and is chaſed from Colonar by Turenne, 241. beats the Swedes, then allies of France, 247. and is included in the treaty of Nimeguen, 264.
Bread, aſſize of, firſt ſettled, ii. 55.
Breda, treaty there, vi. 176.
Brehan, law, aboliſhed in Ireland, v. 40.
Bretigni, in the Chartraine, peace there made between England and France, ii. 221.
Bribery, firſt introduced into England, iii. 366.
Briſtol, city, taken by Prince Rupert, v. 348. retaken by Fairfax, 401.
——— Earl, ſent to Spain, v. 87. takes his leave of the King of Spain, 101. returns, 102. is not ſummoned to parliament, till the peers interpoſe in his behalf, 145.
Britain, and Britains, their antient ſtate, i. 2. their religion, 3. Cæſar lands there, ib. how it is regarded by his firſt ſucceſſor, 5. Suetonius Paulinus, made governor, ib. his adminiſtration, 6. the government devolves on Agricola. See *Agricola*. Boadicea, Queen of the Iceni, conquered, ib. it is all ſubdued except Caledonia, 7. Adrian's wall there built and improved, ib. it is deſerted by the Romans, 10. by Vortigern's advice, the Britains apply to the Saxons, 11. are aided by Saxons, 13. betrayed by them, ib. ſheltered in Armorica, 14. they ſettle there, 15. make war with the Weſt-Saxons, 16. are defeated in battle, 17. their eccleſiaſtical government, 43.
Britanny, its Duke, Conan yields Nantz to Henry II. i. 267 dies, 268. the dutchy is ſeized by Henry II. and allotted for his third ſon Geoffry, 306. the army of its nobles is defeated by Henry II. 310. its Duke, Arthur, nephew of Richard I. is declared his ſucceſſor, 356. but ſet aſide by John, Richard's brother, ib. his cauſe is favoured by the French King, 357. deſerted by him, 358. a commotion is made in his favour, 359. how far ſucceſsful, and what aſſiſtance, 360. he is made a priſoner by King John, 361. murdered by him, 362. the dutchy obeys Alice, a younger daughter of Conſtantia, 362. vigorouſly promotes the French King's intereſt againſt King John, 368. Charles of Blois, becomes Duke of Britanny in right of his wife, daughter and ſole heireſs of the laſt duke, ii. 185. great diſtractions follow, by the ambition of the count of Mountfort, ib. his ſon is acknowledged duke, and gets quiet poſſeſſion, 221. the Duke of Britanny enters into an alliance

alliance with the Dukes of Bedford and Burgundy againſt France, 326. withdraws himſelf from that alliance, 331. and enters into connexions with Charles the French king, 332. at the head of a powerful army, invades Normandy, 358. its ſtate, during the reign of Henry VII. iii. 20. it is invaded by the French, 21. feebly ſupported by England, 26. annexed to the French crown, 29. the Spaniards land there to ſupport the league in France, iv. 650. are drove out of it by Engliſh troops ſent over by Queen Elizabeth, to aid the French king, 661.

Brithnot, Duke of Eſſex, ſlain by the Danes, i. 93.

Bruce, Robert, claims the crown of Scotland, ii. 77. acknowledges Edward's right of ſuperiority over Scotland, 78. his claim to the Scots crown is rejected by Edward's award, 79.

——— Robert, his ſon and ſucceſſor to his pretenſions, reſolves to relieve Scotland, ii. 117. eſcapes into Scotland, 118. For the reſt, ſee *Scotland*.

Buchanan, George, is appointed to aſſiſt in the conferences concerning Queen Mary, iv. 492.

Buckingham, Duke, becomes head of a party at court, ii. 419. joins the duke of Gloceſter, 421. promiſes to ſupport him in all his enterprizes, 424. harangues the citizens of London on the duke's title to the crown, 427. the ridiculous farce he acts with the duke, in preſence of the mayor, in order to perſuade him to accept of the royal dignity, 428. how rewarded by the duke of Gloceſter, when king, 430. he rebels, and is executed, 434.

Buckingham, Duke, incurs the diſpleaſure of cardinal Wolſey, iii. 111. is tried, and executed, 115.

——— another, his character, v. 89. he obtains leave to go to Spain with the Prince, 91. ſets out, 92. returns, 95. lays a narrative of the marriage treaty before the parliament, 97. falls under the diſpleaſure of the houſe of commons, 141. is impeached, 145. choſen chancellor of the Univerſity of Cambridge, 147. makes love to the Queen of France, 157 is made commander in chief of the fleet and army ſent to the relief of Rochel, 158. defeated, ib. ſent again, 177. murdered, ib.

——— adviſes the King to accept of the Scots offers, vi. 15. attends him in Scotland, 27. his character, 200. he becomes a member of the cabal, ib. is ſent to France, 205. ſuſpected of encouraging Blood, 207. impeached, 235. diſgraced, 242. ſent to the Tower, 251. releaſed, 252. his character as an author, 452.

Burdet, Thomas, his crime, iv. 416.

Burgundy, Duke, diviſions between his family and that of Orleans, are fomented by Henry IV. of England, ii. 292. Both families are aſſiſted with men by that prince, ib. the duke of Burgundy cauſes the duke of Orleans to be aſſaſſinated, 303. wars are carried on very violently between theſe two families, 304. Burgundy expelled France, ſecretly ſolicits the aid of Henry V. of England, 317. aſſiſted by the Queen of France, he gains great ſucceſſes, 311. his party butchers great numbers of the Armagnacs in Paris, 312. agrees to a treaty and interview with the dauphin, 313. is aſſaſſinated by the dauphin's partizans, 314. the young duke of Burgundy concludes a treaty with Henry of England at Troye, 315. his friendſhip is courted by the duke of Bedford, regent of England, 325. a treaty of alliance is concluded between the dukes of Burgundy, Bedford, and Brittany, 326. the duke of Burgundy is diſguſted at the duke of Gloceſter's letters and pretenſions, 330. reſolves to reſume his natural connexions with his family and country, 331. recalls his troops from the ſiege of Orleans, 335. attends a congreſs, in order to a reconciliation with Charles the French king, 348. enters into a treaty with him againſt England, 349. fruitleſsly inveſts Calais, 351. his ſon Charles enters into an alliance with Edward IV. of England, 396. how he receives the news of Edward's ill fortune, 404. his politic conduct thereon, 405. He ſecretly aids the exiled king, 406. forms a league with him, after his reſtoration, againſt France, 410. but brings him no aſſiſtance during the invaſion of France, concerted between them, 411. his death and character, 414. the effect of his death, 415.

Burgundy, dutcheſs of, her intrigues againſt Henry VII. iii. 15. ſhe ſends forces to invade England, 16. hatches the ſcheme of Perkin Warbeck's impoſture, 34. openly avows his intereſt, 35.

Burleigh, Lord, the Queen by him, as lord keeper, expreſſes her diſpleaſure at the commons, for meddling with her prerogative, iv. 641. He adviſes to frugal meaſures, 662. becomes Eſſex's rival, 672. his death, and laſt act in affairs of ſtate, 675. one of his ſpeeches preſerved, 722. his computation of the Queen's gifts to Eſſex, 730. the extraordinary number of his ſervants, 735.

Burly, Sir Simon, his hiſtory, ii. 255. he is condemned by the Peers, 256. and executed, notwithſtanding of the Queen's interceſſion for him on her knees, ib.

Burrows, their ſtate at the conqueſt, i. 409. the rank of their burgeſſes, by the antient Engliſh feudal law, 410. how kept in perpetual dependance, 414. by what means protected, 417. deputies from them, firſt, and why called to parliament, ii. 46. when erected by patent, 89. and enjoined to ſend deputies to parliament, 90. the influence and character of thoſe deputies, 91. how ranked at their firſt appearance in parliament, ib. their conſideration encreaſes, 92. a diſquiſition into the antiquities of ſeats of burgeſſes in Parliament, 94.

C.

CABAL, their character, vi. 200. their council's, 201. their prepoſterous ſchemes, 236.

Cabot's trial, vi. 49.

Cabot,

v.6

Cabot, Sebaſtian, ſent by Henry VIII. diſcovers America, iii 66.
Cade, John, in Kent aſſumes the name of Mortimer, ii. 366. an account of his inſurrection, 367.
Cadiz, taken and plundered by the Engliſh, iv. 665.
Cæſar, Julius, invades Britain, i. 4. he leaves it, ib.
Caſars, four ſucceeding, their opinions and tranſactions in Britain, i. 5.
Calais, beſieged by Edward III. ii. 200. a treaty of ſurrender is propoſed, 202. it is ſurrendered, 203. the double treachery of the governor appointed by Edward, 204. it is ceded by treaty to England, 221. the annual expence of keeping it, 322. beſieged by the French, 350. taken by them, iii. 393, 394. demanded back in the ſubſequent treaty, but refuſed, 504.
Caledonia, alone withſtands the Roman arms, i. 7.
Calixtus II. Pope, calls a general council at Rheims, i. 238. his character of Henry I. 239. his differences with him, 243. his political treatment of princes, 244.
Cambden, John, his character, v. 132.
Cambridge, Trinity-college there, founded by Henry VIII. iii. 286.
Campeggio, the pope's legate, joined with Wolſey, for trial of the king's marriage, iii. 155. his artful and double dealing in that affair, 156—159. he is deprived of his biſhopric in England, 178.
Canaries, a ſea-fight there, vi. 70.
Canon laws, a body of them ordered to be prepared, iii. 329. introduced into Scotland, vi. 218.
Canterbury, the canons of Chriſt-church there, their extraordinary conduct on the death of their primate, i. 368. its conſequences at Rome, 369. another diſputed election there, ii. 18.
Canute the Great, ſon and ſucceſſor of Sweyn, harraſſes England, i. 103. fights ſeveral battles with Edmond Ironſide, 104. makes peace with him, 105. after his death, obtains the crown of England by a decree of the nobles, ib. his adminiſtration, 106. He marries Emma, widow of Ethelred, and ſiſter of Richard of Normandy, 107. makes a voyage to Denmark, ib. defeats the king of Sweden there, 108. conquers Norway, ib. undertakes an expedition into Scotland, 109. makes the Scots king do him homage for the county of Cumberland, 110. dies, ib.
Carew's trial, vi. 135.
Carliſle, Mary Queen of Scots firſt confined there, after her eſcape into England, iv. 490.
——biſhop of, his ſpeech in parliament, when the charge againſt Richard II. is exhibited there, ii. 271. he is ſent a priſoner to the Abbey of St. Albans, 272.
Caſſils, earl, taken priſoner at the battle of Solway, iii. 254. releaſed on conditions, 255. ſurrenders himſelf again, and is careſſed by the king, 257.
Caſimir, prince, heads an army of Germans, to aſſiſt an army of Hugonots in France, iv. 546, 547.
Caſtille, its king, Peter, his character, ii 224. he is obliged, by a ſucceſsful rebellion, to take ſhelter in Guienne, 225. the prince of Wales goes with him, quells the rebellion, 226. and reſtores the baniſhed king, ib. he is afterwards murdered by his own brother, 227. its king, Philip, lands in England, iii. 57. his entertainment from, and converſation with Henry VII. 58. he invites over, and obtains a pardon for the earl of Suffolk, 59.
Caſtlemain, earl, his trial, vi. 138.
Catharine of Arragon, married to Arthur, Prince of Wales, i. 53. after his death, contracted to his brother Henry, 54. married to him, 72. doubts raiſed concerning the validity of this marriage, 149, 150. ſhe ſolicits the aſſiſtance of the emperor her nephew, 157. her pathetic ſpeech to the king before the court of delegates, ib. 158. ſhe refuſes to anſwer that court, and is declared contumacious, ib. refuſes to anſwer the arch-biſhop's court, and is again declared contumacious, 175. inſiſts on the ceremonial of a Queen, ib. her marriage is confirmed at Rome, 177. her death, 195. and affecting letter to the king, ib.
——— Princeſs of France, is married to Henry V. ii. 316. after his death, marries a Welch gentleman, 329. is the foundation of the grandeur of that houſe, ib.
——— of Portugal, is married to King Charles II. of England, vi. 148. her dowry, ib.
Catholicks. See *Proteſtants*, *Hugonots*, *Reformers*.
Cattle, their value before the conqueſt, i. 161. in the reign of Richard I. ii. 56.
Cavendiſh, Thomas, his fortunate expedition to the South Seas, iv. 627. his triumphant return, 628.
Ceaulin, King of Weſſex, defeats Ethelbert in battle, i. 20. is defeated by him, 21. dies, ib.
Cecil, Sir Robert, an enemy of the Earl of Eſſex, made maſter of the wards, iv. 685. its effect on that nobleman, 686. Libels againſt him, are diſperſed by Eſſex's party, 688. he treats Eſſex, when examined in council, with regard and humanity, 690. ſhews the Queen a letter from Sir Walter Raleigh, when under diſgrace, 693. he becomes unpopular, by diſcovering his inclinations for peace with Spain, 695. A remarkable paſſage in a memorial drawn by him, 717. his account of the expence of keeping Ireland, 729.
——— Sir William, made ſecretary of ſtate, on Queen Elizabeth's acceſſion, iv. 406. his arguments in favour of the reformation, ib. and for aſſiſting the congregation in Scotland, 425, 426. ſigns a treaty with the French at Edinburgh, 427. his apology to the parliament, for the Queen's averſion at making a ſettlement of the ſucceſſion, 470. his advice to Queen Elizabeth, concerning her conduct to Queen Mary on her arrival in England, 488, 489, 490. he is appointed one of the commiſſioners to enquire into Queen Mary's conduct, 495. his intereſt and prudence gain him high authority with the Queen,

511. he is ſent by Queen Elizabeth, with propoſals to Queen Mary, 518, 519. writes to Lennox the regent on that ſubject, 519. gets the title of Lord Burleigh, 537. diſcovers Norfolk's and Rodolphi's conſpiracy, ib. See *Burleigh*.

Celeſtine, Pope, denies the French king's requeſt, i. 341. renews the commiſſion of legate to Longchamp, 342. is applied to by Queen Eleanor, to interpoſe his authority on behalf of her ſon, 346.

——— another, abſolves the Scots king from his oaths to Edward I. ii. 96.

Cellwulph, ſon of Kinred, murderer of Oſrid king of Mercia, ſucceeds to that kingdom, i. 31. this line holds it till anarchy prevails there, 32.

Cerdic, a Saxon chieftain, lands in Britain, i. 16. his wars with the Britains, 17. and death, ib.

——— another, founds the kingdom of Weſſex, i. 37. his poſterity hold it, 38. the viciſſitudes of fortune they were ſubject to, 39. till the crown is ſettled on Egbert, 40.

Cerealis, is appointed to the government of Britain by Veſpaſian, i. 6. and ſucceeded by Julius Frontinus, ib.

Ceremonies, religious, ſome introduced into Scotland, v. 60. and into England, 193. rejected in Scotland, 224. in England, 360. reſtored in England, vi. 138. introduced into Scotland, 218.

Chalus, ſiege of, where Richard I. was mortally wounded, i. 353.

Chamberlain, Thomas, his criminal conduct, how puniſhed, ii. 68.

Chancellor of England, his power and authority in the reign of Henry II. i. 271.

Charles of Blois. See *Brittany*, *Mountfort*.

——— Earl of Flanders. See *Flanders*.

——— King of France. See *France*.

——— Dauphin of France. See *France*.

——— Duke of Bourbon, cabals with the Emperor and England againſt France, iii. 130.

——— Emperor, commonly called Charle-magne, makes a league with Offa King of Mercia, i. 35. recommends to Offa the practice of idolatry, 45. his cruelty in Germany, 46. its effects, 47.

——— ſucceeds his grandfather Ferdinand, in the kingdoms of Caſtille and Arragon, iii. 104. his character, ib. he makes a treaty with France, 105. and eſpouſes the French king's daughter, an infant in her cradle, ib. is choſen Emperor, 109. his extenſive dominions, 110. viſits Henry VIII. at Dover, 111. artfully engages Wolſey in his intereſt, ib. 113—115. makes war with the French king, 114. viſits England again, renews his engagements with the King and Wolſey, 123. his diſſimulation with the French king, when his priſoner, 136, 137. propoſes hard terms to him, 141. by graſping at too much, hazards loſing the advantages he might reaſonably have expected, 142. his high demands on the French king, 148. is challenged by him to a ſingle combat, ib. at the entreaty of Queen Catherine, eſpouſes her intereſt, 157. makes peace with France, and ſets their hoſtages at liberty, 164. his ſchemes for aggrandizing his family, 165. attempts a reconciliation with England, 195. makes a fruitleſs attempt on France, 196. is generouſly treated by that monarch, 237. his ungenerous return, 242. concerts with Henry VIII. the conqueſt of France, 265. his progreſs in that expedition, ib. 266. deſerts Henry, and makes a peace with France, 266. is more beloved by the Engliſh than the French king, 283. but refuſes to join in an alliance with England, becauſe of her having deſerted the communion of Rome, 324. ſucceſsfully interpoſes in behalf of the Princeſs Mary, 333. by his embaſſadors, obtains the conſent of Mary, now Queen, to a marriage with his ſon the arch-duke Philip, 359. diſſuades her from perſecuting her proteſtant ſubjects, ib. introduces bribery into the houſe of commons, 366. but doth not obtain his deſign, 367. his advice againſt violent meaſures is rejected by Queen Mary and her miniſtry, 377. he reſigns the empire, and his other dominions, to his ſon Philip, 386. his retired and ſhort life afterwards in a monaſtery, 387. his juſt reflections there, ib. his character, compared with that of the then reigning pontiff, 388. the views with which his ſon Philip mounted the Spaniſh throne, ib. a detail of his violent perſecutions in the Low-countries, iv. 533, 534.

Charles, Prince of Wales, ſon of James I. is adviſed by Buckingham to viſit the Infanta, v. 89. agrees to make application to the king for his approbation, 90. his behaviour on that occaſion in his father's preſence, 91. on his way to Spain, ſees Henrietta, Princeſs of France, afterwards his Queen, 92. his reception in Spain, ib. obtains leave of the king of Spain to return, 93. his character at that time, ib. is preſent at, and vouches for truth, Buckingham's narrative of the tranſactions with Spain, 97. a marriage is propoſed between him and the Princeſs Henrietta of France, 103. agreed to, 104. he ſucceeds to his father, 135. conſummates his marriage, ib. calls a parliament, 136. adjourns it to Oxford, 139. diſſolves it, 143. iſſues privy-ſeals for benevolences, ib. fails in an expedition againſt Spain, ib. forbids the commons of his ſecond parliament, to meddle with Buckingham, 147. threatens them to grant ſupplies, 148. impriſons two of their members, ib. purſues violent meaſures, 151. grants commiſſions to compound with papiſts, ib. enforces loans, 152. orders towns maritime to equip ſhips, ib. impriſons for non-compliance in the affair of the loans, 153. cauſes ſoldiers to be billeted on non-compliers, 155. impreſſes others into the army and navy, ib. makes war with France, 156. unſucceſsfully, 159. ſummons his third parliament, 160. aſſents to the petition of right, 174. makes war with France and Spain, 189. mediates a peace between Sweden and Poland, 190. continues to levy money in an irregular

v.6

lar manner, 189. renews monopolies, 200. iſſues an edict for ſports and recreations on Sundays, 202. is crowned in Scotland, ib. makes Laud archbiſhop of Canterbury, ib. by proclamation, forbids noblemen and landed gentlemen to reſide in London, 205. his ideas of the national intereſt, 225. calls his fourth parliament, 230. deſires a ſupply, 231. diſſolves the parliament, 236. borrows money of his courtiers, 239. marches an army againſt the Scots, 240. his army is routed at Newburn upon Tyne, ib. calls a great council of peers to York, 243. calls his fifth and long parliament, 245. remains unactive, while the houſe of commons eſtabliſh their authority, 254. aſſents to the bill relative to tunnage and poundage, 262. to the triennial act, ib. to Strafford's attainder, 277. and to a bill, purporting that the parliament ſhall not be adjourned, prorogued, or diſſolved, without their own conſent, ib. gives the judges patents during life or good behaviour, 281. he viſits Scotland, 283. his behaviour there, 284. receives an account of the Iriſh inſurrection, 294. commits to the houſe of commons, the management of Ireland, 297. returns to London, 302. offers to raiſe ten thouſand volunteers for the Iriſh ſervice, 304. in perſon, demands of the houſe of commons five of their members impeached of high-treaſon, 311. aſſents to the impreſſing act, 317. and to that aboliſhing the biſhops' votes in the houſe of peers, ib. refuſes his aſſent to the militia bill, 321. goes to York with the Prince of Wales and the Duke of York, ib. iſſues a proclamation againſt the militia ordinance, 322. lays his caſe before the people, 324. accepts of a guard from the county of York, 325. is diſappointed in his deſign on Hull, and proclaims Sir John Hotham a traitor, ib. rejects the terms offered by the parliament, 328. ſends them terms of peace, 333. names a general, 334. ſwears, in preſence of his army, to defend the conſtitution, 335. gives battle to Eſſex at Edge-hill, 337. his forces beat the parliament's army at Stratton, 344. fight at Lanſdown, 345. beat Waller at Roundway-down, ib. give battle to Eſſex at Newbury, 354. are beaten at Horn-caſtle, 356. he refuſes the Scots commiſſioners a paſſport to London, 258. concludes a ceſſation of arms with Iriſh papiſts, 362. calls forces from Ireland, 363. calls members of both houſes, attendants on him to a parliament at Oxford, 364. obtains of them an exciſe on beer, 365. his army repulſes Eſſex and Waller at Cropey-bridge, 372. it is defeated at Newbury, 373. routed at Naſeby, 399. ruined at Cheſter, 402. his melancholy condition in Oxford, ib. the laſt remains of his forces are diſſipated at Stow, 404. he flies to the Scots camp at Newark, 410. iſſues orders to his garriſons to ſurrender, 412. is delivered to the parliament's army, 415. conducted under a guard to Holmby, ib. brought to the head quarters near Cambridge, by Joyce, 420. flies to the iſle of Wight, 432. refuſes to comply with the parliament's propoſals, 436. treats again at Newport, 442. refuſes again to comply, 444. is confined at Hurſt-caſtle, 448. conducted under a guard to London, 451. produced before his judges, 453. ſentenced to die, 454. is executed, 457. his character, 458. his children, 463. his great officers of ſtate, ib. 464. his writings, ib.

Charles, Prince of Wales, ſon of Charles I. goes to York with his father, v. 321. is made a general, 401. retires beyond the ſeas, 403. his ſituation after his father's death, vi. 4. is proclaimed king of Scotland, 13. receives the Scots commiſſioners at Breda, 14. complies with their demands, 16. takes the covenant before he is allowed to land in Scotland, ib. is deprived of all his friends in Scotland, 21. his authority there, 22. he is crowned there, 26. ſummons a Scots parliament, ib. repairs to the Scots camp, 27. encamps at Torwood, 28. marches haſtily ſouthwards, ib. is routed at Worceſter, 29. lurks in Dorſetſhire, 30. embarks at Shoreham in Suſſex, 31. arrives at Feſchamp in Normandy, 33. reſides at Paris, 64. is proclaimed in London, 116. returns to England, 118. declares the convention then ſitting, a parliament, 131. grants an act of indemnity under few exceptions, 132. obtains from the parliament a revenue for life, ib. and tunnage and poundage for the ſame term, 133. diſſolves the parliament, 136. reſtores the biſhops then alive, to their ſees, 137. reſtores the liturgy and ceremonies, 138. diſbands the forces in Scotland, 140. calls a Scots parliament, 141. appoints a conference of divines at the Savoy, 142. calls his ſecond Engliſh parliament, 143. marries Catherine, Princeſs of Portugal, 148. ſells Dunkirk to the French, 153. indulges the preſbyterian clergy, 154. appears favourable to papiſts, 155. gives a favourable anſwer to the parliament's remonſtrance, 156. ſeizes cape Corſe, cape Verde, and New-york, all Dutch colonies, 162. borrows money of the city of London, ib. ſtops all Dutch veſſels in Engliſh ports, 163. declares war againſt the Dutch, 164. his fleet beats the Dutch navy, ib. he breaks with France, 166. with Denmark, 167. procures the biſhop of Munſter's aſſiſtance, ib. calls the parliament to Oxford, 167. prorogues it, 168. beats the Dutch again, 170. makes advances towards a peace, 173. concludes it at Breda, 176. ſeems deſirous to be divorced, 177. takes the ſeals from Clarendon, 178. makes an offenſive alliance with the Dutch againſt France, 185. obtains the acceſſion of Spain to the treaty of Aix-la-chapelle, 186. entruſts all his ſecrets with the cabal, 200. meditates a breach with the Dutch, 202. ſecretly makes an alliance with France againſt Holland, 204. keeps it a profound ſecret, 206. pardons Blood, 208. picks a quarrel with the Dutch about the flag, 209. ſeizes the merchants money depoſited in the exchequer, 211. extends the indulgence to non-conformiſts of all ſorts, ib. ſuſpends ſeveral acts of parliament, by his own

royal authority, 212. attacks the Smyrna fleet, ib. declares war againſt the Dutch, 213. diſmiſſes their ambaſſadors, without vouchſafing them a hearing, 222. by his ambaſſadors, propoſes terms of peace, ib. aſſembles the parliament, 227. breaks the ſeals from the indulgence, 229. makes peace with Holland, 240. ſends Sir William Temple into Holland, ib. reproves the houſe of commons, in ſevere terms, for encroaching on his prerogative, by giving their advice in matters of ſtate, 255. receives the Prince of Orange graciouſly, 256. gives him the Princeſs Mary in marriage, 257. in concert with the Prince of Orange, plans a peace, 258. gives the French king two days to accept or refuſe it, ib. relents of his vigour, 259. makes a general peace at Nimeguen, 264. approves of the rigorous meaſures uſed in Scotland, 274. ridicules the popiſh plot, 288. denies his aſſent to the militia bill, 290. deſires the duke of Monmouth to go abroad, 296. pardons earl Danby, 298. calls a new privy-council, 300. propoſes limitations on a popiſh ſucceſſor, 301. diſſolves the long parliament, 306. calls another, 317. attends incog. in the houſe of peers, to hear the debates, 324. forbids the clerk of the crown to preſent the bill for eaſing proteſtant diſſenters, 330. diſſolves the parliament, ib. calls one to meet at Oxford, 332. diſſolves it, 334. a conſpiracy is formed againſt him, but laid aſide for ſome time, 352. reſumed, 353. but once more delayed, ib. proceeded in again, 354. diſcovered, 355. the trials and executions of the conſpirators, 356, 357, 358, 359, 360, 361, 362, 363. pardons Monmouth, 365. but provoked at his duplicity, orders him to go abroad, ib. marries the Princeſs Anne to Prince George of Denmark, 366. embraces the reſolution of governing by prerogative alone, 368. ſickens, and dies, 369. papers found in his cloſet, are publiſhed by his ſucceſſor after his death, ib. 370. his character, 370, 371. compared with that of the emperor Tiberius, 372.

Charmouth, battle of, i. 47.

Charter, Great, or the Great Charter, is granted by King John, i. 386. a recapitulation of it, 387. it is condemned by the Pope, 391. what new ſpecies of government was introduced by it, 423. its uſe, 424. another, ſomewhat different from it, is granted by Henry III. ii. 3. it is confirmed, with ſeveral additions, 4. in a more ſolemn manner in parliament, 26. confirmed with another, called the Leſſer Charter, by the guardians of the kingdom, and by Edward I. abroad, 103. by the king in perſon, in parliament, upon his return, 104. fully eſtabliſhed, after thirty confirmations in parliament, 105. confirmed above twenty times by Edward III. 233.

Chatelrault, Duke of, intercedes with the Queen regent, in favour of the congregation, iv. 423. joins their party, 424. is diſpleaſed at the arrival and preferment of the earl of Lennox and his ſon, 462. joins the male-contents, who take arms againſt Queen Mary, ib. 463. is forced to fly with them into England, 463. being ill-uſed by Queen Elizabeth, he ſolicits Queen Mary's pardon, 464. which ſhe grants, on condition that he retires to France, ib. heads the faction which oppoſes Murray, 486. is forced to ſubmit to the king's authority, 540.

Cherington, battle of, v. 368.

Chivalry, ideas of, whence imported, and how uſeful, i. 425. their genuine off-ſpring, ib.

Chriſtendom, propoſed to be united againſt the Turks, i. 209. a general council there, 210. another, ib. a ſchiſm in it, about the pontificate of Rome, 216. and the proceſſion of the holy ghoſt, ib. the end of the ſchiſm about the pontificate, 320. its princes engage in a cruſade, 322. the cruſades end in a whimſical truce for three years, three days, and three hours, 345. Lollards encreaſe there, ii. 277. the reformation begins in it, iii. 120.

Chriſtianity, firſt introduced into Britain, among the Anglo-Saxons, i. 20. into Kent, 21. into Northumberland, 30. extinguiſhed in this laſt mentioned place, 31. revived, ib.

Church, its power and uſe, i. 422. innovations in it, are promoted by Laud, v. 193. its hierarchy, liturgy, and ceremonies, are aboliſhed in Scotland, 224. in England, 383. reſtored in England, vi. 138. its hierarchy reſtored in Scotland, 140.

Claims, court of, their proceedings, vi. 192.

Clanrickard, Earl, drives the Pope's Nuncio out of Ireland, vi. 7.

Clarence, Duke, Thomas, ſon of Henry IV. ii. 297. accompanies his brother Henry V. to France, 315. is ſlain at the battle of Baugé, 317.

——— Duke, ſecond brother of Edward IV. connects himſelf with the earl of Warwick, ii. 395. continues to be truſted by Edward, 398. flies with Warwick to France, 399. joins in a treaty with the French king, 401. returns with Warwick, at the head of an army, 402. becomes, with Warwick, co regent of the kingdom, 404. on Edward's return, he joins him with a body of twelve thouſand men, 408. Clarence's enemies combine againſt him, 415. he is tried in the houſe of peers, 416. condemned and executed, 417.

Clarendon, conſtitutions of, enacted, i. 277. their purport, 278. ſealed, and ſworn to, by archbiſhop Becket, 279. annulled by the Pope, ib.

——— Earl, made chancellor, vi. 131. adviſes the ſale of Dunkirk, 153. his credit declines, 157. he reſigns the ſeals, 178. is impeached, ib. flies abroad, 179. is baniſhed by act of parliament, 180. his character, ib.

Clement, Pope, diſputes with Urban, Pope, the validity of his election, i. 216. the reaſonings of theſe times on that and other eccleſiaſtical affairs, ib. 217.

——— V. Pope, approves of the French king's cruelty to the knights templars, ii. 151. and transfers their poſſeſſions to the knights of the order of St. John, ib.

v.6

Clement VII. choſen Pope, iii. 129. is taken priſoner and inſulted by the Germans, 146. his diſpoſitions with reſpect to Henry's divorce, 151. the legality of that ſtep conſidered, according to the rules of the court of Rome, ib. his duplicity and ambiguous conduct with Henry's meſſengers, 153—155. his character, 153, 154. he is threatened by the emperor, and his right to the papal chair queſtioned, 154. his caution in that affair, 167. an interview between him and the French king, ib. is perſuaded to make up all differences with Henry, ib. 177. is ſurpriſed into a haſty deciſion of that affair, 177. his death, 193.

——— Jacques, murders the French king Henry III. iv. 649.

——— of Bavaria, prince, choſen elector of Cologn, vi. 410.

Clergy, Engliſh, obtain the privilege of building fortreſſes, i. 251. murder of them, how puniſhed antiently, 317. how puniſhed by Henry II. 138. how and by whom puniſhed for rebellion, ii. 7. their authority in the nation, 10. their frauds in the reign of Henry III. 58. are put out of the protection of the law, 100. their new devices to encreaſe their power, 279. condemned by the parliament, ib. their impoſitions and irregularities promote the reformation, iii. 163. ſeveral laws made for regulating them, ib. they are rigorouſly treated by Henry VIII. 170. their connection with Rome is diſſolved, 171. Debates between the catholics and reformers, 211, 212. the clergy are every where reduced to great difficulties, 245. more eaſily brought to juſtice after the reformation, 281. celibacy of the clergy aboliſhed, 316.

——— Scots, their inſolence to Queen Mary, on her arrival from France, iv. 435, 436, 438. their poverty the cauſe of their ill humours, 439. the cauſe of their poverty, ib. 440. their behaviour to the magiſtrates of Edinburgh, for breaking a faſt appointed by the kirk, 571. a law againſt their ſcandalous and untrue ſayings in the pulpit, 575. their inſolence, 591. how offenſive to the king, 592. their diſpoſitions with reſpect to Mary Queen of Scots, 614. their ſtate in the reign of James I. and VI. v. 58.

Clifford, Sir Robert, writes to England, that the impoſtor Perkin Warbeck, is the true Richard, Duke of York, iii. 36. engaged by hopes of pardon, confeſſes the truth, 37. accuſes and convicts Stanley, lord-chamberlain, as a chief abetter of the impoſture, 38. the effects of Clifford's deſertion on the reſt of his accompl ces, 39.

——— Sir Thomas, his character, vi. 201. his raſhneſs, 203. another proof of his raſhneſs, 368.

Coat and conduct money, a tax aboliſhed by the petition of right, v. 239. levied again, ib.

Cobham, Lord, becomes head of the Lollards, ii. 300. is executed, and how, for treaſon and hereſy, 301.

Code Salian, what, ii. 168. an account of the ſenſe of a clauſe in one of its laws, ib.

Coerles, what, i. 150.

Coin, the miſchief of debaſing it, iii. 321. the ſtate of it in the reign of Queen Elizabeth, iv. 731.

Coke, Sir Edward, the famous lawyer, attorney-general, his behaviour and inſolence, at Eſſex's examination, iv. 689. at Raleigh's trial, v. 7. as chief juſtice, tries Overbury's murderers, 53. his behaviour in the houſe, when the petition of right depended in parliament, 170.

Colcheſter, royaliſts, inſurgents againſt the parliament there ſurpriſed, v. 447. they ſurrender, ib.

Coleman's letters, vi. 280. diffuſe a pannick thro' the nation, 281. his trial, 293.

Coligni, Lord, commands the French forces before Boulogne, iii. 324. his brave defence of St. Quintin, 392. his ſcheme for taking Calais, 393.

Cologn, a congreſs there, vi. 233. proves ineffectual, 234.

Colonies, their ſtate under James I. v. 58. between the reſtoration and revolution, vi. 447.

Columbus, Chriſtopher, ſets out from Cadiz, in order to make new diſcoveries, iii. 65. his invitation to England, how diſappointed, 66.

Combat, ſingle, its uſefulneſs, i. 423.

Commerce, its ſtate under the Saxon princes, i. 420. its ſtate in Henry III's reign, ii. 56. in Edward III's reign, 239. towards the end of Queen Elizabeth's reign, iv. 731, 732, 733, 734. in the reign of James I. v. 122. between the reſtoration and revolution, vi. 447.

Commiſſion, eccleſiaſtical, or high court of, or court of high commiſſion, its powers and authorities, iv. 580. petitioned againſt, in vain, by the commons, 581. a new one, more arbitrary, is granted, ib. a motion is made in the houſe of commons, for redreſs of the abuſes of this court, and thoſe of the biſhops courts, 655. ſome tranſactions in it are taken notice of by the houſe of commons, 670. its ſtate in Queen Elizabeth's reign, 719. it is remonſtrated againſt by the commons, v. 35. its power then deſcribed, 108. ſet up in Scotland, by an act of a Scots parliament, 188. aboliſhed in England by an act of parliament, 280. revived, by authority of King James II. in oppoſition to this law, vi. 399.

Commodities, their prices under the Saxon princes, i. 161. in the reign of Henry III. ii. 56.

Commons, houſe of, when introduced into the feudal parliament, i. 407. their commencement, ii. 46. their uſefulneſs in the Engliſh conſtitution, 47. how gradually formed, 88. their true epocha, 89. their petitions, how regarded and manufactured, 92. their requeſt to the throne on that ſubject, ib. why favoured by the King, 93. and how they grew to their preſent importance, 94. they remonſtrate againſt the aſſumed prerogative of levying taxes without conſent of parliament, 236. their complaints of robberies in the reign of Edward III. 237. their petition relative to manors held of the crown, 240.

they

they chuſe a ſpeaker for the firſt time, 242. petition the lords to name a council for the King, and proper perſons to inſpect his education, ib. their petition to the throne relative to the confederacies of the barons, how received, 243. and that relative to annual parliaments, ib. they impeach earl Suffolk, the chancellor, 259. obtain a ſentence againſt him, depriving him of his office, 252. impeach Fitz Allan, archbiſhop of Canterbury, 262. their great authority in the reign of Henry IV. 293. they addreſs the King to ſeize the temporalities of the church, 295. renew it, and to mitigate the laws againſt the Lollards, ib. again addreſs the King to ſeize the temporalities of the church, 302. impeach the duke of Suffolk, 364. ſend up a new charge againſt him, 365. the ſtate of the houſe of commons when the duke of York claimed the crown, 371. pray the King to remove ſeveral of his miniſters, without aſſigning any cauſe but common fame, 372. petition that no foreigner ſhall be capable of church preferment, 383. impeach the duke of Clarence, brother of Edward IV. 417. grant a moiety only of the ſum demanded by the miniſtry, iii. 128. but enlarge it at cardinal Wolſey's requeſt, ib. allow of an encroachment on the public liberty of the nation, 129. receive articles drawn in the upper houſe againſt Wolſey, 162. paſs divers bills reſtraining the impoſitions of the clergy, 163. an extraordinary ſpeech in that houſe in favour of deiſm, ib. diſcharge the King of all debts contracted ſince the beginning of his reign, 164. preſent a long complaint againſt the abuſes of eccleſiaſtical courts, 171. reject a bill from the lords to moderate thoſe abuſes, 172. a motion to addreſs the King to take back the Queen, and ſtop the proſecution for a divorce, ib. with difficulty are induced to grant a ſupply to Henry VIII. 238. in this houſe is framed the clauſe in the treaſon laws, that no man ſhall be convicted of treaſon, but by the mouth of two witneſſes, 339. letters are ſent by the King, recommending new members to be choſen in ſeveral counties, 340. all members of the council are allowed the ſame liberty, 341. which is quietly ſubmitted to, ib. great oppoſition is made in this houſe, in Queen Mary's reign, to the bill for reſtoring firſt-fruits, tenths, and impropriations, 384. one of its members is committed for an irreverent expreſſion concerning the Queen, 398. importunately addreſs the Queen to chuſe a huſband, iv. 411. in the beginning of a new ſeſſion they addreſs her again to the ſame purpoſe, 451. expreſs great diſpleaſure at Wentworth's bold ſpeech in behalf of freedom of debates in that houſe, 556. and impriſon Wentworth for a month, ib. refuſe a free conference with the lords when irregularly demanded, 557. aſk forgiveneſs when reprimanded by the Queen for appointing a general faſt, 562. the majority of the houſe appear to be puritans, 578. and apply, by petition to the houſe of lords, for a further reformation in eccleſiaſtical matters, ib. which is rejected, 579. the Queen's uſual injunction to this houſe at the beginning of a ſeſſion, 640. their behaviour thereon this ſeſſion, how reſented by the Queen, 641. the conſequences of their bill againſt purveyors, and grievances in the exchequer, ib. how overawed by courtiers, 643. they paſs a vote that none ſhall reveal the ſecrets of the houſe, ib. how anſwered by the Queen, when the ſpeaker interceeds in the uſual manner for the privileges of the houſe, 654. a member of this houſe is committed, for propoſing to offer to the houſe a bill for entailing a ſucceſſion of the crown, ib. the houſe moved to interceed for his liberty, but acquieſces in his being detained, till the Queen at her own motion ſhall ſet him at liberty, 655. further mortifying treatment from the Queen, ib. they obſequiouſly obey her, 656. grant two ſubſidies and four fifteenths, ib. are prevailed on by the peers to grant three ſubſidies and ſix fifteenths, 657. the reaſons of their compliance, ib. they venture to diſpute with the peers about two inſignificant forms, 669. how regarded, 670. their petition againſt monopolies, how reſpected by the Queen, ib. by her permiſſion they take notice of ſome tranſactions in the court of high commiſſion, ib. a bill is introduced into their houſe againſt monopolies, 707. they obtain the Queen's promiſe to aboliſh the moſt grievous of them, 708. their gratitude to the Queen, and how in raptures on that occaſion, 710. their behaviour, when admitted into her preſence, in order to return her thanks, 711. their antient ſtate, v. 10. their proceedings relative to writs of election, 11. about outlaws, 13. refuſe to grant a ſupply, 18. petition the King for a relaxation of the eccleſiaſtical laws in favour of puritans, ib. they abate of their exceſſive frugality, and grant more liberally, 26. remonſtrate againſt new impoſitions and forced loans, 34. againſt the court of high commiſſion, 35. are alarmed about undertakers, 48. grant two ſubſidies without one negative, 75. examine grievances in a reſpectful manner, ib. requeſt a delay of adjournment, and are denied, 78. two of their members are impriſoned without any known cauſe, except their vigour in parliamentary meaſures, ib. remonſtrate concerning the ſtate of affairs abroad, and the growth of popery, 79. notwithſtanding the King's letter reproving them, they inſiſt on their former remonſtrance and advice, and on their hereditary right to adviſe the throne in all matters, 80. enter a proteſtation in their journal on this ſubject, which the King tears out, 81. the houſe is firſt prorogued; then diſſolved; and the leading members are committed to the tower, 82. addreſs the King for the ſevere execution of the laws againſt catholics, 100. the numbers of this houſe in the reign of James I. 107. the ſmall ſupply they granted in the firſt ſeſſion of the firſt parliament of Charles I. 136. their ill humour, how encreaſed, 137, 138. a new diſcovery enflames them againſt the court, 140. they demand a ſtrict execution of the penal laws againſt papiſts, 142.

v.6

142. deny a ſupply, 143. vote a ſupply, but poſtpone it till the end of the ſeſſion, 144. impeach Buckingham, ib. vote that common fame is a ſufficient cauſe of accuſation by the commons, 145. and proceed to frame articles againſt the duke, ib. the only important article againſt him, 146. are ordered by the lord-keeper, in the King's name, to deſiſt from meddling with his ſervant, 147. two of their members impriſoned, and releaſed, 148. claim againſt the ſtrict execution of the laws againſt papiſts, 149. proceed to remonſtrate againſt tonnage and poundage, ib. warm ſpeeches in the houſe about grievances, 161, 162, 163, 164. vote five ſubſidies, but poſtpone them, 164. think of an act proper to ſecure themſelves for the future againſt taxes without conſent of parliament, arbitrary impriſonments, &c. ib. prepare the petition of right, 165. paſs it, 171. impeach Dr. Manwaring, 174. proceed again to cenſure Buckingham, ib. frame a fierce and aſſuming remonſtrance, 176. and proceed to conſider tonnage and poundage, ib. new grounds of complaint appear in the houſe, 180. how diſpoſed to Arminians, 114, 185. warm proceedings concerning the barons of exchequer, officers of the cuſtoms, and tonnage and poundage, 186. great heats in the houſe, and locked doors, 187. the effects of theſe meaſures, ib. diſregard an application for a ſupply, and proceed to conſider grievances, 232. debate with great warmth and zeal on both ſides, 233. the debate is continued, 234, 235. two of their members ſummoned before the council, and the chairman of their committee ſent to the tower, 236. impeach Strafford, 247. Laud, and lord-keeper Finch, 248. vote divers acts and authorities illegal, and the perſons exerting them delinquents, 249. a recapitulation of the authorities and acts condemned by their votes, 250. their authority becomes formidable, ib. and the ſovereign power ſeems to be in a manner tranſferred into their hands, 251. an account of their daily harangues and invectives, and their effects, 252. they ſettle all over the nation puritanical lecturers, who inculcate the ſame topics, ib. reverſe divers ſentences, 253. and in ſome caſes order the judges to give reparation to the ſufferers, ib. from the reports of their committees and votes they inflame the nation, 254. encourage the Scots and puritans, 255. and court the Scots commiſſioners, 256. make vehement harangues againſt the biſhops, 257. erect a committee as a court of inquiſition upon the clergy, called the committee of ſcandalous miniſters, 258. bring in a bill for the total abolition of epiſcopacy, ib. the character of their leaders compared with thoſe of Greece and Rome, 259, 260. they inſiſt on the execution of the ſevere laws againſt prieſts and papiſts, 260. deſire that the Queen mother may depart the kingdom, 261. a bill about tonnage and poundage, and triennial parliaments is introduced and paſſed, 262. pretend to be thankful to the King for complying with their deſires, 263. a committee is named to prepare a charge againſt Strafford, 264. paſs a bill of attainder againſt the earl, 273. another bill that the parliament ſhall not be diſſolved, prorogued, or adjourned without their own conſent, 277. hurry on the diſbanding of the Engliſh and Scots armies, 280. therefore pay the Engliſh in part, and the Scots wholly, ib. diſband both, and diſmiſs the Scots to their own country, 282. levy money and enliſt men for the Iriſh ſervice, as is pretended, 297. but in truth with a view to turn theſe forces againſt the King, ib. publiſh a general remonſtrance of the ſtate of the kingdom, by way of appeal to the people, 298. which excites a violent controverſy, 299, 300, 301, 302. hurry on the bill for preſſing ſoldiers for the Iriſh ſervice, 303. again introduce a bill, once rejected, relative to the votes of biſhops, tho' no prorogation had intervened, 305. the means they uſe to make it paſs, and to ſerve as a pretence for a guard for themſelves, 306. impeach twelve biſhops, 308. refuſe to a ſerjeant at arms five commoners impeached of high treaſon, 310. their behaviour when the King is in their houſe, and after he is gone, 311. by affected panics work up the people to a ſufficient degree of rage and terror, 312. encourage tumultuous petitions, 315. their behaviour to their petitioners, 316. impeach Herbert, attorney general, 317. diſpatch Sir George Hotham to Hull with the authority of governor, ib. reſtore to a certain ſet of lieutenants named by the houſe the powers of which thoſe named by the King were deprived by their votes, 318. the preamble of this vote, ib. their pretended panics, how urged on this occaſion, 319. in meſſages and replies to the King, heſitating to conſent to this bill, ib. their vote on deſpairing to obtain the King's conſent, 320. the means they now uſed to rouſe the people to approve of their meaſures, 321. they frame a new ordinance conferring on lieutenants of counties, named by themſelves, the military power without the King's conſent, 322. the continual dread of popery, and a horror for prelacy, is by them infuſed into the nation, 323. the effect of all theſe meaſures on the nation, ib. their vote concerning the authority of the lords and commons in parliament, 325. and employ their authority for making warlike preparations, ib. name a general, and vote a declaration to be ſubſcribed by every member, that they will live and die with their general, the earl of Eſſex, 326. iſſue orders for bringing in loans, ib. ſeveral members go to York, ib. the others ſend the King conditions on which they are willing to come to an agreement, 327. obtain of the fleet to remain in their ſervice, 330. yet are backward in giving their general orders, 332. their behaviour to the King's meſſengers deſiring a treaty, 333. their courage, how ſupported, ib. their general, the earl of Eſſex, muſters his army, 335. for military tranſactions, ſee *Army, parliamentary*, and *royal*.—Charles, Cromwell, Eſſex, Fairfax, and Waller addreſs for a treaty, 338. treat by commiſſioners at Oxford, 339, 340. recall

recall their commiſſioners, 340. the effect of the military operations on the nation, 341. are diſmayed at the King's ſucceſſes, 345. their ſevere adminiſtration, 350. a combination is formed againſt them in London, 351. their ſeverity on that occaſion encreaſes their authority, 352. how they quell a cry for peace, ib. aſſociate in their cauſe divers counties, and order an army to be raiſed under Sir William Waller, 353. have recourſe to Scotland for aſſiſtance, 356. ſend the Scots commiſſioners to the King with offers of peace, 357. take the ſolemn league and covenant, 359, 360. are aſſiſted by an army from Scotland, 360. the members of the King's party meet as a parliament at Oxford, 364. their numbers there, 365, their acts, ib. a whimſical ordinance made at Weſtminſter, ib. they refuſe to treat with the King, 366. their behaviour from the beginning of the diſſentions, 369. ſpeeches in the houſe previous to the ſelf-denying ordinance, 378, 379, 380. they make the ſelf-denying ordinance, 380. treat at Uxbridge, 382, 383. ſummon an aſſembly of divines to Weſtminſter, 383. new model their army, 396. its fanaticiſm is ridiculed by the royaliſts, 397. order the Queen's letters to the King to be publiſhed, 399. the power of their committee on religion, 407. ſet up the preſbyterian form of government all over England, 408. allow of appeals to the parliament from eccleſiaſtical courts, ib. the propenſity of many of their members to a toleration of all proteſtant ſectarians, 409. ſettle with the Scots army the delivery of the King's perſon, and the eſtimation of their arrears, 413, 414, 415. their army mutinies againſt them, 418. their fluctuating councils while the army is marching to London, 419. make one vigorous effort to try the force of their authority, 420. their vote on that occaſion, ib. the hoſtility of the army againſt the houſes of parliament is greatly approved of by the public voice, 422. the meaſures purſued by the houſe being generally diſapproved of 422, 423, 424. become conſcious of their decay in popularity, 424. reſolve to ſubmit to their mutinous army, 425. are inſulted by the army, ib. eleven of their members accuſed by the army, beg leave to retire, ib. comply with the army's demands, 426. comply with the army's violent demand relative to the militia of London, and the forces inliſted for Ireland, 428. their ſpeaker retires, and goes ſecretly to the army, ib. they prepare themſelves with vigour to oppoſe the violence of the army, 429. but at laſt ſubmit, ib. to no purpoſe renew their applications to the King, 430. at the inſtigation of the army ſend new offers to him, which are refuſed, 436. frame and paſs the vote of non-addreſſes, 437. their acknowledgement to the Scotch commiſſioners at their departure, 438. their ſentiments of their preſent ſituation, ib. 439. they declare the Scots enemies, 441. the eleven members are recalled, 442. the vote of non-addreſſes is repealed, and commiſſioners are ſent to the king at Newport, to treat of peace, ib. 443, 444, 445, 446. the houſe is again threatened by the army, 448. vote, that the king's conceſſions are a ſufficient foundation to proceed on in the ſettlement of the nation, 449. their houſe is purged by the army, ib. the remainder reverſe their former vote, ib. the effect of theſe revolutions on the nation, 450. declare it treaſon in a king, to levy war againſt his parliament, and appoint a high court of juſtice to try the king, 451. the peers rejecting this vote, they vote, that the commons aſſembled in parliament, are veſted with the ſupreme authority, and aſſent anew to the ordinance erecting a high court of juſtice, for trial of Charles Stuart, King of England, ib. meet in the convention, vi. 115. diſpatch a committee to King Charles II. to come over, 116. remonſtrate againſt the indulgence and favour ſhown to papiſts, 156. their votes about the Dutch, 160. impeach Clarendon, 178. proceedings about conventicles and public miſcarriages, 196. concerning the conduct of the houſe of peers, 197. taxes, 206. writs iſſued by the chancellor, and elections in conſequence thereof, 228. again, upon the indulgence, 229. the duke of York's marriage, 234. impeach Buckingham, 235. give the king advice relative to foreign affairs, 252. grant him money to purſue the meaſures adviſed to, 253. but, on his applying for more, ib. recollect, that he doth not merit their confidence, 254. ſome of the members of this houſe are enliſted in the court party by offices, ib. private views and faction draw others into the country party, 255. are reproved by the king, for an addreſs for a league offenſive and defenſive with the ſtates, ib. ſevere reflexions in the houſe, on the miniſtry and their meaſures, 260. a paſſionate addreſs, praying the king to diſmiſs evil counſellors, particularly Lauderdale, 261. frame divers votes about the plot, &c. 286. accuſe the queen, whom the king juſtifies, 289. bring in a bill for regulating the militia, ib. impeach Earl Danby, 291. renew their votes about Danby, 297. upon the popiſh plot, 298. the duke of York, 301. bring in a bill to exclude him from the ſucceſſion, 302. and one to exclude from the houſe all perſons poſſeſſed of lucrative offices, 303. proceed to votes about the king's guards, and a ſtanding army, ib. and to impeachments, 304. are diſſolved, 306. called anew, 317. proceed about abhorrers, 318. renew the votes about the popiſh plot, 319. the affair of the excluſion, 324. proceed to the trial of Stafford, 325. paſs a bill in eaſe of proteſtant diſſenters, 328. angry votes about the duke of York and papiſts, 329. are diſſolved, 331. called to Oxford, 332. renew the ſame meaſures, ib. impeach Fitz-Harris, 334. are diſſolved, ib. called by king James II. vote about Monmouth's rebellion, 379. addreſs the king againſt the diſpenſing power, 389. grant him a revenue for life, 390. are diſſolved, ib. meet in the revolution convention, 434. vote about the vacancy of the throne, ib. have

v.6

have a free conference with the peers, 437. offer the crown to the Prince and Princeſs of Orange, &c. 440.

Common-wealth of England, its commencement, v. 451. its ſtate immediately after the king's death, vi. 1, 2. its ſtate after the battle of Worceſter, 32. its diſſolution, 116.

Comprehenſion, propoſed in England, vi. 142. rejected, 143. propoſed in Scotland, 265. rejected, 266.

Conan, Duke of Britanny. See *Britanny*.

Concubines, allowed to prieſts, i. 373. how regulated, ib.

Condé, Prince of, ſeized and condemned to death, by the influence of the houſe of Guiſe, iv. 431. but ſaved by the death of the king, ib. appears at the head of the Hugonots in France, 448. applies to Queen Elizabeth for aſſiſtance, 449. is joined by a body of German proteſtants, 450. taken priſoner in a battle againſt the catholics, ib. makes peace with them, and is reinſtated in his offices, 455. commands the Hugonots at the battle of St. Dennis, 529. rallies them after the defeat, and obliges the court to come to an accommodation, ib. is killed in the battle of Jarnac, 530.

——— young prince of, ſaved by the French king, at the maſſacre of the proteſtants, iv. 542. but is obliged, in appearance, to change his religion, ib. eſcapes from the French court, and heads the Hugonots that ſurvive the maſſacre, 545.

——— another, beats the Prince of Orange at Seneffe, vi. 241. the French king ſerves under him as a volunteer, 244, 245. eludes the attempts of the Imperialiſts, to bring him to a battle, 246.

Congregation of the Lord, an aſſociation of reformers in Scotland, ſo called, iv. 417. their unjuſtifiable proceedings, ib. they raiſe forces to oppoſe the Queen regent, 420, 421. their remonſtrances, 421. they charge her with breach of promiſe, 422. commit many outrages, 423. take ſeveral places which the regent had abandoned, ib. come to an agreement with the regent, which they miſrepreſent to the public, ib. joined by the Duke of Chatelrault, they deprive the Queen Dowager of the regency, order the French to depart, and collect forces to put their edict in execution, 424. ſolicit ſuccours from England, 425. conclude a treaty with England, 426. in conjunction with their Engliſh allies, they beſiege the French forces in Leith, 427. force them to ſurrender upon articles of capitulation, ſettled by the mediation of England, ib. ſummon a parliament, which eſtabliſhes the reformation, 428. put the ſtatutes in execution, notwithſtanding of the diſapprobation of the Queen, 429.

Connaught, a kingdom in Ireland, the weakneſs of its government, i. 300. their king aids the king of Meath againſt Leinſter, 301. beheads the king of Leinſter's ſon, 302. his army is routed by Earl Strigul, 303. which paves the way for the conqueſt of Ireland, ib.

Conrade, Marquis of Mountſerrat, a ſon of the emperor Frederic, leads his father's army to Paleſtine, i. 335. claims the kingdom of Jeruſalem, 340. is aſſaſſinated, 343. his dying requeſt, ib.

Conſarbic, battle of, vi. 247.

Conſervators, of the public liberties, choſen in England, i. 391. all perſons are conſtrained to ſwear obedience to them, ib.

——— in Scotland, v. 358. they ſummon a convention, ib.

Conſpiracies, of Norman Barons, againſt William the Conqueror, i. 187. diſcovered, 189. puniſhed, ib. of Prince Robert, and others, againſt William the Conqueror, 193, 194, 195. of nobles, againſt William Rufus, 204, 205. of Mortimer, and others, againſt Henry II. 266. againſt Thomas a Becket, 294. of young Henry, &c. againſt Henry II. 306, 307. renewed, 319. againſt Conrade, King of Jeruſalem, 343. againſt the miniſtry of Henry III. ii. 13, 14. againſt Piers Gavaſton, 131, 132. againſt the Spenſers, 138, 139, 140, 141. againſt Edward II. 143, 144. againſt the earl of Kent, 160. againſt the king of Caſtile, 224, 225, 226, 227. againſt the earl of Suffolk, 250, 251, 252. againſt the miniſtry of Richard II. 253, 254. Gloceſter's conſpiracy againſt Richard II. 259, 260, 261, 263. Lancaſter's conſpiracy againſt Richard II. 266, 267. Northumberland's againſt Henry IV. 287, 288, 289, 290, 291. againſt the duke of Burgundy, 303. the duke of York's conſpiracy againſt Henry VI. 372. Warwick's conſpiracy againſt Edward IV. 394, 395, 399, 401, 402, 406, 407. againſt the duke of Clarence, 415, 416, 417. againſt Edward V. 428, 429. againſt Richard III. 433, 434, 435. renewed, 437, 438, 439. Simnel's conſpiracy againſt Henry VII. iii. 15, 16, 17. in favour of Warbec, againſt Henry VII. 36, 37, 38, 39, 49, 50, 51, 52. againſt cardinal Beaton, 298. againſt the duke of Somerſet, 326. of lady Jane Gray, againſt Queen Mary of England, 349, 350, 351. againſt Mary Queen of Scots, iv. 462. againſt the proteſtants, 465. againſt Rizzio, 466, 467, 468. againſt lord Darnly, 474. againſt Mary Queen of Scots, 483. Norfolk's conſpiracy againſt Queen Elizabeth, 509, 510, 511, 512, 513. another, of Norfolk, againſt Queen Elizabeth, 536, 537, 538. againſt the Hugonots of France, 541, 542. divers conſpiracies of ſmall note againſt Queen Elizabeth, 576. to whom imputed, 577. Parry's againſt Queen Elizabeth, 582. Wotton's conſpiracy againſt James VI. of Scotland, 591. Babington's againſt Queen Elizabeth, 595, 596, 597, 598. Gun-powder, againſt James I. v. 20, 21. of Royaliſts. See *Royaliſts*. againſt Oliver Cromwel, vi. 57. Monmouth's againſt Charles II. 352, 353, 354, 355.

Conſtantia, mother to the young Duke of Britanny, is hated by Queen Eleanor, i. 357. delivers up her ſon to his uncle King John, 358. applies to the French king for juſtice againſt King John, 362.

Conſtantinople, taken by the Turks, iii. 67.
Conventicles, an act againſt them in England, vi. 159. mollified, 198. a ſevere act againſt them, made in Scotland, 268. rigorouſly executed there, 272. rigorouſly executed in England, 348.
Convention, of eſtates in Scotland, their proceedings, iv. 571. again there, v. 359. again, 439. in England, meets, vi. 115. reſtores King Charles II. 116. is declared a parliament by the king, on his return, 131. called again, in Scotland, 274. its proceedings, ib. ſummoned in England, 434. meets, 435. ſettles the crown on the Prince and Princeſs of Orange, &c. 440. in Scotland, offers the royal dignity to the Prince and Princeſs of Orange, &c. 435.
Convocation, of the clergy formed, ii. 95. and why they meet in two houſes, ib. grant ſix ſhillings in the pound, to be levied in three years, iii. 259. the like ſum again, 269. a diſquiſition concerning the liberty of members of the lower houſe of convocation to ſit in parliament, 306. a diſpute in convocation, between proteſtant and popiſh doctors, 360. its iſſue, ib. in Queen Mary's reign, they preſent a petition to be freed from the fear of cenſures from Rome, 370. grant eight ſhillings in the pound, 398. ſit after diſſolution of parliament, v. 237. their proceedings, ib. are voted delinquents by the houſe of commons, 250. renounce the power of taxing the clergy, vi. 163.
Corn, when permitted to be exported, ii. 384. its price in the reign of Henry VI. ib. an inland commerce of it opened, ib.
Corniſh, his trial, vi. 386.
Cornwal, Earl Richard, rejects the Sicilian crown, i. 20. is choſen King of the Romans, 22. drained of his money in Germany, 23. ſwears to obſerve the regulations of Oxford, before he can be permitted to return to England, 31. joins the king's party in the ſubſequent civil war, 42. is made a priſoner in the battle of Lewes, 43. recovers his liberty, 50. dies, 51.
——— archbiſhop of York, ſon of the former, is appointed by the parliament guardian of the realm, in conjunction with the earl of Gloceſter, i. 60.
Corporations, a great check on induſtry, iii. 65. a law concerning them, ib. their ſtate under the commonwealth, vi. 145. are regulated by the corporation act, ib. and by the act of uniformity, 146. ſurrender their charters into the king's hands, 351. which they get back, on payment of large fines, ib. the diſpoſal of the great offices remaining with the crown, ib.
Cottereaux, what, i. 308.
Councils, general, of Chriſtendom. See *Chriſtendom*, *Cruſades*.
Council, of general officers called, v. 435. their firſt proceedings, ib. they demand the king's puniſhment, 448. order the houſe to be purged, 449. plan a republic, 450. petition the parliament to diſſolve themſelves, vi. 43. reſolve to diſſolve it, 44. form an inſtrument of government, 53. nominate Oliver Cromwel Protector, ib. recognize his ſon Richard, 94. accept Richard's demiſſion, 96. convene the Rump Parliament, 97. expel it, 100. veſt the exerciſe of the government, in a committee of ſafety, ib. invite the Rump to reſume its activity, 107.
Counties, firſt ſend members to parliament, ii. 29. their numbers then, ib. their members conſtitute a ſeparate houſe, 31. the preſent number of members, firſt ordered to be ſummoned from each county, 46. ſit firſt, with members from boroughs, ib.
——— Palatine, their juriſdiction is annexed to the crown, iv. 737.
Court, its ſtate in the reign of Edward V. ii. 419. at the beginning of Charles the I's reign, v. 191.
Court of high commiſſion. See *Commiſſion*, eccleſiaſtical. Court of ſtate. See *State*, court of.
Courtney, ſon to the marquis of Exeter, ſet at liberty on the acceſſion of Queen Mary, iii. 352. created earl of Devonſhire, 353. See *Devonſhire*.
Covenant, Scots, made, v. 221.
——— and ſolemn league, made in Scotland, 359. received in England, 360. declared unlawful in Scotland, vi. 142. burnt by the hand of the hangman in England, 144.
Coventry act paſſed, vi. 207.
Cowley, his character, vi. 127.
Craig Aliſon, a remarkable adventure of hers, iv. 437, 438.
——— a proteſtant miniſter at Edinburgh, refuſes to publiſh the bans of marriage between Queen Mary and earl Bothwell, iv. 478. his reſolute behaviour on that occaſion, before the council and elſewhere, ib. 479.
Cranmer, Doctor, his advice concerning King Henry's divorce, iii. 166. is in high favour with the king, ib. promoted to the ſee of Canterbury, 174. tries the cauſe of divorce, and annuls the king's marriage with Catharine, 175. confirms that with Anne Boleyn, ib. ſecretly adopts the proteſtant tenets, 185. is the only friend of Anne Boleyn in her diſtreſs, 205. compelled to condemn her, 208. endeavours to encourage the king in the reformation, 226. oppoſes the bill relative to the ſix articles, 231. is forced to diſmiſs his wife, ib. diſcovers the Queen's incontinence to the King, 246. ſuſtains a great loſs by the death of the duke of Suffolk, 271. is accuſed of ſecretly promoting hereſy, ib. his behaviour in council, when ordered to the Tower, 272. his generous conduct on the trial of the duke of Norfolk, 277. is called to attend the dying king, 278. appointed one of Henry's executors, and regent, during the minority of Edward VI. 288. his moderation and prudence in promoting the reformation, by inſenſible advances, 293, 294. with difficulty prevails on Edward VI. to ſign a warrant for the execution of a heretic, 318. adheres to the protector, when deſerted by all others, 327. is prevailed by his dying

v.6

dying ſovereign, to ſubſcribe his conſent to the ſettlement of the crown on lady Jane Gray, 344. his indiſcreet conduct on the acceſſion of Queen Mary, 354. is impriſoned, tried, and condemned for high treaſon, 355. carried to Oxford, to diſpute about tranſubſtantiation, 360. degraded there, 389. prevailed on to ſign the popiſh tenets, but declares his repentance in a ſpeech to the people, ib. 390. ſuffers at the ſtake heroically, 390.

Crecy, battle of, ii. 197. it is decided in favour of the Engliſh, 199.

Credit, national, its antient ſtate, iv. 731. its ſtate in the reign of Queen Elizabeth, ib.

Crimes, how puniſhed under the Anglo-Norman government, i. 420.

Croc le, or le Croc, the French ambaſſador, refuſes to countenance Queen Mary's marriage with Bothwell, iv. 479.

Cruſades, their riſe, i. 209. appointed by general councils, 210. an univerſal eagerneſs to enter into them prevails, 211. the march of the cruſaders thro' Greece, 220. their ſucceſs againſt the Turks, 221. their behaviour at Jeruſalem, ib. their nobles chuſe Godfrey of Bolloign, king of Jeruſalem, 222. a new cruſade is preached by St. Bernard, 259. in which divers Engliſh noblemen engage, 259. the hiſtory of them reſumed, 321. the emperor, and other princes of Chriſtendom, engage in a cruſade againſt Saladin, 322. the emperor's bad ſucceſs, 335. the Kings of France and England, ſet out on a cruſade, ib. incidents on the way, 336, 337, 338. the arrival of the Engliſh army in Paleſtine, and their firſt ſucceſs, 339. the cruſade ends in a truce, 340, 341.

Cromwell, ſecretary of ſtate to Henry VIII. favours the reformation, iii. 185. the king's ſupremacy is delegated to him, 198. he enquires into the conduct of the friars, ib. ſits in convocation as vicar general, 211. publiſhes an ordinance, diſagreeable to the people, 214. his account of Lambert's diſpute with the king and biſhops, about the real preſence, 229. pronounces ſentence againſt him, ib. has the precedency of all the miniſters of ſtate, 234. becomes obnoxious to the king, on account of Anne of Cleves, 237. is flattered by the houſe of peers, 238. created earl of Eſſex, and knight of the garter, ib. ſeveral cauſes of his fall, 239. he is committed to the Tower, and condemned by the parliament, ib. his execution and character, 240.

——— Henry, made governor of Ireland, vi. 76. quietly reſigns, 95.

——— Oliver, his firſt ſpeech in the houſe of commons, v. 186. is prevented by a proclamation, from going to America, 208. becomes remarkable for valour, 355. his ſpeech, previous to the ſelf-denying ordinance, 379. how ſaved from the effects of it, 380. his character at that time, 381. and connexions with Fairfax, ib. routs the king's forces at Naſeby, 399. is made commander in chief by the army, 421. cauſes all further levies to be ſtopt, 426. ſeems complaiſant to the king, 427. and guides Fairfax, ib. his account of the breach between the king and him, 431. he cauſes the king to be doubly guarded, under colour of protecting him, 432. his views and practices in the army, 434. he quells the agitators, ib. ſummons a council of general officers to Windſor, 435. quells inſurrections of Engliſh royaliſts, 441. and prepares to defend againſt the Scots invaſion, ib. defeats Hamilton and Langdale, 446. and the laſt remains of the Engliſh inſurgents, 447. cauſes a remonſtrance to be drawn, and ſent to the houſe of commons, by the council of general officers, demanding the king's puniſhment, 448. and cauſes the king's perſon to be ſeized at Newport, ib. and the houſe to be purged, 449. his ſpeech in the houſe, when the ordinance for trying the king was made, 451. his character, and power, at the time of the king's death, vi. 3. he is made lieutenant of Ireland, 8. totally ſuppreſſes the Levellers, 9. arrives in Dublin, 11. his military operations in Ireland, 12. almoſt entirely ſubdues it, 13. returns to England, 23. and leaves the command of Ireland to Ireton, ib. ſucceeds Fairfax, ib. marches the army into Scotland, 24. where he is greatly ſtraitned for proviſions, ib. beats the Scots army at Dunbar, 25. takes poſſeſſion of Edinburgh, ib. routs their army at Worceſter, 29. diſcovers an inclination to be made king, 32. ſubdues all the colonies and iſlands, 35. reſolves to make war with the Dutch, 39. ſummons the general council of officers, 43. diſſolves the long parliament, 44. a hiſtory of his birth and private life, 46. he calls Barebones's parliament, 50. accepts of its reſignation, 53. is declared protector by the general council of officers, ib. calls a new-faſhioned parliament, 57. diſſolves it, 60. and quells an inſurrection, ib. exacts the tenth penny of the royaliſts, 61. grants letters of repriſal againſt the French, 64. reſolves on war with Spain, 66. ſubdues Jamaica, 68. his domeſtic adminiſtration, 71. his behaviour with pretended ſaints, 73. among his antient friends, 75. among the nobility, 76. ſummons his ſecond parliament, 77. abridges the powers of major-generals, 78. rejects the dignity of king, 81. is ſolemnly inaugurated protector, 82. revokes Lambert's commiſſion, and others, ib. diſpoſes of his daughter in marriage, 83. diſſolves his ſecond parliament, 84. makes an alliance with France againſt Spain, ib. obtains the delivery of Dunkirk, 85. various conſpiracies againſt him are diſcovered, 86. troubles ariſe in his family, 87. his diſturbed mind, 88. he ſickens, ib. dies, 89. remarks on his character, 90. his children and family, 92.

Cromwell, Richard, his character, vi. 83. he is brought to his father's court, ib. ſucceeds him, 94. calls a parliament, ib. is alarmed, 95. diſſolves his parliament, 96. reſigns, ib.

Cropey-bridge, battle of, v. 372.

Crown, the ſucceſſion to it, ſettled by parliament, iii. 262.

262. altered, 341. its antient prerogatives and ſources of power, iv. 717. its authority, how augmented, 736. its great power, vi. 351.

Cumberland, a county granted to Malcolm, King of Scotland, on conditions, i. 75. homage is received for it, to the crown of England, 76.

Cummin, John, his treachery to young Bruce in England, ii. 118. he is ſlain by Bruce in Scotland, 119. the conſequence of this murder, 120.

Cup, ſacramental, reſtored to the laity by parliament, iii. 305.

Cuſtoms, their ſtate in the reign of James I. v. 117. officers and farmers of, declared by the houſe of commons delinquents, 250. and glad to compound for a pardon, by paying a large fine, ib.

D.

DACRES, Leonard, raiſes an inſurrection in favour of Mary Queen of Scots, iv. 515. is ſoon ſuppreſſed, ib.

Danby, Earl, his character, vi. 242. is made lord high treaſurer, ib. impeached, 291. committed to the Tower, 298. admitted to bail, 367. his project in the convention at the revolution, 437. is called, with ſome others, to a converſation with the Prince of Orange, 439. his project diſagreeable to the Prince and Princeſs of Orange, 440.

Danegelt, what, i. 160. it is remitted, and when, 329.

Dangerfield, his ſchemes, vi. 314.

Darcy, a Frenchman, made warden of the marches by the Duke of Albany, iii. 10. is murdered by Sir David Hume, ib.

Darnly, Lord, ſon of the Earl Lennox, propoſed as a huſband to Queen Mary, iv. 459. repairs to Scotland, with permiſſion from Queen Elizabeth, 462. which is afterwards reſented by her, ib. his marriage with Queen Mary is effected, 462. he takes the title of king Henry, which many of the nobility are diſpleaſed with, ib. the qualifications of his mind do not correſpond with thoſe of his body, 465. his motley character, 466. heads the aſſaſſines of David Rizzio, 468. eſcapes with the Queen to Dunbar after the murder, 469. their diſagreeable converſation there, and precipitate parting, ib. rumours concerning him, while at Glaſgow, 473. to which place the queen alſo repairs, ib. by whoſe perſuaſions, he returns to a ſolitary houſe near Edinburgh, 474. which is blown up by gun-powder, ib. and ſuppoſed to be done by the directions of the queen and Bothwell, ib. who is tried for the murder, and acquitted, 475. an aſſociation is formed, to bring his murderers to puniſhment, 582.

David, King of Scotland. See *Scotland*.

Davis's Straits diſcovered, iv. 731.

Daviſon, ſecretary, draws out a warrant for the execution of Mary Queen of Scots, iv. 616. he diſpatches it to the perſons ordered to put it in execution, 617. his fate, 624. and curious anecdotes relative to the character of Queen Elizabeth, 624.

Debt, public, for the firſt time, contracted on parliamentary ſecurity, ii. 384.

Deering, a friar, writes a book of the revelations of the maid of Kent, iii. 190. is puniſhed for it, ib.

Deiſts, a deſcription of them, vi. 49.

Democracy, how mixt with the Engliſh conſtitution, ii. 445.

Denham, Sir John, his character, vi. 127.

Denmark, and Danes, they invade England, i. 48. take up their winter quarters there, 49. their firſt conqueſts, 52. engage to depart the kingdom, 54. rout king Alfred's army, 55. oblige him to diſguiſe himſelf, 56. are conquered by him, 58. live quietly with the Engliſh under the ſame laws, 59. a new invaſion of Danes is repulſed, 60. inſurrections of Danes quelled, 61. another inſurrection of Danes quelled, 62. they join the rebel Ethelwald, 70. are defeated, 71. again defeated, in the ſame quarrel, 73. another inſurrection of the Danes quelled, 74. another quelled, 76. invaſions of Danes made, 93. bought off, 94. another bought off, 95. their conduct in expeditions compared with that of the Goths and Vandals, 97. their conduct in England, 99. they are maſſacred there, 100. their repeated invaſions are bought off, 102. their King Canute the great, ſucceſſor of Sweyn, invades England, 103. obtains the crown of England, by a decree of the nobles, 105. his adminiſtration there. See *Canute* the Great. They are inſulted by the Engliſh, on the acceſſion of Edward the Confeſſor, 114. but by the mildneſs of that prince, reconciled with the Engliſh, ib. a Princeſs of Denmark is married to James VI. of Scotland, iv. 646. the King of Denmark is defeated by the Imperial general, v. 152. his capital is ſaved by an Engliſh ſquadron, vi. 101. he ſeizes all Dutch ſhips in his ports, 165. his extraordinary ſubſequent conduct, 166.

Derby, Earl, eldeſt ſon of the Duke of Lancaſter, is ſent to Guienne for the defence of that province, ii. 190. his military operations there, 191. informs the king of the great danger of that province, 192. he is maſter of the field there, 200. he is created duke of Hereford, 263. See *Hereford*, Duke.

——— another, his beneficence and munificence, iv. 735.

——— another, comes to the king at Worceſter, vi. 29. is put to death by a court-martial, after the defeat, 33.

De Ruyter, a Dutch admiral, fights Sir George Ayſcue, vi. 41. diſpoſſeſſes the Engliſh of Guinea, 162. engages Albemarle, 168. beats him, 170. engages the Duke of York, and the French, at Solebay, 217. retires before them, 218. is again beaten by the French and Engliſh, 231. killed in battle, 248.

Deſſe, commands a party of French troops ſent to aſſiſt the

v.6

the Scots, iii. 308. is recalled, after making ſeveral fruitleſs attempts, 310.

Devonſhire, an inſurrection there, on account of religion, iii. 321. the inſurgents beſiege Exeter, 322. are defeated, diſperſed, and many of them put to death, 323.

——— Earl of, propoſed as a huſband to Queen Mary of England, iii. 357. incurs her diſpleaſure on declining it, ib. is confined to Fotheringay caſtle on a falſe ſuſpicion, 364.

De Witt, Cornelius, goes aboard the Dutch fleet, as deputy from the ſtates, 217. comes aſhore for his health, 223. is maſſacred with his brother, 225.

——— John, grand penſionary, his character, vi. 163. he goes aboard the Dutch fleet, 164. becomes the Prince of Orange's tutor, 167. is befriended by the French king, 171. he protracts the negotiations at Breda, 175. behaves to Temple as an intimate acquaintance, 184. his behaviour on ſigning the triple league, 185. by his ſagacity, finds out the alliance between England and France, 205. provides in the beſt manner he can againſt its conſequences, 215. equips a fleet, 216. oppoſes the Prince of Orange's election to the Stadtholderſhip, 223. is accuſed of a deſign to poiſon the prince, 224. is maſſacred, 225.

Dieppe, put in poſſeſſion of the Engliſh, but ſoon abandoned, iv. 450.

Diſpenſing Power, firſt complained of, ii. 234. in Queen Elizabeth's reign, how frequent, iv. 723.

Domeſday-book, how cities appear by it to have been at the conqueſt, i. 149. what this book is, 196. and where kept, ib.

Donald, brother of Malcolm king of Scotland. See *Scotland*.

Donne's character, v. 130.

Doriſlaus, an account of him, vi. 13. he is murdered, ib.

Dorſet, Marquis, commands in an expedition againſt Fontarabia, iii. 79. diſcovers the double dealing of the king of Arragon, 80. returns to England, 81.

——— an author, his character, vi. 451.

Douglas, George, a principal actor in the murder of David Rizzio, iv. 467, 468.

Dover, a tumult there, i. 117. a ſea-fight there, vi. 40.

Drake, Sir Francis, a hiſtory of his younger years, iv. 560. he is patroniſed by Queen Elizabeth, 561. his firſt expedition to America, ib. his ſecond expedition to thoſe parts, 588. he deſtroys the Spaniſh fleet at Cadiz, 627. and takes a Curaccoa ſhip, ib. ſerves under Lord Effingham, in the fleet againſt the Spaniards, 632. takes two large Spaniſh ſhips in the engagement with the Spaniſh Armada in the channel, 638. commands in an expedition againſt Spain, 644. ravages the Spaniſh coaſts, 655. his laſt expedition and death, 664.

Druids, their authority, i. 3. their riches, how preſerved, 4. the uſage they met with from Suetonius Paulinus, the Roman governor, 6.

Dryden, his character, vi. 451.

Dudley, miniſter of Henry VII. ſeconds the avaritious oppreſſions of that prince, iii. 54. his character, 55. and tyrannical proceedings, ib. choſen ſpeaker of the houſe of commons, 56. his puniſhment on the acceſſion of Henry VIII. 71. falls a ſacrifice to popular reſentment, 72.

——— Lord Guildford, marries Lady Jane Gray, iii. 343. is impriſoned and condemned with her, after Queen Mary's acceſſion, 352. executed, 365.

——— Lord Robert, the principal favourite of Queen Elizabeth, iv. 443. is created Earl of Leiceſter, and propoſed as huſband to Queen Mary, 457, 458. See *Leiceſter*.

Dudley. See *Warwick*.

Duels, when, and on what occaſion they became faſhionable, iii. 148.

Du Gueſclin, a French commander, his hiſtory and behaviour to the Pope at Avignon, ii. 225. he is defeated by the Prince of Wales at Nagara, 226. returns to Caſtile at the head of another army, 227. is made conſtable of France, 229.

Dunbar, a battle there, vi. 25.

Duncan, natural ſon of Malcolm King of Scotland. See *Scotland*.

Dunes, battle of, vi. 84.

Dunkirk, given up by the French to Oliver Cromwell, vi. 85. ſold to them by Charles II. 153.

Dunois, count. See *Orleans*.

Durham, its biſhop, with Longchamp, biſhop of Ely, appointed guardians of the realm and juſticiaries, during the king's abſence, 334. the character of the latter, 335. the former reſigns, 341. the arrogance of the latter, ib. he flies beyond the ſeas, concealed under a female habit, 342.

Dunſtan, monk and hermit, his life and character, i. 78. placed at the head of the treaſury, by king Edred, 79. baniſhed by Edwy, ſucceſſor of Edred, 81. returns to England, 82. a diary of his life afterwards, ib.

Dutton Caſtle fined, vi. 364.

E.

EADBALD, renounces the chriſtian faith, i. 26. is reclaimed by Laurentius a biſhop, 27. he dies, ib.

Eanfield, and Orrock, their apoſtacy, i. 31.

Earl, a dignity, his office antiently, ii. 87. how changed into titular, 88. the effect of this innovation in the ſtate, ib.

Earpwold, ſucceeds his father Redwald in the kingdom of the Eaſt-Angles, i. 30. is converted to chriſtianity, 32. the hiſtory of his poſterity, 33.

Eaſter, riſe of the diſputes about it, i. 44. how, and when ended, 45.
Eaſt-India company, its firſt patent granted, iv. 731. firſt ſtock, ib. fully eſtabliſhed, v. 125.
Eccleſiaſtical eſtabliſhment, neceſſity of, iii. 116. that of the church of Rome, upon a bad foundation, 118.
Edgar, ſucceſſor of Edwy, his adminiſtration, i. 82. his favour to monks, 83. he ſummons a national council of prelates, 84. his behaviour to them, ib. his amours, 85. his penance, 86. more amours, ib. his marriage, 88. death, 89. his laws, 162.
——— Atheling, legal heir to Edward the Confeſſor, is judged by him incapable to ſucceed to the crown, i. 123. proclaimed king after Edward's death, 165. he yields the kingdom to William Duke of Normandy, 166. is carried with the king into Normandy, 170. eſcapes with his ſiſter into Scotland, 175. perſuades the Northumbrians to join in an inſurrection, 177. retires again into Scotland, 178. having come again into England, with a view to give new troubles, ſubmits himſelf to the conqueror's mercy, 186. is ſent into Scotland by the conqueror, to reſtore his nephew Edgar, King Malcolm's ſon, 219. which proves ſucceſsful, ib. is made a priſoner in a battle in Normandy, by Henry I. 231. his life afterwards, ib.
Edgehill, battle of, v. 337.
Edicts, royal, their authority under the Norman kings, i. 421.
Edinburgh, burnt and pillaged by the Engliſh, iii. 264. a tumult between ſome French troops and the inhabitants, 310. the provoſt and his ſon killed on that occaſion, ib. a great fray there, during the proceſſion of St. Giles, iv. 418. is taken poſſeſſion of by the congregational party, 423. an agreement is there made, between that party and the regent, ib. again taken poſſeſſion of by the congregational party, 424. a treaty there, between the French and Engliſh plenipotentiaries, 427. the zeal of the magiſtrates of this city againſt popery, on Queen Mary's arrival from France, 435. the city and caſtle taken poſſeſſion of by Queen Mary's party, 540. is reſcued from them, by the aſſiſtance of Queen Elizabeth, 541. tumults there, v. 219. encouraged from the pulpits, 220. tables there, 221. oppoſed in vain by the Duke of Hamilton, 222. taken poſſeſſion of by Oliver Cromwell, vi. 25. the convention, which eſtabliſhed the revolution, meets there, 431.
Editha, a nun, raviſhed by Edgar, i. 85. the penance required, 86.
——— a daughter of Earl Godwin, is married to Edward the Confeſſor, i. 114. She becomes odious to him, 116.
Edmond, primate of England, his extraordinary behaviour at court, in the reign of Henry III. ii. 14.
Edmund, ſucceſſor of Athelſtan, his ſhort reign, i. 75. and violent death, 76.
Edmund, (afterwards ſirnamed Ironſide) Prince, levies an army to oppoſe the Danes, i. 103. is obliged to maintain it by plunder, 104. ſucceeds his father, ib. makes peace with the Danes, 105. is murdered, ib.
Edred, ſucceſſor of Edmund, quells inſurrections of Danes, i. 76. his ſuperſtition, ib. he makes Dunſtan, a monk, treaſurer, 79. dies, 80.
Edric, king of Kent, is ſucceeded by Widred his brother, i. 27.
——— Duke, a traitor, governor of Mercia, is promoted at court, i. 101. the effects of this meaſure, ib. his treacheries continue, 103. they are renewed, 104.
Edward, ſirnamed the Elder, eldeſt ſon and ſucceſſor of Alfred, his couſin Ethelwald rebels againſt him, i. 69. the rebellion is ſuppreſſed, 70. he attacks the Northumbrians by ſea, ib. his ſhort reign and death, 71.
——— the Martyr, ſucceſſor of Edgar, his title, i. 89. his favour to monks, ib. he cauſes divers ſynods to be called in his reign, 90. his tragical death, 91.
——— ſirnamed the Confeſſor, ſucceeds Hardicanute in the kingdom of England, i. 113. marries Editha, earl Godwin's daughter, 114. ſummons a national council at Gillingham, ib. reſumes his predeceſſor's grants, 115. is kinder to Normans than to his own ſubjects, ib. diſlikes his Queen, 116. in vain orders earl Godwin to puniſh the perſons concerned in a tumult, 117. ſummons a general council of the kingdom at London, 118. makes an agreement with earl Godwin, 119. inveſts Algar, ſon of Leofrick, with the government of Eaſt-Anglia, 120. his inquietudes about the ſucceſſion, 121. makes a verbal nomination of William, duke of Normandy, to the ſucceſſion, 122. takes feeble and irreſolute ſteps for ſecuring the ſucceſſion to the duke of Normandy, 127. his death and character, 128.
——— Prince, eldeſt ſon of Henry III. gives indications of a great and manly ſpirit, ii. 30. is conſtrained to ſwear to the obſervance of the proviſions of Oxford, ib. requeſted by the knights of the counties to interpoſe with the twenty-four barons, in behalf of the kingdom, 32. his meſſage to the barons on that occaſion, ib. his character at that early time of life, 34. he repulſes Lewellyn, prince of Wales, 37. is made a priſoner by the barons at a parley with them, 39. releaſed on a ſubſequent accommodation, ib. in conjunction with the King obliges earl Leiceſter to retreat to London, 41. leads on the King's army into the field at Lewes, 42. is there made a priſoner by the rebel army, 43. releaſed on ignominious terms by Leiceſter, 48. commands in the battle at Eveſham, 49. obtains a complete victory over the barons, 50. ſaves his father's life in the field of battle, ib. ſets out on a cruſade for the Holy Land, 52. ſignalizes himſelf there,

v.6

53. the hiſtory of his return, 61. his coronation, ib. an account of his adminiſtration, 62. grievouſly oppreſſes the Jews, 63. his frugal management, 64. he obtains an aid of parliament to aſſiſt him in his expedition againſt Wales, 65. ſubdues that principality, 66. which again flies to arms, ib. the inſurgents are defeated with great ſlaughter, 67. and the principality annexed to the crown, ib. ſettles a difference between Alphonſo, King of Arragon, and Philip the Hardy, 68. puniſhes his corrupt judges in parliament, ib. accepts of a reference from the ſtates of Scotland, and the competitors for the Scots crown, 72. his view in accepting of this reference, ib. an examination of his claim to a feudal ſuperiority over Scotland, 73. A further examination of this queſtion, 74. Deſcartes's opinion on this point canvaſſed, 75. Edward's behaviour to the Scots nobles at Noreham, 76. their anſwer to his demand 77. an account of the claimants to the Scots crown, ib. Edward's conduct previous to his determination, 78. his equitable adminiſtration in England, 79. his award relative to the Scots crown, ib. the humiliating demands he obliges the Scots King to comply with, 80. an account of a quarrel between the Norman and Engliſh ſailors, 81. The King's endeavours to prevent that quarrel from becoming the cauſe of a rupture with France, 82. is nevertheleſs obliged to make war with France, 83. the ſucceſs of that war, 84. the commencement of a war with Scotland, 95. its progreſs, 96. the total conqueſt of Scotland, 97. the meaſures he purſues in order to diſturb France, 98. begins to quarrel with his clergy, 99. makes them ſubmit, 100. purſues arbitrary meaſures in order to ſupply himſelf with money for a French expedition, 101. an extraordinary altercation between him and two powerful barons, ib. purſues moderate meaſures, 102. goes to France, ib. the conſequences of his quarrel with the barons appear while he is abroad, 103. he confirms the great charter, and another, called the leſſer, after his return, 104. confirms them often, 105. ſubmits his differences with France to Pope Boniface, 106. and acquieſces with France in the Pope's award, 107. a revolt in Scotland, 108. the progreſs of that revolt, 109. all the Engliſh government is expelled out of Scotland, 110. Edward in perſon routs the Scots army at Falkirk, 111. ſubdues all Scotland, 113. his anſwer to the Pope's letter relative to Scotland, 114. which revolts again and chaſes away the Engliſh government, ib. Edward again in perſon ſubdues it, 116. the Scots again revolt, 119. and Edward dies on his road to Scotland, 120. his character, 121. a conſideration of his civil adminiſtration and laws, ib. a review of his arbitrary proceedings, 122. his conduct towards the barons and the church animadverted on, 123. his conduct towards the court of Rome conſidered, 124. his children, ib. the ſtate of taxes in his reign, 125.

Edward II. his weakneſs diſcovered, ii. 126. his paſſion for Gaveſton, 127. leaves him guardian of the realm, during his abſence in France, 128. his behaviour to Gaveſton under ſentence of baniſhment pronounced in parliament, 129. conſents to the nomination of a junto of barons empowered to enact ordinances for the good of the ſtate, 130. a war breaks out between him and the barons, about Gaveſton, 131. he makes an accommodation with them, 132. and a truce with R. Bruce, 133. invades Scotland with a mighty army, 134. is defeated at Bannockburn, 135. the effect of this misfortune on his adminiſtration in England, 136. his character, 137. he gives a new umbrage to his barons by his paſſion for Hugh Spenſer, 138. is compelled to conſent to Spenſer's baniſhment, by Lancaſter's party in arms, 139. and to an act of indemnity in favour of mutinous barons, ib. takes the earl of Lancaſter priſoner, and beheads him, 141. his bounty to his followers in the expedition againſt the Lancaſtrians, ib. reſigns the dominion of Guienne to his ſon, now thirteen years of age, 142. upon the Queen's invaſion flies to the Weſt, 145. is taken and put into the cuſtody of the young earl of Lancaſter, 146. depoſed by a parliament called by the Queen in his name, ib. the cruel uſage he met with under confinement, 147. is murdered, 148. his character, ib. the reign of Edward I. compared with this, 149. miſcellaneous tranſactions of this reign, 151. his children, 155.

——— prince, eldeſt ſon of Edward II. the dutchy of Guienne is reſigned to him by his father, ii. 142. he goes with his mother to Paris, in order to do homage for that dutchy to Charles of France, 143. affianced by his mother to Philippa, daughter of the earl of Holland, 144. enthroned in England, under the title of Regent, 146. ſucceeds to the royal dignity by the death of his father, 148. a council of regency appointed for him by the parliament, 156. marches againſt the Scots invaders, 157. an account of his route, 158. cauſes Mortimer to be taken and tried in parliament, 161. aſſumes the reins of government, 162. applies to earl Murray, regent of Scotland, for execution of an article of treaty, relative to the eſtates of Engliſhmen in Scotland, 163. ſecretly encourages John Baliol to make good his pretenſions on the crown of Scotland, 164. makes war with Scotland on Baliol's account, 166. obliges a Scots parliament to receive Baliol as King, 167. again ſupports Baliol's title by an army, 168. his title to France conſidered, 169. He does homage to Philip, King of France, for Guienne, 170. enters into divers foreign alliances, in order to ſtrengthen himſelf for his French expedition, 171. courts the Flemings, and procures their aid, 172. conſults his parliament, and obtains a grant of them for the ſame purpoſe, 173. aſſumes the title of King of France, ib. his allies compared with thoſe of France, 174. enters France with an army, but

retires without coming to a battle, 175. procures from his parliament a further ſupply, 176. quarters the arms of France with thoſe of England, ib. his navy, headed by himſelf, beats the French fleet off the coaſt of Flanders, 177. his Flemiſh allies beſiege St. Omer, ib. Edward in perſon beſieges Tournay, 178. challenges the French King to ſingle combat, 179. his reaſons for liſtening to terms of accommodation, ib. a negotiation enſues, 180. but he, before it is finiſhed, eſcapes by ſtealth to England, ib. his ill-humour diſplayed on his landing at the Tower, 181. he quarrels with Stratford, archbiſhop of Canterbury, ib. receives from him a letter wrote in an extraordinary ſtile, 182. is reconciled to him, 183. makes large conceſſions to his parliament, 184. obtains a repeal of thoſe conceſſions, 185. enters into a treaty with the earl of Mountfort againſt France, 186. ſends ſuccours to the counteſs of Mountfort, beſieged in the caſtle of Hennebonne, 188. receives a viſit from her in England, and ſends her back at the head of an army, ib. goes in perſon to her aſſiſtance, 189. the dangers he incurs in that expedition, and how he eſcapes them, ib. again conſults his parliament, and obtains more ſupplies, 190. ſends earl Derby unto Guienne, for the defence of that province, ib. embarks an army under his own command for Guienne, but diſembarks it at la Hogue in Normandy, 192. plunders that province, and puts it in a great conſternation, 193. pillages Caën, ib. his perilous march towards Paris, and hazardous retreat, 194. the diſpoſition of his army previous to the battle of Crecy, 195. places in his front pieces of artillery, the firſt uſed in Europe, 196. the battle begins, 197. is carried on, 198. decided in favour of the Engliſh, 199. lays ſiege to Calais, 200. which offers to capitulate, 202. takes poſſeſſion of the city, and at the Queen's entreaty ſpares the ſix burgeſſes doomed to death, 203. inſtitutes the order of the garter, 206. makes a truce with France, 207. which being expired, the war breaks out anew, 209. leaves France, in order to defend England againſt a threatened invaſion of the Scots, 210. ſends earl Lancaſter at the head of an army to ſupport his partizans in Normandy, ib. his troops, under the Prince of Wales, penetrate into the heart of France, 211. beat the French at Poictiers, 213. take the French king priſoner, 214. who is preſented to him at London, by the Prince of Wales, 215. Edward's hands are tied from taking advantage of the confuſions, now in France, by a truce, 218. and he employs his time in making a truce with his priſoner, ib. which the Dauphin and the States of France reject, ib. the war is renewed, ib. but eluded by a defenſive plan concerted by the Dauphin, 219. a peace enſues at Bretigni, 221. in conſequence of which, the French king is ſet at liberty, 221. Edward receives a viſit from the ſame monarch, 222. a new rupture with France happens, 228. the ill ſucceſs of the military operations, 229. to what a pitch the king is thereby incenſed, ib. the mortifications of his declining life, 230. and the death of his eldeſt ſon, ib. his own death and character, 231. his poſterity, 232. his pretended attachment to his parliament, 233. his laws concerning treaſon, ib. and how often he confirmed the great charter, ib. a laudable clauſe of one of his ſtatutes, 234. his behaviour in regard to purveyors, ib. Windſor palace is built by him, 235. his arbitrary government, ib. how, no ſlave to the court of Rome, 236. his wiſe laws, to curb the power of that court, ib. his laity, how conformable to his diſpoſition in that point, 237. a review of the then police of the kingdom, ib. this reign, how deſerving to be ſtudied, 240.

Edward, ſon of Richard Duke of York, ſucceeds to his father's title to the crown, by his death, ii. 381. is proclaimed in London, under the name of Edward IV. 382. his ſanguinary temper exemplified, 385. gives battle to the Lancaſtrians at Touton, 386. routs them, 387. his cruel orders after the rout, ib. his title is recognized in parliament, 388. his Engliſh dominions are invaded by the French, 390. who are routed at Hexham, 391. his eaſy and pleaſurable life after this victory, 392. marries lady Elizabeth Gray, widow of Sir John Gray, of Groby, 393. how earl Warwic is thereby diſguſted, 394. he concludes an alliance with the dukes of Burgundy and Britanny, 396. an inſurrection in Yorkſhire, 397. the inſurgents defeat his forces under Earl Pembroke, ib. they are quieted and diſperſed, 398. he quells another inſurrection, 399. marches at the head of a great army, to encounter Warwic, 402. flies from his army into Holland, 403. at his return, is received by the Londoners in a friendly manner, 406. becomes maſter of that city, and of the perſon of Henry VI. 407. routs, and ſlays Warwic at the battle of Barnet, 408 diſperſes Queen Margaret's army at the battle of Tewkſbury, ib. extinguiſhes the hopes of the Lancaſtrian family, 409. forms a league with the Duke of Burgundy againſt France, 410. invades it, 411. makes a truce with the French king, 412. political remarks on this treaty, 413. he ſets Queen Margaret at liberty, 414. grows jealous of his brother the Duke of Clarence, 415. in perſon, accuſes him in the houſe of peers, 416. and cauſes him to be executed, 417. his domeſtic ſchemes, ib. his death and character, 418. the care he took of the future tranquillity of the ſtate, in his laſt illneſs, 420. the effects of his licentious life on his poſterity, 426.

——— Prince of Wales, eldeſt ſon of Edward III. See *Wales*.

——— Prince of Wales, eldeſt ſon of Edward IV. a minor, becomes king by the death of his father, ii. 419. expreſſes reſentment at the oppreſſions of his relations, 422. is murdered, together with his brother, in the Tower, 429.

——— Prince, eldeſt ſon of Henry VIII. is born, iv. 218.

218. created Prince of Wales, ib. his acceſſion to the throne, 287. and ſtate of the regency appointed by the late king, ib. a propoſal to chuſe a protector, is made in the council of the regency, 288. and complied with, 289. and the earl of Hartford is choſen protector, ib. who is thereon created duke of Somerſet, ib. writes to the parliament, deſiring lord Seymour to be appointed his governor, 312. his unwillingneſs to ſign a warrant for the execution of a heretic, 318. a deſign to marry him with a daughter of France, 330. his great averſion to popery, 333. is hardly prevailed on to allow his ſiſter Mary the private exerciſe of her religion, ib. kept from reflection, by a continued ſeries of amuſements, during the trial and execution of his uncle Somerſet, 337. brought into great debts, by the rapacity of courtiers, 341. perſuaded to alter the ſucceſſion, 342. his laſt ſickneſs, 343. ſettles the crown on lady Jane Gray, 344. his death and character, 345.

Edwin, ſucceeds Adelfrid, firſt king of the Northumbrians, i. 29. is converted to the chriſtian faith, 30. periſhes in battle, ib. his kingdom is divided on his death, 31. and his family extinguiſhed, ib.

——— and Morcar, earls, proclaim Edgar Atheling king, i. 165. appear at the head of this rebellion, againſt William the Conqueror, ib. are left deſtitute of all ſupport, 175. their fate, 185.

Edwy, ſucceſſor of Edred, his extraordinary behaviour on his coronation day, i. 80. his ſubjects revolt, 81. his death, 82.

Effingham, Lord Howard, takes on him the command of Queen Elizabeth's navy, iv. 632. in contempt of his orders, ſails to the coaſt of Spain, 636. returns in time to oppoſe the armada in the channel, 637. practiſes a ſucceſsful ſtratagem in that engagement, 638. defeats the Spaniards, 639. commands as high admiral in the expedition againſt Cadiz, 664. plunders it, 665. on his return, is created Earl of Nottingham, 666. becomes unpopu'ar, by diſcovering an inclination for peace with Spain, 695.

Egbert, ſon of Eadbald, King of Kent, his bloody precaution to aſſure the throne to his poſterity, i. 27. how, and by whom deeafted, ib.

——— ſon of Woden, acquires the kingdom of Weſſex, i. 40. his other conqueſts, 41. unites all the heptarchy into one great ſtate, called England, 42. the nature of this new ſtate, 46. the troubles he met with, 47. his death, ib.

Elbeuf, marquis of, accompanies Queen Mary from France to Scotland, iv. 443. a remarkable adventure of his in Scotland, 437, 438.

Eleanor, heireſs of Poictou, divorced from Lewis VIIth of France, i. 260. married to Henry, grandſon of Henry I. ib. her weak and diſguſting behaviour, 307. ſhe obtains from her huſband the reſtitution of her hereditary dominions, 321. is entruſted with the government of England, by her ſon Richard I. 331. diſſuades Prince John from liſtening to the French king's advice, 342. by reiterated letters, intercedes for his interpoſal in behalf of her ſon Richard, then a priſoner in Germany, 346. carries her ſon's ranſom to the duke of Auſtria, 349. obtains a pardon for Prince John, 351. is buried by Edward I. ii. 79.

——— daughter of the earl of Provence, is married to Henry III. ii. 14. the bad conſequences of this marriage, 15. her expedition to relieve her huſband, oppreſſed by rebel barons, is diſappointed by ſtorms, 45.

Elfrida, daughter of the earl of Devonſhire, her beauty, i. 86. ſhe is married to Ethelwold, king Edgar's favourite, 87. after his death, ſhe is married to the king, 88. her ſervants murder Edward the martyr, 91. her ſon ſucceeds him, 92.

Elgiva, wife of Edwy, an amiable princeſs, is hamſtrung by monks, i. 81.

Elizabeth, princeſs, daughter of Henry VIII. born, iii. 175. the title of princeſs of Wales, is conferred on her, ib. ſhe is favoured by her father, and his Queen, Jane Seymour, 209. is declared illegitimate, 210. reſtored, by the parliament, to her right of ſucceſſion, 262. favours the addreſſes of lord Seymour, 312. her right of ſucceſſion ſet aſide, in favour of lady Jane Gray, 344. joins Queen Mary, with ſome forces, on her acceſſion, 351. becomes obnoxious to her, 357. is harſhly treated by her, 363, 364. ſeized, by her order, and committed to the Tower, 364. diſmiſſed from the Tower, and afterwards committed at Woodſtock, ib. her prudent conduct during Queen Mary's reign, 398. declines a marriage with the king of Sweden, ib. her cautious anſwer, when queſtioned about the real preſence, 399. her great popularity at her acceſſion, iv. 403, 404. her laudable behaviour on her arrival at the Tower, and afterwards at St. James's, 404. her gratitude to Philip II. of Spain, ib. reaſons for declining a marriage with that monarch, 405. notifies her acceſſion to the Pope, who thereon behaves very inſolently, ib. her ſpirited reſentment, ib. ſhe ſettles her council, 406. and reſtores the proteſtant religion, ib. recalls the exiles, and releaſes priſoners detained on account of religion, 407. makes ſeveral other regulations in favour of the reformation, ib. her popular behaviour at her coronation, 408. her title recognized by parliament, ib. ſhe is declared ſupreme head of the church of England, 409. many other high prerogatives, 410, 411. her anſwer to the parliament's addreſs, about chuſing a huſband, 411, 412. favours ſome of the catholic ceremonies, 413. refuſes to grant a toleration, ib. her prudence in concluding a peace with France, ib. 414. and with Scotland, 414. why diſguſted with Mary Queen of Scots, 415. is ſolicited for aſſiſtance by the congregation in Scotland, 425. ſends a fleet and army to ſupport them, 426. refuſes the offers of France, and concludes a treaty with the congregation, ib. ſends tranſports to carry the French troops out

out of Scotland, 427. ſettles Scotland, and obliges to comply with articles favourable to that kingdom, ib. her great ſagacity in this tranſaction diſplayed, ib. 428. acquires great influence with the Scots, 428. refuſes to Queen Mary, a paſſage through England, 432. her deſign to intercept her, is diſappointed, 433. her anſwer to Queen Mary's ſollicitation of friendſhip, 440, 441. refuſes to own Mary's right of ſucceſſion to the crown of England, 442. her prudent adminiſtration, ib. ſeveral ſuitors make their addreſſes to her, 443. to whom ſhe gives a gentle refuſal, ib. her averſion to aſcertain the ſucceſſion, ib. 444. her ſeverity to the earl of Hartford and his lady, 444. pardons ſome conſpirators in favour of Queen Mary, 445. is the chief ſupport of the proteſtant intereſt in Europe, 447. ſolicited to aſſiſt the prince of Condé, 449. her motives for complying, ib. 450. gets poſſeſſion of Havre de Grace and Dieppe, 450. is ſeized by the ſmall-pox, which gives great uneaſineſs to the nation, on account of the ſucceſſion, 457. after her recovery ſolicited by the parliament to marry, or ſettle the ſucceſſion, ib. and is much puzzled by this requeſt, ib. 452. and by repeated applications on that head, to which ſhe always gives an evaſive anſwer, ib. 453. her prerogative extended by parliament, 453. ſhe publiſhes a manifeſto in France, 454. makes an accommodation with France, 456. profeſſes great friendſhip for Queen Mary, ib. her reaſons for declining an interview with her, 557. her jealouſy of her, ib. propoſes lord Robert, earl of Leiceſter, for a huſband to her, ib. 458. her artful deſign in this, 458. her fickleneſs and vanity, diſcovered by Sir James Melvill, 459. approves of lord Darnley's marriage with Queen Mary, and afterwards diſapproves of it, 460. deals unfairly on that occaſion, ib. 461. ſecretly encourages male-contents againſt Queen Mary, and publickly diſclaims any connection with them, 463. her deep diſſimulation, 464. her remarkable behaviour, on hearing of the birth of a prince of Scotland, 469, 470. and duplicity on that occaſion, 470. ſends commiſſioners with preſents to the baptiſm, ib. ſtops the proceedings of the parliament about the ſucceſſion, ib. her ſpeech to the parliament on that occaſion, 471, 472. ſhe remonſtrates againſt Queen Mary's marriage with Bothwell, 479. ſeems to compaſſionate Mary's misfortunes, when a priſoner, 483. ſends an ambaſſador, with prudent inſtructions, to mediate between her and her ſubjects, ib. 484. propoſes that the young prince ſhould be ſent to England for ſafety, ib. deſigns to aſſiſt Queen Mary to make her eſcape from Lochleven, 487. is adviſed by Cecil, how to behave to her, on her arrival in England, 489, 490. ſends meſſengers, with an excuſe, for not accepting a viſit from her, 490. interpoſes in her favour with the regent of Scotland, 491. her artful conduct to procure the ſubmiſſion of Queen Mary's cauſe to her, and why ſo deſirous to gain this point, 492, 493. appoints commiſſioners to hear both ſides, 492. the complaints of Mary, and thoſe of her enemies, are laid before Queen Elizabeth's commiſſioners, 493. queries propoſed to her commiſſioners, by the earl of Murray, regent of Scotland, 495. the conferences are transferred to Hampton-court, ib. where an anſwer is made to the earl of Murray's queries, 496. artfully draws from him the letters of correſpondence between Queen Mary and Bothwell, 497. which contain inconteſtible evidences of Mary's guilt, ib. Elizabeth communicates her ſentiments on this ſubject to her privy-council, 500. and to Mary's commiſſioners, 501. diſmiſſes Murray, with marks of favour, 502. but declines acknowledging him as regent of Scotland, or the young prince as king of Scotland, 503. her artful conduct with Queen Mary, in ſending her terms of agreement, and declining thoſe propoſed by that Queen, ib. ſhe demands of the French court the reſtitution of Calais, but is obliged to put up with a refuſal, 504. ineffectually renews the negotiations of marriage with the arch-duke Charles, ib. ſome anecdotes concerning her religion, 507. her rigidity in puniſhing nonconformity, 508. is greatly influenced by Cecil, 511. her political conduct to him, ib. is informed by Murray, of Norfolk's conſpiracy, 512. doth not yield to Norfolk's attempt to amuſe her, 513. takes prudent meaſures to ſuppreſs an inſurrection in the North, 514. is obliged to diſſemble with Queen Mary, 516. her perſonal conduct and power, compared with Queen Mary's, ib. her propoſals to the ſtates of Scotland, and anſwers thereto, ib. 517. ſhe is cautious not to declare openly againſt Queen Mary, 517. but continues to diſſemble with her, 518. and makes her ſeveral propoſals, in order to her reſtoration, ib. which the neceſſity of her affairs obliges her to conſent to, 519. Elizabeth alſo treats with commiſſioners, appointed by the Scots parliament, ib. the breach is widened between her and Mary, by the Pope's bull of excommunication and depoſition, then publiſhed, 520. which is ſuppoſed to be done in concert with Mary, ib. the dawnings of liberty are ſuppreſſed, by her injunctions to the parliament, not to meddle in affairs of ſtate, 521. is offended with the motion of a member of the houſe of commons, relative to religion, and forbids him to appear in the houſe afterwards, 522. but takes off this prohibition the next day, 524. her jealouſy of her prerogative relative to patents, ib. at the end of a ſeſſion, ſhe checks by rebukes the feeble efforts therein made towards liberty, 526. and avows maxims of government, aſſerting an uncontroulable power over her parliaments, 527. gives ſecret aſſiſtance to the proteſtants in France, 530. the French king endeavours to impoſe on her, by the propoſal of a marriage with the duke of Anjou, 531. which ſhe encourages, in order to deceive him, 532. motives for her diſſimulation, ib. careſſes the Flemiſh refugees, 535. inſults the duke of Alva, ib. a ſcheme

v.6

is formed to ſubvert her government, 536. it is diſcovered, and prevented, 537. ſhe heſitates about the execution of the duke of Norfolk, till petitioned by the houſe of commons, 538. calls Queen Mary to account for her conduct, 539. ſtops proceedings againſt her in the houſe of commons, ib. and forbids that houſe to meddle with the ceremonies of the church, ib. 540. is impoſed on by the French king, 541. her aſtoniſhment, and indignation, on hearing of the maſſacre at Paris, 543. her reſolute anſwer to the French ambaſſador's account of that tranſaction, ib. uſes her utmoſt endeavours to guard againſt the treachery of catholics, and diſſembles with the French king, 544. moderates the zealous reſentment of her ſubjects againſt the French, 545. but encourages the Hugonots in France, 547. her aſſiſtance is ſolicited by the Dutch, againſt the tyranny of the Spaniards, 550. her reaſons for refuſing to accept the proffered ſovereignty of theſe provinces, ib. 551. ineffectually intercedes for them with Philip of Spain, 551. enters into a treaty with them, whereby ſhe is engaged, on certain conditions, to aſſiſt them with men and money, 552. propoſes for them terms of accommodation with the king of Spain, ib. 553. her wiſe and politic management, 554. maintains her authority over the parliament, 557. by her ambaſſador, intercedes in behalf of Morton, 559. repulſes a Spaniſh invaſion of Ireland, 560. patroniſes Sir Francis Drake, 561. ſummons a parliament, ib. obtains of them to paſs divers laws in her favour, 562. reprimands the houſe of commons for appointing a faſt of their own authority, ib. by what means ſhe is engaged to hate the catholics, 563. ſhe reſolves, and why, to form a confederacy againſt the power of Spain, 564. the reception the duke of Anjou's addreſſes met with from her, 565. an account of the marriage treaty propoſed between the Queen and the duke, 566. the further proſecution of this courtſhip, 567. all the friends of the Queen remonſtrate againſt the French marriage, 568. whereby ſhe is moved to refuſe the duke's ſuit, 569. exhorts the king of Scotland not to reſent the earl of Gowrie's violence, 571. her reaſons for oppoſing Queen Mary's reſtoration, 573. her deceitful dealings with that princeſs, 574. her government is diſturbed by conſpiracies in England, 576. which are imputed to the Queen of Scots, 577. her parliament's care, and great kindneſs to her, ib. the nature of her eccleſiaſtical commiſſions, 579. the terms of one more arbitrary than the reſt, 580. her ſpeech to the commons, from the throne, relative to their petition to the houſe of peers concerning religious grievances, 581. ſhe grants a new eccleſiaſtical commiſſion, ib. a conſpiracy againſt her life is formed, 582. it is detected, and the conſpirators puniſhed, 583. another conſpiracy is defeated, ib. the opinions of her counſellors upon the application of the proteſtants in Holland, 585. ſhe concludes a league with the Dutch, 586. ſends them aſſiſtance, headed by the earl of Leiceſter, 587. how diſobliged with the ſtates on this occaſion, ib. ſhe invades the Spaniſh dominions in America, 588. makes a league with the king of Scotland, 591. in what light ſhe then regarded Mary Queen of Scots, 592. the effect of the meaſures ſhe took with that princeſs, 593. another conſpiracy againſt Queen Elizabeth, 594. which is diſcovered, 596. Mary Queen of Scots aſſents to this conſpiracy, 597. the conſpirators are ſeized and puniſhed with death, 598. the treatment ſhe gives, on that occaſion, to Mary Queen of Scots, 599. iſſues a commiſſion to try her, ib. her behaviour, on being informed of Mary's condemnation, 607. cauſes the parliament, which ſhe ſummons on Queen Mary's account, to be opened by commiſſion, 608. how ſhe receives the ſolicitations of parliament for Mary's execution, 609. cauſes Queen Mary to be informed of theſe preſſing requeſts, 611. receives a letter from her, 612. which ſhe never anſwered, ib. the reaſons uſed by her courtiers, to perſuade her to order Mary for execution, 615. ſhe reſolves on Mary's execution, 616. cauſes a warrant for the execution to be ſecretly drawn out, 617. which is ſent down to the perſons concerned, to ſee it done, ib. her behaviour, on hearing of Mary's execution, 623. how ſhe treated, ſecretly, Daviſon on that account, 624. becomes ſenſible of the danger of this proceeding, 625. ſends a fleet under Drake, againſt the coaſts of Spain, 627. makes preparation to oppoſe the invincible armada, 631. her ſhips and ſailors, compared with thoſe of Spain, 632. the prudence and vigour of her conduct on this occaſion, 633. the means ſhe uſed to rouſe the animoſity of the nation againſt popery, 634. her ſpirited appearance, when riding through the lines, 635. her behaviour, on hearing of the return of the Spaniſh armada into the ports of Spain, 636. her admiral's behaviour on that occaſion, ib. her fleet engages the armada in the channel, 637. and defeats it, 639. her uſual injunction renewed every ſeſſion to the houſe of commons, 640. her imperious behaviour to that houſe, 641. her ſpeech to their committee, ib. ſhe permits her ſubjects to ſend out expeditions againſt Spain, 644. oppoſes the Scots king's marriage with a princeſs of Denmark, 646. aſſiſts the king of Navarre with money, 648. makes him a preſent of more money, after his acceſſion to the French throne, 649. continues her ſuccours, 650. concludes a new treaty with him, and ſends him three thouſand men, 651. and notwithſtanding former diſappointments, forms another treaty with him, 652. the ſucceſs of divers adventurers, patroniſed by her, againſt Spain, 653. her anſwer to the ſpeaker of the houſe of commons, ſoliciting as uſual for the privileges of the houſe, 654. ſhe puts three members under confinement, for propoſing to offer a bill for entailing the ſucceſſion of the crown, ib. mortifies the houſe further, 655. and points out to them the only buſineſs that they are to take

under their conſideration, ib. makes them obey her, 656. and alſo to grant larger ſupplies, 657. her aſſuming harangue on that occaſion, ib. makes a new league with the French king, after his apoſtacy, 659. her advice to the Scots king, upon the diſcovery of the plot of the three catholic lords againſt him, 659. how ſhe regarded that prince, 660. a conſpiracy againſt her, how diſappointed and avenged, 661. powerfully aſſiſts the French king againſt the catholic league, ib. becomes more ſparing in his cauſe, 662. enters into a treaty with the ſtates of Holland, ib. encourages naval expeditions againſt the Spaniſh dominions in America, 664. and againſt Spain, ib. her fleet takes and plunders Cadiz, 665. creates lord Effingham, commander in chief in that expedition, earl of Nottingham, ib. grants to the earl of Eſſex the chief command of an expedition againſt Spain, 667. creates him earl-marſhal of England, 668. ſummons a parliament, ib. her ſpeech to the parliament, delivered by the lord-keeper, 669. her anſwer to the application of the houſe of commons, about monopolies, 670. her remonſtrance to the French king, againſt a peace with Spain, ib. her behaviour on that occaſion, 671. ſhe liſtens to Eſſex's councils, 672. falls out with him, 673. reinſtates him in her favour, 675. makes a new treaty with the Dutch, ib. appoints the earl of Eſſex, lord governor of Ireland, 682. levies for him a numerous army, ib. is greatly diſguſted on hearing of his frivolous enterpriſes, 684. informs him of her diſſatisfaction, 685. at firſt, receives him graciouſly, 686. but orders him to be confined to his chamber, and examined by the council, ib. her behaviour to that nobleman under ſickneſs, 687. and afterwards, on his recovery, ib. appoints lord Mountjoy deputy of Ireland, 688. what contributed to keep up her anger againſt Eſſex, ib. ſhe cauſes him to be again examined by the privy-council, 689. orders Bacon to draw up an account of Eſſex's examination, 690. her behaviour on hearing this narrative read, 691. her ſoft anſwer to Eſſex's ſubmiſſive meſſage, ib. her rough anſwer to Eſſex's requeſt, relative to a renewal of his monopoly patent of ſweet wines, 692. its effect on that nobleman, ib. her remarkable jealouſy about her beauty and perſon, 693. breaks off a negotiation with Spain, on account of a diſpute about a point of ceremony, 695. what means ſhe uſes to diſcover, if Eſſex is projecting an inſurrection, 696. gets information of Eſſex's deſigns, 697. behaves with great tranquillity during the inſurrection, 698. orders Eſſex and Southampton to be tried by their peers, ib. her inconſtant reſolutions about Eſſex's fate, terminate in her conſent to his execution, 700. cauſes ſome of his aſſociates to be alſo executed, and pardons the reſt, 701. is deſirous of a perſonal interview with the French king, 702. her political ſentiments, with reſpect to the ſyſtem of Europe, 703. the ſchemes of her courtiers, with reſpect to Ireland, ib. her juſt reſolutions on that head, 704. the expedients ſhe made uſe of to raiſe money for ſuppreſſing Iriſh inſurrections, are productive of various grievances, 706. the topics inſiſted on, for ſupport of theſe meaſures, in the houſe, 707. promiſes to cancel the moſt grievous monopoly patents, 708. her behaviour to the commons, when thanking her for her goodneſs, in making this condeſcending promiſe, 711. her fleet takes, and brings home, a Spaniſh Curacao ſhip, 712. ſhe grows melancholy, ib. the ſuppoſed cauſe of her uneaſineſs, 713. her death and character, 714. her miniſters and warriors, 715. her fame, how eſtimated, ib. the ſtate of government during her reign, 716. the antient and eſtabliſhed inſtruments of power, 717. the then ſtate of the martial law, 718. what the government of England then reſembled, 721. her arbitrary power, and endleſs inventions to ſtrip her people of money, 722. her proclamations, and embargoes, how uſed by her, 723. extravagant acts of arbitrary power, 724. how ſedition was then puniſhed, 725. her moſt abſolute authority, how believed and ſubmitted to, 726. the ſad ſtate of morals in her reign, 727. her œconomy, 728. an account of the payments ſhe made, and the debts due to her, 729. her ordinary revenue, 730. how ſhe ſhook off dependance on foreigners, and foreign loans, 731. how ſhe encouraged commerce and navigation, ib. her dealings with Muſcovy and Turky, 732. with the Hanſe towns, Genoa, and Venice, 733. the magnificence and hoſpitality of her nobility, 735. the reſtraints ſhe laid on luxury, 736. her own practice in that reſpect, ib. her character as an author, 738. what regard ſhe paid to learned men, ib.

Elizabeth, princeſs, daughter of James I. married to Frederic, Elector Palatine of the Rhine, v. 43. See *Frederick*, Elector Palatine of the Rhine.

Eliot, Sir John, impriſoned and releaſed, and why, v. 148. his behaviour in the houſe, 186. again impriſoned, 187. dies in priſon, 188. how reſented by the nation, ib.

Embargoes, how uſed in the reign of Queen Elizabeth, iv. 723.

Emma, ſiſter of duke Richard of Normandy, is married to king Ethelred, i. 96. becomes a widow by his death, 104. is married to his ſucceſſor, Canute the Great, 107. after his death, lives at Wincheſter, 110. flies with her ſon Henry into Normandy, 111.

Empſon, miniſter of Henry VII. ſeconds that prince's avaritious diſpoſition, iii. 54. his character, 55. and tyrannical proceedings, ib. is impriſoned on the acceſſion of Henry VIII. 71. his ſhrewd apology, ib. falls a ſacrifice to popular reſentment, 72.

England, (and Engliſhmen) erected into a kingdom, i. 42. its nature, 46. firſt invaſions of Danes there, 47. they, for the firſt time, take up their winter quarters there, 49. diſtreſſed by them, 52. its ſtate at Alfred's acceſſion, 67. infeſted by wolves,

v.6

88. a maſſacre of Danes there, 99. ſhip-money, firſt levied there, 101. military tenures, firſt ſet up there, ib. the moſt antient ſtate of its church, 133. the ſtate of its towns before the Norman conqueſt, 149. a great conſternation there, 164. its nobility accept William duke of Normandy, for king of England, 166. diſcontents there, 171. inſurrections there, 172. they are quelled, 174. new inſurrections there, 176. they grow general, 177. are quelled, 178. the feudal law is introduced there, 180. the Pope's authority introduced there, 181. his legate there, for the firſt time, 182. no fury of cruſades there, 213. its ſtate at the beginning of Henry I's reign, 234. its great men obtain the privilege of building fortreſſes, 251. the conſequence of this licence, 254. its extraordinary ſufferings in the reign of Stephen, 261. its ſtate, at the time of the acceſſion of Henry II. the then authority of its monarch, 264. the then ſtate of the civil and eccleſiaſtic authority, 275. the diſpute between Henry II. and Becket begins there, 276. Becket's aſſaſſination there, 294. heretics, firſt puniſhed there, 298. an account of its feudal government, 402. the authority of the king and barons there, ib. the power of the latter in their courts, 403. their power over their vaſſals, ib. in imitation of what country, and by what means, the Engliſh were emboldened to require an independance on their ſovereign, 409. and after what model the privileges of the peers, and liberty of the commons were formed, 410. the ſituation of England, when the proviſions of Oxford took place there, ii. 35. its manners then, 58. entails introduced there, 123. a famine there, 151. its nobility affect the French language, 173. a plague there, 207. its ſtate, when Edward III. died, 244. the weakneſs of its laws then, 281. the then ſtate of its affairs in France, ib. an inſurrection of the common people there, 245. their extraordinary numbers, headed by Tyler and Straw, 246. ſuppreſſed, 247. firſt impeachment of a chancellor in England, 250. firſt impeachment by the commons, ib. the houſe of commons firſt appears to be of weight in the conſtitution, 252. expulſion and execution of the miniſters of Richard II. 254. a general inſurrection there, 267. the depoſition of king Richard II. 268, 269, 270, 271, 272. the acceſſion of Henry IV. being the firſt of the Lancaſtrian family, 282. an inſurrection of nobles againſt him, 283. ſuppreſſed, 284. an inſurrection in Wales, 286. Northumberland's rebellion, 287, 288, 289. the prince of Scotland, a priſoner there, 291. the Lollards there, 300. its king, Henry V. declared heir of the monarchy of France, 315. a protector, during a minority, choſen, 323. Cade's inſurrection, 366, 367. the throne is reſtored to the family of York, in the perſon of Edward IV. 382. Henry VI. eſcapes into Scotland, 387. his return, defeat, and impriſonment, 391, 392. an inſurrection in Yorkſhire, 396, 397. another rebellion againſt Edward IV. 399. his expulſion, 403. his return, 406. a protector choſen by the privy-council, 423. the murder of Edward V. and his brother, 428. diſcontents of the people of England, iii. 11. Lambert Simnel's invaſion, 16. a truce for ſeven years with Scotland, 19. war with France, 32. concluded by a peace, 33. Perkin Warbec, declared for by many of the nobility, 36. that impoſture detected, 37. his inſurrection finally ſuppreſſed, 50. England is greatly oppreſſed by Henry VII. 55. the ſtate of commerce in his time, 63, 64. it is greatly devoted to the church of Rome, 85. its eccleſiaſtical ſtate conſidered, 116. the beginning of the reformation there, 120. diſcontents increaſe, on account of Henry VII. his exactions, 139. the progreſs of the reformation there, 163, 170, 186. a final breach between England and Rome, 177. union with Wales commenced, 180. the then religious principles of England, 183. interdicted by the Pope, 193. the union with Wales compleated, 200. diſcontents of the people, on account of the abolition of monaſteries, 214. how pacified, 217. an inſurrection on account of religion, 243. the Engliſh are entirely enſlaved by Henry VIII. 279. have little foreign commerce at this time, 283. and their artificers are greatly excelled by foreigners, ib. the country is depopulated by incloſures, 285. learning is there encouraged, 286. the reformation is compleated, 291. the kingdom is diſtracted, by the oppoſite opinions of their preachers, 307. diſcontents increaſe, on account of the ſuppreſſion of monks, and other religious orders, 319. inſurrections in ſeveral places, 321. the ſucceſſion to the throne is altered, 342. the catholic religion reſtored, 353. a violent perſecution of the reformed in England, 377. ſubmiſſion of England to the Pope, renewed, 383. ſuffer greatly by Queen Mary's extortions, 385. the commencement of their trade with Muſcovy, 402. their great joy on the acceſſion of Queen Elizabeth, 403, 404. the reformed religion is reſtored, 406. the ſupremacy of the church, annexed to the crown, 409. the nomination of biſhops, given to the crown, 410. the Engliſh church is attended by thoſe of the Romiſh communion, 413. a plague there, 456. Mary Queen of Scots, takes refuge there, 488. conferences about Mary there, 492, 493, 494, 495, 496, 497, 498, 499, 500, 501, 502, 503. puritans there, 505. firſt conſpiracy of the duke of Norfolk, 509. inſurrections in the north, againſt Queen Elizabeth, 513, 514, 515. Norfolk's ſecond conſpiracy, 536, 537, 538. Sir Francis Drake's expedition, 560, 561. a conſpiracy of romaniſts, againſt Queen Elizabeth, 582. Babington's conſpiracy there, 595. the trial of Mary Queen of Scots there, 601. her execution there, 622. preparations in England to repel the Spaniſh armada, 631. now in the channel, 637. it is defeated, 639. the ſtate of the Queen's authority in England, 647. what the Engliſh government

ment then reſembled, 721. the ſize, and number of the Engliſh navy, 733. its able-bodied men, 734. armed, and militia, ib. its antient ſtate, v. 72. its ſtate in the reign of Queen Elizabeth, compared with its preſent ſtate, 74. its ſtate at the end of the reign of James I. 168. arminianiſm there, 184. great diſcontents there, 237. the Scots invaſion, 240. a great council of peers there, 242. the long, or rump parliament, meets there, 245. the Iriſh rebellion, 287. preparations for a civil war, 325. which commences, 329. the nation, how then divided, ib. 330. military operations commence, 336. Laud's execution there, 386, 387, 388. the king's party is finally diſperſed, 404. preſbytery is ſet up there, 408. the King's trial and execution there, 455, 456, 457. the ſtate of England, at the commencement of the commonwealth, vi. 1. the protectorate of Oliver Cromwell commences there, 53. conſpiracies againſt him, 86. the rump reſtored, 97. conſpiracies, 98. inſurrections, 99. anarchy, 100, 102. the reſtoration, 116. its ſtate then, 118. its commerce, how conſiderable then, 123. prelacy reſtored, 137. the preſbyterian clergy ejected, 152. the five mile act, 167. the Coventry act, 207. indulgence there, granted by royal authority, 211. recalled, 229. the marriage of the prince of Orange with the princeſs Mary, the king's niece, 257. Godfrey's murder, 282. a general conſternation there, 283. the trials, and executions of the Jeſuits, 306. the great power of the crown of England, 351. the Ryhouſe plot there, 354. the then temper of bench and juries, 364. the acceſſion of king James II. 373. Monmouth's invaſion, 380. ſix prelates confined, 407. the landing of the prince of Orange, 424. a general commotion there, ib. the ſettlement of the crown on the prince and princeſs of Orange, or the revolution, 440. the then ſtate of manners, arts, and ſciences in England, 441. the king's revenues at that time, 445. and amount of the national debt, ib. ſtate of the Engliſh militia, from the reſtoration to the revolution, ib. 446. of the army, during the foreſaid period, 446. of its navy, ib. its commerce and riches, ib. 447. its burrows, 447. its people, ib. its factions, 448. its learned men, and learning, 449, 450, 451, 452.

Entails, firſt introduced into England, ii. 123. a law made, empowering the nobility to break them, iii. 63.

Epiſcopacy, aboliſhed in Scotland, v. 224. grows odious in England, 237. aboliſhed there, 383. reſtored in England, vi. 137. in Scotland, 141.

Epiſcopal habit, and ceremonies, rejected by the puritans, iv. 505, 506.

Ercombert, youngeſt ſon of Eadbald, his ſhort reign, i. 27. and death, ib.

Eremfroy, the Pope's legate, calls a national council, i. 182. it proceedings, ib.

Erne river, battle of, ii. 164.

Eſſex, kingdom of, formed, i. 36. ſubdued by Egbert, founder of the Engliſh monarchy, ib.

Eſſex, earl of, his character, iv. 644. ſteals from England, and joins adventurers againſt Spain, ib. commands the land forces in an expedition againſt it, 664. his immoderate joy, at the reſolution of a court-martial, to attack the ſhips in the harbour of Cadiz, how checked, 665. the reception his propoſal met with, 666. his challenge to Lord Effingham, ib. appointed to command the land forces, and fleet, in another expedition againſt Spain, 667. intercepts three Spaniſh ſhips, 668. is created earl-marſhal of England, ib. is ſent over to Ireland, in quality of lord governor, at the head of a numerous army, 682. his indiſcretion there, 683. his capital error, ib. an account of his expedition againſt Munſter, 684. into Ulſter, 685. where a truce is made with the rebels, ib. his precipitate appearance before the Queen, and how received, 686. his confinement, and examination before the council, ib. the Queen's behaviour to him during his ſickneſs, and on his recovery, 687. the reception his letter and preſents met with, ib. the chief conſolation he then enjoyed, 688. his apology before the council, 689. his ſentence there, 690. a narrative of his caſe is drawn up by Bacon, ib. and read to the Queen, 691. his ſecond letter to the Queen, ib. her rigour, makes him throw off every appearance of duty and reſpect, 692. he indulges himſelf in ſarcaſms on her perſon and mind, 693. his pretenſions to the ſucceſſion, how founded, 694. his correſpondence with the king of Scotland, relative to his ſucceſſion to the crown, ib. his impatient ardour to get James declared ſucceſſor, 695. his enemies become unpopular, ib. he enters upon rebellious meaſures, 696. is ſummoned before the council, ib. leaves the deputies, ſent to him by the queen, in confinement in his houſe, 697. an account of his tranſactions in the ſtreets, and till his return to his own houſe, 698. his trial, ib. condemnation, 699. penitence, ib. execution, 700.

——— Counteſs, her averſion to her huſband, v. 46. is divorced, 47. marries the earl of Somerſet. See *Somerſet*.

——— Earl, reſtored to his blood, v. 45. married to lady Frances Howard, 46. divorced from her, 47.

——— another, made general of the parliament's army, v. 332. muſters it, 333. his inſtructions, 336. commands at Edgehill, 337. returns to London with the army, 338. its ſtrength at that time, 339. beſieges Reading, 340. takes it, 341. remains on the defenſive, 345. retreats nearer London, 347. relieves Gloceſter, 353. commands at the firſt battle of Newbury, 354. his anſwer to a letter from the King, Prince, and Duke of York, 366. eſcapes from his ſurrounded army, 373. adheres to the preſbyterians, 376. reſigns his command, 380. is ſucceeded by Fairfax. See *Fairfax*.

——— Earl, made lord high treaſurer, 300. reſigns, 313. argues for the excluſion bill, 325. engages in Monmouth's

v.6

Monmouth's conſpiracy, 354. is apprehended, and committed to the tower, 356. his extraordinary death, 363.

Eſtates, Convention of, ſummoned in Scotland, iv. 516. their proceedings, 517. See *Convention* of eſtates.

Ethelbald and *Ethelbert*, joint Kings on the Anglo-Saxon throne, their ſhort reign, i. 51.

Ethelbert ſucceeds Eſcus in the kingdom of Kent, i. 20. his bad ſucceſs in war in the beginning of his reign, ib. his after good ſucceſs againſt Ceaulin King of Weſſex, 21. his marriage with a Chriſtian princeſs, daughter of the King of Paris, 22. ſtipulations made on that occaſion, ib. becomes a Chriſtian, 24. at his death leaves his kingdom to his ſon Eadbald, 26. his excellent laws, ib.

——— laſt King of Eaſt-Anglia, 33. his death, ib.

Ethelburga, Queen of the Northumbrians, her piety, i. 30.

Ethelred, brother and ſucceſſor of Edward the Martyr, comes to the Engliſh throne, i. 92. is diſturbed by Daniſh invaſions, 93. more invaſions, 94. more ſtill, 95. marries a Daniſh princeſs, ſiſter of Robert duke of Normandy, 96. his kingdom is invaded by Sweyn, a Dane, 100. he buys off the invaſion, 101. his kingdom ſuffers intolerably by a Daniſh invaſion, 102. he flies into Normandy with his Queen and two ſons, ib. reſumes the government, 103. is tormented with another Daniſh invaſion, ib. dies, 104.

Ethelwolph, ſucceſſor of Egbert on the Anglo-Saxon throne, gives to his eldeſt ſon a part of his dominions, i. 48. is diſturbed by Daniſh invaſions, ib. goes a pilgrimage to Rome, 49. divides his dominions with his younger ſons, 50. by his will divides England between them, 51.

Ethered, ſucceſſor of the joint Kings, is oppoſed by Danes, 52. killed by them, 53.

Eugenius III. pontiff of Rome, confers the legatine authority on Theobald, archbiſhop of Canterbury, i. 258. convokes a ſynod at Rheims, 259. lays King Stephen's party under an interdict, ib.

Europe, its ſtate in the reign of Charlemagne, i. 46. its ſtate at the time of the firſt cruſade, 211. at the acceſſion of Henry II. 262. the kind of government that prevailed in it towards the end of that reign, 308. artillery, great, firſt uſed therein, ii. 196. a peſtilence there, 207. it is diſtracted by Clementines and Urbaniſts, 280. its antient ſtate with reſpect to perſonal liberty, 443. the ſtate of Europe in the reign of Henry VII. iii. 19. the ſtate of Europe's eccleſiaſtical ſtate before the reformation, 116. the reformation begins there, 120. how connected in 1522, iii. 125. furious inſurrections of anabaptiſts there, 184. the ſtate of Europe at the time of Queen Elizabeth's acceſſion, iv. 445. maſſacre of hugonots there, 542. the invincible armada there, 631. the ſtate of Europe in 1589, 647. its ſtate at the acceſſion of James I. v. 4. at the commencement of the civil war, or grand rebellion in England, 331. in 1655, vi. 62. in 1658, 84. at the end of the reign of Charles II. 367.

Evers, Sir Ralph, his progreſs with an Engliſh army in Scotland, iii. 266. his reward for theſe ſervices, 267. is killed in battle againſt the Scots, ib.

Eveſham, battle of, ii. 49. a compleat victory over the rebel barons is there obtained, 50.

Exciſe on beer, firſt granted, v. 365.

Exchange, Royal, when, by whom, and at whoſe charges built, iv. 735.

Exchequer, grievances there, a bill brought into the houſe of commons to remedy them, iv. 641. ſhut, vi. 211. money of merchants depoſited there is ſeized, ib.

Exeter, Courtney marquis of, forms a conſpiracy againſt Henry VIII. iii. 225. is tried and executed, ib.

Excluſion bill brought into the houſe of commons, vi. 302. renewed there, 320. arguments for and againſt it, 321. paſſed in the houſe of commons, 324. rejected in the houſe of lords, ib.

F.

FAIRFAX, an author, his character, v. 130.

——— Sir Thomas, ſignalizes his courage in the parliament's army, v. 355. ſucceeds Eſſex in the chief command of that army, 380. his fineſſe to ſave Oliver Cromwel from the effect of the ſelf-denying ordinance, ib. his character, 381. is entirely governed by Cromwel, ib. new models the army, 396. routs the royal army at Naſeby, 400. his gallant behaviour there, ib. conquers the Weſt, 402. tho' depoſed by the army continues a nominal general, 421. appointed one of the King's judges, and abſents himſelf from the trial, 452. reſigns his nominal command, vi. 23. is ſucceeded by Oliver Cromwel. See *Cromwel*, Oliver.

Falkirk, battle of, ii. 111.

Falkland, Viſcount, his character, v. 323. writes the King's memorials againſt the parliament, 324. is ſlain in the battle of Newbury, 354. a ſhort diary of his life, ib. 355.

Feaukes de Breaute, a rebel, his puniſhment, ii. 8.

Feefarm rents, the King is empowered by the parliament to ſell them, vi. 196.

Felonies, how ſurpriſingly frequent in Queen Elizabeth's reign, iv. 727.

Felton, John, condemned and executed for affixing on the gates of the biſhop of London's palace the Pope's bull againſt Queen Elizabeth, iv. 520.

——— murders Buckingham, v. 177. taken and examined, 178. the judges refuſe to put him to the queſtion in order to extort from him a diſcovery of his accomplices, ib.

Fénelon, the French ambaſſador in England, is ordered to miſrepreſent the maſſacre at Paris, iv. 542. is aſhamed of that barbarous tranſaction, ib. how anſwered by Queen Elizabeth, 543.

Fenwic, his trial, vi. 306.

Ferdinand, King of Arragon, his character, iii. 53. gives his daughter in marriage to Arthur prince of Wales, ib. becomes very unpopular in Caſtile, 57. and forced to reſign it to the archduke, ib. is reſtored, after the death of that prince, to his throne, 57. his deceitful dealings with Henry VIII. his ſon-in-law, 79. his death, 104.

——— brother of Charles V. emperor of Germany, is by his intereſt made King of the Romans, iii. 187. deſired by his brother, but refuſes to reſign, ib. and the Pope refuſes to crown him, ib.

——— II. Emperor of Germany. See *Germany*.

Feverſham, earl, general of the Engliſh forces, defeats Monmouth at Sedgemoor, vi. 382. his cruelties after the battle, 384.

Fiefs and feudal lands, their original nature, and how changed, i. 399. the attachment of their poſſeſſors to their chieftains ſupreme and intermediate accounted for, 400.

Finances, their ſtate in the reign of James I. v. 117. between the reſtoration and revolution, vi. 444.

Finch, lord keeper, his character, v. 248. he flies, ib. is impeached in his abſence, 249.

Fines, arbitrary and exorbitant, firſt levied and complained of, ii. 235.

Firſt-fruits in England granted to the Pope, iv. 124.

Fiſher, biſhop of Rocheſter, gives offence by a ſpeech in favour of the clergy, iii. 163. refuſes to take the oath concerning the ſucceſſion, 179. is indicted and committed to the tower, 180. favours the impoſture of the maid of Kent, 190, 191. is cruelly uſed in his confinement, 192. created a cardinal by the Pope, ib. beheaded for denying the King's ſupremacy, ib. his ſpeech in favour of monaſteries, 213.

Fitz-Allan, archbiſhop of Canterbury, goes on a meſſage to the King, ii. 253. excommunicates the opponents of Gloceſter's faction, 266. is condemned in parliament, 262. and baniſhed the kingdom, ib.

Fitz-Gerald and *Fitz-Stephen*, Engliſhmen of great power, engage to aſſiſt the King of Leinſter, now an exile in England, ii. 301. arrive in Ireland, and form a force which nothing there can withſtand, 302. overturn it, 303. the King goes over to them with a greater force, ib. See *Henry*.

——— Harris, his caſe, vi. 332. he is impeached by the houſe of commons, 334. tried by the common law, and condemned, 335. executed, 336.

——— Oſbert, a popular lawyer in London, his atrocious behaviour, ii. 355. puniſhed, ib.

——— Richard Thomas, mayor of London, his character and conduct during his mayoralty, ii. 38. illegally prolongs his authority, 40. his behaviour on hearing the event of the battle of Eveſham, 50. his puniſhment, 52.

Flambard, biſhop of Durham, depoſed by Henry I. and committed to priſon, i. 225.

Flammoc, Thomas, heads an inſurrection, iii. 45. his party is defeated, 47. he is taken and executed, ib.

Flanders and *Flemings*—Baldwin, earl of, kindly receives Toſti, elder brother of Harold, i. 127. encourages the Norman invaſion, 132. protects William, nephew of Henry I. 238. is ſlain, ib.

——— Charles is aſſaſſinated, i. 242. and his dominions are given to William, nephew of Henry I. ib.

——— Philip, commences hoſtilities againſt Henry II. i. 309. the progreſs of his arms, ib. it is agreed to reſign into his hands Kent, with Dover and all its fortreſſes, ib. interpoſes his good offices towards a reconciliation between Henry II. and his children, 324.

——— Guy, makes a treaty with England againſt France, ii. 98. his country is made the theatre of war between the Engliſh and French Kings, 106. he is deſerted by his Engliſh ally, 107. a rebellion there, 172. fomented by Edward III. ib. who lands there at the head of a large army, 173. where his army is diſbanded, 175. the rebel Flemings with their ſhips reinforce the Engliſh during a ſea-fight with France, 177. lay ſiege to St. Omer, ib. are routed by a ſally of the garriſon, and never after appear in the field, 178. this country becomes the property of John duke of Burgundy, in right of his mother, 303. a ducheſs dowager of which family, named Margaret, lives there, iii. 15. and acquires great authority over the Flemings, ib. by a marriage of an heireſs of the houſe of Burgundy, this country becomes the property of the ſon of Maximilian, King of the Romans, a prince of the houſe of Auſtria, 19. Perkin Warbeck is avowed by the abovementioned Margaret, 35. it becomes the expected property of Charles, prince of Spain, 104. where that prince ſettles every thing in peace, 105. a Flemiſh army, in conjunction with the Engliſh, invade France, 107. Flanders is the only country in Europe where commerce and induſtry flouriſh, 135. and the Flemings the only people with whom England trades, 283. their artificers greatly ſurpaſs the Engliſh, ib. the extraordinary great number of their artizans in London and other cities of England, 284. the reformation principles begin to prevail there, 532. the Flemings are greatly alarmed at the arbitrary proceedings of Philip of Spain, now their ſovereign, 533. violently perſecuted by the duke of Alva, 534, 535. many of them fly to England, where they are protected by Queen Elizabeth, 535, and introduce ſeveral uſeful manufactures into the kingdom, ib. ſome of its provinces revolt, and unite for mutual defence, 549. ſend an embaſſy to London, proffering to Queen Elizabeth the ſovereignty of their provinces, 550. See *United provinces*.

Fleetwood, his ſpeech in the houſe of commons, concerning the Queen's prerogative, iv. 523. another ſpeech, 524.

——— Colonel, is made governor of Ireland, vi. 76. his advice to the protector, 81. eſtranges himſelf

v.6

ſelf from him, 87. renounces all claim to the protectorſhip, 94. becomes head of the republican party, 95.

Flouden, battle of, iii. 92.

Folkland, what, i. 162.

Fontarabia, a fruitleſs expedition of the Engliſh to it, iii. 79.

Forbiſher, Sir Martin, his voyage, in connection with Sir Walter Raleigh, iv. 724. his fruitleſs voyage for the north-weſt paſſage, 731.

Forreſt, a friar, burnt a zealous preacher of the reformation, iii. 244. is condemned, and burnt, ib.

Forreſts, diſafforeſted by the king, ii. 4. by act of parliament, 104. extended, 235.

Fortreſſes, firſt built in England, i. 251. their number there, in the reign of H. III. ii. 10.

Fotheringhay Caſtle, Mary Queen of Scots there tried, iv. 601. condemned, 607. and executed, 622.

Fox, Richard, a clergyman, his character, iii. 9. entruſted by Henry VII. with all his ſecrets, ib. his preferments, 10. his conduct on the acceſſion of Henry VIII. 70. recommended to the king by Wolſey, and by whom he is ſupplanted, 15.

——— Edward, ſent by Henry VIII. to treat with the pope concerning his divorce, iii. 155.

——— John, his hiſtory, vi. 119.

France, invaded by Normans, i. 97. its king Charles grants them Nieuſtria, 98. the French language becomes faſhionable in the court of England, 116. is divided, and ſub-divided, into ſmall principalities, 131. their king Philip is a minor at the time of the Norman invaſion, 132. obtains of the conqueror terms of peace for Ralph de Guader a norman rebel, 190. a furious eagerneſs after cruſades prevails there, 212. the French king, Philip the Groſs, his tranſactions with Henry I. 238. the methods he took to make Henry I. uneaſy, ib. makes war with England, 239. accommodates his differences with Henry, ib. but ſtill protects his nephew, the ſon of Robert, 241. puts him in poſſeſſion of Flanders, 242. the French king, Lewis the VIIth, or the younger, betroths his ſiſter Conſtantia, to the eldeſt ſon of Stephen, king of England, 250. divorces Eleanor, heireſs of Poictou, 260. its ſtate, at the time of the acceſſion of Hugh Capet, 263. the antient ſtate of its armies, ib. the policy of its king above-named, 265. he affiances the princeſs Margaret, an infant in her cradle, to Henry, ſon of Henry II. 267. his partiality, 268. the marriage of the young prince and princeſs, is ſolemnized, by order of king Henry II. 269. the French king makes war with England, ib. invites Becket to fix his retreat at Soiſſons. 285. protects a vaſſal of the duchy of Guyenne againſt Henry I. 288. is preſent at a conference between Henry and Becket, 289. an anecdote, relative to one of theſe conferences, 290. the French king demands ſatisfaction, on account of his daughter not being anointed along with young Henry her huſband, 291. exhorts the pope to pronounce the moſt dreadful ſentence of excommunication againſt Henry, 296. inſtils diſloyal principles into his ſon in law, 307. engages his vaſſals, by an oath, to adhere to his ſon in law, 309. raiſes a great army in his favour, ib. which is defeated, 310. a conference between the two contending monarchs is abortive, 311. the French king invades Normandy, 314. his deceit there, is fruſtrated, ib. peace takes place between France and England, 315. the French king's ſuperſtition and unhealthy ſtate, 319. his ſon Philip aſſumes the government, ib. is baulk'd with reſpect to the wardſhip of Brittany, claimed by him, 321. engages in a cruſade, in conjunction with the king of England, 322. impoſes a tax on his ſubjects for that purpoſe, ib. his deceitful conduct towards Henry II. 322. his ſucceſs in war againſt Henry II. 324. makes peace with him, 325. the number of his troops engaged in the cruſade, 335. his agreement with Richard I. king of England, ib. both are obliged to ſhelter themſelves in Meſſina at once, 336. their quarrels there are in ſome meaſure compoſed, 337. his arrival, and firſt tranſactions in Paleſtine, 339. his ſucceſs there, 340. leaves Paleſtine, ib. the requeſt he makes to the Pope, on his way home, 341. his attempts to diſturb the peace of Richard's dominions during his abſence, 342. his behaviour on Conrade's being aſſaſſinated, 343. on hearing of the king of England's impriſonment, 346. is repulſed in his attempt on Rouen, 347. but corrupts prince John, ib. his ambaſſadors, in vain, accuſe Richard of England, to the dyet of Ratiſbon, 348. his letter to prince John, on hearing that the king of England was ſet at liberty, 350. the tranſactions of a ſhort war between him and England, 352. after ſome fruitleſs efforts to diſturb John, now king of England, 357. the French king makes peace with him, 358. renews the war, 360. adjudges John to have forfeited all his fiefs and ſeignories in France, 362. defeats his army at Alençon, 363. in contempt of the pope's injunction, lays ſiege to Chateau Galliard, 364. takes it, 365. the kingdom of England is proffered to him by the pope, 376. he collects a great army and fleet to take poſſeſſion of it, ib. is enraged at the agreement between the pope and king John, but deſiſts from his undertaking, 379. on an application from the diſcontented barons in England, ſends his eldeſt ſon, prince Lewis, at the head of a great army, to their aſſiſtance, 393. an account of the military operations in that expedition, ii 5. a pacification being made, prince Lewis leaves this kingdom, 6. the French king's pretences about this expedition, 7. Lewis VIII. ſucceſſor of his father Philip, makes war with Henry III. 11. the ſucceſs of France in that war, 17. the character of Lewis IX. 32. he obtains a ceſſion of Normandy and other provinces in France, then belonging to the king of England, 33. tries to perſuade earl Leiceſter to ſubmit to his ſovereign's authority, 36. in preſence of the ſtates of France and England, convened at Amiens in

France, makes an award between the king and the diſcontented barons, 40. favours the Queen's enterpriſe to relieve her huſband, 45. dies at Tunis in Africa, 53. the French language becomes general, 76. Philip the Hardy, ſucceſſor of Lewis IX. permits his ſubjects to avenge themſelves of the Engliſh, 81. an account of negotiations between the two crowns, in order to prevent a rupture, 82. war breaks out between France and England, 83. the total conqueſt of Guyenne by the French, 84. an alliance between France and Baliol, ib. the defection of the earl of Flanders, and his alliance with the Engliſh king, 98. a French army invades Flanders, 106. peace with England is made by the award of pope Boniface, 107. and the earl of Flanders left to the mercy of Philip, ib. the French king refuſes to interpoſe his good offices in behalf of the Scots, 113. ſecretly encourages a conſpiracy againſt Edward II. 144. his cruelty to the knights templars, 150. which is approved of by pope Clement V. 151. Edward Baliol leaves France, 163. an account of the French and their laws, 168. the order of ſucceſſion to the French crown, 169. receives from the king of England homage at Paris for Guyenne, 170. prepares to repulſe an intended invaſion from England, 174. repulſes it, 175. but the French navy is beaten at ſea, 177. France is again invaded by England, 178. Tournay beſieged, ib. the French king defied by the king of England, 179. a truce is made between England and France, 181. Charles of Blois, huſband of the heireſs of Britany, ſolicits at that court the inveſtiture of that duchy, 185, 186. In interim, the capital of the duchy is taken by the French king's eldeſt ſon, 186. military operations in Brittany, 187. the ſiege of the caſtle of Hennebone, ib. Charles of Blois's party attacks and carries Vannes, 188. and the Engliſh army there, is over-awed by the French troops under the command of the eldeſt prince of France, then titular duke of Normandy, 189. the operations of the Engliſh army in Guyenne, 190. an Engliſh army, commanded by the king in perſon, lands in Normandy, 192. pillages that country, 193. the French forces ſurround the Engliſh, 194. oblige them to come to a battle at Crecy, 195. the attack begins, 197. the French army is routed, 198. the ſtate of France in the reign of Edward III. 207. the character of John, king of France, ib. he diſcovers the king of Navarre's correſpondence with the king of England, 208. throws him into priſon, 209. France is invaded by the prince of Wales, ſon of Edward III. ib. by his father in perſon, 210. who returns, to defend England againſt the Scots, ib. the French king, John, marches againſt the prince of Wales, now in the heart of France, 211. attacks him at Poitiers, 212. is there diſcomfited and made a priſoner, 213. the reception he met with from the prince of Wales, 214. his reception in England, 215. the diſorders that aroſe in France during his captivity, 216. Charles the Dauphin, and ſtates of France, reject the treaty made between the king of England, and his captive, the French king, 218. who is releaſed by the peace made at Bretigni, 221. the Dauphin becomes king by the death of his father, 222. his character, 223. the difficulties which he had to ſtruggle with, when he mounted the throne, ib. the diſorders that prevailed in France, after the peace of Bretigny, 224. armies of banditti there, ib. French troops go to the aſſiſtance of Henry Triſtamare, brother of Peter, king of Caſtile, 225. theſe troops are defeated by the prince of Wales at Najara, 226. other French troops, place the above-named Henry on the throne of Caſtile, 227. the then French king, ſummons the prince of Wales to appear at his court in Paris, 228. over-runs the provinces in France, belonging to the king of England, 229. a truce is made between the two crowns, 230. the character of the king, and ſtate of the kingdom of France at this period, 244. the operations of a new war between France and England, ib. the French fleet, intended for the invaſion of England, is diſperſed in a ſtorm, 249. a truce is made with England, 258. renewed, 285. diviſions between the families of Orleans and Burgundy, are fomented by Henry III. 292. the ſtate of France, in the beginning of the reign of Henry V. of England, 305. diſputes in it, about the legality of aſſaſſination or tyrannicide, 304. general violence reigns there, ib. theſe quarrels are fomented by Henry V. 305. who invades France, 306. Harfleur taken by that prince, 307. the French army, headed by Charles the dauphin, eldeſt ſon of the former, give battle to the Engliſh at Azincour, 308. are routed by them, 309. a liſt of the killed, wounded, and priſoners, ib. 310. a truce is made, 310. violent quarrels ariſe in the royal family, 311, 312. more ſucceſsfully invaded by the Engliſh, 312. the dauphin, and duke of Burgundy, agree to oppoſe the Engliſh arms, 313. the ſtate of the public affairs are greatly altered, by the aſſaſſination of the duke of Burgundy, in the dauphin's preſence, 314. Paris is threatened, and the court withdraws from it, ib. the ſucceſſion to the French crown, and the immediate regency of the kingdom, is transferred to Henry V. by the treaty of Troye, 315. the Engliſh are defeated at Baugé, 317. the Dauphin is chaced beyond the Loire, 318. the ſtate of France, when Henry VI. of England, a minor, came to the throne, 324. the character of the late Dauphin, now the French king, 325. military operations between the French and the Engliſh regency, 327. a reſolution is taken to give the Engliſh battle at Verneuil, 328. victory declares againſt the French, 329. the French affairs begin to wear a more promiſing aſpect, 331, 332. the city of Orleans is beſieged, 333. a detachment ſent to intercept a convoy of proviſions, deſtined for the uſe of the beſiegers, is defeated, 334. this battle, how called, ib. the garriſon is reduced to great difficulties,

v.6

ties, 335. the maid of Orleans, makes her appearance there, 337. the ſiege is raiſed, 341. the coronation of the king at Rheims, 342. a further detail of military movements, 343. the young king of England crowned in Paris, 344. a further account of the maid of Orleans, ib. 345, 346, 347. hiſtory of the war reſumed, 347. the reconciliation of the French king and the duke of Burgundy, 348, 349. the Engliſh affairs decline in France, 350. their poſſeſſions there, how retained, 351. the war is carried on in a feeble and languid manner, 352. the duke of Orleans, a priſoner, taken on the field of Azincour, is releaſed, and reconciled to the duke of Burgundy, who pays his ranſom, 353. a truce is made with England, 354. New differences ariſe, 357. the ſtate of France, at this time, 358. a new war breaks out with England, ib. their power is expelled out of France, by the conqueſt of Guyenne, 359. the factious diſpoſition of Lewis, the dauphin, occupies the French king, 360. ſome Gaſcon lords offer to return to their allegiance to the king of England, 372. an Engliſh invaſion, occaſioned by this encouragement, is repulſed, 373. French troops invade England, 390. theſe forces, ſtrengthened by the junction of Lancaſtrians, are routed at Hexham, 391. the vaſſals of the French crown are alarmed by the dark and dangerous deſigns of Lewis XI. now their king, 395. who enters into a confederacy with the earl of Warwic, 401. and ſends him over to England, at the head of an army, 402. a league is formed againſt France, by Edward IV. and the duke of Burgundy, 410. in conſequence of this agreement, France is invaded by England, 411. a truce is made, 412. political remarks on this treaty, 413. the impolitic conduct of the French king, with reſpect to the heireſs of Burgundy, 414. the French king, Charles VIII. aſſiſts the earl of Richmond againſt Richard III. 437. a treaty is made with Maximilian, king of the Romans, whereby his daughter is affianced to the eldeſt ſon of Lewis, the French king, and divers provinces given to France as her dowry, iii. 19. the policy of the French court on this occaſion, 20. the then ſtate of France, ib. a French army, under the count Dunois, invades Brittany, 21. complains to England of the duke of Brittany, 22. the French army beſieges Nantz, 23. is conſtrained to raiſe the ſiege by a tumultuary army of Britains, 24. who are afterwards totally diſſipated by a French army at St. Aubin, 25. the court of France aſſumes the deſign of marrying the heireſs of Brittany, to their young king, 28. by that marriage, annexes Brittany to France, 29. but greatly provokes the king of the Romans, ib. 30. the great ſtrength of France, ariſing from the union of the great fiefs in the crown, 31. it is invaded by England, 32. purchaſes the emperor's friendſhip, by ceding to him two counties, ib. makes peace with England, 33. and with the king of the Romans, ib. the French troops ravage Italy at pleaſure, 41. make freſh attacks and conqueſts there, 71. their fleet is beaten by the Engliſh fleet on the coaſt of Brittany, 81. gain the victory at Ravenna in Italy, but are obliged to abandon all their conqueſts there, 82. another ſea-fight, 86. another, 87. France is invaded by an Engliſh army, ib. which is afterwards headed by the king in perſon, and the king of the Romans, 88. who beſiege Ferouane, ib. the French army are beaten by the Engliſh at Guinegate, 89. Tournay ſurrenders to them, 90. the French king obtains the friendſhip of the king of Navarre, 93. makes peace with England, 95. dies within three months after his marriage with the princeſs Mary of England, ib. the character of his ſucceſſor, Francis of Angouleſme, ib. his martial diſpoſition, 101. he renews the treaty with England, 102. defeats the Swiſs near Milan, 102. purchaſes that duchy of its duke, 103. becomes an object of jealouſy to Henry VIII. ib. by whom his friendſhip is courted, for political reaſons, 105. obtains from Henry, reſtitution of Tournay, 106. becomes a candidate for the imperial dignity, 109. of which he is diſappointed, ib. deſires an interview with Henry, 110. obtains it, 111. his behaviour on that occaſion, 112. war with England, 124. by whom France is invaded, ib. the French king's poſſeſſions in Italy, 125. the Venetians deſert his alliance, 129. he is menaced by a powerful league, 130. his dominions unſucceſsfully invaded by England, 131. the French monarch leads a great army into Italy, 132. which is repulſed, 133. the behaviour of his Swiſs auxiliaries, ib. reſumes a deſire to conquer Milan, 134. invades Italy for that purpoſe, 135. where his army is defeated, and he made a priſoner, 136. his laconic letters, on that occaſion, to his mother, 137. France is now aſſiſted by Henry VIII. ib. a treaty for Francis's liberty, is made with Henry, 138. Francis rejects the emperor's propoſals, 141. and deſires to be removed to Madrid, ib. his conduct there, 142. is there viſited by the emperor, ib. is ſet at liberty, 143. his behaviour, when returned to his own dominions, 144. where he enters into a confederacy with England, the Pope, and ſtates of Italy, againſt the ambitious views of the Emperor, 145. makes a league with England, in order to recover, by force of arms, the Pope's liberty, 146, 147. a declaration of war, in conjunction with England, againſt the Emperor, 147, 148. and mutual reproaches between the Emperor and the French king, 148. a ſecond interview with Henry, 173. and with the Pope, 176. ineffectually mediates between the Pope and Henry VIII. 177. refuſes to Henry VIII. the duke of Guiſe's daughter, and offers him the choice of others, 235. breaks of all correſpondence with the Engliſh monarch, 236. invades the low-countries, and beats the imperial army, 260. France is invaded by an Engliſh army, 265. the progreſs of this army, 266. ſends a great fleet to make a deſcent on England, 267. an account of this expedi-

tion, and other military operations between France and England, 268. peace between France and England, 270. terms thereof, ib. makes war with England, 323. military operations, 324. a treaty of peace with England and Scotland, 330. a war again breaks out between Henry, the French king, England, and Spain, 391. military operations in that war, 392—394. Francis, the Dauphin, is married to Queen Mary of Scotland, 397. makes a treaty of peace with England, whereby Calais is ceded to France, ii. 414. acceſſion of Francis, by the ſudden death of Henry, 415. he uſes the arms of England in right of his wife, 416. orders violent meaſures to be uſed in Scotland, 419. French troops ſupport the Queen regent of Scotland, 420. a reinforcement is ſent into Scotland, 424. and French doctors of divinity, to combat the reformers, ib. the French court offers to England, reſtitution of Calais, upon condition of their Queen not interpoſing in Scots affairs, 426. the French troops in Scotland fortify Leith, and are obliged by capitulation, to evacuate Scotland, 427. which the French court refuſes to ratify, ib. violent factions in France, 429. a regency ſettled for Charles IX. who comes to the crown by the death of Francis, 431. Mary Queen of Scots, and Queen dowager of France, ſets out for Scotland, 433. civil and religious wars in France, 448, 449, 450. a further account of the French inteſtine wars, 454. and death of the duke of Guiſe, ib. an agreement between the contending parties is made, 455. a powerful confederacy is there formed againſt the Hugonots, 465. civil war again commenced between the Catholics and Hugonots, 529. a great battle there, ib. more military tranſactions there, 530. Hugonots ſecretly aſſiſted by Queen Elizabeth, ib. King offers the duke of Anjou for a huſband to Queen Elizabeth, 531. negotiations relative to marriage enſue, 532. fallacious pacifications with the Hugonots, often made, lull them aſleep, 541. maſſacre of Hugonots there, 542. ordered to be excuſed at the Engliſh court, ib. troops again levied by Hugonots, 545. Charles the IXth's death, ib. acceſſion of Henry, duke of Anjou, called Henry III. 546. who makes peace with the Hugonots, ib. catholic league made, ib. profuſe liberality of courtiers, encreaſe the diſorders now in France, 547. animoſities encreaſe between the French monarch and the duke of Guiſe, 564. the duke of Alençon, now created duke of Anjou, renews his ſuit to Queen Elizabeth, ib. 565. the French king aſſiſts the duke of Anjou with money to protect the ſtates, 566. catholic league revived, 584. war with the Hugonots again, 648. murder of the duke of Guiſe, 649. aſſaſſination of Henry III. and acceſſion of Henry IV. king of Navarre, ib. who gains a great victory over the catholics, 650. he is ſupported by Queen Elizabeth, 649, 652, 661. the French king declares himſelf a catholic, 669. concludes a peace with Spain, 671. raiſes France to a flouriſhing condition, 672. makes a journey to Calais, 702. and a league with England and Holland, v. 5. is murdered, 38. his ſucceſſor, Lewis XIII. gives the princeſs Henrietta in marriage to Charles Prince of Wales, 103. the Engliſh fleet ſent to aid him againſt the Hugonot's mutiny, 141. war between France and England, 156. unſucceſsfully on the part of England, 158, 159. Rochel taken in ſight of an Engliſh army and fleet ſent to its aſſiſtance, 179. peace with England, 189. the French king dies, vi. 63. is ſucceeded by Lewis XIV. an infant in his cradle, ib. the French miniſtry truckle to Oliver Cromwell, protector, 64. conclude an alliance with him againſt Spain, 84. give up Dunkirk to England, 85. declare for the Dutch againſt England, 168. the French fleet declines to engage with that of England, 171. national animoſities appear between France and England, 181. the French king's character, ib. he invades Flanders, 182. makes peace at Aix la-chapelle, 186. makes an alliance with England and Holland, 204. declares war againſt the Dutch, 214. joins his fleet with that of England, 217. his armies enter the Dutch territories, 218. over-run three provinces, 219. are recalled, 233. take Maeſtricht, ib. are ſometimes ſucceſsful, 241. ſometimes unſucceſsful, 247. beat the prince of Orange at St. Omar, 252. take Ghent and Ypres, 261. the French king agrees to the peace at Nimeguen, 264. acts in Germany as if he was ſole ſovereign of Europe, 367. revokes the edict of Nantz, 391. furious perſecution of Hugonots, ib. the effect of this meaſure, 414. invades Germany, 419. offers to aſſiſt James II. againſt his ſubjects, 420. remonſtrates to the States againſt the prince of Orange's intended expedition in favour of Great-Britain, 427. receives king James II. in an affectionate and reſpectful manner, 432.

Francis, dauphin of France. See *France*.

——— duke of Brittany, his character, iii. 20. eſcapes to Nantz, 21. where he is ſoon afterwards beſieged by the French, 23. and relieved by a tumultuous army of Britons, 24. his ſudden death, and the perplexed ſtate of his dominions, 25.

——— king of France. See *France*.

Frank Almoigne, a tenure, what, and to what purpoſe invented, ii. 85.

Franks, an account of them, ii. 168. and of their cuſtoms relative to the ſucceſſion to their throne, ib.

Frederick, elector Palatine of the Rhine, is married to princeſs Elizabeth of England, v. 43. is choſen king of Bohemia, 70. defeated by the Emperor, 71. put to the ban of the Empire, 78. makes vigorous efforts to regain his dominions, 86. lays down his arms, ib.

———, emperor of Germany. See *Germany*.

Fruits, firſt. See *Firſt fruits*.

Fulk, curate of Neuilly, his remarkable joke on king Richard I. i. 334. how replied to by that prince, ib.

v.6

G.

GALEN, Van, defeats the Engliſh fleet, vi. 41.
Gardiner, biſhop of Wincheſter, oppoſes the reformation, iii. 186. irritates the King againſt the Queen, by accuſing her of hereſy, 274. heads the oppoſition againſt the reformation, 293. defends images and holy water, ib. ſtrenuouſly defends the old opinions, 294. is ſent to the Fleet priſon, where he is harſhly uſed, 295. his objections againſt the new homilies, ib. ſent to the Tower for denying the King's ſupremacy, 317. meets with harſh treatment on a frivolous pretence, 330. articles propoſed to him in order to be a foundation for his deprivation, 331. his biſhoprick ſequeſtered, ib. his deprivation and cloſe confinement, ib. ſet at liberty on the acceſſion of Queen Mary, 352. and reſtored to his ſee, 353. his generoſity to Peter Martyr, 355. made prime miniſter and chancellor, 359. promotes the Queen's marriage with Philip, ib. his ſpeech at opening the parliament, 366. by his prudence acquires great reputation, 373. promotes the perſecution of heretics, 374. violent and imprudent meaſures after his death, 384.
Garter, Order of, inſtituted, ii. 206.
Gaſcoigne, chief juſtice of the King's Bench, impriſons the prince of Wales, ii. 299. how received by that prince when King, ib.
Gaunt, Mrs. her trial, vi. 385.
Gaveſton, Piers, his ſudden riſe, ii. 127. his character, ib. is left guardian of the realm, while the King goes to France, 128. his baniſhment and inſolent return, 129. his ſecond baniſhment, 130. his return, 131. his death, 132.
Gavelkind, cuſtom of, i. 162. its nature, v. 41.
Geoffrey, brother of Henry II. invades Anjou and Maine, i. 266. reſigns his claim for a penſion, 267. dies, ib.
——— Duke of Normandy, father of Henry II. his extraordinary cruelty to the chapter of Seez, i. 270.
——— third ſon of Henry II. has Brittany allotted to him in his father's life-time, i. 306. becomes diſloyal to his father, 307. at a conference between his father and the French King, appears in the train of the latter, 310. accommodates his differences with his father, 315. renews his undutiful behaviour, 321. is killed at Paris, ib.
——— natural ſon of Henry II. his dutiful regard to his father, living and dead, i. 325. his oath, when archbiſhop of Canterbury, to his brother, Richard I. on his departure to the Holy Land, 334.
——— Archbiſhop of York, is thrown into priſon by Longchamp, i. 342. how reſented by the nation, ib.
Gerard, his hereſy, how puniſhed, i. 298.
——— Balthaſar, aſſaſſinates the Prince of Orange, iv. 583.
——— his conſpiracy, vi. 57.
Germany, how divided and ſubdivided by the feudal inſtitutions, i. 131. Emperor of, Henry IV. encourages his vaſſals to embark in the Norman invaſion, 132. civil government of, how rent, 148. how improved after their ſettlement in the Roman provinces, 154. Emperor of, defends his prerogative againſt papal uſurpations, 191. is excommunicated, ib. a furious eagerneſs after cruſades prevails there, 212. its emperor, Henry V. makes the Pope a priſoner, 235. cauſes him to renounce, by a formal treaty, the right of inveſtitures, ib. Emperor of, Frederic I. enters into a cruſade, 322. his bad ſucceſs, 335. Emperor of, Henry VI. obtains of the Duke of Auſtria to deliver to him Richard I. of England, then his priſoner, 346. but refuſes the French King's requeſt relative to his royal priſoner, ib. his conduct to King Richard is exclaimed againſt by the Dyet of Ratiſbon and the Pope, 349. whereupon he releaſes him, ib. ineffectually orders him to be purſued and arreſted, 350. makes advances to gain his friendſhip, 352. and concludes with him an offenſive alliance againſt France, ib. Emperor of, Otho, is excommunicated by the Pope, 374. beaten by the French King, 381. the nature of the German government explained, 398. alliances between German princes and Edward III. are formed, ii. 171. who is made vicar of the German empire, 173. its Emperor, Lewis, is detached from the alliance of England, 180. and revokes the title of vicar, granted to Edward III. ib. ſeveral German princes are diſcomfited in battle againſt Edward III. at Crecy, 199. Wickliff's opinions carried into Germany, 279. Emperor of, Ferdinand, negotiates a treaty with France, iii. 31. concludes it, 32. obtains a ceſſion of two French provinces, ib. Emperor of, Maximilian, enters into a treaty with Henry VIII. 88. ſerves under him, and receives his pay, ib. enters into amity with France, and deſerts the alliance of England, 94. the character of this Emperor, 103. offers to reſign to Henry VIII. the imperial crown, 104. the death of this Emperor, and election of Charles of Spain to the imperial dignity, 109. who viſits England, 111. makes war with France, 114. enters into offenſive alliance with England againſt France, 115. the reformation begins in Germany, 120. the moderation of this Emperor, on hearing the ſtate of the French King, now his captive, 136. on what terms he grants him his liberty, 143, 144. the imperial army ſack Rome, 145. and makes the Pope a priſoner, ib. the Emperor's hypocritical behaviour on hearing theſe news, 146. receives a menacing embaſſy from France and England, ib. his behaviour to the French and Engliſh heralds, 148. ſets the Pope at liberty, 152. over awes the Pope in the buſineſs of Henry's divorce, 153. menaces the Pope, and calls his title to the papal chair in queſtion, 154. adjuſts a treaty with him, 157. the fundamental article of this treaty, ib. makes a league with Henry VIII. 260. the advantages gained by this league this campaign,

paign, ib. progreſs of the war againſt France, 265. peace between the empire and France, 266. the Emperor declines to aſſiſt the Engliſh againſt the French, 324. an account of the civil wars in the empire, between the catholics and proteſtants, 358. the Emperor attacks France, ib. ſignifies to Mary, Queen of England, his intentions of matching with her his ſon Philip, 359. which is readily embraced, ib. obtains this marriage to be conſummated, 361. fruitleſsly attempts to procure ſupport from England againſt France, 371. on his reſignation is ſucceeded by his brother Ferdinand, King of the Romans, 387. the Pope refuſes to crown him, ib. and why, 387, 388. propoſes to enlarge his authority in the Netherlands, iv. 533. ſends the duke of Alva to the Netherlands, 534. princes of, make an alliance with Queen Elizabeth, 544. troops are levied in Germany for the aſſiſtance of the Hugonots of France, 545. German troops ſerve in France, under the King of Navarre, 649. Frederic II. Emperor of, makes powerful alliances, and with whom, v. 69. ſubdues Bohemia, and the Palatinate of the Rhine, 71. puts the Elector Palatine of the Rhine to the ban of the Empire, 78. deſpiſes the negotiations carried on by James I. of England, for the recovery of the Palatinate, 85. which is reſtored to the young Palatine by the treaty of Weſtphalia, vi. 62. the Emperor aſſiſts the Dutch againſt France, 227. is included in the peace of Nimeguen, 267. oppreſſed by the French King, Lewis XIV. 367. joins in a league with Spain and Holland againſt France, 414.

Ghent, pacification formed, iv. 551. the articles of agreement there made with Queen Elizabeth, 552.

Gilbert, Sir Humphrey, his ſpeech in the houſe of commons, relative to a motion there made, concerning the prerogative, iv. 525. how ſuch ſpeeches were then regarded by the houſe of commons, ib. 526.

Giles, St. or St. Giles's, titular Saint of Edinburgh, proceſſion of, interrupted by the Reformers, iv. 418.

Glamorgan, Earl, his tranſactions in Ireland, v. 405.

Glendour, Earl. See *Wales*.

Glouceſter, Earl, forms the project of an inſurrection, i. 252. leaves England, ib. returns to the train of the Empreſs Matilda, 254. commands in a battle againſt King Stephen, in which that prince is taken priſoner, 255. becomes guarantee of the treaty between Matilda and the legate, archbiſhop of Wincheſter, 256. his ſon appears inclined to reſiſt the deſtruction of the fortreſſes appointed by Henry II. 266.

——— Duke, uncle of Richard II. his character, ii. 242. invades France, 244. keeps the King in great ſubjection, 249. impels the houſe of commons to impeach earl Suffolk, then chancellor, 250. obtains a commiſſion to fourteen perſons, all of his faction, to exerciſe ſupreme authority for the ſpace of a year, 252. his and his faction's audacious behaviour to the King, 253. their violent and arbitrary proceedings againſt the miniſtry, 254. he rejects the Queen's interpoſition on her knees in behalf of Sir Simon Burly, 256. is removed from the council-board, 257. exclaims againſt the public meaſures, 259. enters into treaſonable conſpiracies againſt the King, 260. is ſeized, and hurried over ſeas into the French dominions, 261. is appealed in the houſe of peers, 262. murdered in Calais, 263.

——— ſon of Henry IV. ii. 297. accompanies his brother to France, 315. is appointed regent of England by his brother on his death-bed, 319. inveſted by parliament with the dignity of guardian of the realm, on the event of the duke of Bedford's abſence, 323. his precipitate and impolitic conduct, relative to the duke of Burgundy, and the princeſs heireſs of Holland, 330. the pernicious effects of theſe proceedings, 331. gives the duke of Burgundy's herald his own guards to protect him, 349. oppoſes an accommodation with France, 353. his ruin is reſolved on by the Queen and Wincheſter's partizans, 355. his ducheſs's diſgrace augments the public eſteem of him, ib. he is found dead in his bed, 356. an anecdote concerning him which greatly illuſtrates his character, ib.

——— uncle of Edward V. is appointed by Edward IV. regent of the realm, during the minority of Edward V. his nephew, ii. 420. reſolves on the ruin of the Queen, ib. cauſes earl Rivers to be arreſted, 421. gets the duke of York into his hands, 422. is inſtalled by the council, protector of the realm, 423. his character, how covered from public view, ib. his firſt behaviour in the council, 424. his ſecond appearance there, 425. his pretenſions to the crown, how founded, 426. the expedients he made uſe of to work upon the people, 427. mounts the throne under the name of Richard III. 428. cauſes his two nephews, the King and duke of York, to be murdered, 429. rewards the duke of Buckingham, 430. his title, how regarded by the nation, 431. a conſpiracy is formed againſt him by the duke of Buckingham, 432. whom he cauſes to be executed, 435. his title is recognized in parliament, ib. ſucceſsfully courts the Queen dowager, 436. his dominions are invaded by the earl of Richmond, 437. his intrepid behaviour at the battle of Boſworth field, 438. where he is ſlain, and his army routed, 439. his character, ib.

——— brother of Charles II. his death, vi. 135.

——— Earl of, meets ſecretly with the diſcontented barons, ii. 27. a rivalſhip ariſes between him and Leiceſter, 32. he ſecretly deſerts the barons, 34. dies, 36.

——— his ſon, diſpleaſed, retires from the rebel parliament, ii. 47. breaks with the rebel barons, 48. aſſiſts prince Edward to levy an army, 49. rebels, 52. reſigns ſome of his caſtles, and enters into a bond for the peace of the kingdom, 53. on the King's death is appointed, in parliament, one of the guardians of the realm, in conjunction with the archbiſhop

v.6

biſhop of York, ſon of the King of the Romans, 60. his quarrel with the earl of Hereford is judicially determined, 79.

Godfrey, earl of Boulogne, engages in the holy war, i. 212. is choſen King of Jeruſalem, 222.

———'s murder, vi. 282. its effects on the nation, 283. on the houſe of commons, 286. trials of the murderers, 294.

God's judgement, a method of trying cauſes among the Anglo-Saxons, i. 158. how and when practiſed, 159.

Godwin, Earl, his valour, i. 108. how rewarded, ib. he murders Alfred, eldeſt ſon of Ethelred, 111. remains neuter at the acceſſion of Edward the Confeſſor, 113. ſtipulates that Edward ſhall marry his daughter, 114. his exorbitant power, 116. raiſes an army under a falſe pretence, 117. is obliged, with his ſons, to fly the kingdom, 118. makes up all differences with the King, 119. dies, ib.

Goodwin, Sir Francis, his caſe, v. 12. compromiſed, 13.

Gordon, Lady Catharine, married to Perkin Warbeck, iii. 43. is made a priſoner, and generouſly treated by Henry VII. 50.

Goring, his treachery, v. 274.

Gourdon mortally wounds Richard I. King of England, i. 353. his fate, ib.

——— a rebel baron encounters prince Edward, ii. 51. how generouſly treated by that prince, when conquered and taken, ib.

Gourney and Montravers, murderers of Edward II. ii. 148. their fate, ib.

Government, civil, Engliſh, an account of its riſe, ii. 445. its pre-eminence, ib. the only rule of, 446. and changeable nature, ib. ſtate of, in the reign of Queen Elizabeth, iv. 716. how then like that of Turkey, 721. ſtate of, in the reign of James I. v. 108.

——— eccleſiaſtical, then in England, v. 113. grows odious there, 237. is petitioned againſt by the city of London and others, 257. altered, 383. changed again, vi. 137.

——— eccleſiaſtical, in Scotland, in the reign of James VI. v. 56. altered, 224. changed again, vi. 141.

——— feudal, introduced into England, i. 180. how irregular, 318. See *Government* civil, in England.

Gowry, Earl, his conſpiracy againſt James VI. of Scotland, iv. 570. diſappointed, 574. he is condemned by parliament, and executed, 575.

Gray, Lady Elizabeth, her hiſtory, ii. 392. ſhe is married to Edward IV. 393. the honours heapt on her family, 394. her father and one of her brothers murdered by rebels, 397. her party is oppoſed by the duke of Buckingham, 419. her ruin is reſolved on by the duke of Gloceſter, 420. ſhe flies to a ſanctuary with her ſecond ſon, 422. delivers up her ſon to the duke of Gloceſter's meſſengers, 423. conſents to marry the duke of Gloceſter, now Richard III. 436.

——— Lady Jane, propoſed by Northumberland to Edward VI. as heir to the throne, iii. 342. married to lord Guilford Dudley, 343. her character, 349. is with difficulty prevailed on to aſſume the title of Queen, ib. proclaimed in London and the neighbourhood, ib. is deſerted by the people, 351. chearfully returns to a private life, ib. is confined, 352. as is her father and huſband, ib. both are condemned to die, ib. ſhe is ordered to prepare for death, 364. her execution, 365. and laſt ſpeech, ib.

——— Lady Catharine, ſiſter to the above, married to the earl of Hartford, iv. 444. her ſufferings on that account, ib. and death, ib.

——— lord governor of Ireland, hiſtory of his government there, iv. 680.

Greenland diſcovered, v. 125.

Greenville, Sir John, vice admiral, his ſhip is the firſt Engliſh man of war taken by Spain, iv. 652. his gallant behaviour on that occaſion, 653.

Gregory the Great, pontiff of Rome, his intentions concerning Great Britain, i. 22. his intemperate zeal, 23.

——— VII. pontiff of Rome, i. 190. he excommunicates the Emperor of Germany, 191. his meaſures with other ſovereigns, 192. he prohibits the marriage of prieſts, 193. his ſcheme for an union of Chriſtendom, 242.

——— IX. Pope, his decretals, a character of them, ii. 58.

Greſham, Sir Thomas, a merchant, builds the Royal Exchange, iv. 735. how employed by Queen Elizabeth, 751.

Gualo, the Pope's legate, his method of puniſhing the Engliſh clergy for rebellion, ii. 7.

Guelph and *Ghibeline*, factions in Italy, how engendered, i. 191.

Guedo, legate of Rome, excommunicates the rebel barons, ii. 46. becomes Pope under the name of Urban IV. ib.

Guinegate, battle of, iii. 89.

Guiſe, Duke of, commands the French in recovering Calais from the Engliſh, iii. 393, 394. his great influence in the French government, iv. 429, 430. his authority, how counterballanced after the King's death, 431. heads the catholic party, 448. his violent proceedings againſt the Hugonots, ib. 449. makes an alliance with Philip of Spain againſt them, 449. while meditating a mortal blow againſt them, is aſſaſſinated by Poltrot, 454.

——— his ſon, ſucceeds him in the command of the catholics againſt the hugonots, iv. 530. his great character, and wherein he differed from his father, ib. acquires great intereſt at the court of France, 546. forms a party againſt the King, 546. and a league for the ſuppreſſion of the Hugonots, ib. is ſupported

by Philip of Spain, 548. his animoſity againſt the French monarch encreaſes, 564. he revives the catholic league, 584. is aſſaſſinated by order of the French King, 649.

Gunilda, a Chriſtian princeſs, her prophecy, i. 100. her violent and painful death, ib.

Gunpowder, invention and influence of, in the art of war, iii. 67.

Gurth, brother of King Harold, his advice to that prince, i. 136. which is rejected, 137. attends his brother in the battle with duke William of Normandy, 138. is there ſlain, 139.

Guy, earl of Flanders. See *Flanders*.

Guyenne and Poictou, French provinces mortgaged to William Rufus, King of England, i. 218.

——— by ſentence annexed to the French crown, ii. 82. conquered, 84.

Gillingham, a general council ſummoned there by Edward the Confeſſor, i. 114.

H.

HABEAS *corpus act* paſſed, vi. 303. a recapitulation of it, ib. 304. how neceſſary in a mixed monarchy, 304.

Haddington taken and fortified by the Engliſh, iii. 307, beſieged by the Scots and French, 308. the French attempt to ſurprize it, but are repulſed, 310. it is deſerted and diſmantled by the Engliſh, 323.

Hales, puniſhed by Queen Elizabeth, for writing againſt Queen Mary's title to the crown of England, iv. 456.

Hales, Sir Edward, his caſe, vi. 392. tried and adjudged in favour of the King, 393.

Halidown-hill, battle of, ii. 167.

Hallifax, Marquis, his character, vi. 347.

Hambden, John, his caſe, v. 211. judgement is entered againſt him, 213. he dies of his wounds received in battle againſt the King, 346. his character, ib.

——— another, his trial and ſentence, vi. 362.

Hamilton, Patrick, burnt in Scotland for hereſy, iii. 244. his reſolution, and how regarded, ib.

——— Marquis, treats with the covenanters, v. 221. is made commiſſioner to a Scots parliament, 222. calls a general aſſembly, 223. enters England at the head of a Scots army, 446. is routed, ib. tried as earl of Cambridge by a high court of juſtice, 463. beheaded, ib.

——— Earl, joined with Leſly in the chief command of the Scots army, is mortally wounded at Worceſter, vi. 29.

——— Duke, oppoſes Lauderdale, vi. 268. repairs to London with the Scots complaints, 273. how received, 274.

Hampton Court, conference there concerning Queen Mary's conduct, iv. 405.

Hampton Court conference, in the reign of James I. concerning religion, v. 9.

Harſe towns, their complaints, how replied to, iv. 733.

Harcourt, his trial, vi. 306.

Hardicanute, or Canute the Hardy, ſon of Canute the Great, by Queen Emma, i. 110. ſeizes the kingdom of England, 112. dies, 113.

Harfleur beſieged and taken by Henry V. ii. 307.

Harold, ſirnamed Harefoot, ſucceſſor of Canute the Great, comes to an agreement with Hardicanute, i. 111. dies, ib.

——— ſon of earl Godwin, ſucceeds him in his governments and office of ſteward of the houſehold, i. 119. his character, 120. he over-runs Mercia, ib. obtains the dukedom of Northumberland for his brother, 121. encreaſes his popularity, and eſtabliſhes his power, 123. on his journey to Normandy is taken priſoner by the count of Ponthieu, 124. demanded by, and ſent to William duke of Normandy, ib. feigns a compliance with the views of the Norman, 125. ſubdues the Welch to the obedience of England, 126. deſerts his brother Toſti's intereſt, ib. and marries Morcar's ſiſter, ib. openly aſpires to the ſucceſſion, 127. on the death of Edward the Confeſſor mounts the vacant throne, 128. receives intelligence of his brother's intrigues abroad, 129. refuſes to yield the throne to William Duke of Normandy, 130. defeats his brother's invaſion, 135. ſends a meſſage to the Duke of Normandy, now invading England, 137. gives him battle, 138. in which he is defeated and ſlain, 139.

Hartford, Earl of, privately marries lady Jane Gray, without Queen Elizabeth's conſent, ii. 444. how ſeverely treated by that princeſs on that account, ib.

Harrington, his character, iv. 128.

Harriſon's trial, vi. 134.

Harry, Great, the firſt ſhip in the Engliſh navy, built, iii. 66.

Harvey, his character, vi. 134.

Haſtings, a Daniſh chieftain, invades England, i. 60. agrees to depart, 61.

——— battle of, i. 138. its conſequences, 164.

——— lord, his reply to the duke of Gloceſter in council, ii. 424. ordered to be ſummarily executed, 425.

Hatfield, a remarkable ſynod there, i. 45. its acts, ib.

Hatton, Sir Chriſtopher, a man that never followed the profeſſion of the law, made chancellor, iv. 629. his behaviour, ib.

Havre de Grace and Dieppe taken poſſeſſion of by the Engliſh, iv. 450. who ſoon after abandon the latter, ib. the former beſieged by the French, 455. ſurrenders to them, 456.

Hawkes, Thomas, burnt for hereſy in Queen Mary's reign, iii. 379. his fortitude on that occaſion, ib. 380.

v.6

Hayward, an author, in what manner he incenſed Queen Elizabeth, iv. 719. and how ſhe menaced him, 720.

Helie, Lord ap Fleche, a ſmall town in Anjou, gives William Rufus great inquietude, by invading Normandy, i. 217. repulſes William Rufus in an attack on his ſmall territory, ib.

——— de St. Saen is made tutor, and why, by Henry I. to William, ſon of his elder brother, Robert, i. 230. withdraws his pupil to the court of the duke of Anjou, 237.

Hengiſt and Horſa, heads of the Saxons that come into Britain, their deſcent, i. 13. their treachery, 14. the death of the latter, ib. the former's ſucceſs and death, 15.

Henrietta, princeſs of France, is married to Charles I. of England, v. 134. See *Queen conſort of King Charles* I.

——— princeſs of England, is married to the duke of Orleans, vi. 135. dies, 204.

Henries, Kings of France. See *France*.

Henry, duke of Anjou and King of Poland, becomes King of France, iv. 546. attempts in vain to reconcile the violent parties in the kingdom, ib. See *France*.

——— Emperor of Germany. See *Germany*.

——— Prince, third ſon of duke William the Conqueror, rebels againſt his elder brother, duke of Normandy, i. 206. is reduced, 207. becomes King of England under the name of Henry I. 222. his engagements at his acceſſion, 223. which are reduced into a charter, 224. he depoſes the biſhop of Durham, 225. his conduct to Anſelme, 226. his marriage with Matilda, daughter of Malcolm the third, King of Scotland, ib. his kingdom is invaded by his elder brother, Robert, 228. and though their differences are accommodated, he proſecutes Robert's adherents after his departure, ib. invades Normandy, 229. ſlays in battle his brother Robert, and defeats his army, 230. conquers Normandy, ib. his diſputes with Anſelme about inveſtitures, 231. his meſſage to Rome, 232. further differences concerning the ſame ſubject, and effects thereof, 233. is threatened by the Pope, 235. theſe differences are accommodated, 236. he ſends Engliſh biſhops to a general council convoked at Rheims, 238. his charge to them at their departure, 239. accommodates all differences with the French king, ib. his only ſon William, periſhes at ſea, 240. his regard to the Engliſh, ib. he marries Adelais, daughter of Godfrey, duke of Lovaine, and niece of Calixtus, pope, 241. gives his daughter Matilda, empreſs dowager, in marriage to the eldeſt ſon of Fulk, duke of Anjou, ib. his adminiſtration conſidered, 242. his prudence in guarding againſt the encroachments of Rome, 243. how laws againſt the marriages of prieſts were executed in his reign, ib. viſits Normandy, where a grandſon is born to him by the empreſs Matilda, 244. the method he took to enſure the ſucceſſion of the Engliſh throne to the empreſs his daughter, ib. his death and character, 245.

——— II. grandſon of the former, by the empreſs Matilda, is born, i. 244. the Engliſh throne ſettled on his mother, and eventually on him, is uſurped by Stephen, ſon of the count of Blois, 248. young Henry is made a knight, by his great uncle, David, king of Scotland, 259. by the death of his father, Geoffrey, duke of Normandy, is inveſted in the dutchies of Normandy, Anjou, and Maine, ib. marries Eleanor, heireſs of Poictou, 260, 261. ſucceeds to the Engliſh crown, by the death of Stephen, 260. his large poſſeſſions on the continent, 264. the influence which his reſidence in England had on his intereſt in France, 265. he arrives in England, 266. his adminiſtration there, ib. compromiſes his brother's claim on Anjou and Maine, 267. makes the rebellious Welch ſubmit, ib. his large acquiſitions in France, 268. makes war with the king of France, 269. cauſes a marriage to be ſolemnized between his ſon and Margaret, princeſs of France, though both infants, ib. quarrels with his clergy, 270. allows Pope Alexander to exerciſe his authority within his dominions, 271. makes Thomas a Becket chancellor, ib. greatly aggrandiſes him, 272. his familiarity with the chancellor, ib. cauſes him to be elected archbiſhop of Canterbury, 273. a quarrel ariſes between this prince and Becket, 274. obliges Becket to abſolve a military tenant of the crown, excommunicated without his previous conſent, 275. ſummons a national ſynod of prelates, 277. cauſes the conſtitutions of Clarendon to be there enacted, ib. prevails on Becket to ſign and append his ſeal to them, 279. inſtigates a law-ſuit againſt Becket, 280. ſummons a ſynod of prelates and barons, ib. obtains of them to condemn Becket, 281. makes demands of money on Becket, 282. inhibits all appeals to the pope, 285. propoſes other meaſures of oppoſition to eccleſiaſtical uſurpations, 287. is obliged to appeal to the pope, ib. reſolves to accommodate matters with the pope, 288. is oppoſed by Becket in all his endeavours towards a reconciliation, 289. his compromiſe with Becket, 290. his converſation with the French king about Becket, ib. aſſociates with himſelf in the royalty his ſon prince Henry, 291. his exclamation, on ſight of the excommunicated prelates, 293. effects thereof, on Becket, 294. his perplexity on hearing of Becket's tragical end, 295. the means he uſed to appeaſe the pope, 296. his behaviour during this conteſt, 297. undertakes an expedition againſt Ireland, 298. obtains of the pope a grant of that iſland, 300. gives his ſubjects leave to aſſiſt the expelled king of Leinſter, 301. lands in Ireland, 303. ſubdues it, ib. returns, 304. is thoroughly reconciled to Rome, 305. ſettles on his children the portions deſtined for them, 306. cauſes his ſon to be crowned anew, together with his ſpouſe, ib.

is perplexed by his children, 307. obtains of the pope to excommunicate their partizans, ib. arms againſt them, 308. gains great advantages over the armies that appear in that cauſe, 310. holds a conference with the French king, and his diſloyal ſons, ib. his humble conduct on that occaſion, 311. his then behaviour to the church, ib. the ſucceſs of his armies in England, 312. his remarkable pennance at Canterbury, ib. the ſucceſs of his armies againſt the Scots king, 313. and Engliſh rebels, 314. againſt the French king, 315. his honourable accommodation with his enemies, ib. his equitable laws, 316. his prudence in providing for the kingdom, after demolition of the fortreſſes, 317. one of his moſt equitable laws concerning the goods of a vaſſal, 318. on what occaſion enacted, ib. his behaviour towards France, during Philip's minority, 319. his grief, at his ſon Henry's death, 320. the effects of his ſon Geoffrey's death, 321. a new breach with France, and his ſon, 323. his bad ſucceſs in this war, 324. the hard peace that enſued, 325. and his ſorrowful death, ib. his character, 326. the ſtate of his court, with reſpect to literature and politeneſs, ib. the notions that prevailed in his reign, among his barons, with reſpect to liberty and religion, 327. his temper, how changed into rigorous, 328. his reputation in foreign courts, ib. commutes military ſervices, 329. and remits Danegelt, ib. an account of his children, 330.

Henry III. his coronation, when an infant, ii. 3. his guardians grant, in his name, a new charter, ib. and quell inſurrections, 8. he enters on the exerciſe of the government, 10. quells inſurrections of mutinous barons, ib. makes war with France, 11. the then weakneſs of the government exemplified, ib. his character at that time, 12. his barons come armed to parliament, 13. his marriage, and love of foreigners, 14. his barons, how affected by this behaviour of the king, 15. further effects of his imprudence in this reſpect, 16. his bad ſucceſs in war, 17. and want of œconomy, ib his behaviour to the monks of Chriſt-church of Canterbury, on the vacancy of that ſee, 18. tumults ariſe, on promoting Italian clergymen, 19. he accepts of the Sicilian crown from the pope, 20. his expedients to raiſe money for the Sicilian war, 21. reſigns that crown into the hands of the pope, 22. his diſcontented barons complain of breaches of the great charter, 23. the king's ſarcaſtical anſwer, 25. he renews the great charter, 26 quarrels with the earl of Leiceſter, 27. ſummons a parliament, 28. in which the barons appear armed, ib. another at Oxford, in which the unlimited authority of twenty-four barons is ſettled, ib. he cedes Normandy, and other French provinces, to the French king, by a formal treaty, 33. is abſolved by the pope, from his oath to obſerve the proviſions of Oxford, 34. reſumes his authority, 35. obtains the reſumption of his authority, to be confirmed in parliament, 36. repulſes the rebellious Welch, 37. hoſtilities are commenced againſt him by the mutinous barons, under the earl of Leiceſter's direction, 38. an ignominious accommodation is extorted from him, 39. the quarrel breaking out afreſh, it is ſubmitted to the arbitration of the French king, ib. the French king's equitable award, made in preſence of the ſtates of France and England, is deſpiſed by the mutinous barons, 40. the ſucceſs of the royaliſts in war, when headed by king and prince, againſt the rebel barons, 41. the battle of Lewes and Miſe there, 42, 43. the violence to which the royal family and kingdom are obliged to ſubmit, 44. the proceedings of a parliament of rebel barons, ſummoned by Leiceſter, 45. another, in like manner, is ſummoned, to which two knights of each ſhire, and two deputies from each borough, are called, 46. the arbitrary proceedings of this parliament, 47. his ſon, prince Edward, is releaſed on ignominious terms, 48. the royaliſts headed by the prince, engage Leiceſter's party at Eveſham, 49. the king's life is there ſaved by the prince, 50. victory declares in favour of the royaliſts, 50. the clemency of the victors, 51. the king's clemency to the earl of Gloceſter, after quelling a new rebellion raiſed by him, 52. the king's death, 53. his children, 54. his character, and moſt remarkable laws, ib.

Henry IV. is placed on the throne, ii. 273. calls a parliament in ſix days, ib. a conſideration of his title to the crown, 282. an inſurrection againſt him, 283. is quelled, 284. he perſecutes lollards, 285. an inſurrection ariſes againſt him in Wales, 286. he invades Scotland, 287. the earl of Northumberland rebels againſt him, 288. the earl's ſon gives the king battle at Shrewſbury, 289. in which the king gains the victory, ib. this rebellion is quelled, 290. and Northumberland pardoned, ib. the earl of Nottingham, and archbiſhop of Canterbury, rebel, 290. this rebellion is quelled by an artifice, ib. king Henry gets into his power, James, prince of Scotland, afterwards James I. of Scotland, 291. foments diviſions in France, 292. procures a ſettlement of the crown upon himſelf and his heirs, 294. rejects the addreſſes of the houſe of commons, relative to the temporalities of the church, 295. his death and character, 296. his children, 297.

——— V. eldeſt ſon and ſucceſſor of the former, ii. 297. his riotous life in his youth, 298. his behaviour at his acceſſion to the chief juſtice of the king's bench, who had impriſoned him in his youth, 299. how he managed the ſeveral parties that then divided the nation, 300. defeats a conſpiracy of lollards, 301. enacts ſevere laws againſt them, 302. foments the differences that ariſe in France, during the minority of Charles VI. 305. prepares for war againſt France, ib. puniſhes the conſpirators in favour of the earl of March, 306. takes Harfleur, ib. draws up his army for battle, at Azincour, 308. routs the French, headed by the princes of the blood

v.6

of France, 309. grants a truce to France, 310. invades it again, 312. is very ſucceſsful there, 314. obtains the ſucceſſion, and immediate regency of France, by the treaty of Troye, 315. marries the princeſs Catherine of France, 316. his forces, commanded by the duke of Clarence, are defeated at Baugé, 317. his army, commanded by the king in perſon, is very ſucceſsful, 318. his death, and character, 319. an account of his family, 320. his revenues, 321. his civil adminiſtration, 322.

Henry VI. ſucceſſor of Henry V. a minor, the government during his minority, is ſettled by the parliament, ii. 323. he is crowned king of France, at Paris, 344. his marriage with Margaret of Anjou is agreed on, 354. a parliament is ſummoned at Edmonds-bury, 355. the then ſtate of king and kingdom, 360. the then ſtate of the public revenues, 363. he baniſhes the duke of Suffolk, 366. the topics of the king's partizans, 368. the power of his adherents keeps the nation in ſuſpence, 370. the duke of York's firſt armament is diſſipated, 372. Henry's expedition againſt France, repulſed, 373. he is diveſted, by the parliament, of the exerciſe of his ſovereign authority, ib. taken priſoner in a battle at St. Albans, 374. reinſtated in his royal power by the houſe of peers, 375. a party of his partizans, commanded by the earl of Saliſbury, defeat the Yorkiſts under lord Audley, at Bloreheath, 376. made priſoner by the earl of Warwick, in a battle at Northampton, 377. the judgment of the houſe of peers, between him and the duke of Lancaſter, 378. an army is raiſed for him in the north, by the queen, 379. which defeats the duke of Lancaſter's army, headed by the duke himſelf, 380. routs the Lancaſtrian army, headed by the earl of Warwic, 381. he is depoſed, by the decree of a mixed multitude, aſſembled in St. John's fields, 382. his army is routed at Touton, 387. he flies with his queen into Scotland, ib. his army is routed at Hexham, 391. he is thrown into the Tower, 392. releaſed by the earl of Warwic, and proclaimed king, 404, falls again into the hands of his enemies, 407. and expires in the Tower, 409.

——— VII. his acceſſion, iii. 1. his title to the throne, 2, 3. his prejudice againſt the houſe of York, 4. his joyful reception in London, 5. his coronation, embelliſhed by the inſtitution of yeomen of the guards, then made, 6. ſweating ſickneſs then in London, ib. gets the crown entailed, by the parliament, on him, and the heirs of his body, 7. obtains of the pope, to confirm his title, 8. gets the duties of tunnage and poundage ſettled on him for life, 9. his marriage with the princeſs Elizabeth, only daughter of the late king, and heireſs of the houſe of York, 10. his policy, with reſpect to the clergy, ib. while he makes a progreſs to the north, an inſurrection is formed againſt him, ib. which is ſoon quelled, 11. diſcontents ariſe, and why, ib. Simnel Lambert's inſurrection is formed againſt him, 12. which firſt breaks out in Ireland, 13. cauſes the queen dowager, mother of the Queen conſort, to be impriſoned, 14. the methods he uſed to convince the people, that Simnel was an impoſtor, ib. 15. his dominions in England, are invaded by the impoſtor Simnel, 16. whoſe army he defeats at Stoke, ib. the rigours he practiſed after the victory, ib. 17. cauſes the ceremony of the coronation of the queen conſort, to be performed, 17. makes Simnel a ſcullion, ib. makes a ſeven years truce with Scotland, 19. offers his mediation between France, and the duke of Brittany, 23. his ſound politics, and ſolid judgment, diſcovered in his conduct on that occaſion, 24. obtains a ſupply from his parliament, under pretence of enabling him to aſſiſt the Britons, 25. another inſurrection is formed in the North, ib. which is ſuppreſſed, 26. levies a few troops for Brittanny, ib. an account of the proceedings of this feeble ſuccour, during their ſhort ſtay in Brittanny, 27. how he was blinded in relation to the affairs of Brittanny, 28. his miſconduct in this important tranſaction, how occaſioned, 30. iſſues a commiſſion for levying a benevolence, ib. his artful ſpeech to his parliament, ib. 31. how regarded by men of penetration, 31. an invaſion of France, 32. and how he prepares the minds of his ſubjects for reception of the news of a ſecret treaty of peace, carried on between the two courts, in the midſt of theſe hoſtile appearances, ib. the treaty of peace is declared, 33. how likely to continue, ib. another impoſtor, of the name of Perkin Warbec, is ſet up againſt him, 34. who tries his fortune in Ireland, 35. and is credited abroad, and by many of the Engliſh nobility, 35, 36. Henry's prudent procedure in detecting the impoſture, 36, 37. puniſhes the lower conſpirators, 37, 38. his reſentment againſt the arch-duke Philip on this account, how diſplayed, 38. cauſes lord Stanley to be convicted and beheaded, 38, 39. the effect of this meaſure on the nation, and on the conſpirators, 39. an invaſion of Kent, by the impoſtor, is fruitleſsly attempted, 40. a parliament ſummoned, ib. an account of the wiſe laws then made, 40, 41. whereby the king's authority is fully eſtabliſhed in all his dominions, 41. complains to his parliament of the Scots irruption, and obtains a ſubſidy, in order to enable him to act againſt them, 44. an inſurrection in the weſt, patroniſed by lord Audley, 45. its progreſs to London, 46. where it is diſcomfited upon Blackheath, and the leaders puniſhed with death, ib. 47. a Scots invaſion, ib. truce with Scotland, 48. Perkin, the impoſtor, invades Cornwal with his Engliſh followers, 49. where he is favoured by an inſurrection, ib. which is ſoon diſſipated, and the impoſtor taken, 50. and ordered for execution, 51. the king alſo orders the earl of Warwic for execution, 52. has a perſonal interview with the arch-duke Philip, at Calais, ib. receives a nuncio from the pope, concerning an expedition to the holy land, 53. marries the prince of Wales, to the in-

fanta Catherine of Arragon, 54. and the eldeſt princeſs, Margaret, his daughter, to James of Scotland, ib. gives full ſcope to his avarice and practiſes the moſt unjuſtifiable oppreſſions, ib. 55. levies a new benevolence, and purſues more oppreſſive meaſures, 56. how diſturbed then, by the tranſactions in Spain, ib. 57. the reception he gave to the king of Caſtile, by ſtreſs of weather, drove into Weymouth, 57. extorts from him the delivery of the earl of Suffolk, a refugee in his dominions, 58, 59. whom he impriſons in the Tower on his arrival, 59. the departure of the king of Caſtile, ib. the king's ſickneſs, ib. his death, and character, ib. his laws, and the authority of the ſtar-chamber, conſidered, 61 to 65, incluſive. during this reign, a new paſſage is opened to the Eaſt-Indies, by diſcovery of the Cape of Good-hope, 66. Newfoundland is alſo diſcovered, ib. and the ſhip, called Great Harry, or the firſt ſhip in the Engliſh navy built, ib. Conſtantinople was, during this reign, taken by the Turks, 67. and divers inventions were then found out in Europe, whereby learning was greatly advanced, ib. an univerſal joy at his death, 69.

Henry VIII. while prince of Wales, compelled to a marriage contract with his elder brother's widow, the infanta Catharine, i. 54. his acceſſion, on the death of his father, how acceptable to the nation, 69. 70. his character, and perſon, 70. the choice of his miniſters, how prudently made, ib. the then chief competitors for his favour, ib. cauſes the oppreſſive miniſters of the former reign, Empſon and Dudley, to be tried, 71. and executed, 72. his marriage with the infanta Catharine celebrated, 72, 73. the then ſituation of foreign affairs, 73 to 79. incluſive. makes war with France, 79. is deceived by his father-in-law, ib. 80. ſends Dorſet with forces to his aſſiſtance, 80. who returns, 81. his fleet beats the French navy, ib. enabled by a poll-tax, impoſed in parliament, to levy a great army, 82. receives preſents from the pope, brought to the Thames in a veſſel under the papal banner, 83. enters into a war with Scotland, ib. is greatly influenced by Wolſey, 85. and makes him his prime miniſter, 86. his fleet retires from that of France, 87. in perſon, invades France, 88. defeats the French army at Guinegate, 89. his behaviour to the city of Tournay, 90. in his abſence, his Engliſh dominions are invaded by the Scots, 91. and his army headed by the earl of Surry, routs the Scots at Flouden, 92. peace with Scotland enſues, 93. becomes ſenſible of the raſhneſs of his undertaking againſt France, ib. exclaims againſt the emperor and Ferdinand of Spain, for deſerting his alliance, 94. makes peace with France, 95. gives his ſiſter Mary in marriage to the French king, ib. who, after his death, marries the duke of Suffolk, 96 Henry's adminiſtration at home and abroad, 98, 99. encourages male-contents in Scotland, 100. refuſes the imperial crown, offered to be reſigned to him by the emperor Maximilian, 104. his friendſhip is courted by the French king, 105. he reſtores Tournay to that prince, 106. is informed by Warham, and otherwiſe aſſured of the diſcontents of his people, at Wolſey's adminiſtration, 108. makes ineffectual pretenſions to the imperial throne, now vacant by the death of the emperor Maximilian, 109. holds the ballance of power between France and the new Emperor, 110. agrees to an interview with the French king at Calais, ib. is viſited by the Emperor before his departure, 111. the interview at Calais, between the kings of France and England, ib. the mutual confidence theſe princes then repoſed in each other, 112, 113. Henry viſits the Emperor, and engages him to paſs ſome days with him at Calais, 113. mediates between the Emperor and the French king, 114, 115. concludes an alliance with the Emperor againſt France, 115. cauſes the duke of Buckingham to be tried, condemned, and executed, ib. writes a book againſt Luther, 120. and obtains the title of *Defender of the Faith*, to be conferred on him, 121. is again viſited by the Emperor in England, 123. declares war againſt France, and ſends the earl of Surry over to invade it, 124. marches an army into Scotland, under Surry's command, 125. the progreſs of this war, 126, 127. the arbitrary methods he took to raiſe money, 127. calls a parliament, ib. from whom he obtains a ſcanty ſubſidy, 128, 129. his reaſon for not attacking France at this time, 131. but ſoon after invades it, ib. concludes a treaty with the Emperor againſt France, 134. embraces the alliance of France, 137. how he then behaved to the Emperor, 138. ſtipulates from France a yearly penſion, ib. levies a tax without conſent of parliament, 139. whereby the people are greatly diſcontented, ib. inſurrections, 140. but the offenders are pardoned, and diſcharged, ib. the effects of his abſolute authority, 141. is invited to accede to a confederacy againſt the Emperor, 145. makes a league with France, and renounces all claim to that crown, 147. his herald, jointly with that of France, denounces war againſt the Emperor, 148. how replied to by the Emperor, ib. entertains ſcruples, concerning the legality of his marriage with Queen Catharine, 150. which are fortified by Wolſey, and other prelates, ib. and by a new paſſion for Anne Boleyn, ib. applies to the pope for a divorce, 152. receives a commiſſion to Wolſey, and another prelate, to examine the validity of the king's marriage, and of the pope's diſpenſation, 153. the king's divorce is oppoſed by the Emperor, 154. ſollicits another commiſſion from the pope, 155. which is in part complied with, ib. the king's patience is greatly tried by the pope, and Campiggio, now joined with Wolſey on the commiſſion, 156. he preſents himſelf, together with the Queen, before the commiſſioners, 157. the juſtice he then did the Queen, 158. obtains of the legates to declare the Queen contumacious, ib. the cauſe is evoked to Rome, 159. the effects of this meaſure on the king, ib.

v.6

ib. he reſolves on Wolſey's ruin, and orders him to depart from York palace, 160. ſeizes his rich furniture, ib. orders him to be indicted in the ſtar-chamber, 161. the articles of the charge, 161, 162. cauſes ſentence to be pronounced againſt him, on the ſtatute of proviſors, 162. but afterwards pardons him, and reſtores him part of his furniture, ib. obtains of the parliament, a diſcharge of debts contracted ſince the beginning of his reign, 164. and is pleaſed with the diſpoſition now appearing in his parliament, to reduce the power and privileges of the eccleſiaſtics, ib. is agitated with anxieties, and tempted to break off all connexion with Rome, 165. is delighted with Cranmer's propoſal, 166. and employs agents to collect the judgments of all the univerſities in Europe, ib. obtains of the convocation, and all the univerſities, to pronounce his marriage invalid, 168. orders Wolſey to be arreſted, and conducted to London, in order to be tried for high-treaſon, 169. but regrets his death, and ſpeaks well of his memory, 170. ſummons a parliament and convocation, ib. orders a bill to be drawn, to moderate the abuſes of deeds in truſt, 171. is cited to appear at Rome, 173. at an interview with the French king, adviſes him to break off all connexion with Rome, ib. and privately celebrates his marriage with Anne Boleyn, ib. proceeds by gradual ſteps, jointly with his parliament, to looſen the connections with the ſee of Rome, 174. and publickly owns his marriage, ib obtains of archbiſhop Cranmer, to annul his marriage with the infanta Catharine, and to ratify that celebrated with Anne Boleyn, 175. and cauſes Anne Boleyn to be crowned, ib. enrages the conclave of Rome by theſe ſteps, 176. ſhakes off all reverence for the apoſtolic ſee, ib. and is excommunicated at Rome, 177. obtains of his parliament, to enact laws deſtructive of the pope's authority, 178. and to confirm his marriage with Anne Boleyn, 179. and to declare him ſupreme head, on earth, of the Church of England, 180. a rebellion ariſes in Ireland, 181. which is ſoon ſuppreſſed, ib. tries in vain to gain the Scots king to his intereſt, 182. the character of his miniſters, 185. is enabled, by the courtſhip paid him, both by catholics and proteſtants, to aſſume an unmeaſurable authority, 186. how he treated proteſtants and monks, 189. how inſtigated to take vengeance on monks, 191. ſuppreſſes ſome monaſteries, ib. perſecutes opponents, and cauſes them to be condemned to the flames, 192, 193. whereby he incenſes the conclave to ſuch a degree, that they excommunicate him, 193. makes it the object of his policy, to incapacitate the Emperor to wreak his reſentment on him, 194. and invites over German divines, ib. the Queen Catharine dies, 195. and the Emperor tries to detach him from the alliance of France, ib. is indifferent about the Emperor's advances, 196. but ſomewhat diſquieted about Scotland, ib. reaſons why his domeſtic peace ſeems to be endangered by innovations in religion, 197. appoints Cromwell vicar-general, 198. terrifies ſome monaſteries to ſurrender their charters into the king's hands, 199. cauſes the parliament to ſuppreſs others, ib. 200. cauſes a new tranſlation of the bible to be made, 200, 201. the diſputes that thereon ariſe, 201, 202. is diſguſted with his Queen, Anne Boleyn, 202. determines to ſacrifice her, on account of his paſſion for Jane Seymour, 203. the firſt appearance of his jealouſy, 204. he receives a letter from the Queen, 205. which has no influence on his unrelenting mind, 206. cauſes her to be tried and condemned to death, 207. and executed, 208. his regard for his two children, the princeſſes Mary and Elizabeth, 209. his ſpeech to his next parliament, how received, ib. gains a new acceſſion of power to the crown, 210. is encouraged by the convocation, to break with Rome, 211. corrects the articles of religion, framed by the convocation, 213. diſcontents ariſe among the people, 214. which break out in an inſurrection, 215. ſends an army againſt the rebels under the duke of Norfolk, 216. forwards their diſperſion, by promiſing a general pardon, 217. but keeps his army on foot, ib. another inſurrection ſuppreſſed, of which ſome are puniſhed, and the reſt pardoned, ib. 218. a prince is born to him, and his Queen dies, 218. ſends an embaſſy into Germany, in order to cement an union among German princes, 219. ſuppreſſes the greater monaſteries, 219, 220. diſcovers impoſtures there, 221, 222. the number of monaſteries, colleges, and hoſpitals, ſuppreſſed, 222. the topics then inſiſted on to quiet the populace, 223. how repreſented in the pope's bull againſt him, now publiſhed, 224. is enraged at cardinal Pole, but diſſembles his anger, 225. declines the general council ſummoned by the pope to meet at Mantua, 226. his notion of hereſy, 227. diſputes with Lambert in Weſtminſter-hall, 228. condemns him to the flames, 229. authoriſes other cruelties of the like nature, 230. and calls a parliament, ib. in which the ſix articles are eſtabliſhed, ib. 231. his behaviour to Cranmer, and other biſhops, in conſequence of this law, 231. obtains of the parliament, to equalize proclamations to laws, 232. his violent hatred of cardinal Pole, and his relations, 233. gets the ſurrenders of monaſtries confirmed in parliament, ib. 234. his matrimonial projects, after the death of Jane Seymour, 235. marries Anne of Cleves, and diſlikes her, 236. induced, by political views, to conſummate his marriage with Anne of Cleves, 237. complains to the parliament, of the diverſity of religions, ib. an account of the only religious order now in England, 238. his deceitful behaviour to Anne of Cleves, and Cromwell, 238, 239. cauſes Cromwell to be arreſted at the council board, and committed to the Tower, 239. and executed, 240. divorces Anne of Cleves, ib. 241. marries Catharine Howard, 242. cauſes the counteſs of Saliſbury to be ſummarily beheaded, without a previous trial, 243.

243. ſuppreſſes an inconſiderable inſurrection in Yorkſhire, ib. deſires an interview with his nephew the Scots king, at York, 245. diſcovers the Queen's lewdneſs, 246. cauſes her to be attainted in parliament, 247. and beheaded, 248. obtains extraordinary laws to be paſt, concerning religion, 249. cauſes books to be publiſhed, recommending to the people, his ſyſtem of religion, 250. clears the churches of plays and interludes, 251. enters into a war with Scotland, 252. the progreſs of this war, 253. routs the Scots army at Solway, 254. projects the ſcheme of uniting England and Scotland, by marrying the prince of Wales to the young Queen of Scotland, 255. and ſends home the Scots priſoners without ranſom, ib. makes a treaty with Scotland, 256. is diſpleaſed with the behaviour of the Scots, 257. forms an offenſive league with the Emperor againſt France, 258. obtains of his parliament to grant him ſupplies, and gratify his humour in religious affairs, 259. the ſucceſs of a campaign againſt France, 260. how far his intereſts are concerned in Scots affairs, 261. obtains of his parliament ſuch laws as he pleaſes to dictate, 262, 263. ſends a fleet and army to invade Scotland, 264. the ſucceſs of another campaign in France, 265, 266. of one in Scotland, 267. obtains of his parliament more ſubſidies, and more laws ſuitable to his humour and their proſtitute ſpirit, 269. his ſpeech on diſſolving them, ib. 270. makes peace with Scotland and France, 270. his domeſtic adminiſtration, 271. perſecutes all who differ from him, 272. the peril the Queen then fell into, and how ſhe eſcaped it, 273, 274. his tyrannical temper burſts out againſt the duke of Norfolk, 275. cauſes Surry to be tried, and executed, 276. obtains an attainder againſt the duke of Norfolk, 276, 277. who eſcapes by the king's death, 277. the circumſtances attending his death, 278. his character, ib. 279. the number of his parliaments, 280. his wiſe laws, ib. 281. his commercial policy, 283. the encouragement he gave to letters and learned men, 286. protected cardinal Beaton's murderers, 299.

Henry, ſon of Adila, daughter of William the Conqueror, his hiſtory, i. 248. aids his brother to mount the Engliſh throne, 249. in quality of legate, aſſembles a ſynod at Weſtminſter, 253. accuſes his brother to the ſynod, ib. agrees with the empreſs Matilda, 255. his ſpeech at her coronation, 256. ſecretly inſtigates the Londoners to revolt, 257. beſieges Matilda in Winchester, 258. is deprived of his legatine commiſſion, by pope Eugenius III. ib. pronounces ſentence againſt Becket in a ſynod, 281.

——— eldeſt ſon of Henry II. is affianced to Margaret, princeſs of France, i. 267. married to her, 269. crowned in his father's life-time, without the princeſs, 291. again crowned with her, 306. his character, ib. his diſloyalty to his father, 307. how ſupported in his undutiful behaviour, 308. joins the French king in Normandy, 314. accommodates his differences with his father, 315. renews his undutiful behaviour, 319. dies, 320.

——— II. of France, ſucceeds to the French crown, iii. 296. his character, ib. determines to aſſiſt Scotland, ib. attempts to recover Boulogne, 323. makes peace with England, 330, 413. and with the Emperor, 414. cauſes his ſon and daughter-in-law to aſſume the arms of England, 415. is killed in a tournament, ib. See *France*.

——— III. makes war with the Hugonots, iv. 648. is forced to fly from Paris, ib. See *France*.

——— Prince, ſon of James I. dies, v. 43. his character, ib.

Hereford, a nobleman of Eaſt Anglia, ſhelters himſelf and followers in the iſle of Ely, i. 177. ſaves himſelf there, when other inſurgents yield, 178. protects earl Morcar there, 185. is reſtored to William the Conqueror's favour, ib.

———, Earl, heads the Norman barons in a conſpiracy againſt William the Conqueror, i. 187. his puniſhment, 189.

——— Duke, accuſes the duke of Norfolk in the parliament, and accepts a challenge from him to a ſingle combat, ii. 264. is baniſhed for ten years, 265. becomes duke of Lancaſter by the death of his father, 266. embarks for England in order to recover this great ſucceſſion, unjuſtly ſeized by Richard II. 267. becomes maſter of the kingdom during Richard's abſence in Ireland, ib. makes himſelf maſter of the King's perſon after his return, 268. extorts a reſignation from him, 269. obtains of the parliament to depoſe him, 272. is placed on the throne, 273. See *Henry* IV. of England.

Hereticks, and *Hereſy*, obſtinate, firſt puniſhed in England by burning to death, i. 285. an extraordinary commiſſion granted to extirpate them, by Queen Mary, iii. 381. a more expeditious and ſummary method than by inquiſition appointed for ſuppreſſing them, 382. how determined in Queen Elizabeth's reign, iv. 409.

Herries, Lord, ſent by Queen Mary with a ſubmiſſion of her cauſe to Queen Elizabeth, iv. 490. her fluctuating conduct on that occaſion, 491. is appointed by Queen Mary to be one of her commiſſioners to confer with thoſe of Queen Elizabeth about her conduct, 492. refuſes to anſwer Murray's charge againſt her, 496.

Hertford, Marquis of, his character and deſcent, v. 334. named a general, and aſſembles forces for the King, ib. grants a commiſſion to Hopton, 343. is ſent with prince Maurice into the Weſt, 344. fights Waller at Roundwaydown, 345. is haraſſed by Waller, and relieved by Wilmot, one of the King's generals, ib.

Heptarchy commenced, i. 13. ended in the union of the kingdoms that compoſed it, 42.

Hexham, battle of, ii. 391.

v.6

Hicford, secretary to the duke of Norfolk, put under arreſt, iv. 537. diſcovers his maſter's conſpiracy againſt the Queen, ib. 538.
High Commiſſion, court of. See *Commiſſion eccleſiaſtical.*
Hierarchy canons and liturgy. See *Epiſcopacy* and *Epiſcopal habits.*
Hobbes, his character, vi 127.
Holland, a province in the Low Countries, with other towns and provinces, is forced to revolt from the Spaniards by the tyranny of the duke of Alva, iv. 548. an union of them is formed, 549.
Hollis, forcibly holds the ſpeaker in the chair till a remonſtrance is read, v. 187. his ſentence in the King's Bench, ib. his behaviour in priſon, 188. his character, 252. his temper, 372.
Holmby, King Charles I. brought there, v. 415. there ſeized by Joyce, 420. and carried to the head quarters, ib.
Homelden, Battle of, ii. 287.
Homilies, twelve, compoſed in order to be read to the people, iii. 294. objections to them, 295.
Honorius, Pope, his avarice, ii. 18.
Hooper, Biſhop of Gloceſter, burnt for hereſy in his dioceſe in Queen Mary's time, iii. 377. refuſes the Queen's pardon, 378. his conſtancy under his ſufferings, ib.
——— another, refuſes to be conſecrated in the epiſcopal habit, iv. 505, 506.
Hope Good, Cape of, or the Cape of Good Hope, found out, iii. 66.
Hopton, Sir Ralph, produces his commiſſion from the earl of Hertford, v. 343. in Cornwal levies forces for the King, ib. commands a diviſion of the army at the battle of Stratton, 344. aſſembles an army for the King, 368. is defeated by Waller, ib.
Horn Caſtle, battle of, v. 350.
Horſa and Hengiſt. See *Hengiſt* and Horſa.
Hotham, Sir John, his ſpeech in Strafford's caſe, v. 247. is declared a traitor, 325. at the head of the garriſon of Hull makes a progreſs into the ſouthern parts of Yorkſhire, 342. enters into a correſpondence with the King's party, 356. depoſed from his government of Hull, ib.
Howard, Lady Catherine, becomes the object of Henry VIII.'s affection, iii. 239. is married to him, 242. her incontinency diſcovered, 246. confeſſes her guilt, 247. is attainted of high treaſon by the parliament, ib. executed on Tower-hill, 248.
Hubba, a Daniſh conqueror, his image how uſed by the Danes, i. 57.
Hubert, archbiſhop of Canterbury, high juſticiary, ſummarily puniſhes Longbeard, a lawyer, i. 355. aſſiſts John to mount the Engliſh throne, 357. dies, 358.
——— de Burgh, with the biſhop of Wincheſter, joint juſticiary, is aſſociated alſo with him in the government, ii. 7. obtains of the Pope to declare Henry III. of full age, 9. his character and adminiſtration, 12. his depoſition, 13.
——— otherwiſe French, executed for the murder of lord Darnly, iv. 497. accuſes Queen Mary as acceſſary to it, ib.
Hudibraſs, his character, vi. 452.
Hugh, earl, a Norman, his treachery, i. 100.
Hugonots in France, a league is formed to extirpate them, iv. 529. they take arms and oppoſe the Catholics, ib. and oblige the court to an accommodation, ib. are defeated at Jarnac, 530. ſecretly aſſiſted by Queen Elizabeth, ib. defeated at Moncontour, 531. rally and force the King to a new accommodation, ib. are lulled into a ſtate of ſecurity by the French King, 541. barbarouſly maſſacred all over the kingdom, 542. the reſt fly to proteſtant countries and demand aſſiſtance, 545. are aſſiſted by many proteſtant princes of Germany, ib. a new peace is made with them by the French King, 546, 547. perſecuted in the Low Countries, 548. ſolicit aſſiſtance from Queen Elizabeth, 550. are relieved by accident, 551. war is declared againſt them by the King of France, 648. they form a confederacy with the King of Navarre, 649. a fleet and army are ſent from England to their aſſiſtance, v. 158. which are defeated at the iſle of Rhee, 159. and Rochelle is beſieged, ib. another is ſent to relieve that town, 176. but returns without effecting it, 176, 177. a greater prepared for its relief, 177. in ſight of which it ſurrenders, 179.
Hume, Lord, the chief cauſe of the duke of Albany being created regent of Scotland, iii. 99. is ungratefully treated and put to death by the duke, 100. his death revenged, ib.
——— Lord, joins in a confederacy againſt Queen Mary and Bothwell, iv. 482. is the firſt that raiſes forces againſt her, ib.
Hunter, his extraordinary love for his father, iii. 379. is burnt for a heretic, ib.
Huntington, Earl, is created duke of Exeter, ii. 263. degraded from his ducal title, 274. conſpires againſt Henry IV. 283. is put to death, 284.
Hyde, Sir Thomas, his character and behaviour in parliament, v. 252. is created earl of Clarendon. See *Clarendon*, earl.
——— created earl of Rocheſter, vi. 348.

I.

JAMAICA conquered, vi. 48.
James I. of England, his acceſſion, v. 2. makes a treaty with France and Holland, 5. diſcovers Raleigh's conſpiracy, 6. cauſes a conference to be held at Hampton Court, 9. calls a parliament, ib. by proclamation forbids out-laws to be choſen, 12. in like manner annuls monopolies and wardſhips, 16. promotes an union of England and Scotland, 17. prorogues the parliament, 18. calls it to ſit, 23. diſcovers the gunpowder plot, ib. prorogues it further, 25. aſſembles the parliament, 27. aſſumes the ſtile and title of King of Great Britain, 28. prorogues the parliament further, 29. convenes it, 31. quarrels with it, ib. marries the princeſs Elizabeth to

to the Elector Palatine of the Rhine, 43. reſtores Eſſex to his blood, 45. creates Suffolk and Northampton earls, ib. diſſolves the parliament, 50. a ſpecimen of his diſcourſe at table, 51. gives up to the Dutch the Cautionary Towns, 54. viſits Scotland, 55. his propoſals there, 59. returns diſappointed, 60. releaſes Sir Walter Raleigh from the Tower, 62. ſends him on an expedition, 63. ſigns a warrant for his execution, 65. his notions about his ſon's marriage, 68. his opinion of his ſon-in-law's affairs, 70. negotiates with Spain about marriage and the recovery of the Palatinate, 71. demands loans, 72. calls a parliament, ib. prorogues it, 78. impriſons two commoners, ib. tears a proteſtation out of the journal of the houſe, 81. he diſſolves his parliament in anger, 82. impriſons the leading members, ib. the regard paid to him by foreign courts, 85. expects recovery of the Palatinate by negotiations with Spain, 86. makes large conceſſions in favour of Catholics, 87. and ſecretly employs an agent with the Pope of Rome, ib. diſcharges popiſh recuſants impriſoned, ib. conſents to the prince's journey to Spain, 90. obtains a diſpenſation, and on what terms, for his ſon's marriage with the Infanta, 93. breaks off the treaty with Spain, 95. calls a parliament, 96. orders Buckingham to give an account of the marriage treaty to parliament, 98. conſents that ſubſidies ſhall be paid in to, and diſpoſed of by a committee of parliament, 98. to an act againſt monopolies, ib. makes an alliance with Holland againſt Spain, 103. treats with France about marriage, ib. grants to France the ſame conditions as were agreed on with Spain, 104. ſends an army under count Mansfield for the recovery of the Palatinate, 105. dies, 106. his character, ib. his character as an author, 132.

James II. of England. See *York*, Duke of.

——— eldeſt ſon of James II. born, vi. 411. ſent with his mother to France, 429.

——— I. of Scotland. See *Scotland*.

——— II. of Scotland. See *Scotland*.

——— III. of Scotland. See *Scotland*.

——— IV. of Scotland countenances Perkin Warbeck, iii. 43. makes an inroad into England, 44. makes a truce with England, 48. marries Margaret, eldeſt ſiſter of Henry VIII. 54. takes part with France againſt England, 83. ravages it with a great army, 91. is defeated by the Engliſh, 92. his fate uncertain, ib. 93. See alſo *Scotland*.

——— V. takes the government upon him, iii. 182. mortifies the Douglaſſes, ib. aids France, and marries one of their princeſſes, 197. is diſſuaded from meeting the King of England at York, 245, 246. ſends excuſes to that prince, 246. and endeavours in vain to appeaſe him, 252. prepares for war, and gets the better of the Engliſh in a ſkirmiſh, 253. his nobility refuſe to follow him into England, ib. his forces are defeated at Solway, 254. his afflicted ſtate, ib. death and character, ib. See alſo *Scotland*.

James VI. his birth and baptiſm, iv. 469. the crown reſigned to him by his mother, Queen Mary, 486. his coronation, ib. takes the government into his hands at eleven years of age, 558. his familiarity with Lenox, 559. comes under Gourie's power, 570. his behaviour to the Engliſh and French ambaſſadors under theſe circumſtances, 571. eſcapes from his keepers, 574. his correſpondence with Queen Elizabeth on that ſubject, 575. calls a parliament, ib. makes a treaty with Queen Elizabeth, 591. interpoſes with her in behalf of his mother, now under ſentence of death, 613. this interpoſition how received, 614. his behaviour on hearing of his mother's death, 625. marries a princeſs of Denmark, 646. brings the Queen to Scotland, 647. three catholic lords conſpire againſt him, 659. his inability to puniſh them, how accounted for, 660. the care he took to enſure his ſucceſſion to the Engliſh throne, 694. entertains a correſpondence with the earl of Eſſex, 695. ſends ambaſſadors into England, and with what view, 701. enters into a correſpondence with ſecretary Cecil, 702. is verbally declared by Queen Elizabeth her ſucceſſor, 714. his acceſſion to the Engliſh throne, and hereditary right thereto, v. 1. See *James* I. of England.

——— Prince of Scotland, eldeſt ſon of David, is made a priſoner by the King of England, Henry IV. ii. 291. he becomes King of Scotland by the death of his father, 292. ineffectually ſends orders to his general in France to leave the partizans of the Orleans party, 317. he is reſtored to his liberty, 327. murdered, ib.

Jarnac, battle of, iv. 530.

Jaqueline, Counteſs, heireſs of Holland, her character, ii. 329. is diſguſted with her huſband, the duke of Brabant, ib. enters into a marriage contract with the duke of Glouceſter, 330. the unfortunate event of that meaſure, 331.

Iceni, their Queen, Boadicea, takes arms againſt the Romans, i. 6. is conquered, ib.

Ida, a Saxon prince, conquers Northumberland and other places, i. 18.

Jefferies, Judge, his cruelties, vi. 385. is appointed chancellor, 390. declines in the royal favour, 405. is deſtroyed by a mob, 430.

Jerom of Prague burnt for hereſy by the council of Conſtance, ii. 320.

Jeruſalem, a kingdom erected in favour of Godfrey of Boulogne, ii. 222. it is ſubdued by the Turks, 322. great diſputes ariſe about the title of this nominal kingdom, 340.

Jeſuits, an account of their principles and connexion with the court of Rome, iv. 563. ſome of them executed, 564. a ſevere law enacted againſt them in England, 577. their zeal againſt Queen Elizabeth, 594. tried in the court of King's Bench, v. 154. ——five, their trials, vi. 306.

Jews, their character, i. 332. a maſſacre of them, ib.

v.6

ib. 333. how tyrranized over, 420. another maſſacre of them, ii. 38. how exacted on, 56. grievouſly oppreſſed by Edward I. 63.

Image worſhip, when and how introduced into Britain, i. 43.

Impriſonments, arbitrary, condemned by the houſe of commons, v. 164. prevented for the future by the petition of right. See *Petition* of right.——of members of the houſe of commons, 187. of ditto, 237.

Ina, a Saxon prince, his wiſe laws, i. 155.

Incloſures, miſchief of, iii. 285, 320. inſurrections on account of them, 321. endeavours to redreſs the grievances complained of as occaſioned by them, ib.

Indemnity, general, granted in England, vi. 131. in Scotland, 188. renewed in Scotland, 310.

Independents, their riſe and character, v. 374. their leaders, 376. they exult in the triumph of the army over the parliament, 429. their power in the houſe of commons, 438 their ſtate at the commencement of the commonwealth, vi. 2. they ſubdue the parliament, 45.

——— preachers, their behaviour antecedent to the new model, v. 378. their behaviour at the time of the King's trial, 455.

Indies, Eaſt and Weſt, diſcovered, iii. 65, 66.

Indulgence publiſhed, vi. 154. remonſtrated againſt, 156. its effects, ib. extended to nonconformiſts of all kinds, 211. recalled, 229. adopted in Scotland, 266. renewed in England, 400. ordered to be read in churches, 407.

Indulgences, Papal, the ſale of them brings great profit to the Pope, iii. 119. abuſes committed by thoſe entruſted to ſell them, ib. 120.

Innocent III. Pontiff of Rome, in vain orders the French King to ſtop the progreſs of his arms againſt King John, i. 364. but obtains a truce for him, 367. the Pope's politic conduct on this occaſion conſidered, ib. cauſes cardinal Langton to be choſen archbiſhop of Canterbury, 370. his fineſſe on that occaſion, ib. after ſome fruitleſs meſſages to King John, lays the kingdom under an interdict, 371. the effects of the interdict, 372. the Pope's behaviour to the Emperor Otho, 374. excommunicates King John, ib. offers to the French King the kingdom of England, 376. receives, by his legate, John's ſubmiſſion, 377. and homage for his kingdom, 378. condemns the great charter, and excommunicates the barons, 391. ſuſpends Langton, archbiſhop of Canterbury, 392.

——— IV. Pontiff of Rome, his avaritious adminiſtration, ii. 19. carried to an exceſſive degree, 20. offers the Sicilian crown to Henry III. ib. his grants to that prince, 21. abſolves Henry III. and the Engliſh nation from the oath to obſerve the proviſions of Oxford, 34. and annuls the acts of a national council, ib. diſpatches his legate to England, with orders to excommunicate the rebel barons, 46.

Inſurrections, i. 61, 62, 70, 71, 74, 76. of Engliſh, who maſſacre Danes, 100. of earl Godwin againſt Edward the Confeſſor, 117. ſuppreſſed, 118. of Kentiſhmen againſt William the Conqueror, 171, 172. at Exeter, againſt the Conqueror, 173. in the North, 174. in Devonſhire, 176. in various parts of England, 177. of Norman barons, 189. in Brittany againſt Henry II. 310. of barons againſt John, 385. compromiſed by the grant of the Great Charter, 386. of barons againſt the miniſtry of Henry III. ii. 13, 14. of the earl of Leiceſter and his aſſociates againſt Henry III. 26, to 50. of William Wallace in Scotland, 108, to 116. of Robert Bruce in Scotland, 117, to 126. againſt Edward II. 144, to 146. of diſbanded ſoldiers in France, 224. of Caſtilians againſt Peter of Caſtile, 225, 226. of the common people, headed by Tyler and Straw, 246, 247, 248. of lords againſt the miniſtry, 253, 254. a general inſurrection againſt Richard II. 267, 268. of earls againſt Henry IV. 283, 284. of Welch againſt the ſame prince, 286. of Northumberland, 287, to 291. againſt Henry VI. 366, 367. of the duke of York againſt the ſame prince, 372. of Yorkiſts againſt him, 374, 376, 377, 379, 380, 381. of Henry VI. againſt Edward IV. 388, 389. of the Queen of Henry VI. againſt Edward IV. 390, 391. in Yorkſhire againſt Edward IV. 396, 397. in Lincolnſhire againſt the ſame monarch, 399. of Warwick and Clarence, 402, 403. of Edward IV. againſt Henry VI. reſtored, 406, to 409. of the earl of Richmond againſt Richard III. 437, 438. in Ireland againſt Henry VII. iii. 13, 14. of Lambert Simnel, 16, 17. in the North againſt Henry VII. 25, 26. in the Weſt againſt the ſame prince, 45, to 47, inclusive. of reformers againſt the Romiſh church in Germany, 120. begun againſt Henry VIII. but ſoon ſuppreſſed, 140. in Lincolnſhire againſt Henry VIII. on account of religion, 215. in the North on the ſame account, ib. 216, 217. in various parts againſt Edward VI. 321, to 323. of lady Jane Gray againſt Queen Mary, 348, to 351. Wiat's inſurrection againſt Queen Mary, 362, 363. in Scotland, by the leaders of the reformers againſt the Queen regent, iv. 420, to 427. againſt the Queen of Scots, and Bothwell, her huſband, 482, 483. againſt Queen Elizabeth, 513, 514. of Flemings, in the Low Countries, againſt the duke of Alva, 548, 549. of the Iriſh in Ireland, againſt Queen Elizabeth, 680, to 688, 704, to 706. Eſſex's inſurrection againſt that princeſs, 696, 697, 698. of Reynolds againſt James I. v. 27. quelled, 28. in Bohemia, 69. of Papiſts in Ireland, 287. notice of it received, 294. the care of ſuppreſſing it committed to the houſe of commons, 297. money levied, and men enliſted for that ſervice, ib. men impreſſed for that purpoſe, 317. a ceſſation of arms between King Charles I. and the Iriſh inſurgents, 362. they are ſubdued by Ireton, vi. 35. of Scots againſt

againſt King Charles I. 225. a pacification propoſed, 227. hoſtile meaſures renewed, 230. the King's army is routed, 240. advances again againſt the Scots, 241. a treaty is ſet up at Rippon, ib. the King obliges himſelf to pay them, 242. their arrears are diſcharged by the houſe of commons, 281. and the inſurgents return home, 282. arm againſt the King, 360. receive him at Newark, 410. reſolve to deliver him to the Engliſh parliament, 414. are paid their arrears, ib. retire home, 416. in an inſurrection againſt the parliament of England, enter England under Hamilton, 446. are diſcomfited, ib. of Millenarians. See *Millenarians* —— of royaliſts. See *Royaliſts*. of levellers, vi. 9. ſuppreſſed, 10. of diſbanded ſoldiers in Ireland, vi. 309. of Monmouth in England, 380. quelled, 382. of Argyle in Scotland, 387. an univerſal inſurrection againſt James II. 427.

Intereſt of money, how high in the reign of Henry III. ii. 56. ſettled at ten per cent. in the reign of Henry VIII. iii. 286.

Inquiſition, eſtabliſhed in England by Queen Mary, iii. 381. exceeds in ſeverity, thoſe in other places, 382.

Inverlochy, battle of, v. 394.

Inverneſs, battle of, v. 395.

Joan d'Arcos. See *Orleans*, maid of.

John, fourth ſon of Henry II. his father's kindneſs to him, i. 306. his tranſactions in Ireland, 319. his father's grief, on ſeeing his name among thoſe of the rebels, 325. marries Aviſa, daughter of the earl of Gloceſter, 331. his brother, king Richard I. his extraordinary kindneſs to him, 332. ſummons a council of nobles during his brother's abſence in the holy land, 342. is diſſuaded by Queen Eleanor, from liſtening to the French king's advice, ib. is corrupted by the French king, 347. on the king's return, his poſſeſſions in England are forfeited, 350. his behaviour at Evreux, 351. his pardon, ib. ſucceeds his brother on the Engliſh throne, 356. ſuppreſſes the revolt in favour of his nephew, 357. makes a treaty of peace with the French king, 358. gets his nephew into his own hands, ib. his ſecond marriage occaſions commotions, 359. his weak and faithleſs conduct, 360. makes his nephew a priſoner, 361. murders him, 362. his fiefs in France forfeited, ib. his army is defeated in France, 363. his ſtupidity and indolence, 364. plans his flight from France, 365. his behaviour in England, on his arrival, 366. by the pope's mediation, obtains a truce, 367. influences the canons of Chriſt's church Canterbury, to chuſe John de Gray, biſhop of Norwich, archbiſhop of Canterbury, 368. diſpatches twelve monks to ſupport the election at Rome, 369. the ſucceſs of this embaſſy, 370. his kingdom is laid under an interdict, 371. his behaviour on that occaſion, 372. his behaviour to his barons at that time, 373. is excommunicated, 374. the effects of this ſentence, 375. his ſubjects are abſolved from their oath of allegiance, ib. The French king prepares to ſeize his kingdom, as being granted to him by the pope, 376. he promiſes an abſolute ſubmiſſion to the pope, 377. reſigns his kingdom to God, St. Peter, and St. Paul, and to Pope Innocent and his ſucceſſors, ib. does homage to Pandolf, the pope's legate, for his dominions, 378. his fleet deſtroys all the French ſhips in their harbours, 379. his meeting with Langton and the exiled prelates, 380. his tranſactions in France, immediately ſubſequent to this affair, 381. diſcontents are encouraged, by Langton, among the barons, 382. his anſwer to the barons, in a body, demanding a renewal of Henry I's charter, 382. his kindneſs to the clergy at that time accounted for, ib. the pope's anſwer to the joint application of king and barons, 385. hoſtilities between the king and barons, 386. the great charter is granted, ib. war is renewed with great ſucceſs on the king's part, 392. the barons obtain aſſiſtance from the French king, 393. the misfortunes that befel him in his further conteſts with his ſubjects, 394. his death and character, 395. an account of his children, 396.

John, Don of Auſtria, appointed governor of the Netherlands, iv. 551. is forced to agree to terms of peace with the proteſtants, ib. ſoon breaks the agreement, 552. his ambitious and extenſive views, ib. is cut off by poiſon, 553.

—— king of France. See *France*.

Johnſon, an author, his character, v. 150.

Joſeph, Michael, heads an inſurrection in the weſt, iii. 45. is defeated, and executed, 47.

Joyce, ſeizes the king at Holmbay, v. 420. brings him to the head quarters of the army, ib.

Ireland, ſtate of, before the conqueſt in Henry II's time, i. 299. the ſovereignties then there, 300. it is granted by the pope to Henry II. ib. a war there, between the king of Leinſter and Meath, 301. the former is expelled, ib. the effects of this expulſion, 302. it is ſubdued by Henry II. 303. its ſtate then, ib. palatinates are there erected, 304. its chieftains are enraged, 319. inſurrections there are quelled, by Richard II. in perſon, ii. 258. a revolt there, in the reign of Henry VII. iii. 13. the authority of the Engliſh government eſtabliſhed there by Poynings's law, 41. another ſedition there, ſuppreſſed, 181. it is erected into a kingdom, 249. an invaſion of Spaniards there, repulſed, iv. 560. its ſtate before Tyrone's rebellion, 676. the abſurdity of the Engliſh conſtitutions there, 677. the effect of its animoſities againſt the Engliſh, 678. its uſual revenue, ib. a recapitulation of its hiſtory, 679, 680. Oneale's rebellion there, 681. which ſpreads by means of a victory obtained by the Iriſh, ib. and is encreaſed by Eſſex's ill ſucceſs, 684. a truce is agreed on with the rebels, 685. they overrun more than half the kingdom, 688. Mountjoy's ſucceſs againſt them, ib. he defeats the Iriſh and Spaniards, 705. the rebellion is wholly ſuppreſſed,

712. and Tyrone ſurrenders himſelf to Mountjoy, ib. ſtate of, under James I. v. 40. an inſurrection there, 287. the inſurgents attempt to ſurpriſe Dublin, 289. maſſacre the proteſtants, 290. pretend authority from the king and queen, 293. ſtate of, during the civil war, 360. continues to obey Ormond, 361. a ceſſation of arms between the king and the inſurgents, 362. forces from it, land to aid the king, 363. ſome of them deſert, ib. the reſt are diſſipated by Fairfax, 367. ſtate of, at the demiſe of Charles I. vi. 4. Dublin, and the garriſons held by Ormond, are delivered to the parliament's army, 6. and Ormond leaves Ireland, ib. returns, and levies an army there, 7. his army is routed by Jones, who commands for the parliament, 11. the garriſons revolt to Cromwell, 12. who breaks the courage of the Iriſh, and almoſt ſubdues the iſland, 23. it is wholly ſubdued by Ireton, 35. its civil government is truſted with commiſſioners, 36. Cromwell's adminiſtration there, 76. State of, at the reſtoration, 114. in the beginning of Charles II's reign, 191. an inſurrection there, ſuppreſſed, 192. the effects of the act prohibiting the importation of Iriſh cattle, 193. ſtate of, in 1681, 338. Ormond's adminiſtration there, 339. attacked in parliament, 340. a plot of papiſts in Ireland, pretended in England, 341. ſtate of, in 1687, 402. it is ſubjected to the catholics there, ib. their adminiſtration in Ireland, 403.

Ireland, (a man ſo called) is tried, vi. 293. condemned, 294.

Ireton, colonel, his behaviour at Naſeby, v. 399. his character, 435. his ſpeech on the vote of non-addreſs, 436. is made commander in chief in Ireland, vi. 23. ſubdues it, 35. dies there, ib.

Iſabella, daughter of the count of Angouleſme, married to John, king of England, i. 358. commotions are occaſioned by this marriage, 359. her children by the king, 396. after his death, is married to the count de la Marche, to whom ſhe was formerly betrothed, ii. 15.

——— princeſs of France, married to Edward II. ii. 128. her character, ib. ſhe is denied a lodging for one night, by lord Bedleſmere, a mutinous baron, 139. goes to Paris, to adjuſt ſome differences between her huſband, and Charles the Fair of France, 142. her fineſſe to avoid the king's journey to Paris, ib. where ſhe conſpires with the exiled barons againſt the king, in favour of her ſon, 143. whom ſhe affiances to Philippa, daughter of the earl of Holland, 144. and raiſes an army to invade her huſband's dominions, ib. the ſucceſs of her invaſion, 145. ſhe ſummons a parliament in the king's name, now a priſoner, ib. loſes the public eſteem, 146. becomes the object of univerſal hatred, 159. is confined, and her revenue reduced, 162.

——— princeſs of France, is affianced to Richard II. ii. 258. reſtored to the French king, 285.

Iſabella, Queen of Caſtile, and wife of Ferdinand, king of Arragon, dies, iii. 56. her daughter, and heireſs, of this marriage, is married to the arch-duke Philip, ib.

Italy, its defenceleſs ſtate, iii. 41. is invaded, and ravaged by the French, ib. ſtate of, at the acceſſion of Henry VIII. 73. the French are expelled, 133. they invade it again, 135.

Judges, how they held their offices in Queen Elizabeth's reign, iv. 720.

Julius II. pope, his character, iii. 74. his attempts againſt the Venetians, 75. and againſt the French, 77. his policy, 78. his joy on the defeat of the French, 82. his death, ib.

——— III. his joy, on receiving the ſubmiſſion of England, iii. 370.

Juries, their riſe, i. 65.

Jury, grand, of Middleſex, abruptly diſmiſſed, and why, by the chief juſtice of the king's bench, v. 317. proceedings thereon, in the houſe of commons, 328.

Juſtice, ſtopt by ſpecial warrants, by Edward III. ii. 235.

Juſtices of the peace, their rapine complained of, iv. 720.

Juſticiary, chief, that office aboliſhed in England, ii. 122.

Juſtinian, emperor, his pandects found, ii. 441. utility of, in Europe, 442.

Juxon, doctor, made biſhop of London, v. 203. high treaſurer, ib. reſigns the treaſurer's ſtaff, 263. attends the king to the ſcaffold, 456. is examined by the council of general officers, on the import of the king's laſt word, 457.

K.

KENDRID, king of Mercia, his valour, i. 34. his death, ib.

Kenrick, a Saxon chieftain, beats the Britains in battle, i. 17. dies, ib.

Kent, a kingdom eſtabliſhed in Britain, i. 20. chriſtianity there introduced, 21. it is united with Weſſex, 28.

——— earl of, a prince of the blood, enters into a conſpiracy with the queen, againſt the king, ii. 144. purſues the king to Briſtol, 145. is made one of the lords of the regency of Edward III. 156. unites in councils with Lancaſter and Norfolk, 159. is beheaded, in conſequence of a ſentence paſt on him in parliament, 160. his ſon is created duke of Surry, 263. degraded, 274. conſpires againſt Henry IV. 283. is ſummarily beheaded, 284.

——— Joan of, burnt for hereſy, iii. 318.

——— maid of, her impoſture, iii. 181. gains great credit, 190. is diſcovered, and ſhe is puniſhed, 191.

Ker, a tanner, heads an inſurrection in Norfolk, iii. 322.

322. his arbitrary proceedings, 323. is defeated, taken, and hanged, ib.
Kildare, deputy of Ireland, is called to anſwer for his conduct, iii. 181. is executed, with his five uncles, ib. his ſon is forced to ſurrender, and puniſhed, ib.
Kilſyth, battle of, v. 403.
King, his courts, how conſtituted, i. 402. his uſual ſtile ſettled by parliament, iii. 262. his power and revenues. See *Anglo-Norman government*.
Kings, Norman, the means uſed to preſerve their independency, i. 405. their power, 411. their protection, how obtained, 418. the authority of their edicts, 421.
King's Bench, court of, exacts, bonds for members of parliament, for not attending, i. 373. ſome ſubmit and pay the fines ſet on them by the court, ib. others traverſe, ib. judgment of, in the caſe of perſons impriſoned by the king and council, v. 155. in that of members of parliament, 187. one of the judges of, ſeized on the bench, 250. its chief juſtice abruptly diſmiſſes a grand jury, vi. 317. proceedings thereon, in the houſe of commons, 328.
Kirk, colonel, his cruelties, v. 384.
Kirkaldy, of Grange, holds the caſtle of Edinburgh for Queen Mary, iv. 540. is forced to ſurrender to a party of Engliſh, 541. is tried, and executed, ib.
Knight, a title, whence imported, and how uſeful, i. 423.
——— four, ordered to be choſen out of each county, in order to repreſent in parliament, the ſtate of their reſpective counties, ii. 29. they remonſtrate againſt the ſlow proceedings of the twenty-four barons, 31. and claim the interpoſal of Edward, prince of Wales, 32. two out of each county ordered to be ſummoned to parliament, 46.
——— thirty, a tournament of, ii. 206. the victors prize, ib.
——— Templars, tortured in France, ii. 150. ſeveral of them cruelly executed, 151. oppreſſed all over Europe, ib.
Knight's fees, what, and how many make a barony, i. 407. how many in England in the time of the conqueror, ii. 85. and how leſſened, ib.
Knox, John, a famous reformer, iii. 299. approves of the aſſaſſination of cardinal Beaton, ib. arrives in Scotland from Geneva, iv. 420. inflames the people againſt popery, ib. they are entirely guided by him, 423. his furious zeal, and inſolence to Queen Mary, 436, 437. is called to anſwer the council for his inſolence, and acquitted, 439.

L.

LABOUR, its price in vain attempted to be reduced by the parliament, ii. 239.
Laity are incenſed againſt the uſurpations of Rome, ii. 237. their diſpoſition then how conformable to that of thoſe in the reign of Edward III. ib.
Lambert, his diſpute with Henry VIII. and ſeveral biſhops, concerning the real preſence, iii. 227, 228. is condemned and burnt, with ſeveral circumſtances of cruelty, 229.
——— Colonel, is diſappointed of the lieutenancy of Ireland, vi. 8. his commiſſion is revoked by the Protector, 82. he appears againſt Richard Cromwel, 95. ſuppreſſes an inſurrection againſt the rump, 100. becomes Monk's rival, 104. is confined in the Tower, by the rump, reſtored, 107. eſcapes out of the Tower, 115. is retaken, ib. his trial, 150. condemnation, 152. is reprieved, ib.
Lancaſter, duke of, his ſeaſonable advice to Edward III. ii. 220. by his marriage with a princeſs of Caſtile, becomes heir of that title, 227. the adminiſtration of the kingdom of England is committed to him, 230. his authority during the minority of Richard II. 241. his character, 242. the effect of his pretenſions to the crown of Caſtile, 243. conducts an army into Brittany, 244. is diſappointed in his enterprize on the crown of Caſtile, 249. returns from Spain, 257. obtains the duchy of Guienne, ib. renounces that duchy, 258. differs with his brothers, ib. approves of the confinement of his ſon, 261. dies, 266.
——— ſon of the former Henry. See *Hereford*.
——— Earl, his character, ii. 128. becomes head of a confederacy of barons againſt Gavaſton, ib. is appointed hereditary ſteward of England, 129. raiſes an army, 131. cauſes Gavaſton's head to be ſtruck off, 132. makes an accommodation with the King, ib. his party new models the miniſtry, 136. is ſuſpected of holding a ſecret correſpondence with the Scots invaders, 137. his adherents again take arms, 138. in arms, obtain of the parliament to baniſh the Spenſers, 139. and get a pardon for their violences, ib. he is taken in arms by the King's party, 140. and beheaded, 141. his character, ib.
——— Earl, brother and heir of the former, enters into a conſpiracy with the Queen againſt Edward II. ii. 144. the King is put into his cuſtody, 146. taken out of his hands, 147. his attainder is taken off, 156. he is appointed guardian of young Edward, ib.
Landois, Peter, a man of low ſtation, becomes favourite of Francis duke of Brittany, iii. 20. the effect of this meaſure among his nobles, ib.
Lands, how divided among the Anglo-Saxons, i. 160. their value, 161.
Landſdown, battle of, v. 403.
Lanfranca, a Milaneſe monk, promoted to the ſee of Canterbury, i. 183. his character, ib. the earl of Northumberland diſcovers to him in confeſſion a conſpiracy againſt William the Conqueror, 188. which he adviſes him to reveal to the King, ib. crowns William Rufus, 203. dies, 204.

v.6

Langhorne's trial, vi. 306.
Langſide, battle of, iv. 488.
Langton, Cardinal, is by the Pope's orders appointed archbiſhop, i. 370. his adherents are treated with ſeverity by the King, 372. his conference with the King, 375. his behaviour to that prince, on his being reconciled to Rome, 380. the final iſſue of that affair, 381. adviſes the diſcontented barons to inſiſt on a renewal of Henry I's charter, 382. inſtigates them to make this demand in a body, 383, on his refuſal to publiſh the Pope's ſentence of excommunication againſt the diſcontented barons, is cited to Rome, and ſuſpended, 392.
Latimer, Biſhop, impriſoned ſoon after Queen Mary's acceſſion, iii. 354. is carried to Oxford to diſpute about tranſubſtantiation, 360. burnt there for hereſy, in the ſame fire with the biſhop of London, 379.
——— Lord, the firſt peer impeached in England, ii. 250.
Laud, biſhop of London, his character, v. 192. encourages innovations, 193. is made archbiſhop of Canterbury, 202. aboliſhes lectures, 207. is impeached, 248. an apology for him, 389. is executed by an ordinance of the long parliament, 388.
Lauder taken and fortified by the Engliſh, iii. 308.
Lauderdale, Duke, his intereſt with King Charles II. vi. 139. his religious ſentiments, 140. his character, 201. his removal from the King's councils and preſence are addreſſed for, 261. his ſeverities in Scotland, 267. are oppoſed by duke Hamilton, 268. his adminiſtration and private deportment, 269. the effects of his private and public conduct, 271. he declines in the royal favour, 310.
Laurentius, a Chriſtian biſhop, reclaims Eadbald, King of Kent, i. 27.
Law, Common, its ſuppoſed foundation, i. 66. ſtate of, among the Anglo-Saxons, 143. ſtate of, at the death of Richard II. with reſpect to repreſentation in ſucceſſion, 356.
——— civil, how improved, ii. 441. why not received in England, 442.
——— feudal, introduced into England, i. 180. its rules with reſpect to ſucceſſion, 247. origin of, 397. its progreſs, 399.
——— martial, ſtate of, in Queen Elizabeth's reign, iv. 718.
——— Salian, ii. 168.
——— Saxon, ii. 442. its abſurdities, ib.
League, catholic, formed in France, iv. 546. revived, 584. the duke of Mayenne becomes head of it, it is entirely aboliſhed, 661.
——— ſolemn, and covenant. See *Covenant*, Scots.
——— triple, vi. 185.
Learning, how ſecured, during the ignorant ages, ii. 440. how extinguiſhed, and when revived in England, 443. great improvements therein, iii. 67. ſtate of, in the reign of James I. v. 14. at the time of his death, 128. at the reſtoration of king Charles II. vi. 126. from the reſtoration, to the revolution, 449.
Lead, ſtaple of, fixed, ii. 239.
Leather, a duty granted on it for the firſt time, ii. 176. ſtaple of, fixed, 239. the duties on it, granted to the king for life, 310.
Legatine Court, erected by cardinal Wolſey, iii. 107. its extenſive power, ib. and great tyranny, 108.
Legates a Latere, a deſcription of their power and authority, i. 244.
Leiceſter, earl of, his behaviour at a conference between the kings of England and France, i. 311. its effects, ib. he is made a priſoner, 312.
——— another, defends Rouen againſt the French king, i. 347.
——— another, his hiſtory, and petulant behaviour to king Henry III. ii. 26. his turbulent complaints of breaches of the great charter, 27. his ſpeech in a ſecret meeting of barons, ib. is made preſident of the twenty-four barons, choſen in parliament to reform the ſtate, 28. retires to France, 32. proteſts againſt the ceſſion of Normandy, 33. joins in a conſpiracy of barons againſt the king, 36. returns ſecretly to England, 37. countenances an open rebellion, 38. cauſes the king to ſubmit to ignominious terms of peace, 39. heads the rebel barons, when renewing the war, after the French king's award, 41. leads on the army of the rebel barons, at the battle of Lewes, 42. makes the king and royal family priſoners in the field of battle, 43. his tyranny over the whole kingdom, 44. ſummons a parliament of rebel barons, 45. another ſuch compoſed of two knights of each ſhire, and two deputies from each burrough, ib. the tyrannical proceedings of this aſſembly, 47. the ignominious terms on which he releaſes prince Edward, 48. commands in a battle, at Eveſham, againſt the prince, 49. in which he is ſlain, together with his eldeſt ſon, 50. his character, ib. his widow and children are baniſhed the kingdom, 52. their manners abroad, ib.
——— propoſed as a huſband to Queen Mary, by Queen Elizabeth, iv. 457, 458. his character, 458. declines the propoſal, and aſpires to marry Queen Elizabeth, ib. is appointed one of the commiſſioners to enquire into Queen Mary's conduct, 495. is ſent into Holland, in order to aſſiſt the ſtates, 585. is reprimanded by Queen Elizabeth, for accepting the title of governor and captain-general of the United Provinces, ib. the account of his expedition, 589. he returns to England, 590. a breach between him and the Hollanders, 628. he reſigns his authority in Holland, ib. is reſtored to the Queen's favour, 629. dies, 651. his magnificence, 735.
Leinſter, king of, expelled, i. 301. his negotiations abroad, ib. his death, 302.
Leipſic, battle of, v. 190.

Leith, fortified by the French, iii. 310. iv. 424. relieved by the Engliſh and Scots army, 427.
Leo III. pope, crowns Alfred, i. 53.
—— X. his character, iii. 82. has recourſe to the ſale of indulgences, to repair his exhauſted treaſures, 119. his death, 123.
Leofric, duke of Mercia, his family quarrels with Harold, ſon of earl Godwin, i. 120.
Leoffwin, brother of Harold, attends him in the battle with the Norman conqueror, i. 138. is there ſlain, 139.
Leopold, duke of Auſtria. See *Auſtria*.
Lennox, earl of, ſent from France into Scotland, to ſupport cardinal Beaton, iii. 257. becomes the head of the reformers, and oppoſes the cardinal, 262. raiſes an army, but is forced to ſubmit to him, ib. flies into England, and is careſſed by Henry VIII. 264. recalled into Scotland, with his ſon lord Darnly, iv. 460. the reſentment of Queen Elizabeth, at his ſon's marriage negotiation, how diſplayed, ib. implores of Queen Mary, juſtice againſt the murderers of his ſon, late her huſband, 474. names ſeveral ſuſpected accomplices, ib. 475. his requeſt, relative to a delay of the trial, is denied, 474. a proteſt is entered in his name againſt the trial, ib. claims the regency of the young prince, 485. accuſes Queen Mary of the murder of her huſband, before the Engliſh commiſſioners at Hampton-court, 496. is choſen lieutenant, and regent of the kingdom, on Murray's death, 518. receives inſtructions from Sir William Cecil, 519. is ſeized, and put to death by Queen Mary's party, 540.
—— earl of, his behaviour to the king of Scotland, iv. 559. is diſcountenanced by Queen Elizabeth, ib. retires to France, 571. dies there, ib.
Lenthal, choſen ſpeaker of the houſe of commons, of the long parliament, v. 245. repairs to the army at Hounſlow-heath, with the badges of his office, 428. is conducted to Weſtminſter, in triumph, by the army, 429. his anſwer to the officers, deſiring him to call the rump to reaſſume their ſeats, vi. 97. is ſtopt, and conducted home, by Lambert, when going to the houſe, 100. ſummons the expelled rump, to reſume their power once more, 107.
Leſly, Norman, his bravery in battle againſt the Engliſh, iii. 267. heads the aſſaſſins of cardinal Beaton, 298.
—— biſhop of Roſs, one of Queen Mary's commiſſioners, appointed to confer with thoſe of Queen Elizabeth, iv. 492. refuſes to anſwer Murray's charge againſt her, 496. is examined, and confronted with Norfolk, before the council, 513. complains to the Engliſh council, of unfair dealings, to the prejudice of Queen Mary, 520.
—— general of the Scots covenanters, created earl Leven, v. 284.
—— another, appointed general of the Scots covenanted army in Scotland, vi. 24. is beaten at Dunbar, 25. marches ſouthwards, 28. is routed at Worceſter, 29.
Levellers. See *Agitators*.
Levingſtone, lord, one of Queen Mary's commiſſioners, appointed to confer with thoſe of Queen Elizabeth, iv. 492.
Lewellyn, prince of Wales, is repulſed by prince Edward, ii. 37. his character, 64. after being pardoned, he rebels again, 65. ſubmits, 66. takes arms again, ib. his dominions, after a great ſlaughter of his partizans, are annexed to the Engliſh crown, 67.
Lewes, battle of, ii. 42. the victory is gained by the barons, 43.
Lewis, eldeſt ſon of Philip the French king, is ſent into England, at the head of a great army, i. 393. See *France*.
—— king of France, his attempts againſt the Venetians, iii. 75. and againſt the pope, 77. loſes his conqueſts in Italy, 82. his marriage and death, 95. See *France*.
—— duke of Orleans. See *Orleans*.
—— emperor of Germany. See *Germany*.
Liberty, civil, how eſtabliſhed, ii. 445.
Libraries, many plundered and deſtroyed by the reformers, iii. 332.
Lidington. See *Maitland*.
Lilla, an officer of king Edwin's guards, his extraordinary fidelity, i. 30.
Lilburn, puniſhed in the ſtar-chamber, for a ſeditious libel, v. 210. the ſentence is reverſed, and damages decreed to him, 253. thrown again into priſon, vi. 10. is acquitted by a jury, 57.
Limoges. See *Vidomar*.
Lincoln, battle of, i. 255. where king Stephen is taken priſoner, ib. beſieged by the protector, ii. 5. taken and pillaged, ib.
—— biſhop of, is fined in the ſtar-chamber, v. 209.
—— earl of, forms a deſign againſt Henry VII. iii. 15. goes to conſult with his friends in Germany, ib. goes with a body of troops to Ireland, and invades England, 16. is killed at the battle of Stoke, 17.
Lincoln's Inn, a puritan there, writes againſt the French marriage in Queen Elizabeth's reign, iv. 567. his puniſhment, and extraordinary loyalty, 568.
Lindſey, lord, joins in the plot to murder David Rizzio, iv. 467. ſent by the aſſociated lords, to Queen Mary, with three inſtruments for her to ſign in the caſtle of Lochleven, 485.
Liſle, lady, her trial, vi. 385.
Litany, new, uſed in Engliſh, by order of Henry VIII. iii. 271. ordered to be read in Engliſh, by Queen Elizabeth, iv. 407.
Loans, or benevolences, firſt exacted, ii. 235. ſtate of, in Queen Elizabeth's reign, iv. 721. See *Benevolences*, or *Loans*.
Lochleven Caſtle, Queen Mary ſent a priſoner to, iv. 483.

v.6

483. ſhe eſcapes from thence, 487. the earl of Northumberland confined there, 515.

Lodington, ſecretary, favours Queen Mary at the conference with the Engliſh commiſſioners, iv. 495. his propoſal to the duke of Norfolk, concerning her, ib.

Lollards, are headed in England by Wickliffe, ii. 277. ſcreened by the duke of Lancaſter, 278. encreaſe in England, 279. one of them is ordered to be burnt, 285. are favoured by the houſe of commons, 295. another Lollard burnt, 296. a conſpiracy of Lollards, headed by lord Cobham, 300. attempts to ſeize the king, ſevere laws are enacted againſt them, 302.

London, a Roman colony, is reduced to aſhes, i. 6. and the inhabitants put to the ſword, ib. it is rebuilt, 59. and a regular militia eſtabliſhed there, ib. the Danes take up their winter quarters there, 54. a meeting of the eſtates, appointed there, twice a year, 56. an eccleſiaſtical ſynod there, 190. its proceedings, ib. a charter granted to it, 246. biſhop of, ſuſpended by the pope, 292. complains to the king at Baieux, 293. its conſequences, 294. ſtate of, in the reign of Richard I. 355. another charter granted to it, 408. its import, 409. an extraordinary commotion between the Londoners and the inhabitants of Weſtminſter, ii. 9. great diſorders there, 38. a plague there, 207. charter of, ſeized by Richard II. 258. reſtored, 259. an inſurrection there, againſt the duke of Lancaſter, 277. it is appeaſed by the biſhop of London, 278. the joyful reception of Henry VII. there, iii. 5. ſweating ſickneſs there, 6. biſhop of, burnt for hereſy, 379. alacrity of, to oppoſe the invincible Armada, iv. 632. an account of the ſtrangers in it, in Queen Elizabeth's reign, 734. another plague there, v. 9. ſtate of, in king James I. time, 122. plague there, 139. petitions the king to make peace with the Scots, 240. petitions the parliament for an alteration in church government, 257. ſtate of, at the commencement of the civil war, 329. declares for the parliament, ib. militia, joins the parliament's army, 338. occaſions a breach between the parliament and army, 428. ſtate of, under the rump, reſtored, vi. 106. rebels againſt the rump, 110. another plague there, 167. a great fire there, 172. repaired, ib. diſputes there, about the nomination of ſheriffs, 348. a quo warranto is iſſued againſt it, 349. judgment entered againſt its charter, 351. which is reſtored on hard conditions, ib. its biſhop is ſuſpended, 399.

Longchamp, biſhop of Ely. See *Durham*.

Longueville, a French duke, priſoner in England, propoſes to Henry VIII. the marriage of the princeſs Mary to Lewis, King of France, iii. 94, 95. which is approved of, and takes effect, 95.

Lords, Houſe of, their proceedings with reſpect to ſettling the plan of government during the minority of Richard II. ii. 242, 243. proceedings concerning earl Suffolk, impeached at their bar by the houſe of commons, 250. who is condemned to loſe his office, 252. condemn Sir Nicholas Brembre, and Sir Robert Treſilian, impeached by the houſe of commons, 254. condemn the other judges, and lord Beauchamp of Holt, Sir James Berners, Sir John Saliſbury, and Sir Simon Burley, 255. condemn the archbiſhop of Canterbury, and the earls of Arundel and Warwick, 262. great animoſities in the houſe of peers, 283. they ratify a ſentence againſt a Lollard, 285. reinſtate Henry VI. in his ſovereign authority, 375. their ſentence between Henry VI. and the duke of Lancaſter, 378. condemn to death the duke of Clarence, brother of Edward IV. 417. approve of a bill for moderating the liberty of diſpoſing of land in truſt, iii. 172. which never paſſed into a law, ib. jury of, try Queen Anne Boleyn, and others, 207. a committee choſen to frame articles of religion, 230. a bill renewing rigorous ſtatutes of treaſon formerly abrogated, 338. how altered before it paſſed into a law, 339. a money-bill introduced into this houſe, ib. its fate and effect, ib. refuſe a petition of the houſe of commons, relative to the power of ordination, iv. 579. reject a bill againſt purveyancing, 641. engage the commons, at a conference, to encreaſe their grant of a ſupply, 657. interpoſe for earl Briſtol, not called to the houſe of peers, v. 145. and for Arundel, ſent to the Tower, 148. frame a petition of right, 167. paſs that ſent up by the commons, 172. reject that prohibiting clergymen to hold civil offices, 258. receive an impeachment from the attorney general againſt lord Kimbolton and five members of the houſe of commons, 309. conſent to the ordinance about the militia, 322. and to war againſt the King, 326. the houſe divides, ib. and the majority go to the King at York, ib. the reſidue, at Weſtminſter, take the ſolemn league and covenant, 360. aſſent to put up preſbytery all over England, 408. temporize with the army, 425. their proceedings fluctuating, 429. ſend propoſitions to the King, 436. refuſe their aſſent to the vote, declaring the King guilty of high-treaſon, 451. are voted uſeleſs by the houſe of commons, ib. aſſume their antient authority, vi. 116. agree with the houſe of commons about reſtoring the King, 117. remonſtrate againſt the indulgence, 156. receive a letter from the earl of Clarendon, 179. which they tranſmit to the houſe of commons. 180. amend a money-bill, 206. adviſe the King to recall the indulgence, 229. paſs a bill for paſſive obedience, 240. diſpute with the houſe of commons about juriſdiction, 244. agree with that houſe in their votes about the popiſh plot, 386. refuſe to commit the earl of Danby upon his being impeached, 292. and afterwards commit him to the Tower, 298. renew their vote about the popiſh plot, &c. 299. reject the excluſion bill, 324. condemn Stafford, 326. paſs the bill for eaſe of proteſtant diſſenters, 330. refuſe to receive Fitz-Harris's impeachment, 334. their votes about Monmouth's invaſion,

invaſion, 380. vote a reverſal of Stafford's attainder, ib. meet in the convention, 435. have a free conference with the houſe of commons, 437. agree with them in their vote about the vacancy of the throne, 439. and to ſettle the crown on the prince and princeſs of Orange, 440.

Lorn, Lord, gets a gift of his father's forfeiture, vi. 141. is condemned to die, 187. is pardoned, ib. created earl of Argyle, 342. tried again for high-treaſon, ib. condemned, 344. eſcapes to Holland, ib. invades Scotland in the reign of James II. 388. is retaken, and executed, ib.

Lothaire, elder brother of Egbert, depoſes Edric, his nephew, and ſon of Egbert, i. 27. is afterwards ſlain in battle by the depoſed prince, ib.

Loudon, Lord, his letter is intercepted, v. 230. its effects, 231. he is created an earl, 284.

Louis, King of France. See *France*.

Lovel, Viſcount, raiſes an inſurrection againſt Henry VII. iii. 10. ſoon abandons it, and eſcapes into Flanders, 11. is ſuppoſed to have fallen in the battle of Stoke, 17.

Louvaine, Cardinal, uncle of Mary, Queen of Scots, diſſuades her from being reconciled to the reforming lords of Scotland, iv. 464. joins in a confederacy to deſtroy the proteſtants, 465.

Low-Countries, ſtate of, in the reign of Henry VIII. iii. 19. See *Flanders*, *Flemings*, and *United Provinces*.

Ludovico, duke of Milan, joins in a league with the Emperor and others againſt France, i. 42. the effect of this confederacy, ib. his dominions are ſubdued by the French, 53. See *Milan*.

Ludlow, Colonel, ſucceeds Ireton in the chief command of Ireland, vi. 36. finiſhes the conqueſt of that kingdom, ib. is ſucceeded by Fleetwood, 76.

Luther, Martin, declaims againſt indulgencies, and ſeveral errors of the church of Rome, iii. 120. is protected by the elector of Saxony, ib. anſwers a book wrote againſt him by Henry VIII. 121. his doctrines ſpread all over Europe, and why, ib. treats Henry indecently, and afterwards apologizes for it, 185. many of his diſciples ſettle in England, 333.

Lutzen, battle of, v. 191.

Luxenburgh, Duke, breaks in upon the prince of Orange's intrenchments, vi. 227. beats him at St. Omers, 253. but is worſted at St. Denis, 262.

Luxury, ſtate of, in the reign of Edward III. ii. 239.

M.

MACBETH, a powerful nobleman, murders Duncan, King of Scotland, i. 120. uſurps the crown, 121. is ſlain, ib.

Macgill, Sir James, appointed one of the commiſſioners to manage a treaty with Queen Elizabeth, concerning Queen Mary, iv. 519.

Mackrill, Dr. heads an inſurrection againſt Henry VIII. iii. 215. is abandoned by the inſurgents, taken, and executed, ib.

Madrid, treaty of, between the Emperor and the French King, iii. 143.

Maeſtricht taken by the French King, vi. 233.

Magdalen College, its caſe, vi. 405. maſter and fellows are expelled, 406.

Magna Charta. See *Charter*, Great.

Magnus, King of Norway, his attempt on England is repulſed, i. 229.

Mahomet I. the firſt tranſactions of that prophet, and his followers, i. 209.

Maine, a rebellion there, i. 186. it is quelled, 187.

Majors General, their power deſcribed, vi. 61. abridged, 78.

Maitland, of Lethington, ſent by the congregation to ſolicit aſſiſtance from Queen Elizabeth, iv. 425. is ſecretary of ſtate, and confident of Queen Mary, when ſhe arrived in France, 434. again ſent to ſolicit Queen Elizabeth's friendſhip, 440.

Malcolm, king of Scotland, obtains a gift of Cumberland, i. 75. his homage for it, to the crown of England, 76. See *Scotland*.

Malta, knights of, their order is diſſolved, and revenues ſeized, by Henry VIII. iii. 238.

Mancheſter, earl, ſpeaker of the houſe of peers, and a general of the parliament's army, is ſeconded in military affairs by Cromwell, 368. his character, 376. his diſpute with Cromwell, ib. 377. reſigns his command in the army, 380. meets the army at Hounſlow-heath, with the enſigns of his office, as ſpeaker of the houſe of peers, 428. is by them conducted to Weſtminſter, 429. becomes zealous for the reſtoration, vi. 114.

Manners, ſtate of, in the thirteenth century, i. 423. in the reign of Edward II. ii. 153. in Queen Elizabeth's reign, iv. 727. between the reſtoration and revolution, vi. 447.

Mansfeldt, count, his expedition, v. 105.

Manufactures, ſtate of, in Queen Elizabeth's reign, iv. 734. their ſtate in the reign of James I. v. 123.

Manwaring, Doctor, impeached, v. 173. his ſentence, 174. its conſequences, ib.

March, count, is diſobliged by king John, i. 379. rebels againſt him, 359. is aided by the French king, 360. made a priſoner, 361.

——— earl, made a priſoner in Wales, ii. 286. the conſpirators in his favour are puniſhed, 306. is forgiven, 317. though having a better right to the crown than Henry V. ib. 318.

Margaret, maid of Norway, acknowleged Queen of Scotland, ii. 69. See *Scotland*.

——— of Anjou, princeſs, married to Henry VI. ii. 354. ſhe connects herſelf with Wincheſter's party, 355. ſucceeds to Suffolk's power in the miniſtry, 366. appears to be imperious, 370. her party, unable to reſiſt the duke of York's, conſents to his being created regent, 373. wreſt the power out of his hands, 375. are ſeemingly reconciled to the Yorkiſts, 376.

376. the Queen's character, 379. ſhe collects an army on behalf of her huſband, ib. which defeats the Yorkiſts, 380. but is routed at Touton, 387. ſhe flies with her huſband into Scotland, ib. ſolicits aſſiſtance at the court of France, 390. is routed at Hexham, and, together with her ſon, protected by robbers, 391. eſcapes to Flanders, ib. returns to England, after Warwick's defeat, 405. her army is defeated at Tewkſbury, 408. ſhe is made a priſoner, and her ſon ſlain, 409. her death and character, 414.

Margaret, princeſs of England, eldeſt daughter of king Henry VII. is married to James IV. of Scotland, iii. 54. is created regent during the infancy of her ſon, 93. married to the earl of Angus, 99. deprived of the regency, ib. goes with the young king into England, 100. procures a divorce from Angus, and marries another nobleman, 182. who violently oppoſes the Douglaſſes, ib.

Marignan, battle of, iii. 102.

Marlbridge, ſtatutes of, ii. 55.

Marre, earl, choſen regent of Scotland, on the death of the earl of Lennox, iv. 540. is forced to conclude a truce with the Queen's party, and dies of grief for the diſtracted ſtate of his country, ib.

Marſham, Sir George, an anecdote of, v. 205.

Marſton Moor, battle of, v. 370.

Martin II. pope of Rome, ſummons a general council at Placentia, i. 210. another at Auvergne, ib. the occaſional uſe he made of the armies aſſembled for cruſades, 212.

——— V. acknowleged pope, by almoſt all the kingdoms of Europe, ii. 320.

Martyr, Peter, obtains leave to depart from England, on the acceſſion of Queen Mary III. 355. is generouſly treated by biſhop Gardiner, ib. the indignity done to his wife's corps, ib.

Martyrs, in Queen Mary's time, their numbers and conſtancy, iii. 380. effects thereof, ib. great numbers of, in England, and other countries, 382, 383.

Mary, daughter of Henry VIII. and Queen Catharine, ſcruples concerning her legitimacy, iii. 150. is hardly treated by her father, 209. declared illegitimate, 210. reſtored by the parliament to her right of ſucceſſion, 262. her remarkable obſtinacy in the catholic religion, 319, 332. her chaplains impriſonment, 332. the council argue with her, ib. her great firmneſs in oppoſition, 333. deſigns to eſcape to the Emperor, but is prevented, ib. her right of ſucceſſion ſet aſide, in favour of Lady Jane Gray, 344. her title to the crown, 347, 348. on hearing of king Edward's death, writes to the council to proclaim her in London, 348. many reſort to her, and declare for her, 350. is proclaimed in London, and generally acknowleged, 351. arrives at the Tower, and affects popularity, 352, 353. her attachment to the catholic religion, 353. impriſons many reformed biſhops, &c. 354. her legitimacy confirmed by parliament, 356. deliberates concerning her marriage, 357. the cauſe of her animoſity againſt her ſiſter Elizabeth, ib. ſolicits the pope for a national reconciliation to the holy ſee, 358. is married to the arch-duke Philip, 361. the articles of the marriage contract, ib. the nation is generally diſſatisfied with it, ib. 362. becomes extremely odious, by her tyrannical proceedings, 366. aims at a power to diſpoſe of the crown, 367. is thwarted in this by the parliament, ib. her great impatience for her huſband's arrival, 368. and exceſſive fondneſs after he came, 369. expoſes herſelf greatly, with reſpect to her pregnancy, 372. the effects of her barbarous cruelty, 380. grants a commiſſion to extirpate hereſy, ib. ſends an embaſſy to the pope, ſoliciting the reconciliation of the holy ſee, 383. reſolves to reſtore the church lands in the hands of the crown, 384. is deeply affected by her huſband's indifference and neglect of her, ib. 385. her tyrannical and avaritious extortions, ib. is unable to promote the war with France, ſolicited by her huſband, 388, 389. by an artifice, obtains of the council to agree to a war with France, 391. violent extortions to ſupport it, ib. 392. ſends an army to Flanders, 392. commits ſeveral perſons of diſtinction to the Tower, ib. murmurs againſt her, on account of the loſs of Calais, 395. gets freſh ſupplies from the parliament, 397, 398. ſends a fleet and army againſt France, 399. her death and character, 401.

Mary, Queen of Scots, her birth, iii. 254. propoſals to marry her to the heir of the crown of England, 255. ſeveral arguments to enforce this, 300, 301. is ſent to France, 309. is married to the Dauphin, 396. ſigns three remarkable papers on that occaſion, 397. the cauſe of diſguſts between her and Queen Elizabeth, 415. aſſumes the arms and title of Queen of England, ib. refuſes to ratify the treaty of Edinburgh, 429. on the death of her huſband, King of France, lays aſide the arms of England, 431. but refuſes to renounce her title to the crown of England, ib. is denied a paſſage thro' England, in her way to Scotland, 432. her ſpeech to the Engliſh ambaſſador on that occaſion, ib. 433. eſcapes from the Engliſh fleet, and arrives in Scotland, in company with many French courtiers, 433. her ſorrow on leaving France, ib. is received in Scotland with univerſal ſatisfaction, 434. her agreeable and engaging accompliſhments, and attempts to reſtore police in the country, and gain the affections of the reformers, ib. is ſeverely inſulted and abuſed by the reformers, on account of her offenſive religion, 436, 437. which is the ſource of her ſubſequent errors, 437. how abuſed by the clergy for this reaſon, 438. ſolicits Queen Elizabeth's friendſhip, 440. which that princeſs declines to grant, ib. 441. great profeſſions of friendſhip between theſe Queens, 456. an interview propoſed between them at York, ib. which Queen Elizabeth declines, 457. ſeveral perſons propoſed to her in marriage by her French friends, ib. the earl of Leiceſter propoſed to her

for a husband by Queen Elizabeth, ib. 458. which occasions a difference between them, 458. sends an ambassador to London, to make up the breach, ib. her attachment to her religion exposes her to many inconveniencies, 461. her answer to the general assembly's remonstrance on that account, ib. is married to lord Darnly, 462. which occasions discontents among the nobility and people, ib. she raises forces against the malecontents, 463. drives them from from place to place, and at last into England, ib. pardons Chatelerault conditionally, 464. inclined to be reconciled to the rest, but dissuaded by advice from France, ib. calls a parliament in order to their forfeiture, 465. bestows an extraordinary degree of confidence and favour on David Rizzio, 466. uses all her endeavours to save him from his assassins, 468. her strong resentment against the murderers, and particularly against her husband, ib. escapes with him to Dunbar, ib. returns to Edinburgh, and by the interest of Bothwell is prevailed to lay aside her intentions for revenge, ib. is delivered of a son and notifies his birth to Queen Elizabeth, ib. the great vigour hereby diffused among her partizans, 470, 472. is greatly influenced by Bothwell, 473. disgusted with her husband, ib. is said to have given him poison, and suspected of joining with Bothwell in his murder, ib. 474. continues her familiarity with Bothwell and other suspected persons, 474. orders Lenox to make good his charge, 475. refuses to delay the trial at Lenox's request, ib. after Bothwell's acquital he is recommended to her as a husband by her nobles, 476. is seized by Bothwell, and carried to Dunbar, 477. soon grants him a pardon for this and all his other crimes, ib. is conducted to Edinburgh, and shews herself at liberty, in presence of the courts of justice, 478. creates Bothwell duke of Orkney, and orders the bans of marriage to be published in the church, ib. which a protestant clergyman refuses to comply with, ib. is married to Bothwell by a protestant bishop, 479. few of the nobility countenance it, and it is opposed by the courts of England and France, ib. this marriage brings a general odium on the country, 480. and considered, with other circumstances, as a strong presumption of her guilt, ib. her great imprudence and bad conduct, ib 481. a confederacy of nobles and others raise forces against her, 482. flies with Bothwell to Dunbar, but is obliged to yield herself up a prisoner, ib. her strong attachment to Bothwell is discovered, 483. is sent a prisoner to the castle of Lochleven, where she is treated with severity, ib. the English ambassador is denied access to her, 485. four different proposals concerning her, ib. signs three different instruments without examining them, 486. declared an accomplice in her husband's murder, and condemned to perpetual imprisonment by the parliament of Scotland, ib. her dimission of the crown confirmed in parliament, ib. a faction is formed in her favour, ib. escapes from Lochleven, and raises an army, ib. which is defeated by the associated lords, 488. flies into England, and craves of Queen Elizabeth protection and access to her presence, ib. Queen Elizabeth declines, and why, to accept a visit from her, 490. is attended in the castle of Carlisle by messengers from Queen Elizabeth, to whom she submits her cause, ib. is moved to Bolton castle, 492. appoints commissioners to confer with those of Queen Elizabeth, ib. her complaints against her enemies, 493. with their answers, and complaints against her, ib. her reply to Murray's charge, 494. appears satisfied that the conferences are transferred to Hampton Court, 495. refuses to answer Murray's charge against her, 496. again desires admission to Queen Elizabeth's presence, and proposes to make her defence to her only, ib. her love-letters to Bothwell are produced, 497. whereupon her commissioners break off the conferences, 498. her conduct censured, ib. evidences of the authenticity of these letters to Bothwell, 498, 500. charges Murray with the murder of the King, 501. is removed to Tutbury, 503. declines a proposal made by Queen Elizabeth to her, ib. makes two offers to that princess, which are not accepted, ib. her answer to the proposal of marriage with the duke of Norfolk, 510. is carried to Coventry, and more closely confined, 513. gains the admiration of all about her, by her modesty, and the dignity of her behaviour, 515. her dissimulation with Queen Elizabeth, 516. was inferior to her in personal conduct and discretion, as well as in power, ib. her party becomes masters of Edinburgh on the death of the regent, 517. is forced to make concessions to Queen Elizabeth, ib. several proposals made to her by Queen Elizabeth, which she agrees to, 518, 519. is convinced of Queen Elizabeth's insincerity, 520. is suspected to have procured the Pope's excommunication against Queen Elizabeth, ib. approves of Rodolphi's scheme for subverting Queen Elizabeth's government, 536. and renews her correspondence with the duke of Norfolk, ib. her guilt is discovered by Queen Elizabeth, and she is called to account for her conduct. 539. the parliament petition for her trial, ib. her adherents are forced to submit to the King's authority, 540. her letter to Queen Elizabeth, concerning Gourie's conspiracy, 572. how attended to by that Queen, 574. in what light she is regarded by Queen Elizabeth, 592. the effects of the harsh treatment she receives from Queen Elizabeth, upon her deposition, 593. her letter to Queen Elizabeth, concerning the false reports spread upon that princess, ib. she assents to Babington's conspiracy, 597. her trial is proposed, 598. the treatment she then met with, 599. and removal to Fotheringhay castle, ib. what passed between her and the commissioners appointed to try her, before her trial came on, 600. the beginning of the trial, 601. an account of her intercepted letters, relative to

to the charge then againſt her, ib. 602. her conſpiracy againſt her ſon, 602. the proof againſt Mary, conſidered, 604. a curious incident that happened at the trial, 607. her ſentence, ib. the execution of the ſentence is ſolicited by parliament, 609. her behaviour, when informed of theſe ſolicitations, 611. an account of her laſt letter to Queen Elizabeth, 612. Queen Elizabeth's courtiers perſuade her, and for what reaſon, to order Queen Mary for execution, 615. her execution is reſolved on, 616. and a warrant for it ſecretly drawn out, ib. in what manner ſhe behaved, on receiving an account that ſhe was to die next morning, 617. her behaviour through that evening, 618. and next morning, before ſhe went to the hall, where ſhe was to die, 619. her behaviour in the hall, 620. her conſtancy in her religion, 621. her execution, 622. and character, ib.

Mary, a princeſs of England, ſiſter of Henry VIII. is married to the French king, iii. 95. becomes a widow by his death, within three months after the marriage, ib. is afterwards married to the duke of Suffolk, 96.

——— daughter of king Charles I. married to the prince of Orange, v. 282. embarks for Holland, 319. See *Orange*.

——— daughter of the duke of York, is married to the prince of Orange, vi. 257. See *Orange*.

Maſs, and Maſſes, a maſs book reviewed by Henry VIII. iii. 251. maſſes, private, aboliſhed by act of parliament, 305. reſtored by Queen Mary, 354. aboliſhed by parliament, in Queen Elizabeth's time, iv. 410.

Maſſacres, of Jews in England, i. 332, 333. of Hugonots in France, iv. 542. at Amboyna, v. 290. of Proteſtants, in Ireland. See *Oneale*, Sir Phelim.

Maſſey, governor of Gloceſter, for the parliament, refuſes to ſurrender it to the king, v. 349. makes a vigorous defence, till relieved by Eſſex, 353.

Maſters, Richard, a prieſt; promotes the impoſture of the maid of Kent, iii. 189, 190. is puniſhed for it, 191.

Matilda, daughter of Malcolm III. of Scotland, is married to Henry I. of England, i. 226.

——— daughter of Henry I. married to Henry V. emperor of Germany, i. 241. after his death, married to Geoffrey, eldeſt ſon of the count of Anjou, ib. recogniſed ſucceſſor to the Engliſh throne, by the barons, ib. is delivered of a ſon, named Henry, afterwards king of England, 244. is again recogniſed ſucceſſor to the crown, ib. the oaths taken on that occaſion, are overlooked, 249. and Stephen uſurps the throne, to which ſhe was provided ſucceſſor, ib. her huſband concludes a truce with Stephen, 250. ſhe is, with her huſband, expelled from the government of Normandy, ib. ſhe lands in England, 254. an inſurrection there in her favour, ib. her partizans make Stephen priſoner, 255. ſhe agrees with the pope's legate, ib. is crowned Queen of England, 256. the Londoners revolt againſt her, 257. ſhe exchanges Stephen, for earl Robert, her brother, 258. retires into Normandy, 259. in her ſon's reign, ineffectually diſſuades him from promoting Becket to the ſee of Canterbury, 273.

Matrimony, the Engliſh clergy are forbid to marry, i. 243. again allowed, iii. 316.

Matthew, count of Boulogne. See *Boulogne*.

Matthews, Toby, his caſe, v. 14.

Maurice, prince of Orange. See *Orange*.

——— prince, younger ſon of the elector palatine of the Rhine, offers his ſervice to king Charles I. v. 336. commands a body of cavalry at Roundway-down, 345. is detached to Devonſhire, 349. in vain beſieges Plymouth, 363. then Lyme, with the ſame ſucceſs, 368. aſſiſts the king to diſband Eſſex's forces, 373. is ſhipwrecked, and periſhes, in a hurricane, vi. 34.

Maximilian, king of the Romans, his intereſt in the Low Countries, how acquired, iii. 19. his pretenſions, and troubles there, ib. finds that the mutinous Flemings are fomented by the court of France, 20. treats with the duke of Brittany, for the marriage of his daughter, an heireſs, 21. makes a league with Henry VII. 26. marries the heireſs of Brittany, by proxy, after the duke's death, 27. is deprived of his wife, by her actual marriage with the French king, 29. vents his rage in indecent terms, 30. his levity, and vain glory, how ſupported, 31. is not ready to aſſiſt Henry VII. when invading France by concert with him, 32. is comprehended in a treaty of peace between France and England, 33. but makes a ſeparate peace, ib. leagues with the republic of Venice, for the recovery of the Milaneſe, 42. joins with the French king, to recommend Warbec to James IV. of Scotland, 43. becomes jealous of the French king's ſucceſs in ſubduing Milan, 53. by what means he maintained his authority in the Empire, when he ſucceeded to the imperial crown, 74. makes a treaty with France and Arragon, for recovery of a part of the Milaneſe, ib. 75. adheres for ſome time to the French alliance, 77. his embaſſadors ſign a treaty with Henry VIII. againſt France, but he diſavows them, 84. receives money from Henry VIII. but fails in his engagements to him, 88. ſerves under him in the Low Countries, and receives his pay, ib. adviſes him to lay ſiege to Tournay, 90. is ſeduced from the alliance of England, and embraces the friendſhip of France, 94. is ready to embrace every propoſal, attended with an offer of money, 103. invades Italy, but is repulſed, 104. offers, for money, to reſign to Henry the imperial crown, ib. dies, 109. the conſequences of his death, ib.

——— duke of Milan, re-inſtated, iii. 82. is taken under the protection of the Swiſs, 102. diſguſted with them, and puts himſelf into the hands of the French king, 103. obtains a league of the Italian powers to be formed, for ſecuring him in the poſſeſſion of the Milaneſe, 129, 130. on the approach

of the French army, flies to Lodi, 135. and the French ſeize Milan, ib.
Mayenne, duke of, becomes head of the catholic league in France, iv. 649.
Mazarine, cardinal, his character, vi. 64. his behaviour to the protector, 65. his extraordinary complaiſance to him, 85. his behaviour to king Charles II. then in exile, 103.
Meal-tub plot, vi. 314.
Mediterranean, a ſea-fight there, vi. 41.
Melvil, Robert, ſent by the congregation, to ſolicit ſuccours from Queen Elizabeth, iv. 425. ſent with three inſtruments for Queen Mary to ſign in Lochleven-caſtle, 485. propoſes to Queen Mary, her marriage with the duke of Norfolk, 510.
——— Sir James, ſent by Queen Mary, to make up a breach between her and Queen Elizabeth, iv. 458. his character and addreſs, in executing that commiſſion, ib. 459. ſent by Queen Mary, to inform Queen Elizabeth of the birth of a Scots prince, 469.
Men, able-bodied, their number in England in Queen Elizabeth's time, iv. 734.
——— armed, their number then, ib.
Mercia, a kingdom, firſt eſtabliſhed, i. 17. king of, defeats the king of Northumberland, i. 30. unites that kingdom with his own, 31. is ſubjected to Eaſt-Anglia, 32. riſe of, 33. becomes ſubject to Kinred, 34. his hiſtory, ib. further hiſtory of, 35. is ſubjected to Egbert, 36. and thereby united with the new ſtate erected by him, ib.
Methven, in Perthſhire, battle of, ii. 120.
Michelſon, her character, v. 226. her doctrines, ib.
Middleſex, earl of, impeached, v. 99. his ſentence, 100. his fine remitted, ib.
Middleton, general of the Scots royaliſts in the mountains, vi. 27. is created an earl, 140. and made commiſſioner of the firſt parliament, after the reſtoration, ib. the king is diſguſted with his violent adminiſtration, and diſplaces him, 189.
Milan, a duchy in Italy, ſubdued by the French king, iii. 53. part of it, by treaty, delivered to the Venetians, 75. abandoned by them, 76. reſumed, ib. the Milaneſe is governed by a French lieutenant, 77. the council of Piſa transferred to Milan, and removed from thence, 78. in confederacy with the Swiſs, revolts from France, and Maximilian, ſon of its duke Ludovico, is reinſtated, 82. the French claim to Milan, offered to Spain, as a dowry to a French princeſs, 94. the battle of Marignan there, 102. in which the Swiſs are beaten, ib. Milan is reduced under the obedience of France, and reſigned to that crown, by its duke, 103. is invaded by the emperor, who is there repulſed by the French, 104. a league is made between the emperor and the pope, for expelling the French out of this duchy, 104. they are expelled, by the loſs of a battle there, 124. a fruitleſs expedition undertaken by France to recover it, 132. another French expedition, to recover it, headed by the French king, 135. the plague there, ib. by the fate of the battle of Pavia, 136. it comes under the power of the emperor, ib. it is taken poſſeſſion of by him, 142. who threatens the duke Francis with the forfeiture of that duchy, ib. a confederacy of Italian powers with the French king, is formed, for reſtoring its duke, 145. who is once more threatened by the emperor with a proſecution, in order to a forfeiture, 148. reſtored to Francis Sforza, 165. by his death, devolves to the emperor, 166. its duke Francis dies without iſſue, 196. and the duchy again ineffectually pretended to by the French king, ib.
Milmay, Sir William, his ſpeech in parliament, iv. 557.
Militia, firſt raiſed in England, in king Alfred's reign, i. 59. feudal, deſcription of, ii. 84. how uncertain, 85. effects of its being diſuſed, 89. computed number of, in Queen Elizabeth's reign, iv. 734. plan of, formed, v. 317. brought into parliament, 318. delayed by the king, 319. other means uſed to bring it about, 320. an ordinance concerning it, aſſented to by both houſes, 322. a proclamation is iſſued by the king, againſt this ordinance, ib. each ſide publiſhes to the nation, a defence of their reſpective meaſures, 324. more votes about it, 325. eſtabliſhed in all counties, by the protector, vi. 72. in Scotland, by act of parliament, 267. ſtate of, from the reſtoration to the revolution, 455.
Mill, Walter, the laſt perſon burnt for hereſy in Scotland, iv. 418.
Millenarians, their principles, vi. 2. they govern the ſtate, 50. conſpire againſt Cromwell, 86. againſt king Charles II. 138. are ſuppreſſed, 139.
Milton, his character, vi. 125.
Miniſtry, of Richard II. expelled, ii. 354. of Henry VIII. iii. 70. character of, 185, 186. how retained in obedience by the king, 186. of Edward VI. 288. altered, 328. of Elizabeth, iv. 406.
——— firſt, of king Charles II. vi. 130. altered by the introduction of the cabal, 200. undergoes another conſiderable alteration, 242. further changed, 300. ſtate of in 1669, 313. in 1682, 347. firſt of king James II. 375. altered, 396. further changed, 405.
Miſe of Lewes, what, ii. 43.
Mitchel, his caſe, vi. 270. his execution, 271.
Model, new, introduced into the army, v. 396. laid aſide by tacit conſent, and why, 422.
Monarchy, diſſolved, v. 451. reſtored, vi. 116.
Money, its value among the Anglo-Saxons, i. 160. intereſt of, in the reign of Henry III. ii. 56. denomination of, altered, 322.
——— current, its computed amount in Queen Elizabeth's time, iv. 735.
Moncontour, battle of, iv. 531.
Monk, George, lieutenant-general, ſubdues Scotland, vi. 36. commands, under Blake, in a ſea-fight, 42. beats Tromp, 55. a hiſtory of his life, 103. he declares for a free parliament, 104. marches to London, 108. declares, in the city, for a full and free parliament,

parliament, 109. his behaviour in the city, 110. cauſes the ſecluded members to be received into the houſe, 111. obtains of the long or rump parliament to diſſolve itſelf, ib. and call a free parliament, 112. cauſes the king's letters to be delivered to both houſes of parliament, 116. meets the king, at his arrival, at Dover, 117. is created duke of Albemarle, 130. See *Albemarle*.

Monks and Monaſteries, the cauſes of the imperfections in their hiſtories, i. 19. a hiſtory of them, 77. their introduction into England, 83. are greatly alarmed at the progreſs of the reformation, iii. 189. detected in a conſpiracy, ib. ſuffer greatly by the impoſture of the Maid of Kent, 191. the encreaſe of them, a radical inconveniency in popery, 197. are greatly incenſed againſt king Henry, 198. great diſorders are diſcovered among them, ib. the leſſer monaſteries are ſuppreſſed by the parliament, 199. their poſſeſſions granted to the king, ib. the ſuppreſſion of theſe, cauſes great diſcontents among the people, 214. the greater ſuppreſſed, 219, 220. many abſurd and ridiculous things found in them, 220, 221. and impoſtures diſcovered in them, 221, 222. the amount of their revenues, 222. how diſpoſed of by the king, 223. the ſuppreſſion of them is greatly regretted by the people, 319. ſome erected by Queen Mary, 384. and ſuppreſſed by Queen Elizabeth, iv. 409.

Monmouth, duke, his character, vi. 296. his illegitimacy declared, 297. he defeats the covenanters at Bothwell-bridge, 309. is greatly careſſed in England, 315. conſpires againſt the king, 352. his conſpiracy is diſcovered, 355. he is pardoned, 365. but ordered to depart the kingdom, ib. he invades England, 380. his conduct on that occaſion, 381. he is defeated, 382. made a priſoner, 383. executed, ib.

Monopolies, firſt erected, ii. 235. petitioned againſt by the houſe of commons, iv. 670. the number and importance of the commodities given over to monopoliſts, 706. a bill introduced into the lower-houſe, for aboliſhing them, 707. the Queen promiſes to cancel the moſt grievous of them, 708. their ſtate, at the acceſſion of James I. v. 16. called in by proclamation, ib. revived, 75. remonſtrated againſt, 76. aboliſhed by act of parliament, 98. revived by the king's authority, 200. aboliſhed again, by act of parliament, 251.

Monothelites, their hereſy condemned in Britain, i. 45.

Montmorency, conſtable of France, commands at the battle of St. Quintin, iii. 392. is defeated, and taken priſoner, ib. his reaſon for oppoſing the marriage of the Dauphin, with Mary, Queen of Scots, iv. 424. is deprived of all power, by the influence of the houſe of Guiſe, 430. recalled to court, on the death of the king, 431. joins the duke of Guiſe in perſecuting the Hugonots, 448. is taken priſoner in a battle againſt them, 450. makes peace with the catholics, and is ſet at liberty, 454. is killed at St. Dennis, in a battle againſt the Hugonots, 529.

Montroſe, earl of, his hiſtory, v. 390. to 393. ſets up the royal ſtandard in Scotland, 393. See *Army Royal*, in Scotland. reaſſumes the command, vi. 16. is made a priſoner, 17. condemned, 18. executed, 19.

Montſerrat, marquis of, claims the kingdom of Jeruſalem, ii. 340. is aſſaſſinated, 343. its effects, ib.

Morcar and *Edwin*. See *Edwin* and *Morcar*.

Mordaunt, his conſpiracy, vi. 98. quelled, 99.

More, Sir Thomas, his account of Jane Shore defended, ii. 425. the great ſeal is committed to him, iii. 160. his reaſon for reſigning it, 172. his excellent temper, ib. 173. doubts the legality of the ſettlement of the crown, made by the parliament, 179. is indicted for it, and committed to the Tower, 180. his character, 187. was a violent perſecutor of the heretics, 188. is condemned, and executed, for denying the king's ſupremacy, 192, 193. an account of his remarks concerning incloſures, extracted out of his Utopia, 320.

——— his conſpiracy, v. 288, 289. abandoned by him, 291.

Morris, attorney of the court of wards, his motion in the houſe, how ſeconded, iv. 655. the Queen's injunction thereon, ib. is ſeized in the houſe, by a ſerjeant at arms, loſes his preferments, and is committed priſoner to Tilbury caſtle, 656.

Mortimer, Roger, a potent baron, his intimacy with Iſabella, Queen of Edward II. in Paris, ii. 143. he grows impatient for the king's death, 147. employs two miſcreants to murder him, 148. his authority prevents an unſeaſonable attack of Scots invaders, 158. he becomes the object of national hatred, 159. adviſes a treaty with the king of Scotland, ib. enriches himſelf and followers, by forfeitures, 160. his condemnation and forfeiture, in parliament, 161.

Mortimer's Croſs, battle of, ii. 380.

Mortmain, ſtatute of, made, ii. 133.

Morton, earl of, chancelor of Scotland, his motives for promoting the aſſaſſination of cardinal Beaton, iv. 467. joins an aſſociation to protect the prince, and bring the murderers of the king to puniſhment, 482. takes the coronation oath, in name of king James VI. then an infant, 486. appointed by the king, and kingdom of Scotland, one of the commiſſioners to enquire into Queen Mary's conduct, 492. intercepts Queen Mary's letters, 497. Morton's conduct on this occaſion, ſcrutinized, 498, 499. his account how the papers came into his hands, conſidered, together with the circumſtances that fortify it, 500. he is appointed by the Scots parliament, one of the commiſſioners to manage a treaty with Queen Elizabeth, concerning Queen Mary, 519. is choſen regent of Scotland, on the death of Mary, 540. ſecretly takes his meaſures with Queen Elizabeth, ib. by whoſe aid he ſubdues the Queen's party, 541. delivers into the king's hands a reſignation, after having obtained a general pardon, 558. but retains the admini-

adminiſtration, 559. is arreſted in council, tried, and condemned, ib. ſuffers with conſtancy and reſolution, 560.

Morton, John, a clergyman, and miniſter to Henry VII. iii. 9. his preferments, 10. his ſtratagems to raiſe money for the king, 30. is made a cardinal, 45. becomes obnoxious to the people, ib. procures a law for his own ſafety, 62.

Mortravers and *Gournay*, murderers of Henry II. ii. 148. their fate, ib.

Mountfort, earl of, his claim to the duchy of Brittany, kindles a war in France, 185. his character, and ſecret tranſactions with Edward III. 186. he is ſhut up in the Louvre, ib. the character and behaviour of his counteſs on this occaſion, 187. ſhe engages Edward to embrace her intereſts, ib. obſtinately defends Hennebonne caſtle, till ſuccoured by the Engliſh, 188. ſhe is protected by the Engliſh king in perſon, at the head of a great army, 189. is included in a truce with the French king, ib. the truce is broke, and the war commences again, 190. the counteſs, reinforced by the Engliſh, diſperſes the army of Charles of Blois, and takes him priſoner, 200. at the peace of Bretigni, the differences between the families of Blois and Mountfort, are referred to arbitration, 221. but the war continuing, the young count of Mountfort gets poſſeſſion of the whole duchy, 222.

Mountjoy, lord, is appointed deputy of Ireland, iv. 688. his promiſing ſucceſſes, give a new life to the Queen's authority there, ib. learns from Eſſex his ſcheme relative to the ſucceſſion to the crown, 694. the lord deputies ſentiments on it, 695. he greatly harraſſes the rebels, 704. beats the rebels and Spaniards, 705. obliges Tyrone to deliver himſelf up, and make an abſolute ſurrender of his life and fortune, to the Queen's pleaſure, 712.

Mulgrave, earl of, his character, vi. 451.

Munſter, biſhop of, makes an irruption into Holland, vi. 168. dies, 419.

Murden, his account of the ſtate of the kingdom, in Elizabeth's time, iv. 734.

Murder, antiently puniſhed by fine, i. 156. the prices of the ſeveral heads of men, ib. how puniſhed by Henry II. 316. of a clergyman, how puniſhed antiently, 317. and how, by Henry II. 318.

Murray, is alarmed at the preferment of the earl of Lenox, and his ſon lord Darnley, iv. 462. comes to London, and is ſeduced by Queen Elizabeth, to give falſe teſtimony for her, 464. is ill uſed by her on that occaſion, ib. returns to Edinburgh, and is reconciled to Queen Mary, 468. is acquitted by the parliament and reſtored to his eſtate and honours, 469. retires to France, 482. is appointed regent, by an inſtrument under Queen Mary's hand, 485. arrives from France, and takes poſſeſſion of his office, 486. viſits the Queen, and treats her harſhly, ib. a powerful faction is formed againſt him, ib. 487. is called upon by Queen Elizabeth, to juſtify his conduct to Queen Mary, 491. to which he ſubmits, ib. is appointed by the Scots, one of the commiſſioners to to enquire into Queen Mary's conduct, 492. anſwers Queen Mary's complaints before the Engliſh commiſſioners, 493, 494. why determined not to puſh his accuſation againſt Queen Mary, to the utmoſt, 494. has a private conference with the duke of Norfolk, ib. propoſes queries to Queen Elizabeth, 495. being encouraged by that Queen, brings a poſitive charge againſt Queen Mary, 496. is obliged to produce the evidences of her guilt, 497. is, with others, accuſed by Queen Mary, as guilty of her huſband's murder, 501. the abſurdity of this charge, ib. 502. is diſmiſſed by Queen Elizabeth, with marks of favour, ib. is ſaid to have propoſed the duke of Norfolk's marriage with Queen Mary, 509. his reaſons for diſſimulation in this affair, 510. informs Queen Elizabeth, of Norfolk's conſpiracy, 512. confines the Earl of Northumberland in the caſtle of Lochleven, 515. receives letters from Queen Elizabeth, and from Queen Mary, 516. his anſwer to Queen Elizabeth, ib. 517. is aſſaſſinated, 517. his character, ib.

Murray and *Douglaſs*, invade England. See *Scotland*.

Muſcovy, firſt intercourſe of, with European powers, iii. 402. an account of the trade with it, iv. 732. and of the national tranſactions with its Czar, ib.

N.

NAJARA, battle of, ii. 226.

Nantz, a city, falls to Henry II. by the death of his brother Geoffry, ii. 269. he obtains poſſeſſion of it, ib. the important advantage thereby gained, 268. ineffectually beſieged by the French, iii. 24.

Navarre, king Charles, his character, ii. 20. his kingdom is attacked by John, king of France, 208. he is thrown into priſon, 209. makes his eſcape, 217. his faction is aſſiſted by the king of England, 218. he rivals that king, in his pretenſions to the French crown, 220. is reſtored to all his honours and poſſeſſions, by the peace of Bretigni, 221. in another war with the French king, is made a priſoner, 223.

——— a kingdom, invaded, and wholly ſubdued by Spaniſh troops, iii. 88. king of, Albert, flies to France for ſuccour, ib. a French army attempts to replace the expelled monarch, 114. king of, a prince of the blood of France, is excluded from all offices, iv. 430. and ſeized, by the influence of the houſe of Guiſe, 431 but on the king's death, made lieutenant of the kingdom during the minority, ib. joins the catholics, 448. commands at the ſiege of Rouen, where he is mortally wounded, 450.

——— prince of, commands the Hugonots againſt the catholics in France, 530. is ſpared by the king, at the maſſacre of Hugonots, 542. but forced to make

v.6

a ſhow of changing his religion, ib. flies from court, and heads the Hugonots, 546. by the death of the duke of Anjou, becomes heir of the French crown, 584. forms a confederacy with the French king, 649. and on his death, aſſumes the government of the kingdom, ib. aſſiſted by Queen Elizabeth, ib. 650. obliged by the duke of Parma, to raiſe the blockade of Paris, 650. further aided by Queen Elizabeth, 651. but obliged by the ſame duke, to raiſe the ſiege of Rouen, ib. though further aſſiſted by Queen Elizabeth, is more unſucceſsful, 652. his politic conduct, with reſpect to the two religions, 658. embraces the catholic religion, 659. and forms a new league with Queen Elizabeth, ib. declares war againſt the king of Spain, 661. is further aſſiſted from England, 662. receives overtures of peace from the king of Spain, 670. concludes a treaty of peace with Spain, 671. curious anecdotes between him and the Engliſh ambaſſador, at the court of France, 693. appears averſe to the Scots ſucceſſion, but acquieſces in it, 702. an interview with him, is deſired by Queen Elizabeth and himſelf, but laid aſide, ib. the conformity of his ſentiments in politics, with thoſe of that Queen, 703. what he owed to Queen Elizabeth, at the time of her death, 729.

Navigation Act, rejected by the king, ii. 384. enacted, vi. 39. ſuſpended, 212.

Navy, firſt eſtabliſhed by king Alfred, i. 60. number of, in Queen Elizabeth's time, iv. 733. ſtate of, in the reign of James I. v. 122. diſobeys the admiral, 141. is equiped by writs iſſued out of the privy-council, 152. ſtate of, in the reign of Charles I. 227. declares for the parliament, againſt the king, 330. part of it deſerts to the prince of Wales in Holland, 441. that ſquadron is ſubjected to prince Rupert. See *Rupert*.

——— republican. See *Blake*.

——— royal, ſubjected to prince Rupert. See *Rupert*. to the duke of York. See *York*, duke of. to Albemarle. See *Albemarle*. to Strickland, and mutinies againſt him, vi. 421. ſtate of, between the reſtoration and revolution, vi. 446.

Naylor, James, a quaker, his hiſtory, vi. 122.

Necromancy, Stacey, an eccleſiaſtic, condemned on that account, ii. 416.

Nero, Roman emperor, makes Suetonius Paulus governor of Britain, i. 6.

Nevil, Ralph, created earl of Weſtmoreland, ii. 263.

——— Sir Harry, accuſed by Eſſex, as one of his confederates, iv. 699. is on that account thrown into priſon, and ſeverely perſecuted, ib.

——— Sir John, heads an inſurrection in Yorkſhire, iii. 243. is ſuppreſſed, and executed, ib.

Newark, beſieged and relieved, v. 368. the king, Charles I. there delivers himſelf up to the Scots army, 410. it is ſurrendered to the Scots, 411.

Newburn upon Tyne, battle of, v. 240.

Newbury, firſt battle of, v. 357. ſecond battle there, 373.

Newcaſtle, town of, taken by the Scots, v. 240.

——— marquis of, is forced to leave the ſiege of Hull, v. 356. retreats before Fairfax, 368. is beaten, 370. his character, ib. goes abroad, 371.

Newport, treaty of, v. 442.

Newton, Sir Iſaac, his character, vi. 450.

Nimeguen, a congreſs there, vi. 248. peace there made, 263. ratified by all the powers intereſted therein, 264.

Nobility, their taſte for luxury begins, iv. 736. their houſes and buildings deſcribed, ib. titles of, ſold, vi. 46. prices of, ib.

Nonconformiſts, popiſh, odious to the houſe of commons, v. 29. compounded with, 152. a new commiſſion for compounding with them, is iſſued, 198.

——— proteſtant, favoured by the houſe of commons, v. 29. See *Puritans*.

Norfolk, earl of, a prince of the blood of England, enters into a conſpiracy with the Queen, againſt Edward II. ii. 144. is made one of the lords of the regency, during the minority, 156. unites in councils with Lancaſter and Kent, 159. is beheaded by the parliament convened at Saliſbury, 160.

——— duke of, offers to prove the innocence of the crime charged on him by Hereford, ii. 264. is baniſhed the kingdom for life, 265.

——— duke of, another, oppoſes the reformation, iii. 185, 186. commands the king's troops againſt the northern inſurrection, 216. his prudent conduct in that expedition, ib. 217. he defeats a party of them, 217 puts many of their leaders to death very ſummarily, 218. commands the Engliſh army againſt the Scots, 252. his many ſervices, and great connections, 275. becomes obnoxious to the king, ib. 276. and ſent to the Tower, attainted and condemned by the parliament, without trial or evidence, 277. his life is ſaved, by the death of the king, ib. he is reſtored to his liberty, on the acceſſion of Queen Mary, 352. is appointed one of Queen Elizabeth's commiſſioners to try the cauſe between Queen Mary, and the king and kingdom of Scotland, iv. 492. has a private conference with the earl of Murray, 493. liſtens to a propoſal for eſpouſing Queen Mary, 495. his character, and great influence, 509. his firſt conſpiracy, and the ſource of his misfortunes, ib. his marriage with Queen Mary, is propoſed by the earl of Murray, 510. his motives for gaining the favour of the nobility in that enterprize, before he aſked the Queen's conſent, ib. continues to make intereſt with the nobility and foreign princes, to promote his marriage, ib. 512. his deſign is diſcovered to Queen Elizabeth, by Murray, ib. tries in vain to amuſe Queen Elizabeth, 513. is taken into cuſtody, and ſent to the Tower, ib. ſeveral of his friends confined, ib. uſes his endeavours to ſuppreſs an inſurrection in favour of Queen Mary, 514. is releaſed from the Tower, and confined to his own houſe on conditions, 515. renews his correſpondence with Queen

Queen Mary, 536. conſents to adopt Rodolphi's ſcheme of ſubverting Queen Elizabeth's government, ib. 537. his guilt is diſcovered by Cecil, ib. is tried, and condemned by his peers, 538. and ſoon after executed, ib.

Normandy and *Normans*, how ſo named, i. 98. duke of, William, is ſucceeded by Richard, in the government of the duchy, 99. duke of, Richard, gives his ſiſter Emma, in marriage, to king Ethelred, ib. duke of, Robert, ſucceſſor of Richard, dies in a pilgrimage to the holy land, 111. natives of, are careſſed in the court of England, 115. duke of, William, ſon of Robert, is verbally nominated ſucceſſor to the Engliſh crown, 122. the character of the inhabitants of this duchy, 130. their behaviour in England, on their landing, with the Conqueror at their head, 137. their behaviour after the battle of Haſtings, 140. the rigours of their government in England, 175. more rigours there, 178. the duchy falls to Robert's ſhare, at the death of the Conqueror, 203. is, with Maine, mortgaged to William Rufus, king of England, 213. duke of, Robert, ſets out for the holy land, ib. the character of the Norman ſettlers in England, 225. the component members of the aſſembly of the ſtates of this duchy, 409. ſort of government, by them, introduced into England, 410. the power of their church, 422. their civil laws, ib. their manners, 423. the duchy is conquered by the French king, 365. ceded by Henry III. to France, ii. 33. pillaged by Edward III. 192.

Northampton, a national ſynod there, ii. 280. which condemns Becket, 281. battle of, 377.

——— marquis of, a juror on Somerſet's trial, iii. 336. ordered into cuſtody by Queen Mary, but pardoned, 352.

——— earl of, created, v. 45.

Northumberland, a kingdom, firſt eſtabliſhed, i. 18. is divided, 31. diſſolved, 32.

——— earl of, rebels againſt Henry IV. ii. 287. his eldeſt ſon, gives the king battle at Shrewſbury, 288. is there diſcomfited and ſlain, 289. the earl is pardoned, ib. flies into Scotland, 291. the family is extinct for want of iſſue, iii. 335.

——— duke of, created, iii. 335. his ambition, ib. his expedient to ſecure a majority in the houſe of commons, 340. his expectations thereby anſwered, 341. his ſcheme to change the ſucceſſion, 342. removes all, except his emiſſaries, from about the king, 343. his behaviour in the council, when the ſucceſſion was there changed, 344. diſmiſſes the king's phyſicians, 345. his ſcheme to bring the two princeſſes, Mary and Elizabeth, into his power, 348. cauſes lady Jane Seymour to be proclaimed, 349. takes on him the command of the forces deſtined to ſupport lady Jane's title, 350. is deſerted by his followers, and taken into cuſtody, 351. tried and executed, 352.

——— earl of, heads a party in favour of Mary, Queen of Scots, iv. 512. refuſes to obey a ſummons to court, and joins an inſurrection in her favour, 514. is forced to fly into Scotland, where he is confined in Lochleven caſtle, 515. is delivered up to Queen Elizabeth, 539. and executed, ib.

Northumberland, earl, general of the army againſt the Scots, v. 241. is the parliament's chief commiſſioner at Oxford, 339.

Norway, maid of. See *Margaret*.

Nottingham, earl of, is created duke of Norfolk, ii. 263. See *Norfolk*. degraded from his ducal title, 274.

——— counteſs of, her diſcovery on her death-bed, to Queen Elizabeth, iv. 713. how received, ib.

O.

OATS, Titus, his plot, vi. 275. his narrative, 279. he is penſioned by the parliament, 286. confined, 290. fined, 364. convicted of perjury, 379.

Obdam, Dutch admiral, engages the duke of York, vi. 164. his ſhip blown up, ib.

Obdure, earl of Devonſhire, kills Hubba, the noted Daniſh conjurer, i. 51.

Obedience, paſſive, a bill for it brought into the houſe of peers, vi. 242. paſſed there, 243. dropt in the houſe of commons, ib.

Odo, archbiſhop of Canterbury, his ſupercilious and cruel behaviour to a princeſs of the royal blood, i. 51. his character, as tranſmitted by the monks, 52.

——— biſhop of Baieux, uterine brother of the Conqueror, is left guardian of the realm, by William the Conqueror, i. 170. is arreſted and impriſoned by him, 198. and never releaſed during the Conqueror's life, ib. engages in a conſpiracy againſt William Rufus, 204. which is ſoon ſuppre[illegible]

Offa, ſucceeds Kinred, in the kingdom of Mercia, i. 34. makes a league with Charlemagne, 35. dies, ib. an account of his poſterity, till Mercia is conquered by Egbert, 36.

Officers, general council of. See *Council of General Officers*.

Officers of State, great, a liſt of them in the reign of James I. v. 107. in the reign of Charles I. 462.

Okey, his trial, vi. 149.

Oneale, Shan, a hiſtory of him, iv. 679. his nephew Hugh, his hiſtory, 680. his rebellion, 681. See *Tyrone*, earl.

——— Sir Phelim, his conſpiracy, v. 287. his cruelties, 290. he appends the royal ſeal to a commiſſion, 294. his death, vi. 35.

Orange, prince of, couſin of the heireſs of Brittany, is ſent into Brittany to preſs the marriage of the heireſs with the French king, which he effectuates, iii. 29.

——— prince of, William, fixes his reſidence in the Low-Countries, iv. 548. how engaged to oppoſe the Spaniſh cruelties there, 549. ſues for foreign aſſiſtance,

assistance, and applies to France and England, 550. is called on to protect the United Provinces, 551. the answer he receives from England, ib. he is assassinated at Delft, 583.

Orange, prince of, Maurice, is elected governor of the United Provinces, in place of Leicester, 628, 629. the partizans of England unanimously obey him, 629. he recovers some towns from the duke of Parma, 630. gains the great battle of Turnholt, 663. another, his administration in Holland, and military genius, v. 103.

——— William, prince of, marries princess Mary, daughter of Charles I. v. 282. who leaves England, and embarks for Holland, 319. encourages English officers in the Low-countries, to engage in the king's army against the parliament, 331. returns to England, vi. 135. dies, ib.

——— William, prince of, son of the preceeding, is put under the tuition of De Wit, vi. 167. his character, 215. encourages, and is beloved by the Dutch army, 216. is made a commander in the army, 219. is forced to retire into Holland, ib. is chosen Stadtholder, 223. rejects the French proposals to seduce him, 226. the French general breaks into his trenches, 227. he reconciles De Ruyter and Tromp, Dutch admirals, 232. joins the Imperialists, 233. fights the French at Seneffe, 241. witnesses the surrender of Bouchain, without being able to relieve it, 249. is beaten at St. Omer, 252. visits king Charles II. of England, 256. marries the princess Mary, the king's neice, 257. plans a peace, 258. leaves England, 259. attacks the duke of Luxemburgh at St. Dennis, 264. seconds the applications of Spain to England, 367. his conduct, with respect to England, after his marriage, 412. he forms a league against France, 413. refuses to concur with the measures of James II. 414. resolves to oppose them, 416. is applied to by the English nation, &c. assistance, 417. determines to assist them, 418. makes preparations for that purpose, 419. causes a declaration to be dispersed all over the nation, 423. purport of it, ib. lands at Torbay, 424. is requested by divers peers and bishops, to assume the administration of the government, 433. summons a convention of the estates, to meet at Westminster, 434. his highness and the princess, his spouse, are declared King and Queen of England, 435. and the crown is settled on that illustrious pair, and their progeny, 440.

Ordeal, what, i. 159. how regulated by Henry II. 316.

Ordinance of both houses, rise of, v. 322. self-denying, what, 422.

——— of the house of commons, the first, v. 451.

Orkney, duke of, that title conferred on earl Bothwell, iv. 478. he is married by the bishop of Orkney, a protestant divine, to Queen Mary, 479. effect of this measure on the public, 480, 481. a confederacy formed against him, 482. his miserable end, ib. See *Mary* and *Scotland*.

Orleans, a city, besieged, ii. 333. provisions of all sorts brought to the besiegers, 334. the garrison is reduced to great straits, 335. convoys of provisions conducted into it, by the Maid of Orleans, 338. the garrison, by her persuasions, attacks the besiegers, 339. siege of, raised, 341.

——— duke of, Lewis, dissensions between him and the duke of Burgundy, ii. 303. is assassinated by the partizans of the duke of Burgundy, ib.

——— young duke of, assisted by the princes of the blood, makes war with the duke of Burgundy, ii. 304. his adherents, how called, ib. the populace of Paris declare on his side, 305. causes the duke of Burgundy to be expelled France, 306, 307. is made a prisoner, by the English, at Azincour, 309. the attempts of his rival, the duke of Burgundy, to reinstate himself in power, 311. his partizans are butchered in Paris, 312. his enemy is assassinated by his partizans, 313. ransom offered to England, for the duke of Orleans, 352. he is released, and the duke of Burgundy pays his ransom, 353.

——— duke of, Lewis, cabals against the administration, and retires out of France, iii. 20. commands the troops of Brittany against France, 21. governs the court of Brittany, 23. and influences it to reject the mediation of Henry of England, 24, is made a prisoner at St. Aubin, 25. obtains his liberty, 29.

——— duke of, married to the princess Henrietta of England, vi. 135. her death, 204.

——— Maid of, an account of her, ii. 335. is conducted to the French court, 336. her requests are complied with, 337. conducts a convoy of provisions into the city of Orleans, while besieged by the English, 338. animates the garrison, 339. engages them to sally out upon the besiegers, 340. causes the siege to be raised, 341. stands by the king, with her banner displayed, till he is crowned and anointed at Rheims, 342. her declaration after the ceremony, 344. captivity of, ib. she is tried at Rouen, for sorcery and magic, 345. condemned to perpetual imprisonment, 346. burnt as a relapse, 347.

——— natural son of, count Dunois, how he managed with the Maid of Orleans, in the affair of the convoy, ii. 338. another instance of his prudence in that affair, 339. is supposed to have prompted her in all her measures, 341. his discourse with her at Rheims, 344. he obliges the duke of Bedford to raise the siege of Lagne, 347. conquers Guienne, from the English, 359. commands under the duke his father, in the army of the duke of Brittany, against France, iii. 21. is secretly gained by France, to favour the marriage of the French king, with the heiress, 28. the conclusion of which, he effectually presses, 29.

Ormond, earl of, general of the Engliſh forces in Ireland, his advice to the lords juſtices on the breaking out of the rebellion there, v. 293. he prevails on the lords juſtices to remain loyal to the king, 361. agrees to a ceſſation of arms with the Iriſh rebels, 362. ſends forces to the king's aſſiſtance in England, 363. their fate in England, 367. he delivers Dublin, and other forts, to the parliament's officers, 412. retires to France, vi. 6. now a marquis, returns to Ireland, 7. is defeated by the parliament's forces, 11. leaves the iſland, 12. engages in a conſpiracy againſt Cromwell, and eſcapes, 86. now a duke, is made lord lieutenant of Ireland, 192. diſcovers and defeats Blood's conſpiracy againſt him, 207. is removed from the Engliſh miniſtry, 338. and from the government of Ireland, 339. ſent over again, ib. and once more recalled, 396.

——— duke of, ſon of the former, deſerts king James's intereſt, vi. 426. reads the prince of Orange's proclamation to the univerſity of Oxford, 428.

Orrery, lord, an anecdote of, v. 431.

Oſbec. See *Warbec*.

Oſborne's account of Queen Elizabeth's method of employing the prerogative, iv. 720.

Oſſory, his character, vi. 451.

Oſred, ſon of Alfred, king of Northumberland, ſucceeds his father in that throne, i. 31. is ſlain, ib. an account of his poſterity, till anarchy prevails in that kingdom, 32.

Oſric and *Eanfrid*, their apoſtacy, i. 31.

Oſwal renounces the kingdom of Northumberland, i. 31. his piety and death, ib.

Otho, emperor of Germany, how treated by the pope, i. 374.

Otterburne, battle of, ii. 258.

Otway, his character, vi. 451.

Outlaws, their capacity to ſit in parliament, doubted, v. 11. a further controverſy about that ſubject, 13.

Overbury poiſoned, v. 48. its effect on the public, ib.

Oxford, parliament there, ii. 28. how called, ib. proviſions of, ib. biſhopric of, erected, iii. 223. Chriſt's college, there founded, 286. a parliament there, v. 139. a negotiation there, between king and parliament, v. 339. broke off, 340. a parliament there, vi. 167. another there, 332.

——— earl of, his character, ii. 249. the king's affection for him, occaſions diſcontents among the barons, 250. the army under his command, is routed by the duke of Gloceſter, 254.

——— earl of, is, jointly with Bedford, truſted with the command of an expedition againſt France, iii. 32. commands the forces ſent againſt the inſurgents in the Weſt, 46. routs them, 47. invites the king to an entertainment, 62. how requited, 63.

P.

PAGET, ſecretary, diſcovers to Somerſet, the cabals of lord Seymour, admiral, his brother, 311. is ſent to Bruſſels, in order to gain the alliance of the emperor, 324. adheres to the protector, when deſerted by all others, 327.

Palatinate of the Rhine. See *Frederic*, elector palatine. it is reſtored to his ſon, vi. 62.

Paleſtine, the arrival of Richard I. of England there, i. 339. ſtate of, at that time, 340. a truce there made with Saladin, ib. 341.

Palmer, Sir Richard, his teſtimony againſt Somerſet, iii. 336. he is taken into cuſtody, 352. tried, and executed, ib.

Par, Catharine, married to Henry VIII. iii. 260.

Pardons, the king's power relative to them, regulated by parliament, ii. 281.

Paris, a ſedition there, headed by its provoſt, ii. 216. which is quelled, and the provoſt ſlain, 218. the aſſaſſination of the duke of Orleans there, 303. great diſorders there, between the Burgundians and Armagnacks, 304, 305. Armagnacks butchered there, 313. the Engliſh in poſſeſſion of this city, 316. the king of England crowned there, king of France, 344. this city is reſtored, by a defection of the citizens, to the French king, 350. maſſacre of Hugonots there, iv. 542.

Parliament, feudal, how conſtituted, i. 406. commons, none of its original conſtituent part, 407. how called in our antient hiſtories, 409. chuſe a protector during the minority of Henry III. ii. 3. obtain a confirmation of the charter granted by king John, with a few alterations, ib. prevail on the king to confirm this charter anew, 9. the barons come armed to parliament, 13. the moſt refractory part are not ſummoned to parliament, 21. yet thoſe that are ſummoned, refuſe a ſupply, ib. remonſtrate ſtrongly againſt violators of the great charter, 24. the extraordinary behaviour of king, barons, and prelates, in parliament, 25. a ſupply is granted, ib. the great charter is renewed in parliament, 26. another remonſtrance of an armed parliament, 28. in another at Oxford, the power of reforming the ſtate is conferred on twenty-four barons, ib. orders for and divers regulations concerning four knights of the ſhire, to be choſen in each county, to attend in parliament, 29. there to repreſent the ſtate of their reſpective counties, ib. they confirm the king's reſumption of the regal authority, 36. the plan of the king's future government is there ſettled, ib. the firſt, to which two members from each county, two deputies from each burrough, and ſome eccleſiaſtics, not immediate tenants of the crown, are ſummoned, 46. arbitrary proceedings of, 47. the parliament ſummoned by the king, after the battle of Eveſham,

v.6

51. they meet in a convention of eſtates, on the death of Henry III. 60. the firſt parliament, ſummoned by Edward I. 62. grants of, to the king, 64. a further aid is granted, 65. a new parliament is ſummoned, 88. in which the corrupt judges are puniſhed, ib. is ſummoned by Edward II. 128. in which Gavaſton is baniſhed, 129. the proceedings of the parliament, to which the barons come armed, 130. the proceedings of a parliament, to which Lancaſter's party come in arms, 139. depoſe the king, and declare the prince regent, 146. appoint a regency for Edward III. 156. confirm a treaty with Scotland, 159. condemn the earl of Kent to death, 160. condemn Mortimer for treaſon, 161. grant ſupplies, 166. other proceedings, ib. the extraordinary behaviour of the knights of the ſhire, in a parliament ſummoned by the guardian of the realm, 174. another, ſummoned by a guardian of the kingdom, 175. one, in which the king is preſent in perſon, ib. a proteſtation of the parliament, 177. a parliament, to which archbiſhop Stratford is not ſummoned, 182. the archbiſhop's behaviour on that occaſion, ib. extraordinary proceedings, 183. an aid is granted to the king in wool, 184. another, in which the extraordinary acts of the former are repealed, 185. another, grants the king ſupplies for a French war, notwithſtanding of a truce, 190. the parliament acquires more authority, 233. members of, firſt impriſoned for ſpeeches made in parliament, 235. is ſummoned in the minority of Richard II. 241. ſettles the plan of government during the minority, 242. is diſſolved, 243. another, impoſes poll-money, 245. conſequences of this impoſition, ib. 246. another, revokes the charters granted by the king, during Tyler and Straw's inſurrection, 247. an ariſtocracy is formed in parliament, 252. proceedings againſt king Richard II's miniſtry, 254, 255, 256. an extraordinary oath impoſed on all the members of parliament, 254. judges condemned to death in parliament, 255. parliament declares, that none of theſe trials ſhall be drawn into precedent, 256. members of, ſwear to maintain the forfeitures and attainders, ib. annuls the ariſtocracy, and abrogates the attainders, 261. declares the general pardon invalid, 262. divers ſentences againſt great men concerned in Glocester's faction, ib. confers on Richard II. for life, the duties on wool and leather, 263. reverſes divers attainders, 264. and name a committee of parliament, veſted with full powers, to conclude all buſineſs laid before either houſe of parliament, ib. is ſummoned by the duke of Hereford, in the name of Richard II. then a priſoner, 268. a charge exhibited in parliament againſt Richard II. 270. the biſhop of Carliſle's ſpeech in Richard's favour, 271. the depoſition of the king, 272. the duke of Lancaſter and Hereford, is raiſed to the royal dignity, 273. the proceedings of the ſame members, called anew, in the name of the new king, on a notice of ſix days, ib. a law is enacted, for burning obſtinate heretics and relapſers, 285. and that no returning officer, making an undue return, ſhall be excuſed, by pleading the orders of the king, 293. the crown is ſettled on Henry IV. and his heirs, 294. ſevere laws enacted againſt Lollards, 302. grants to Henry V. a fifteenth, and confers on him for life, the duties on tonnage and poundage, and the ſubſidies on exportation of wool and leather, 310. a fifteenth granted to the king, 316. the parliament aſſumes a power of regulating the kingdom, during a minority, contrary to the will of the late king, 323. the duke of Suffolk's impeachment and defence, 364. he is baniſhed by an act of parliament, 366. ſtate of, when the duke of York claimed the crown, 371. that duke is created protector of the kingdom, 373. a parliament called after the battle of Northampton, 377. in which judgment is given between Henry VI. and the duke of York, 378. a law, limiting the qualifications of electors, 382. an irregular law, made by an irregular parliament, is annulled, 383. permiſſion given by parliament, for exportation of corn, 384. the proceedings of a parliament ſummoned by Edward IV. 388. how guided, by revenge, and the views of conveniency, 389. the proceedings of a parliament ſummoned by the earl of Warwic, 405. another, recognizes the authority of Edward IV. 409. grants a tenth of land-rents, together with a fifteenth and a quarter of perſonal eſtates, 410. under certain conditions, 411. the title of Richard III. is recogniſed, and tonnage and poundage granted to him for life, 435. the right of members attainted to take ſeats, is poſtponed till their attainders are reverſed, iii. 7. the title of Henry VII. is recogniſed, and the crown entailed on his iſſue, ib. 8. the attainders of the partizans of Lancaſter, are reverſed, 8. and tonnage and poundage granted to the king for life, 9. two fifteenths granted to Henry VII. and the crown vaſſals are impowered to ſell their eſtates, without paying fine for alienations, 32. a law enacted, that no perſon aſſiſting the king for the time being, by arms or otherwiſe, ſhall be guilty of high treaſon for ſuch his obedience, 40. and to empower the king to levy all the ſums which had been agreed to be paid by way of benevolence, 41. how ſubſervient to this king's will, 56. the king's ſuit for murder, ordered to be carried on within a year and a day, 61. divers good laws, 62. and ſtatutes againſt retainers, ib. a law, abrogating a by-law of the merchants adventurers of the city of London, 65. a poll-tax, two fifteenths, and four-tenths, are granted to king Henry VIII. 82. ſupplies granted, and encreaſed by Wolſey's prevalency, 128. proceedings againſt Wolſey, 161, 162. about the uſurpations of the clergy, 163. grant to the king, a diſcharge of all debts contracted ſince his acceſſion, 164. proceedings in conſequence

of the ſtatute of proviſors, 170, 171. proceedings of, ſtopt by the plague, 172. appeals to Rome, diſcharged in ſeveral caſes, 174. laws enacted, deſtructive of the pope's authority, 178. the ſucceſſion to the crown is ſettled, 179. confer on the king, the title of ſupreme head on earth of the church of England, and paſs other laws in his favour, 180. grant him a ſubſidy, ib. ſuppreſs ſeveral ſmaller monaſteries, and grant their revenues to the king, 199. juriſdictions of great lords in Wales annulled, 200. and a law concerning wardſhips, made according to the king's pleaſure, ib. a new parliament ſubmiſſive and complaiſant, 209. a new extenſion of the treaſon laws, 210. a ſtrong law againſt the pope's authority, ib. an unlimited attachment to the king's perſon, appears in this parliament, 211. a committee is named, and empowered to form the famous ſix articles of religion, 230. ſubſtance of, ib. 231. parliament equaliſes proclamations royal, to laws, 232. paſſes extraordinary attainders, ib. 233. confirms the ſurrenders of monaſteries, 233. the abbots not ſuffered to ſit in parliament, 237. which attaints the Queen and others, 247, 248. extends the treaſon laws farther, 248. and enacts more laws about religion, 249. grants a ſubſidy, and eſtabliſhes a court for puniſhing the diſobeyers of proclamations, 259. enact a law to enforce the doctrines of the king's book, called the Erudition of a Chriſtian Man, ib. and that indictments muſt be laid within a year after the offence, 260. a further ſettlement of the ſucceſſion, and of the royal ſtile and titles, 262, 263. an act for the remiſſion of a loan formerly demanded by the king, 263. the law of the ſix articles mitigated, ib. ſubſidies granted, and the king's ſupreme headſhip over the church recogniſed, 269. the king's ſpeech to this parliament, ib. an account of the ſeveral parliaments ſummoned by Henry VIII. 280. one called by Somerſet, protector, 304. ſtatute of ſix articles reſumed, ib. more proceedings of, ib. 305, 306. one by the council of regency, deprives Somerſet, 328. paſſes a ſevere act concerning riots and attempts on the life of a privy counſellor, 329. and empowers the king to name a body of commiſſioners veſted with power to frame canon laws, ib. renews the rigorous laws of treaſon, abrogated in the beginning of this reign, 338. makes a law againſt uſury, ib. enacts, that no man ſhall be convicted of treaſon, but by the oaths of two witneſſes, 339. entruſts the prelates with providing for the poor, and puniſhing breakers of ſundays and holydays, ib. the ſee of Durham is divided into two biſhoprics, 341. and a ſupply granted, ib. aboliſhes every ſpecies of treaſon, not contained in the ſtatute of Edward III. and every ſpecies of felony that did not ſubſiſt before Henry VIII. 356. and divers other proceedings about religion and the ſucceſſion, ib. the duke of Norfolk's attainder is taken off, ib. ratifies the marriage articles between the Queen and the archduke Philip, 367. the diſſolved biſhopric of Durham, is re-erected, ib. more laws about religion, and the law of the ſix articles revived, 368. is reconciled to Rome, and abſolved, 370. the laws againſt the pope's authority, are repealed, ib. and the laws againſt heretics revived, 371. a ſeceſſion of the members, how puniſhed, 372, 373. tenths and firſt fruits reſtored to the church, 284. a ſmall ſupply is granted, 385. ſupplies are granted, and ſales and grants of crown lands confirmed, 398. the authority of Queen Elizabeth recognized, 408. firſt fruits and tenths reſtored to the crown, and the late erected monaſteries ſuppreſſed, 409. and the Queen declared governeſs of the church, ib. the ſtatutes in king Edward VI's time, relative to religion, are confirmed, 410. biſhops and incumbents prohibited from alienating and letting longer leaſes than twenty-one years, or three lives, ib. laws relative to religion, ib. ſubſidies granted, 411. one againſt fond and fantaſtical prophecies, 453. laws relative to religion and ſedition, 462. ſubſidies are granted, 471. ſubſidies granted, 557. the Queen is empowered to name commiſſioners for trial of any pretender to the crown, &c. 577. a ſevere law againſt jeſuits and prieſts, ib. 578. ſubſidies granted, 578. a parliament is ſummoned, to decide the fate of Mary Queen of Scots, 608. addreſs of, to put Mary to death, 609. ſupplies granted, 640. a law enacted againſt abſenters from public worſhip, 643. a ſevere law againſt recuſants, 656. unuſually large ſupplies are granted, 657. the ſame ſupplies as before granted, 669. a very large and unprecedented ſupply, 711. the parſimony of parliaments during this reign, 730. firſt of James I. called, v. 9. grants ſupplies, 26. ſecond called, 72. diſſolved, 82. third called, 96. diſſolved by his death, 106. numbers of members of, in the beginning of Charles I's reign, 107. firſt of Charles I. called, 136. adjourned to Oxford, 139. diſſolved, 143. ſecond called, ib. diſſolved, 150. third called, 160. enacts petition of right, 174. is prorogued, 176. aſſembled, 179. diſſolved, 187. members of, proſecuted, ib. the fourth called, 230. diſſolved, 236. members of, harraſſed, ib. ſtate of, before the ſeventeenth century, 238. fifth, long or rump parliament called, 245. grants ſubſidies to be paid into a committee of parliament, 255. borrows money of the city, to pay both Scots and Engliſh armies, ib. grants tonnage and poundage for two months only, 262. enacts a law for triennial parliaments, ib. and that the parliament ſhall not be adjourned, prorogued, or diſſolved, without its own conſent, 277. aboliſhes the court of high-commiſſion and ſtar-chamber, 280. diſbands both Engliſh and Scots armies, 282. appoints a committee to ſit in the receſs, ib. levies money, and enliſts men to quell the Iriſh rebellion, as is pretended, 297. makes an act for preſſing men for the Iriſh ſervice,

317. aboliſhes the biſhops votes in parliament, ib. makes an ordinance for raiſing the militia, 322. aſſumes the ſovereign power, 325. part of, goes to York, and part of remains at Weſtminſter, 326. the remainder, at Weſtminſter, ſends the king terms of peace, 327. ſends commiſſioners to Oxford to treat with the king, 339. deſires aſſiſtance from the Scots, 359. ſubſcribes the ſolemn league and covenant, 360. paſſes the ſelf-denying ordinance, 380. ſends commiſſioners to Uxbridge, in order to treat with the king, 383. orders archbiſhop Laud for execution, 388. new models the army, 396. publiſhes the Queen's letters taken at the battle of Naſeby, 400. ſets up preſbytery all over England, 408. is diſturbed by a mutiny in the army, 418. falls under public hatred, 422. reſolves to temporiſe with the army, 425. fluctuating proceedings, 429. ſends propoſitions to the king, 436. ſends commiſſioners to Newport, to treat with the king, 442. the commons at Weſtminſter aſſume the ſovereign power, 451. and aſſent to an ordinance for trial of the king, ib. ſtate of, at the demiſe of Charles I. vi. 3. enlarge laws againſt high treaſon, 10. make the navigation act, 39. ſet up the fleet in oppoſition to the army, 43. reply in angry terms, to the council of general officers, 44. are diſſipated, 45. Barebone's parliament called, 50. proceedings of, 51. reſignation of, 53, a new-modeled parliament is called, 57. diſſolved, 60. another ſuch is called, 77. makes the protector an offer of the royal power, 79. which being rejected, 81. the humble petition and advice is framed, 82. the parliament is diſſolved, 84. a third of the ſame ſort is called by Richard Cromwell, 94. is diſſolved, 96. the long, or rump parliament, is re-aſſembled, 97. ſuppreſſes inſurrections of royaliſts, 99. is again expelled, 100. re-aſſumes its activity, 107. receives the excluded members, 111. diſſolves itſelf, and appoints a new parliament to be called, ib. a new parliament meets, 115. receives a letter from the king, 116. invites him over, 117. is recognized a parliament by the king, 131. grants a general act of indemnity under a few exceptions, 132. ſettles a revenue on the king for life, ib. grants to him the tonnage and poundage for the ſame term, 133. eſtabliſhes a poſt-office, 135. wine licences, ib. and more aſſeſſments, 136. is diſſolved, ib. another is called, 143. which enlarges the laws againſt high treaſon, 144. proceedings relative to the covenant, biſhops, and the power of the ſword, ib. the corporation act made, 145. the uniformity act, 146. the militia act regulated, 147. the trennial act repealed, 159. meeting of, at Oxford, 167. where the five mile act is paſſed, ib. commiſſioners appointed to decide ſuch queſtions as may ariſe about the fire of London, 173. prohibits the importation of Iriſh cattle, 194. grants a ſupply, 198. impowers the king to ſell the fee-farm rents, ib. mitigates the act againſt conventicles, 199. paſſes the Coventry act, 207. grants a ſupply, 228. an act of indemnity, 230. is diſſolved, 292. character of, ib. another parliament, is called, 295. the habeas corpus act paſſed, 303. the parliament is diſſolved, 306. another is called, 317. complexion of, 318. proceedings of, 319. diſſolution of, 331, the ſucceeding parliament is called to Oxford, 332. is diſſolved, 334. called by king James II. 378. proceedings of, with reſpect to the revenue and further ſupplies, 379. attaints Monmouth, 380. grants further ſupplies, ib. is diſſolved, 390. called by the prince of Orange, under the name of a convention, 434. ſettles the crown on his highneſs, and the princeſs his ſpouſe, 440.

Parliament, Scots, recogniſes the maid of Norway, heireſs of that crown, ii. 69. agreement of, with Edward I. ib. 70. on her death, makes a reference to the Engliſh, of the competition between the ſeveral candidates for the throne, 71. invited to attend the Engliſh king at Norham, and attends him accordingly, 76. their behaviour on that occaſion, 77. aſſembled at Edinburgh, acknowleges Baliol to be king of Scotland, 167. forfeits the exiled lords, 465. tries, and acquits the earl of Murray, 469. ſummoned by the earl of Murray, regent, condemns Mary Queen of Scots to perpetual impriſonment, 472. ratifies her demiſſion of the crown, and recogniſes the title of the young king and his regent, 486. appoints commiſſioners to manage a treaty with Queen Elizabeth, relative to Queen Mary, 519. enacts a law againſt falſehoods and indecent expreſſions uttered by clergymen in their pulpits, 575. confirms the articles of Perth, v. 217. called by Charles I. 228. diminiſhes the power of the monarch, 229. orders the terms of pacification to be read in all churches, 283. and ſets aſide the lords of articles, ib. enacts a law for triennial parliaments, 284. and divers laws derogatory to the royal power, ib. meets in convention, 358. takes the ſolemn league and covenant, 359. and tranſmits it to England, ib. appoints a large army to be raiſed in ſupport of the king's authority, 439. is oppoſed by the general aſſembly then ſitting, 440. cauſes king Charles II. to be proclaimed at Edinburgh, vi. 4. condemns the earl of Montroſe to ſuffer as a traitor, 17. is convened by king Charles II. 140. proceedings of, ib. again, by king Charles II. 187. proceedings of, ib. 188, 189. grants a ſecond general act of indemnity, 310. ſummoned again by Charles II. 343. proceedings of, ib. is ſummoned by James II. 387. proceedings of, ib. is ſummoned to meet in a convention by the prince of Orange, 434. offers the crown and royal dignity of Scotland to that prince, and the princeſs, his ſpouſe, and their heirs, 435.

Pandolph, legate of Rome, obtains of king John to reſign the kingdom to the Pope, 377. receives homage from the King for his kingdom, 378. his account of this affair to the French King, 379.

Parma, duke of, ſucceeds the duke of Alva in the government

vernment of the Low-Countries, iv. 553. his ſucceſſes in the Netherlands oblige the ſtates to ſue for foreign ſuccours, 584. defeats the earl of Leiceſter, 589. beſieges and takes Sluiſe, 628. diſſuades the King of Spain from invading England, 630. refuſes to join the Armada, 638. obliges the French King to raiſe the blockade of Paris, 650. but loſes ſome towns in the Low-Countries, ib. raiſes the ſiege of Roüen, 651, 652.

Parma, dutcheſs of, left governeſs of the Low-Countries, iv. 533. but without power to act according to her own inclinations, ib.

Parry, a catholic, his conſpiracy againſt Queen Elizabeth, iv. 582. is detected, 583. and he is executed, ib.

Parties firſt formed, v. 72. court party favourable to papiſts, 140. country party to puritans, ib. their ſtate at the beginning of the civil wars, 329. at the beginning of the commonwealth, vi. 1. in 1658, 86. in 1659, 98. in 1660, 118. in 1679, 310. divided into petitioners and abhorrers, 315. whigs and tories, 316. coalition of parties, 435.

Partridge, Sir Miles, impriſoned for high treaſon, iii. 336. tried, condemned, and executed, 337.

Paſcal II. pope of Rome, his tranſactions with Henry I. of England, i. 232. his haughty anſwer to Henry's miniſter, 233, his ſituation during this quarrel, 235. he excommunicates Henry's miniſter, ib. an accommodation between them, 236.

Paſturage, ſtate of, in the reign of Henry VII. iii. 285.

Paul III. made pope, iii. 193. his reſentment againſt Henry VIII. ib.

——— IV. his reſentment againſt Queen Mary for taking the title of Queen of Ireland, iii. 383. inſiſts for reſtitution of church-lands and Peterpence, ib. refuſes to crown Ferdinand King of the Romans, 387. his extravagant pretenſions and impolitic conduct, ib. his inſolence on the notification of Queen Elizabeth's acceſſion to the throne, iv. 405.

Pavia, battle of, iii. 106.

Peers, what, and whence this denomination aroſe, i. 402. a council of them ſummoned, ii. 286. a great council of them called, v. 242.

——— houſe of. See *Lords* houſe.

Pembroke, earl mareſchal of England, his power by his office, ii. 2. is choſen protector of the kingdom during the minority of Henry III. 3. applies by a kind letter to the diſcontented barons, 4. beſieges the French in Lincoln, 5. makes a pacification with them and the diſcontented barons, 6. his adminiſtration and death, 7.

——— created duke of Bedford, iii. 6.

——— is one of the jurors on Somerſet's trial, iii. 336.

Penda, King of Mercia, kills Edwin in battle, i. 30. and Oſwin King of the Northumbrians, 31. and unites that kingdom with his own, ib.

Penry, a Browniſt, his caſe, iv. 725. ſentence and execution, 728.

Perth, a violent inſurrection there, iv. 420. articles of, v. 217. battle of, 242.

Peter, the hermit, his complaint againſt the Turks, i. 210. he becomes a leader of ſeveral thouſands of men, 212. See *Cruſades*.

——— of Pomfret, another hermit, his prophecy, i. 378. his puniſhment, ib.

——— King of Caſtile. See *Caſtile*.

——— biſhop of Wincheſter, jointly with Hubert de Burgh, high juſticiary, ſucceeds the earl of Pembroke in the government of England during the minority of Edward III. ii. 7. quells rebellions, 8. confirms the great charter now complained of as infringed, 9. reſigns his power into the hands of the king, now of age, 10. his advice to the king when prime miniſter, 13. his violent adminiſtration, 14. is diſplaced, ib.

Peterborough, biſhopric of, erected, iii. 223.

Peterpence, payment of, ſuſpended for a ſhort time by Henry II. i. 287.

Petition, humble, and advice, framed, vi. 82. confirmed, 94.

Petitions regulated by parliament, vi. 144.

——— tumultuary encouraged, v. 315. for court puniſhed, 316. recommenced, vi. 315.

Philip, archduke of Auſtria, ſon of Maximilian, Emperor, and the heireſs of Burgundy, is bred up under his mother in the Low-Countries, iii. 15. has an interview with Henry VII. at Calais, 52. endeavours to acquire that monarch's friendſhip, ib. 53. becomes King of Caſtile under the name of Philip I. 57. and in his journey to Spain is forced into England by ſtorms, ib. where he has another interview with Henry VII. ib. 58, 59. where Henry complains to him of the reception which he gives the earl of Suffolk, 58, 59. is forced to deliver up the earl, 59. the death of the King of Caſtile, ib.

——— ſon of Charles V. of Spain, is propoſed as a huſband to Queen Mary of England, iii. 359. marries her, 361. arrives in England, 369. his popular behaviour, ib. endeavours to acquire more popularity by procuring the releaſe of ſeveral priſoners, 371. his artifice to remove the reproach of cruelty from himſelf, 380, 381. goes over to Flanders, 384. his indifference and neglect of Queen Mary greatly affects her, ib. 385. is put in poſſeſſion of the Empire and Spain and his father's other dominions by his reſignation, 386. his ingratitude to his father, 387. attempts to embark England in a war with France, 388. comes to England and ſucceeds in that deſign, 391. on the death of Queen Mary, offers himſelf as a huſband to Queen Elizabeth, 405. makes peace with France, 413. at the court of Rome, oppoſes the iſſuing of a bull of excommunication againſt Queen Elizabeth, 415. character of, 445. he iſſues rigorous orders for the perſecution of heretics in the Low-Countries and all over his dominions, 446. his animoſity againſt Queen Elizabeth

Elizabeth begins to appear, 447. forms a ſecret alliance with the princes of the houſe of Guiſe for the ſuppreſſion of hereſy, 449. his unrelenting temper terrifies his ſubjects in the Low-Countries, 533. whom he leaves under the power of a cardinal, ib. the effect of his cruel deſigns in the Low-Countries, 534. the government of which he entruſts with the duke d' Alva, ib. differences break out and are appeaſed between him and England, 535. his governor's cruelty to the Flemings, ib. his ambaſſador in England forms a ſcheme for ſubverting Queen Elizabeth's government, 536. in which are concerned the Pope and duke D' Alva, 537. the event of this project, ib. 538, 539. his violences and cruelties in the Low-Countries are a branch of the ſame project, 544. ſimilarity of his character with that of the then French King, ib. prevails with Queen Elizabeth to deny his fugitive ſubjects entrance into her dominions, 548. and the people in Holland and Zealand and other parts of the Low-Countries fly to arms, 548. form an union, 549. an embaſſy to mediate for them is ſent to Philip by Queen Elizabeth, 551. their protection is embraced by Queen Elizabeth, 552. and this prince diſſembles his reſentment againſt the Queen, 553. and confides the government of the United Provinces with the prince of Parma, ib. ſends forces into Ireland to ſupport the rebels there, 560. diſpoſes of the money which he receives from Queen Elizabeth upon the rebels in Ireland, and in an enterprize againſt his own ſubjects in the Low-Countries, 561. obtains the kingdom of Portugal, 564. and forms a ſecret alliance with the houſe of Guiſe for extirpating hereſy, ib. makes vaſt preparations for the invaſion of England, 629. his motives for this enterprize, and hopes of ſucceſs therein, 630. his fleet and army compared with Queen Elizabeth's, 632. his admiral's death ſtops his fleet when ready to ſail, 635. his plan for invading England, 636, 637. his fleet arrives in the channel, 637. encounters that of England, 638. is diſappointed of aſſiſtance from the duke of Parma then in the Low-Countries, ib. defeated by the Engliſh fleet, and overtaken with a tempeſt, 639. his behaviour on hearing theſe news, ib. he fits out a fleet to bring home his Indian treaſures, 652. war is declared againſt him by the French King, 661. a naval enterprize of England againſt his American dominions, 663, 664. againſt his dominions in Europe, 664, 665. his death, 676.

Philip III. his character, v. 4. propoſal to James I. 5.

——— King of France. See *France*.

Philippa, daughter of the count of Hollard, is affianced to the eldeſt ſon of Edward II. ii. 144. ſhe routs the Scots army, and brings David their King priſoner to the Tower, 201. interpoſes ſucceſsfully in behalf of the citizens of Calais, 203.

Philiphaugh, battle of, v. 493.

Phillips, Sir Robert, his ſpeech, v. 162, 163.

Philpot, archdeacon of Wincheſter, his furious zeal for proteſtantiſm, iii. 378. he is burnt for hereſy in Smithfield, ib.

Picts and Scots invade Britain, i. 10. are repulſed by Saxons, 13.

Piercy, Thomas, is created earl of Worceſter, ii 263. rebels againſt Henry IV. 287. is put to death, 289.

Pilgrimage of grace, an inſurrection ſo called, iii. 215.

Pilkington fined, vi. 349.

Pinkey, battle of, iii. 302.

Piſa, a general council ſummoned there, ii. 78.

Piſtor, his ſpeech in the houſe on his knees, and making the ſign of the croſs, iv. 522.

Plagues univerſal, or peſtilences, one, ii. 207. another, iii. 135. another, iv. 456. another, v. 9. another, 139. vi. 35.

Plots againſt Edward II. ii. 143. gunpowder, hiſtory of, v. 20. is diſcovered, 23. popiſh, the houſe of commons greatly in fear of them, 318. meal-tub, vi. 314. popiſh, believed, 282. effects of, in the nation, 285. in the parliament, 286. a pamphlet publiſhed about it, 288. occaſions a new teſt, 289. trials of perſons concerned in it, 293. begins to grow into diſrepute, 317. earl Stafford is executed on account of it, 328. Rye-houſe, 354. See *Conſpiracies*.

Plymouth, a ſea fight there, vi. 41.

Poictiers, battle of, ii. 213.

Poictou acquired by a marriage with the heireſs, i. 260.

Pole, John, ſon of the duke of Suffolk, engages in Simnel's conſpiracy, iii. 15. commands the rebels at the battle of Stoke, 16. periſhes in the field of battle, 17.

——— de la Geoffrey, brother of the cardinal, tried for a conſpiracy and condemned, iii. 225. pardoned, ib.

——— Henry, another brother of the cardinal, tried and executed, iii. 225.

——— Edmund. See *Suffolk*.

——— Arthur, nephew of the cardinal, with his brother, indicted for a conſpiracy againſt Queen Elizabeth, iii. 445. confeſs the indictment, ib. are condemned and pardoned, 446.

——— Reginald, his hiſtory, iii. 224, 225. is created a cardinal, 225. and ſent as a legate into Flanders, ib. is hated by Henry VIII. 235. propoſed as a huſband to Queen Mary of England, 357. his attainder is reverſed, 366. arrives in England with a legatine commiſſion, and invites the parliament to be reconciled to Rome, 370. the cardinal's politico-religious ſentiments, 373. adviſes a toleration of heretics, 374. takes prieſt's orders, and is inſtalled in the ſee of Canterbury on Cranmer's death, 390. oppoſes England's engaging in the war between France and Spain, 391. his legatine commiſſion is revoked and ſoon reſtored, ib. his death and character, 401.

Pole, Richard, baniſhed, iii. 95.
Polerone, an iſland promiſed to be yielded to the Engliſh by the Dutch, vi. 56. importance of, 174. is witheld by the Dutch and renounced by England at the peace of Breda, 176.
Police of the kingdom, ſtate of, in Edward III's time, ii. 237.
Polydore Virgil diſpoſſeſſed of his employment, and thrown into priſon by cardinal Wolſey, iii. 106.
Poll-money firſt levied by act of parliament, ii. 245. reimpoſed according to the ſtation and riches of the perſon, iii. 82.
Poltrot, incited by Beza, aſſaſſinates the duke of Guiſe, iv. 454.
Pope, *Papacy*, *Papiſts*, his power introduced into England, i. 182. papacy weakened by a ſchiſm, ii. 279. he confirms the right of Henry VII. to the crown, iii. 8. his authority is abrogated in England by the parliament, 178. and by the convocation, 179. his name is ſtruck out of all books, 251.
Portſmouth taken by the parliament's army, v. 334.
Portugal ſubjected to Spain, iv. 564. an Engliſh ſquadron breaks into one of its harbours and cuts out a Curacco ſhip, iv. 712. King of, renews his alliance with England, vi. 34. one of his ambaſſadors is hanged in London, 56. the other, his brother, ſigns a treaty in London with Cromwell, 57. King of, gives the princeſs Catharine in marriage to King Charles II. 148. with Tangiers and Bombay in dowry, 149.
Poſt-office eſtabliſhed, vi. 135.
Poultry, price of, reduced by act of parliament, ii. 239. fixed in the reign of Henry VIII. iii. 285. in the reign of Charles I. v. 120.
Poundage firſt mentioned, ii. 125. not regularly granted to the King for life, till Henry V. ib. See *Tonnage* and poundage.
Poynings, Sir Edward, made governor of Ireland, iii. 41. his law there, ib. is made one of Henry VIII's miniſters, 70. quarters his regiment in Tournay, 90.
Power, legiſlative, where it reſided in Queen Elizabeth's reign, iv. 723.
Præmunire, penalty of, in what caſes incurred by papiſts, iv. 528.
Preaching, regulations in England concerning it, iii. 294. in Scotland, iv. 575.
Prerogative, powers of, in the reign of Henry VIII. iii. 263, 264. in Queen Elizabeth's reign, 717 to 723. v. 10. is put on a footing with the legiſlative authority, 12. not to be meddled with by the houſe of commons, 80. power of, extended ſo as thereby to diſcharge popiſh recuſants impriſoned, 87. to diſpenſe with penal laws againſt papiſts, 93. levy loans, 153. it becomes odious to all the ſubjects, 155. the diſpenſing power thence ariſing, is confirmed by all the judges, vi. 393. lord chief juſtice Coke's opinion of it, 394. the effect of the revolution on this branch of power, ib.
Preſbytery and *Preſbyterian*, inconveniencies of that government in the church, iv. 440. ſet up in Scotland, v. 224. in England, 283. eſtabliſhed all over England, 408. leaders of, impeached by the army, 425. ſtate of, under the commonwealth, vi. 33. they rejoice at the downfall of the republicans, 49. their numbers in the convention houſe of commons, 136. demoliſhed in England, 137. in Scotland, 140. their clergy are ejected from the churches in England, 152. indulged, 154.
Preſton, battle of, v. 446.
Preſſing, power of, how uſed in the reign of Queen Elizabeth, iv. 720, 721.
Prieſts, Romiſh, and Jeſuits, a ſevere law againſt them, iv. 577.
Primogeniture, how introduced, i. 422.
Printing, art of, invented, iii. 67. forwards the progreſs of the reformation, 121.
Privy Council, power of, with reſpect to impriſonment in Queen Elizabeth's reign, iv. 719.
Proclamations, royal, equaliſed to laws, iii. 232. a court eſtabliſhed to puniſh diſobeyers of them, 259. how executed in Queen Elizabeth's reign, iv. 723. pretended by king James I. to be equal to laws, v. 12. diſobeyers, how puniſhed, 205. in Scotland, equaliſed to laws in eccleſiaſtical matters, vi. 267. See *Edicts*.
Proof, royal, rules of, antiently, i. 158, 159.
Prophecies, fond and fantaſtical, a law againſt them, iv. 453.
Protector of the kingdom, firſt choſen, and why, ii. 3. again choſen, 323. again choſen, 423. nominated by the privy-council, ib. iii. 289. again propoſed, iv. 282. of the commonwealth choſen, v. 53.
Protectorate, that of the earl of Pembroke begins, ii. 3. ends by his death, 7. of the duke of Bedford begins, 323. ends by his death, 349. of the duke of York, 313. of the duke of Gloceſter begins, 423. ends by his aſſuming the royal dignity, 430. of Somerſet begins, iii. 289. ends, by his reſignation, 327. of Oliver Cromwell begins, vi. 53. ends, by his death, 92. of Richard Cromwell begins, 93. ends by his reſignation, 96.
Proteſtants, how they came by this appellation, iii. 165. furious inſurrections of them in Germany, 184. perſecuted in Germany, 296. a ſolemn diſpute between them and the catholics, iv. 410. a confederacy againſt them, 465.
Proteſters, an account of them, vi. 28. See *Reſolutioners*.
Provinces, whole, and towns, in the Low Countries, revolt from Spain, iv. 548. inflamed by the prince of Orange, and unite in a league, 549. See *United Provinces*.
Proviſors, ſtatute of, enacted, ii. 236. proceedings on it in the reign of Henry VIII. 170, 171, 172. effect of

of the ſtrict execution of this ſtatute, 171. diſpenſed with by Queen Mary, 369.
Prynne, his trial, v. 201. the ſentence againſt him reverſed in parliament, 253.
Purgatory, a curious deciſion concerning it, iii. 212, 213.
Puritans, their character, iv. 505. murmur againſt James I's tolerating meaſures, 87. call themſelves the true church, 114. become powerful in the houſe of commons, 137. are forbid, by proclamation, to go to America, 208. a further character of them, 209. their lecturers are eſtabliſhed all over the kingdom, 252. are promoted by the houſe of commons, 256. they declaim againſt the earl of Strafford, 273. their behaviour, previous to the ſelf-denying ordinance, 378. and during the king's trial, 456. encreaſe the colony of New-England, vi. 124. and other plantations, ib.
Purveyors and *Purveyancing*, a grievance aboliſhed by parliament, but often brought back by the king, ii. 234. laws enacted againſt them, by parliament, 322. chancellor Bacon's ſpeech againſt purveyors, iv. 642. uſe of in Queen Elizabeth's reign, 714. how abuſive in the reign of James I. v. 17.
Pym, a leader in the houſe of commons, his ſpeech againſt the earl of Strafford, v. 246. his character, 251.

Q.

QUAKERS, their original, vi. 119. their ſingularities, 120. their morals and madneſs, 121.
Queen conſort of king Charles I. her character, v. 191. is afraid of an impeachment, 317. goes to Holland, 319 ſends over arms and ammunition, 327. returns, 368. and lyes in at Exeter, ib. flies to Paris, 403. her condition there, vi. 64. of Charles II. is accuſed of high-treaſon, 289. protected by the king, 290. of James II. who governs his councils, 397. flies to France, 429.
——— dowager, iii. 13. is ſuſpected of favouring Simnel's conſpiracy, and confined, 14.
——— mother, is deſired to depart the kingdom, 261. another, mother of Charles II. returns, vi. 135. and obtains the king's conſent to a marriage, ib.
——— others, under their reſpective names.
Quo Warranto, a writ iſſued againſt the city of London, vi. 349. pleadings upon it, 350. judgment thereon entered, 351. effects of, on the corporation, ib.

R.

RALEIGH, Sir Walter, commands in the channel, againſt the Spaniſh Armada, iv. 638. appointed to the command of an expedition againſt the Spaniſh Weſt-Indies, but recalled before he ſets out, 663. is earl Eſſex's enemy, but doth not oppoſe his nomination to the government of Ireland, 682. falls ſick at the appearance of the Queen's returning kindneſs to Eſſex, 687. how comforted then, ib. is hated by the people, 688. his letter, when in diſgrace, directed to Sir Robert Cecil, 693. from a window, views Eſſex's execution, 700. his petition to the Queen, on taking a rich Curacco ſhip, 724. attempts to ſettle colonies in Virginia, 735. his plot, v. 6. found guilty, 7. remains a conſiderable time in the Tower, 61. is ſent abroad on an expedition to the Weſt-Indies, 62. returns to England, 63. is executed, 64. a quotation from his writings, 110.
Ralph, earl of Cheſter, a partizan of the empreſs Matilda, commands in a battle, where king Stephen is taken priſoner, i. 255.
Randolf, Engliſh ambaſſador in Scotland, his character of the Scots nation, iv. 439.
Ratcliff, Sir George, impriſoned, and why, v. 265.
Ravillack, murders the French king, Henry IV. v. 38.
Read, an alderman of London, enrolled for a foot ſoldier, on account of his refuſing a benevolence to the king, iii. 264.
Reading, a council of nobles and prelates ſummoned there, i. 342. beſieged, v. 340. taken, 341. the king brought there a priſoner by the army, 426.
Recuſants, a ſevere law againſt them, iv. 656.
Redwald, king of the Eaſt-Angles, his kindneſs to Adelfred, i. 29. his virtuous reſolution, 30. his death, 31.
Reformation, begins in Germany, iii. 120. oppoſed by Henry VIII. of England, 121. cauſes of its progreſs, ib. 122. the then pope's behaviour on that occaſion, 123. the reformed princes of Germany, combine in a league for their own defence, 165. a prelude of it appears in England, 170. the reformation begins there, 171. encreaſes, 178. goes on, 180. is ſecretly favoured by Cranmer, archbiſhop of Canterbury, 185. makes great progreſs in England and the Low Countries, 186, 187. the reformers are troubled in the biſhops courts, 188. detect impoſtures in the Romiſh church, 191. greedily read Tindal's tranſlation of the ſcriptures, 200. obtain an order of the convocation, for a new tranſlation, 202. diſcontents ariſe among the people, on account of it, 214. which end in an inſurrection, 215. which is quelled, 217. hiſtories are publiſhed, to reconcile the minds of the people to the reformation, 220, 221. how ſtopped by the law of the ſix articles, 231. begins in Scotland, 241. the clergy all over Europe are thereby reduced to great difficulties, 245. the reformers obtain the Litany to be tranſlated into Engliſh, 271. the reformation is ſecretly favoured by Somerſet, 291. promoted by Cranmer's councils, 292. oppoſed by Gardiner, 293, 294, 295. makes great progreſs in Scotland, 298, 299. and farther progreſs of, in England, 306.

306. the mass translated into English, without the prayers to saints, and superstitious ceremonies, becomes the new liturgy, 315, 316. a further step towards a complete reformation, 316. the catholic preachers still inculcate the tenet of the real presence, 317. for which, a catholic bishop is sent to the Tower, ib. but the princess Mary, by the Emperor's interest, obtains a temporary forbearance from the reforming regency, 319. the reformation causes insurrections, 321 to 323, inclusive. the reformed preachers are silenced by the Queen's authority, 354. the reformation is undone by parliament, 356. the reformers in Germany fly to arms, and reduce the emperor to great difficulties, 358. a dispute between the reformers and romanists, 360. the roman mass is every where established, and the reformed clergy are deprived of their livings, 361. the Londoners favour the reformers, 363. several laws made against the reformers, 368. invincible obstacles appear against the resettlement of the papacy, 370, 371. proposals for a toleration of the reformed religion, are rejected, 377. a violent persecution of the professors of the reformed religion ensues, ib. history of this persecution, ib. to 382. with a severe persecution of the reformed in the Low-Countries, 382. in France, 383. more laws in behalf of papacy, 384. the reformed primate of Canterbury executed, 389, 390. the prerogative of Queen Elizabeth is exerted in behalf of the reformed, iv. 407. elections of members of the house of commons are favourable to the reformers, 408. a disputation between the catholic and reformed divines, 410. the reformed religion is again established in England, by law, ib. 411. the Scots catholics are deprived of a head, by the murder of the cardinal primate, 416. a league is formed among the Scots nobility, for supporting the reformation, 417. a reformation of religion is craved by the leaguers, in a petition to the Queen regent, 419. the reformed teachers are cited before the council, and declared rebels, ib. John Knox, from Geneva, arrives in Scotland, and supports the reformation there, 420. the Queen-regent assembles an army against the reformers, ib. the reformers address the Queen-regent, ib. 421, 422. a capitulation is formed between the reformers and the Queen-regent, 422. which is broke, and the reformers arm again, ib. headed by Knox; they besiege and take Perth, and force the regent to take shelter in Dunbar, 423. a toleration of the reformed religion is granted by a new capitulation, ib. the declaration of Scots reformed, recapitulated, 425. Queen Elizabeth interposes in behalf of the reformed in Scotland, and assembles a fleet and army to assist them, 426. the French sent into Scotland, to crush the reformation there, by treaty, evacuate it, 427. the reformation is established by an act of parliament in Scotland, 428. which the Queen refuses to ratify, 429. the reformation begins in France, 430. See *Hugonots*. the bigotry of the Scots reformers, 434, 435. how they behaved to the Queen when in Scotland, 435. what appellation she received from their ringleader, 436. how chagrined and insulted by him and the rest of the reformed, 437. the reason of the ill-nature of their clergy, 439. the methods used by the Queen, to secure herself against them, 440. they depress her by their mutinous behaviour, 442. the Queen again refuses to ratify the laws establishing the reformation, 461. a confederacy against the reformation is formed in France, 465. their preachers bear a great animosity against Mary Queen of Scots, 481.

Regicides, some tried, vi. 134. executed, 135. more tried, 150. executed, 151.

Religion, state of, under the Anglo-Saxons, i. 162. under William the Conqueror, 181, 182. when the crusades prevailed, 211. state of, before the reformation began, iii. 183. regulated by the parliament, 249, 250, 259, 260, 306, 307, 356. by the Scots parliament, iv. 428. state of, at the beginning of the reign of Charles I. v. 114. at the time of his imprisonment, 444. under the commonwealth, vi. 72. between the restoration and revolution, 447. insurrections on account of it, ii. 301. iii. 214 to 218, 222, 362, 363. iv. 418, 419, 420, 421, 423 to 427. v. 68, 69, 219. vi. 309. persecutions on account of it, iii. 229, 230, 273, 377 to 383.

Resolutioners, an account of them, vi. 28.

Restoration, of the royal family, vi. 116.

Requesens, succeeds Alva in the government of the Low-Countries, iv. 549. pursues the war against the reformed, 550. dies suddenly, 551.

Revenue, public, before William the Conqueror, i. 160. under the Norman kings, 413 to 420. how encreased in the reign of Edward I. ii. 124, 125. encreased by imposition of taxes, at the king's pleasure, 235. by parliamentary supplies, 275. ordinary, in Henry V's time, 321. extraordinary, ib. state of, in Queen Elizabeth's time, iv. 730. in the reign of James I. v. 117, 118. extraordinary, granted by parliament, amount of, during his whole reign, 118. during the commonwealth, vi. 122, 123. during the protectorate of Oliver Cromwell, 122. of Richard, 123. Settlement of, in Charles II's reign, 132, 133, 134. on James II. 377, 378. amount of, under Charles II. 444, 445. under James II. 445.

Revolution takes place, vi. 440.

Reynolds's insurrection, v. 29.

Rheims, a synod there, i. 259.

Rhine, palatinate of, the palatine, one of the protestant confederacy, iii. 296. made a prisoner by the emperor, and thereby detached from that confederacy, ib.

——— palatine of, maried to the princess Elizabeth, daughter of James I. v. 43. promoted to be king of Bohemia, 70. loses his kingdom, and the palatinate, 71. which is restored to the young palatine, by the treaty of Westphalia, vi. 62.

v.6

I N D E X.

Rhine, paſſage of, diſputed by Turenne, vi. 256.
Rhone, his converſation with Queen Elizabeth at Dover, iv. 702. the reſolution thereon taken, 703.
Richard, duke of Normandy, gives his ſiſter Emma in marriage to Ethelred, king of England, i. 99.
——— ſecond ſon and ſucceſſor of Henry II. king of England, is inveſted in his father's life-time, in the dutchies of Guienne and Poictou, i. 306. is prevailed on by his mother, to rebel againſt his father, 307. at a conference between his father and the French king, on that ſubject, he appears in the train of the latter, 310. accommodates his differences with his father, 315. renews his undutiful behaviour, 320. and by the death of his elder brother, becomes heir of his dominions, ib. ſubmits himſelf to his father, 32[illegible] holds a conference with the French king, [illegible] his requeſt invades the count of Thol[illegible]s, 323. conſequences of this [illegible] breach with his father, and ſuc[illegible]withſtanding of his being excom[illegible]'s legate, 324. his behavi[illegible] corpſe, 325. his pru[illegible] is father's throne, 331. d[illegible] ib. his coronation, [illegible] maſſacre of Jews, ib. [illegible]y for a cruſade, 333. [illegible] government of his kingdom, 334. his interview with [illegible]eement with him, relative [illegible], 335. the ſtrength of the [illegible]es at that period, compared, [illegible] of the French [illegible] dif[illegible]odated, [illegible] ib. his [illegible]l, and firſt [illegible]ces, in con[illegible]king, take Acre, [illegible] 342. his glory [illegible]e French king, [illegible]y over Saladin, emperor [illegible]. makes a truce with the muſſulmen, [illegible]ity of his temper, 345. on his return fro[illegible]e, is arreſted by Leopold, duke of Auſtria, ib. impriſoned, and loaded with irons, 346. preſented to the dyet of Ratiſbon, 348 where he defends himſelf againſt the French ambaſſadors, 348. concludes a treaty for his ranſom, 349. his arrival, and firſt tranſactions in England, 350. at Queen Eleanor's requeſt, pardons prince John, 351. a war breaks out between him and France, 352. and is concluded by a peace, ib. his death and character, 353. the price of ſeveral commodities in England at that time, 354. miſcellaneous tranſactions of his reign, ib. his ſeverity againſt tranſgreſſors of the foreſt laws, 335.

Richard II. a minor, grandſon of Edward III. declared ſucceſſor to the crown in parliament, ii. 230. comes a minor to the throne, 241. the plan of government, during his minority, ſettled by parliament, 242. the adminiſtration, how then conducted, 243. military operations in France, 244. an inſurrection of the populace, 245. the king takes ſhelter in the Tower, 246. ſuppreſſes the inſurrection, 247. makes war with Scotland, 248. a French fleet ſent out to invade England, is diſperſed, 249. the king, diſpleaſed with his parliament, withdraws from London, 250. but upon their application, returns, 251. grants a commiſſion to fourteen perſons, all of the duke of Gloceſter's faction, to exerciſe ſupreme authority for the ſpace of a year, 252. conſults the judges on the validity of this commiſſion, 253. aſſumes the exerciſe of the government, 257. makes a truce with France, 258. is affianced to Iſabella, princeſs of France, ib. ſummons a parliament, 261. with conſent of commiſſioners, appointed by parliament, to inſpect a trial by battle, 262. baniſhes the dukes of Hereford and Norfolk, 265. on the death of the duke of Lancaſter, ſeizes the Lancaſtrian eſtate, 266. goes to Ireland, 267. and on his return, is made a priſoner by the duke of Hereford, now alſo duke of Lancaſter, 268. compelled to ſign a reſignation, 269. a charge is brought againſt him in parliament, in order to his depoſition, 270. in conſequence of this charge, he is depoſed, 272. murdered, 274. his character, ib. the conduct of his reign compared with the former, 275. ſtrong ſymptoms appear of a general inclination to ſhake off the bondage of [illegible]me, 276. an account of a ſect called the Lollards, that appear in this reign, 277. a recapitulation of the laws made in this reign, to curb the new devices of churchmen, 279. a ſalutary law, with reſpect to pardons for murder or rapes, 281.
——— III. See *Gloceſter*, duke of.
Richlieu, cardinal, his character, v. 156. his enterpriſing genius, 179. he foments diviſions in Scotland, 225.
Ridley, biſhop of London, oppoſes Edward VI. on behalf of the princeſs Mary, iii. 333. is carried to Oxford, in order to diſpute with the romaniſts about tranſubſtantiation, 360. there burnt for hereſy, 379.
Richmond, earl of, Henry, his deſcent, ii. 432. his hiſtory, 433. a plot laid to bring him to the throne, is diſappointed, 434. his partizans fly abroad, 435. flock to him in Brittany, 436. the reception he met with in England, on his arrival, 437. he engages the king's army at Boſworth-field, 438. diſcomfits the royal army, and ſlays the king, 439. See *Henry* VII.
Right, petition of, prepared by the houſe of commons, v. 171. by the houſe of lords, 167. paſt in the houſe of commons, 171. a copy of it, ib. paſt in the houſe of Lords, 172. aſſented to by the king, 174. complaints that it was violated, 208.

Rinnucini, the pope's nuntio in Ireland, his conduct there, vi. 5. he ſummons an aſſembly of the popiſh clergy, 6. is drove out of Ireland, 7.

Riots, a ſevere act paſſed againſt them, iii. 329. revived, and enforced, 356.

Ripon, a negotiation there, between Engliſh and Scots commiſſioners, v. 241. transferred to London, 242. the reception which the Scots commiſſioners met with there, 256.

Rivers, earl, brother of Edward IV. and tutor of the prince of Wales, is arreſted, ii. 421. murdered, 424.

Rizzio, David, his character, iv. 466. is promoted to the place of ſecretary for French diſpatches to Queen Mary of Scotland, 460. is believed to be a penſionary of Rome, 467. is murdered, 468. his aſſaſſins acquitted, 469.

Robert, duke of Normandy, is ſucceeded by William, his natural ſon, commonly called the Conqueror, i. 122.

——— eldeſt ſon of the Conqueror, rebels againſt his father, i. 194. is reconciled to him, 195. carried with him into England, ib. ſucceeds him in the dutchy of Normandy, 203. his character, 204. his dutchy of Normandy is invaded by his brother William Rufus, 206. he comes to an accommodation with him, ib. obtains his aſſiſtance againſt his brother Henry, 207. repreſſes new broils in Normandy, 208. mortgages Normandy and Maine, to his brother William Rufus, 213. ſets out on a cruſade, ib. an account of his travels, 222. his younger brother Henry, poſſeſſes himſelf of the Engliſh throne, vacant by the death of his eldeſt brother, William Rufus, ib. on his return, he quietly ſteps into poſſeſſion of Normandy, 227. is invited by divers Engliſh noblemen, to mount the Engliſh throne, ib. in ſight of the army of his brother Henry in England, comes to an agreement with him, 228. his adherents in England are proſecuted by his brother, after his departure, 229. his adminiſtration in Normandy, 231. he is made a priſoner in a battle with his brother, 232. and confined in England for life, ib.

——— natural ſon of Henry I. ſwears fealty to king Stephen, under a reſervation, i. 251. the effect of this meaſure, ib.

Robbery, how puniſhed by the Anglo-Saxons, i. 157. how puniſhed by Henry II. 316. how frequent in the reign of Henry III. ii. 58. how frequent in the reign of Edward II. 155.

Rochel, a fleet and army ſent to relieve it, v. 158. they are defeated, 159. another expedition undertaken to relieve it, 176. it ſurrenders at diſcretion, 179.

Rocheſter, earl of, conſults Overbury about an amour, v. 46. cauſes him to be confined, 47. the conſequences of this ſtep, 48.

Rochford, viſcounteſs, iii. 247. beheaded on Tower-hill along with the Queen, 248.

Rocroi, battle of, vi. 65.

Rodorick O'Connor, king of Connaught. See *Connaught*.

Rohan, duke of, his raſhneſs, v. 159. how occaſioned, ib.

Rollo, a Dane, his expedition, i. 96. his firſt attempt, 97. his ſucceſs in France, 98. his reception at court, ib. his death, 99.

Romans, they invade Britain, i. 4. ſubdue it all but Caledonia, 7. deſert it, 8. diſregard the ſupplications of the Britains, entreating their return, 10.

Rome, ſtate of its court in Henry I's time, i. 231. ſtate of, in the pontificate of pope Alexander, 296. ſtate of, in the reign of Henry III. ii. 18. pope of, deſiſts from a claim of feudal ſubjection over England, 19. ſtate of the power of that court, in the reign of Henry III. 58. uneaſy at the appearance of reformation, 173. uſurpations of, complained of by the Engliſh laity, 237. their new devices guarded againſt by the parliament, 279.

——— church of, how founded, iii. 118. ſacked, 145. great violences there, 146. pope of, impriſoned, ib. power of, expelled England by Henry VIII. 178. re-introduced by Queen Mary, 370. finally expelled by Queen Elizabeth, iv. 406. See *Pope*, *Papacy*, and *Reformation*.

Rood of Grace, what, and when deſtroyed, iii. 221.

Roper, Sir Anthony, his trial, v. 204.

Roſewell, his trial, vi. 364. verdict againſt him, 365.

Roſſi's negotiation, v. 5.

Roundway down, battle of, v. 345.

Roſeturs, what, i. 308.

Royaliſts form an inſurrection, v. 446. are made priſoners, 447. ſtate of, at the commencement of the commonwealth, vi. 20. they form an inſurrection, 60. are quelled, ib. form another inſurrection, 86. which is diſcovered, ib. they conſpire againſt the long parliament reſtored, 98. are betrayed, 99. victory of, 335.

Rump. See *Parliament*.

Runnemonde, the great charter there granted for the firſt time, i. 386. recapitulation of, 387. agreed to be extended by the barons, to their inferior vaſſals, 388.

Rupert, prince, offers his ſervice to the king, v. 336. heads the royal army at Edgehill, 337. puts the parliament's army in an uproar, 346. takes Briſtol, 348. raiſes the ſiege of York, 369. is defeated at Marſton-moor, 370. adviſes the king to fight at Naſeby, 398. commands the royal vanguard there, 399. throws himſelf into Briſtol, 401. goes beyond the ſeas, ib. is made an admiral, vi. 34. makes ſail to America, ib. returns to France, where he ſells his ſhips, 35. after the reſtoration, acts as a vice-admiral, 164. ſuccours Albemarle flying, 170. beats the Dutch, ib. is declared an admiral, 231. beats de Ruyter, ib. is beaten by the Dutch at the mouth of the Texel, 233.

Ruſſel, lord, tried, vi. 356. condemned, 359. executed, 360.

v.6

Ruſſel, another, governor of Plymouth, commands at Bradoc-down, 343. eſcapes to Plymouth, 344.
Ruthven, a Scotſman, is created earl of Brentford, v. 372. promoted to the rank of a general, ib.
Rutland, earl, created duke of Albemarle, ii. 263. degraded from his ducal-title, 274. conſpires againſt Henry IV. 283. betrays his aſſociates, 284. preſents on a pole, to Henry IV. the head of his brother-in-law, lord Spenſer, ib.
——— another, attends the duke of Norfolk, in an expedition againſt Scotland, iii. 253.

S.

SA Pantalcon, don, a Portugueſe ambaſſador, hanged in London, vi. 56.
Sackville, Sir Robert, ſent to Eſſex houſe, and on what errand, iv. 696. effect of this meſſage, ib.
Safety, committee of, named, vi. 100. amuſed by Monk, 106.
Sadler, Sir Ralph, the Engliſh ambaſſador in Scotland, commences a negotiation there, for the marriage of the young Queen with the prince of Wales, iii. 256. his ſervants are inſulted, in order to bring on a rupture, ib. he ſummons all who had been made priſoners in England, to return into cuſtody, and comes home to England, 257. is made a counſellor to the regency of Edward VI. 288. aſſiſts in rallying the Engliſh cavalry at the battle of Pinkey, 303. appointed a commiſſioner to try the cauſe of Mary Queen of Scots, with the Scots nation, iv. 492.
——— Sir Philip, his death, iv. 738.
Saladin, king of Egypt, his character and ſchemes, i. 321. conquers Paleſtine, 322. throws a great garriſon into Acre, 339. is beaten at Aſcalon, by Richard II. 344. makes a truce with that prince, ib. dies, 345.
Salisbury, biſhop of, ſuſpended, i. 292. complains to the king at Baieux, 293. conſequences of, 294.
——— counteſs of, attainted, iii. 233. reprieved, ib. executed, 243.
——— Sir John, condemned to death by the houſe of peers, ii. 255.
Sallee, deſtroyed by an Engliſh fleet, v. 206.
Sanctuaries, number of, reſtrained by Henry VIII. iii. 281.
Sandilands, Sir James, his embaſſy to France, how received there, iv. 429.
Sandwich, his death, vi. 217.
Sanquire, a Scots nobleman, his crime and puniſhment, v. 42.
Sautre, William, rector of St. Oſithe's, London, the firſt Lollard burnt in England, ii. 285.
Savil, Sir John, his memorable promotion, v. 83.
Saxons, their character, i. 11. their civil government, 12. their entry into Britain, and ſucceſs againſt the Scots and Picts, 13. their quarrel with the Britains, 14. ſtate of, in Britain, at their firſt coming, 16. divided into South and Weſt Saxons, ib. are beaten by the Britains at Baden, 17. by whom then governed, ib. their ſettlement in Northumberland, 18. the heptarchy eſtabliſhed among them, ib. the ſource of union among their princes, 19. their ſuperſtitions, and antient religion, ib. 21. the chriſtian religion is introduced among them, 21. ſome of their kings return to paganiſm, 31. ſtate of, when the heptarchy was united in one great ſtate, 42. the corrupt ſpecies of chriſtianity which they received, 43. are addicted to the worſhip of images, 45.
Saxons, Anglo, or Anglo-Saxons, their kingdom erected in Britain, i. 46. their government, and rules of ſucceſſion to their crown, 142 to 146. how altered by the Norman invaſion, 147. the juriſdiction of their great lords, and their courts of juſtice, 151. their criminal law, 153. a collection of their moſt remarkable laws, 155. their fines for murder, how diverſified, 156. theft, how puniſhed, 157. and how treaſon and rebellion, ib. the reverence due to their kings, 160. and value of their money, ib. the value of divers commodities among them, 161. their method of dividing inheritances, 162. their manners, 163. their government, how mixed and changeable, 445. See *Anglo-Saxons*.
——— Jut Saxons, in Germany, perſecuted by Charlemagne, fly to Ireland, i. 46. aided by others from Jutland, they invade France and Britain, 47. their firſt landing in Britain, ib. See *Anglo-Saxons*.
——— South, or South-Saxons, kingdom of, eſtabliſhed in Britain, i. 16.
Scot, his trial, v. 135.
Scotland and *Scots*, Scots and Picts invade Britain, i. 10. are repulſed by Saxons, 13. make a treaty with them againſt the Britains, 14. Scotland is ſubdued by England, 73. king of, Conſtantine, aſſiſted by Danes, make an irruption into England, ib. king of, Malcolm, obtains a gift of the county of Cumberland, 75. a rebellion there, in which king Duncan is ſlain, 120. the rebellion ends, by the ſlaughter of Macbeth the rebel, 121. and in the reſtoration of Malcolm, Duncan's ſon, ib. who does homage to William the Conqueror, for Cumberland, 175. receives kindly Edgar Atheling and his ſiſters, ib. marries Margaret, Edgar's eldeſt ſiſter, 176. comes into England, to aſſiſt Edgar in a renewed attempt, 178. carries him and his followers back into Scotland, ib. is repulſed in another attempt on England, 196. flain in another againſt it, 207. and to him, his brother Donald ſucceeds, ib. who is dethroned by Duncan, a natural ſon of Malcolm's, 208. king of, William, confederates with France againſt England, and invades the latter kingdom, 311. agrees to a ceſſation of arms, 312. in an after invaſion, is made a priſoner, 313. his humiliating treaty with Henry II. 315. the treaty is ſtrictly executed, 316. the

the vaſſalage of Scotland, obtained by this treaty, is releaſed for a ſum of money, by Richard I. 334. king of, Alexander, receives, and on what terms, the flying Engliſh barons, 392. on the death of Alexander III. Margaret, maid of Norway, is declared Queen of Scotland, ii. 69. her death, and enſuing competition for the crown, 70. ſtate of that competition, ib. 71. it is referred for determination to the king of England, 72. what benefit the Engliſh king expected from accepting this reference, ib. an examination of the Engliſh claim to feudal homage for the kingdom of Scotland, 73, 74. Mr. Carte's notion thereto relative, examined, 75. the behaviour of the Scots nobles, in preſence of the Engliſh king, at Norham, 76. their reply to Edward's demand there, 77. commiſſioners are named, to conſider the names of the competitors, 78. an award is pronounced in favour of Baliol, 79. he is provoked to rebel, by Edward's humiliating demands, 80. an alliance with France is confirmed, by a ſtipulated marriage between the prince of Scotland, and the daughter of Philip of Valois, 84. king of, John, refuſes obedience to the Engliſh king's citations, 95. an account of hoſtilities between the two nations, 96. Scotland is ſubdued, and put under the government of earl Warrenne, 97. France deſerts the Scots alliance, 107. Wallace's character, 108. who inſtigates the Scots to revolt, ib. and after defeating the Engliſh, is choſen regent of Scotland, 110. the Scots army, commanded by Wallace, is routed by the Engliſh army, commanded by the king in perſon, at Falkirk, 111. a conference between young Bruce and Wallace, 112. Scotland is again ſubdued by England, 113. the pope in vain interpoſes in behalf of the Scots, 114. the Scots, under Cummin, chace away the Engliſh government, 115. Scotland is again reduced by Edward in perſon, 116. and Sir William Wallace is taken, and ſuffers as a traitor in London, ib. character of young Robert Bruce, ſon of the competitor for the Scots crown, 117. he informs Cummin, and others, of his reſolution to ſave his country, 118. kills John Cummin the regent, 119. an account of the enſuing revolt and defeat of the Scots, 120. they gain ſome advantages under Bruce's command, 126. Bruce, after ſome further ſucceſſes, makes a truce with the Engliſh king, Edward II. 133. Scotland is again invaded by a mighty army of the Engliſh, headed by their king, 134. which is defeated by Bruce at Bannockburn, 135. the Scots army ravages the northern counties of England, 136. a truce for thirteen years, is made between Edward and Bruce, 144. the Scots, headed by Murray and Douglas, invade England, 157. a deſcription of their equipage, ib. their tranſactions in England, 158. are forced to retreat into their own country, 159. a treaty of peace between England and Scotland, ratified in parliament, ib. David, a minor, ſucceeds his father in the Scots throne, 162. a battle between the Engliſh and him, near the river Erne, by which Baliol recovers the kingdom, 162, 163. troubles about the eſtates of Engliſhmen in Scotland, 163. Baliol's coronation and expulſion, 165. a war breaks out between Scotland and England, 166. and Baliol is once more received as king, 167. another war with England on his account, ib. 168. his ſecond expulſion, 168. king David's army is routed, and the king is taken and carried a priſoner to the Tower, 201. ſet at liberty, 215. ſtate of, at the death of Edward III. 244. a battle between the Engliſh under Piercy, and the Scots under Douglas, at Otterburn, 258. between the ſame at Homeldon, 387. the prince of Scotland falls into the hands of king Henry IV. 291. and the Scots king, Robert, dies of grief, 292. the regency of the duke of Albany, uncle of the king, commences, ib. a confederacy between Scotland and France againſt England, 311. the regent ſends ſuccours to the Orleans party in France, 317. a new regent, Murdoc, ſon of the former, ſends more ſuccours to France, 326. ſtate of, immediately before James I. of Scotland, at his acceſſion a priſoner in England, was ſet at liberty, 327. ſtate of, when Henry VI. fled hither with his Queen, 387. the Engliſh impoſtor, Warbec, flies to the court of the Scots king, iii. 43. the reception he met with, ib. 44. king of, in ſupport of the impoſtor, invades England, 91. is routed at Flouden, and never after heard of, 92. the Queen-dowager is made regent, 93. depoſition of the Queen-dowager, and election of the duke of Albany in her place, 99. the then ſtate of Scotland, ib. an account of the riſe of many differences in that kingdom, 100. the arrival of the duke of Albany from France, and his adminiſtration, ib. the duke of Albany's return to France, and hiſtory of, in his abſence, 101. the regent returns to Scotland, and makes a truce with England, 125. an Engliſh invaſion, during a ſecond abſence of the regent in France, ib. 126. his warlike operations againſt England, when he comes back to Scotland, 127. retires again to France, and never returns, ib. the reformation begins there, and is promoted by the Hamiltons ſteady ſufferings, 244. ſpreads, 245. the clergy offer the king a free gift, and invite him to enrich himſelf with the ſpoils of heretics, 246. the king of England reſolves on war with Scotland, 252. which is ſoon after invaded by an Engliſh army, 253. the rout of Solway, 254. and death of king James V. ib. the ſcheme of an union with England, is formed by the marriage of the prince of Wales with the young Queen of Scots, 255. a treaty with England is made for that purpoſe, 256. a new rupture, 257. the cuſtody of the young Queen is entruſted with the heads of four potent families, ib. the differences between the families of Arran and Lennox, 261. a civil war thereby occaſioned, 262. an Engliſh invaſion repulſed, 264. and

v.6

and Lenox's flight into England, ib. the reaſon why the Engliſh forces then ſo ſpeedily left Scotland, 265. is comprehended in a treaty of peace between France and England, 270. Wiſhart promotes the reformation in Scotland, 297. his martyrdom, 298. cardinal Beaton's aſſaſſination, ib. 299. the then ſtate and misfortune of Scotland, 299. St. Andrews is beſieged, where Beaton's murderers have retired, ib. it is ſurrendered, 300. a plague then in Scotland, ib. an Engliſh invaſion concerted againſt Scotland, ib. the invaders enter Scotland, with the protector at their head, 301. the battle of Pinkey begins, 302. continues with various ſucceſs, 303. is decided in favour of the Engliſh, ib. 304 further progreſs of the Engliſh arms, and return of the protector to England, 304. Haddington taken, and garriſoned by the Engliſh, 307. propoſals in parliament, to ſend the young Queen to France, 308. French gold in plenty there, 309. the young Queen is ſent to France, ib. more military exploits between England and Scotland, ib. a tumult between French and Scots ſoldiers in Edinburgh, wherein the provoſt is ſlain, 310. Scotland reaps benefit from the inteſtine diviſions that then prevailed in England, ib. the plague makes great havock in Scotland, and ſtops the military operations there, 323. a peace with England, 324. the Queen-dowager makes a journey to France, 394. an account of the great men that go in her train, ib. her return, and entrance on the regency, 395. commiſſioners are ſent from the parliament of Scotland, to aſſiſt at the young Queen's marriage with the Dauphin, 396. the marriage contract made, and marriage ſolemnized, 397. Queen of, is conſidered by Queen Elizabeth as her moſt inveterate enemy, iv. 416. a ſet of reformers, known by the name of the Congregation of the Lord, appears there, 417. Mill burnt there for hereſy, 418. ſubſcriptions for a league againſt popery, 419. the arrival of John Knox there, 420. the Queen-regent, and Congregation, arm againſt each other, ib. meſſages and remonſtrances between the belligerant parties, 421. a capitulation and breach of it, complained of, 422. churches and monaſteries deſtroyed by the inſurgents, 423. and the Queen-regent takes ſhelter in Dunbar, ib. new articles of capitulation, ib. ſoldiers and divines arrive from France, to combat the reformers, 424. who ſend meſſengers to Queen Elizabeth, demanding ſuccours, 425. a treaty of mutual defence is concluded between Queen Elizabeth and the reformers, 426. relief comes to them from England, ib. 427. the French, by treaty with the Engliſh ambaſſadors, evacuate Scotland, 427. the union between England and the Scots reformers is made more compleat, 428. a confeſſion of faith, agreeable to the new doctrines, is ratified by the parliament there, ib. and an embaſſy is ſent to France for the Queen's ratification of theſe proceedings, which is refuſed, 429. again refuſed to Queen Elizabeth's ambaſſador, 431. the Queen is invited back to Scotland, 432. her arrival there, 433, 434. her reception there from the reformers, 434, 435. a converſation there, between Knox and the Queen, 436. an uproar in Edinburgh, occaſioned by ſome differences between the Queen's uncle and a ſtrumpet, 437, 438. the then ſtate of the Scots clergy, 439. an embaſſy from the Queen of Scots, to Queen Elizabeth, 440. how anſwered, 441. divers ſuitors to the Queen of Scots, how regarded, 443. See *Mary*, Queen of Scots. marriage of the Queen and Darnley, 462. an inſurrection thereby cauſed, ib. the inſurgents are encouraged by the Engliſh ambaſſador, 463. take ſhelter in England, ib. the purport of a French embaſſy to the Queen, 464. Rizzio's murder there, 468. lord Darnly's murder, 473. marriage of the Queen and Bothwell, 479. an inſurrection, which occaſions Bothwell's flight, 482. and the Queen's confinement, ib. 483. the Queen's reſignation, 486. Murray's regency commences, ib. See *Murray*, earl of. Queen Mary's flight into England, 488. commiſſioners appointed to examine her affair, 492. Murray's aſſaſſination, 517. Mary's triumphant party in Scotland, ib. Marr's ſhort regency, 540. Morton's regency commences, ib. Queen Mary's party ſubdued, 541, Morton's reſignation, 558. he is afterwards perſuaded to retain the government, 559. his trial and death, 560. Gowries conſpiracy, 570. the king's delivery and aſſumption of the government, 571. Queen Mary's trial commences, 601. ſentence, 607. interpoſition of her ſon in her favour, 613. her execution, 617 to 622. king of, becomes king of England, by Queen Elizabeth's death, 714. his departure from Edinburgh, and arrival in London, v. 2. ſtate of, after the acceſſion of the Scots king to the Engliſh crown, 55. viſited by its monarch, ib. the then ſtate of the Scots church, 58. ceremonies, ſome received there, 60. viſited by Charles I. 202. diſcontents there, 216. liturgy introduced there, 218. tumults there, 219. covenant there, 221. an aſſembly there, 223. acts of, 224. money ſent thither from France, 225. ſoldiers enliſted there, and an army raiſed, ib. a pacification, 228. military preparations renewed, 230. entry into England, and the battle of Newburn upon Tyne, 240. meſſengers ſent from the Scots army to the king, ib. the firſt meeting of the commiſſioners at Rippon, 241. the treaty is tranſferred to London, 242. the Scots army levies contributions in England, 255. commiſſioners of, their reception in London, 256. the Scots army is paid off, and diſbanded, 283. Scotland is again viſited by Charles I. ib. parliament of, ſends commiſſioners to treat with the Engliſh parliament, 294. conſervators of the peace, ſummon a convention in Scotland, 358. ſolemn league and covenant there, 359. an army is levied, 360. which enters England, ib. blockades York, 371. takes that

that city, ib. ſtate of, in 1645, 390. the Scots army receives the king at Newark, 410. delivers him to the parliament's army, 415. is diſbanded, ib. ſtate of Scotland in 1648, 438. commiſſioners of, declare for the king, 439. a Scots invaſion of England prepared, 440. the army is defeated at Preſton, 446. ſtate of, at the demiſe of Charles I. vi. 4. commiſſioners of, at Breda, 14. the king's arrival there, 20. an aſſembly there, 21. ſtate of the king's authority there, 22. the promotion of Leſly, to the chief command of the Scots army there, 24. battle of Dunbar, 25. Cromwell at Edinburgh, ib. ſtate of the king's affairs there, 26. his arrival in the Scots camp at Torwood, 27. the army marches haſtily ſouthwards, 28. is defeated at Worceſter, 29. Scotland is ſubdued by Monk, 36. united to the commonwealth of England, 37. Cromwell's adminiſtration there, 76. ſtate of, at the reſtoration, 139. proceedings of a parliament there, 140. rigorous execution of the new laws, 189. an inſurrection there, 190. ſtate of, at the peace of Nimeguen, 265. arbitrary meaſures purſued there, 269. writs of intercommuning againſt conventiclers, 273. noblemen, and landed gentlemen, forbid to depart the kingdom, ib. complaint of the Scots diſcontented lords at London, 274. ſtate of, towards the end of king Charles II's reign, 307. another inſurrection there, 308. the battle of Bothwell bridge there, 309. indemnity there granted, 310. the duke of York there, 343. ſtate of, in 1681, 344. extreme ſeverities there, 346. the cauſe of theſe ſeverities, 347. ſtate of, at the time of Argyle's invaſion, 387. ſtate of, in 1686, 396. ſtate of, when the prince of Orange landed at Torbay, 428. the revolution convention there ſummoned, 434. the crown, and regal dignity, are offered to the prince and princeſs of Orange, and their heirs, 435.

Scriptures, a new tranſlation of them by Tindal, iii. 187. by Henry VIII. 202.

Sutages, what, and when dropt, i. 124.

Seafights, between French and Engliſh, on the coaſt of Brittany, iii. 81. off Breſt, 86, 87. off the iſle of Wight, 268. between Engliſh and Spaniards, in the channel, iv. 638, 639. at Dover, vi. 40. at Plymouth, 41. in the Mediterranean, ib. on the coaſt of Kent, ib. at the Goodwin, ib. in the channel, 42. on the coaſt of Holland, 55. at the Canaries, 70. between the duke of York and Obdam, 164. at the mouth of the Thames, 170. at Solebay, 217. on the coaſt of Holland, 231. at the mouth of the Texel, 232.

Seamen, number of, in Queen Elizabeth's reign, iv. 632.

Security, parliamentary, debt firſt contracted on it, iv. 384.

Sedgemoor, battle of, vi. 382.

Seneffe, battle of, vi. 241.

Serfs, their nature, i. 404.

Severus, emperor, makes addition to the wall built by Adrian, i. 7.

Seymour, Jane, married to Henry VIII. iii. 209. her iſſue included in the entail of the crown, 210. brings forth a prince, and dies in childbed, 218.

——— lord Ewdard, ſon of the protector, loſes his horſe at the battle of Pinkey, iii. 303. is repulſed in an attempt on Fife, 309.

——— Sir Edward, created earl of Hertford, iii. 218. choſen protector by the executors of Henry VIII's will, 289. and created duke of Somerſet, ib. his ambition on the removal of Southampton, 290. his great authority, how ſubmitted to, 291. his ſtrenuous endeavours to compleat the reformation, ib. 292. is guided by Cranmer's councils, 292. is oppoſed by the biſhop of Wincheſter, 293, 294. appoints a general viſitation of all the dioceſes in England, ib. protects the reformation abroad, 295. prepares to invade Scotland, and why, 300. invades it, and prepares for a deciſive action, 301. engages the Scots army at Pinkey, 302. routs them, 303. on his return to London, ſummons a parliament, 304. conſents to a repeal of the ſtatute equaliſing proclamations to laws, and to divers ſtatutes promoting the reformation, 305. in council, iſſues divers orders in behalf of the reformation, 306, 307. orders Haddington in Scotland to be fortified and garriſoned with Engliſh troops, 307. raiſes an army to make a conqueſt of Scotland, 309. and gives the command of it to the earl of Shrewſbury, 310. diſcovers his brother, the admiral's cabals againſt him, 311. is reconciled to him, 312. on new diſcoveries, deprives him of his office of admiral, and ſends him to the Tower, 313. promotes a bill of attainder againſt his brother, 314. obtains it to be paſſed, and orders his execution, 315. grants, in council, a commiſſion to the primate and others, to ſearch for anabaptiſts and all heretics, 318. diſcontents appear againſt his government, 319, 320. which are followed by inſurrections, 321. ſends lord Ruſſel at the head of an army againſt them, and the earl Warwic with another, and quells them, 322, 323. grants a general indemnity, 323. diſmantles Haddington, and orders the artillery to be brought to Berwick, ib. a war breaks out with France, ib. 324. but diſappointed of aſſiſtance from the Emperor, deſires to conclude a peace with France and Scotland, 324, 325. factions ariſe in the council againſt him, 325. a conſpiracy is there formed againſt him, 326. reſigns the protectorſhip, and is ſent to the Tower, 327. is ſucceeded in power by the earl of Warwic, 327, 328. is ſet at liberty, and re-admitted into the council, 328. ſent by the council to try Gardiner's temper, 330. his ruin is reſolved on by the earl of Northumberland, 335. is arreſted, and brought to trial, 336. condemned, and executed, 337. character of, ib.

Seymour, Sir Francis, his behaviour in parliament, v. 161, 162.

v.6

Seymour, Sir Thomas, made a councillor to the regency of Edward VI. iii. 288. created Lord Seymour, and promoted to the office of lord high admiral, 289. the Engliſh fleet, under his command, makes a deſcent on the coaſt of Scotland, and is repulſed, 309. character of, 311. cabals againſt his brother the protector, ib. is diſcovered, and ſeemingly reconciled to him, 312. is arreſted, and by his brother's intereſt a bill of attainder is brought into parliament againſt him, 314. he is attainted, and executed, 315.

Sforza, Ludovico. See *Ludovico* and *Milan*.

——— Maximilian. See *Maximilian* and *Milan*.

——— Francis, obtains the inveſtiture of Milan, iii. 165. dies without iſſue, 196.

Shafteſbury, earl of, leaves the court party, and why, vi. 230. adheres cloſely to the country party, 301. his opinion of the bill of excluſion, 302. he preſents the duke of York to the grand jury of Middleſex for recuſancy, 317. is accuſed of high treaſon, 341. acquitted, 342. engages in the duke of Monmouth's conſpiracy, 352. dies, 353.

Shakeſpear, his character, vi. 149.

Sharp, doctor, promoted to the archbiſhopric of St. Andrews, vi. 141. murdered, 308.

Sheep, price of, in Edward II's reign, ii. 152. ſtate of, in Henry VIII's reign, iii. 285.

Sherborn, biſhop of Chicheſter, oppoſes Cranmer, iii. 211.

Sheriffs, a new nomination of them, vi. 348. effects of, 342.

Ship, firſt of the royal navy built, iii. 66.

Ship-money, firſt levied in England, i. 101. on maritime towns, v. 152. on the whole kingdom, 203. writs for, ſelf-contradictory, 212. decreed for, by all the judges of England, 213. declared illegal by the houſe of commons, 254.

Shipping, ſtate of, in Edward III's reign, ii. 238. decay of, then, what aſcribed to, 239. ſtate of, in Queen Elizabeth's reign, iv. 733.

Shires, deputies from, firſt ſummoned to parliament, ii. 46.

Shirley, Sir Thomas, his caſe, vi. 244.

Shore, Jane, accuſed of ſorcery in the council, ii. 424. her hiſtory, 425. her fate, 426.

Shrewſbury, battle of, ii. 288, 289.

——— earl of, raiſes forces without a commiſſion, to quell inſurgents againſt Henry VIII. iii. 216. attends the duke of Norfolk in an expedition againſt Scotland, 253. commands againſt the Scots, by a commiſſion from Somerſet the protector, 310.

——— earl of, added to the privy-council, when the Queen of Scotland's caſe is under their conſideration, iv. 500. appointed to ſee the ſentence againſt her executed, 617. informs that princeſs of his orders, ib. attends the execution, 619 to 622.

Sidney, Algernon, tried, vi. 361. condemned, and executed, 362.

Sidney, Sir Hugh, made governor of Ireland, iv. 676. his adminiſtration there, ib. recalled, 680.

——— Sir Philip, his letter to Queen Elizabeth, when her marriage with the duke of Anjou was propoſed, iv. 568, 569. his death, celebrated by James I. then king of Scotland, 589.

——— Sir Robert, ſent to Scotland on an embaſſy, iv. 633.

Silver, value of, in Henry VIII's reign, iii. 56. See *Money*.

——— box of, intercepted, containing letters of Mary Queen of Scots, and produced againſt her, iv. 497.

Simnel, Lambert, his hiſtory, iii. 12. is received in Ireland, as earl Warwic, and proclaimed king, 13. is taken, and made ſcullion, 17.

Simon, Richard, a prieſt, raiſes an inſurrection againſt Henry VIII. iii. 12. is taken priſoner, 17. but not to be tried, and why, in a court of law, ib.

Sindercomb condemned, vi. 87.

Sintzeim, battle of, vi. 251.

Siward, duke of Northumberland, his hiſtory, i. 120. his death, 121.

Six articles of religion. See *Articles*.

——— biſhops. See *Biſhops*.

Skimer's caſe, vi. 196.

Slaves, how divided among the Anglo-Saxons, i. 151.

Sleda, king of Eſſex, dies, i. 36. his poſterity hold that kingdom, till it is ſubdued by Egbert, the founder of the Engliſh monarchy, ib.

Smalcalde, a league there made among the proteſtant princes of the empire, iii. 165. forced into a war with the emperor, 296.

Smyrna fleet attacked, vi. 212. it repulſes the Engliſh, 213.

Soldiers, common, their pay in Edward III's reign, ii. 239. in Henry V's time, 321.

Solebay, a ſea-fight there, vi. 217.

Somerſet, earl of, created, ii. 258. preſents an appeal againſt the duke of Gloceſter, 262. made marquis of Dorſet, 263.

——— duke of, enters into cloſe connections with the Queen of Henry VI. ii. 344. ſucceeds to Suffolk's power in the miniſtry, 366. ſent to the Tower, 373. releaſed, and ſlain at the battle of St. Albans, 374.

——— duke of. See *Seymour*, Sir Edward.

——— duke of, his riſe, v. 43. his fall, 52.

——— duke of, a lord of the bed-chamber, diſmiſſed from all his employments, vi 403.

Soubiſe, his negotiation at London, v. 158.

Southampton, earl of, created, iii 218.

——— another created, iii. 289. See *Wriotheſley*.

——— puts the great ſeal in commiſſion, 290. is deprived of his office of chancellor, fined, and confined, ib. is put out of the council, 291. by whom his credit with the protector was ſubverted, 313. meets at Ely-houſe with Warwic, and others, who aſſume the power of the council, 326. and force Somerſet to reſign, 327. he ſoon after dies of grief, 328.

Southampton,

Southampton, made general of the horſe by Queen Elizabeth, iv. 689. meets with male-contents at Drury-houſe, 696. appears at Eſſex houſe among the conſpirators there, 697. arraigned, and condemned, 498. his life is ſpared, 701. detained in priſon, for privately marrying Eſſex's couſin, 724.

Spain, becomes formidable by the union of Arragon and Caſtile, iii. 18. and by its union with the Low-Countries, occaſioned by the acceſſion of Charles, ſon of the emperor Maximilian, and the heireſs of Burgundy, to the Spaniſh throne, 74. and by the election of the Spaniſh monarch to the imperial dignity, 109. war between Spain and France breaks out, 114. army of, beſieges Bayonne in France, but is conſtrained to raiſe the ſiege, 132. expells the French out of Italy, 133. routs the French army at Pavia, and takes the king priſoner, 136. a treaty between Spain and France, 144. whereby the French king recovers his liberty, ib. war with France and England, 148. a general peace re-eſtabliſhed, 164. Spain enriched, by the conqueſt of Mexico and Peru, 165. by the Spaniſh king's influence with the pope, Pole is created a cardinal, 225. enters into an alliance with England againſt France, 258. which gives riſe to a new war, ib. military operations of a Spaniſh army, joined with the Engliſh, againſt France, 260. military operations of, againſt France, 265. peace with France, 266. makes war with the proteſtant princes of Germany, 296. ſuffers great loſſes by that war, 358. Philip, prince of, married to Mary, Queen of England, 361. his marriage celebrated in Weſtminſter, 369. acceſſion of Philip to the throne of Spain, and other dominions of his father, 386. a truce with France, broke by the French king, at the ſolicitation of the pope, 388. in which war, England joins with Spain againſt France, 391. negotiations for peace with France begun, 400. end in a peace, and marriage of the Spaniſh king with a princeſs of France, 414. perſecution of heretics, in the dominions of Spain begins, 446. king of ſupports the national religion of France, 448. Forms a ſecret treaty with the houſe of Guiſe for that purpoſe, 449. a treaty of peace between Spain and England, 535. the revolt of Holland and Zealand, and other towns and provinces in the Low Countries, 548, 549. mutinies in the Spaniſh army in the Low Countries, 551. a Spaniſh invaſion of Ireland, 560. Portugal added to Spain, 586. plantations of, pillaged by Drake, 588. an engagement between the Engliſh and Spaniſh armies in the Low-Countries, 589. fleet of, deſtroyed at Cadiz, 627. great preparations in Spain for an invaſion of England, 629. their armada defeated, 639. fleet of, takes an Engliſh man of war, 642. which is the firſt they ever took, ib. war between Spain and France, 661. peace between France and Spain, 671. Spaniards arrive in Ireland, to ſupport the rebels there, 704. expulſion of, 705. depredations of, complained of in England, v. 29. a truce between Spain and Holland, 30. negotiation with England, about marriage and the Palatinate, 71. the prince of Wales there, and careſſed by the Spaniſh monarch, 92. allowed to return, 93. a remarkable diſcourſe between the king of Spain and the earl of Briſtol, 101. war with England and Holland, 103. an expedition from England againſt Spain, 143. peace with England, 189. acts of hoſtility between England and Spain, vi. 66. war declared, 69. galleons of, taken, ib. armies of, defeated at Dunes, by the combined armies of France and England, 84. peace between France and Spain, 102. war breaks out again between theſe two powers, 182. peace again, 186. the king of, aſſiſts Holland againſt France, 227. unites with Holland and other powers, in a grand confederacy againſt France, 413.

Spalato, archbiſhop of, turns proteſtant, v. 133.

Spenſer, Hugh, his character, ii. 137. he becomes the king's favourite, and the object of the hatred of the barons, 138. effects of his avarice, ib. he, with his father, is baniſhed by the parliament, 139. recalled by the king, 140. more inſtances of his avarice, 141. his father executed by the Queen's party, 145. he undergoes the ſame fate, 146. a detail of old Spenſer's loſſes in an inſurrection, 153. remarks on this detail, 154.

——— lord, is created earl of Gloceſter, ii. 263. degraded, 274. conſpires againſt Henry IV. 283. ſlain, 284.

——— an author, his character, iv. 738, 739.

Spicer, Mr. his ſpeech in the houſe of commons, touching the prerogative, iv. 708.

Stacy, an eccleſiaſtic, his crime and puniſhment, iv. 724.

Stafford, earl of, tried, vi. 325. condemned, 326. executed, 327.

Staffords, Sir Humphrey and Thomas, head an inſurrection, iii. 10. the eldeſt is executed at Tyburn, 11. and the other flies to a ſanctuary, ib.

St. Albans, firſt battle of, ii. 374. ſecond battle of, 384.

St. Andrews, beſieged by the Queen-regent's party, iii. 289. ſurrendered, 300.

Stanley, lord, accuſed by Clifford, as an abetter of Warbeck's impoſture, iii. 38. condemned and executed, 39.

Star-Chamber, court of, authority of, extended to the deciſion of private cauſes, ii. 235. how founded, iii. 61. ſtate of, in Queen Elizabeth's reign, iv. 717. how they uſed their priſoners, 719. ſtate of, under James I. v. 109. ſeverities of, 199. pronounces judgment againſt Prynne, 201. againſt Sir Anthony Roper, 204. Aliſon, &c. ib. againſt diſobeyers of proclamations, 205. condemns Baſtwick and Burton, 206. fines the biſhop of Lincoln, 209. prohibits

v.6

prohibits vintners to ſell or dreſs victuals in their houſes, ib. obliges them to compound for diſobedience, 210. puniſhes Lilburn, ib. ſentences of, are reverſed in parliament, 253. it is aboliſhed, 280.

State, council of, its riſe, vi. 3. its authority, 33.

Stealing. See *Theft*.

Stephen, a younger ſon of Adela, daughter of William the Conqueror, character of, i. 248. he is crowned king of England, 249. grants a new charter to his ſubjects, ib. the methods he took to enſure his throne, 250. violates the privileges of his ſubjects, 252. repulſes a Scots invaſion, ib. obliges a nobleman and a biſhop to give up their fortreſſes, 253. is ſummoned to appear before a ſynod at Weſtminſter, ib. falls out with his clergy, 254. is made a priſoner in battle with the empreſs Matilda's partizans, 255. is exchanged for earl Robert, her brother, 258. his party is laid under a papal interdict, 259. effects of, ib. makes a compromiſe with Henry, Matilda's eldeſt ſon, 260. dies, ib. his character, 261.

Stigard, archbiſhop of Canterbury, encourages the Engliſh to oppoſe the Normans, i. 65. is not allowed to be preſent at the coronation of William the Conqueror, 167. character, 181. he is degraded by the pope's legate, 182.

St. John, knights of, obtain the poſſeſſion of the knights templars, ii. 151.

St. Omers, battle of, v. 352.

Stow, battle of, v. 484.

St. Thomas, of Canterbury, legend of, iii. 221, 222.

St. Paul's Church, repaired, v. 99.

St. Quintin, battle of, iii. 93.

Strafford, earl of, made preſident of the council of York, v. 192. lord lieutenant of Ireland, ib. and general of the army againſt the Scots, 241. his conduct, 245. he is impeached, 246. thrown into the Tower, 249. a committee of both houſes, prepare a charge againſt him, 264. privy counſellors examined againſt him, 265. articles of impeachment drawn up againſt him, 266. they are repelled by his apology, 268. a bill of attainder is brought into the houſe of commons againſt them, 273. the methods uſed to make it paſs, ib. a new diſcovery that then happened, greatly contributes towards the ſucceſs of this meaſure, 274. the then circumſtances of the houſe of lords, 275. the bill paſſes that houſe, ib. a fatal ſtep taken by Strafford, 276. the king conſents to the bill, 277. the earl is executed, 278.

Stratford, archbiſhop, diſobliges king Edward III. ii. 181. his conduct on the king's landing from France, 182. is reconciled to the king, 183.

Strickland's motion for a reformation of the liturgy, how received, iv. 522. how agreeable to Queen Elizabeth, ib.

Strigul, earl of, his agreement with the king of Leinſter, i. 301. makes himſelf maſter of Dublin, 302. becomes poſſeſſed of the kingdom of Leinſter, by his marriage with the heireſs, ib. routs the king of Connaught's army, 303. is ſo overawed by Longchamp, that he dares not produce the king's mandate, appointing him counſelor to that nobleman, 341. aſſiſts John to mount the Engliſh throne, 357. now earl of Pembroke, lays a plan for the relief of Chateau Gaillard, 364. is diſappointed, 365.

Stuart, his correſpondence with Fagel, v. 415.

Subſidies and *Fifteenths*, the king conſents that they be diſpoſed of by a committee of parliament, v. 98. riſe of, 118, 119. changed into a land tax, 119. four for the laſt time voted, vi. 157.

Succeſſion of the crown, ſettled in Henry VIII's time, by act of parliament, iii. 232, 233. further ſettlement of, 262. changed by patent, 343, 344. another ſettlement of, 356.

Suetonius, Paulinus, made governor of Britain, i. 5. his adminiſtration, 6. recalled, ib.

Suffolk, earl of, chancellor of England, impeached by the houſe of commons, i. 250. the frivolous charge brought againſt him, 251. deprived of his office, 252.

——— another, appointed commander of the Engliſh army beſieging Orleans, ii. 333. obtains a large convoy of proviſions for the uſe of the beſiegers, 334. dares not venture to attack the convoy directed by the Maid of Orleans, for the uſe of the town, 338. his army is daunted, 339. he is made a priſoner, 341. diſpatched to Tours, to negotiate a peace, 353. promotes the king's marriage with Margaret of Anjou, 354. in conjunction with the Queen and Wincheſter's partizans, reſolves on the duke of Gloceſter's ruin, 355. is promoted to the ducal dignity, ib. becomes the object of public hatred, 363. his defence, when impeached, 364. he is baniſhed the kingdom, 366. murdered, ib.

——— duke of, hiſtory of, iii. 57. conſpires againſt Henry VII. and leaves the kingdom, 58. returns, and is committed to the Tower, 59. beheaded, 88.

——— duke of, created, iii. 93. marries Margaret, the Queen dowager of France, and younger ſiſter of Henry VIII. 96. is offended with the king, and retires from court, 98. commands in an expedition againſt France, 131. is one of the jury that tries and condemns Ann Boleyn, 207. commands forces againſt inſurgents, 215. remonſtrates againſt the cruelty of the ſix articles, 234. his ſpouſe, the Queen dowager, dies, 270. dies, 348.

——— duke of, ſon of the former, accompanies the duke of Northumberland at the proclamation of lady Jane Gray, iii. 349. is taken into cuſtody, and recovers his liberty, 352. engages in a conſpiracy againſt Queen Mary, and ſecretly leaves London, 362. is brought back a priſoner, 363. tried, condemned, and executed, 366.

——— earl of, created, v. 45.

Sultan, Solyman, his negotiation with the king of France, diſcovered by that monarch to the king of Spain, iii. 241. information of this perfidy ſent to the Sultan by the king of Spain, 242.

Sunderland, earl of, made ſecretary of ſtate, vi. 300. favours the excluſioniſts, 320. is brought again into the adminiſtration, ib. is continued by James II. 375.

Surrey, earl of, is made treaſurer, iii. 70. character of, ib. is ſent to the borders, to put them in a poſture of defence, 84. commands the main body of the Engliſh, at the battle of Flouden, 92. is created duke of Norfolk, 93. See *Norfolk*.

——— eldeſt ſon of the former, obtains the title of earl of Surry, iii. 93. is made admiral of the Spaniſh dominions, 123. commands in an invaſion of France, 125. but cannot make himſelf maſter of one place, ib. attends the king in an expedition againſt France, 265. is left in France, behind the king, and made governor of Boulogne, 276. his trial, character, and execution, ib.

Suſſex, kingdom of, formed, i. 36. falls under the dominion of Weſſex, 37.

——— earl of, appointed a commiſſioner to try the cauſe between Mary Queen of Scots, and the Scots nation, iv. 492. by letters, diſcourages Mary's party in Scotland, 519. concerts with the French ambaſſador, the terms of the marriage contract between the Queen and the duke of Anjou, 568, 569. how regarded by the Queen, 569.

Supremacy of the king, declared in parliament, iii. 180. penalty of denying it to Edward VI. 305. title of, for ſome time, retained by Queen Mary, 356. at length left out of the ſummons to parliament, 369. penalties enacted againſt ſuch as refuſe that title to Queen Elizabeth, iv. 410.

Sweden, a treaty with that kingdom, relative to commerce, iii. 335. king of, propoſed as a huſband to Queen Mary of England, 398. a treaty of peace between the king of Sweden and Poland, v. 161. large dominions in Germany, added to Sweden, 62. king of, obtains a great victory at Warſau, 63. makes an alliance with England, 66. accedes to a league between England and Holland, 185. and to the treaty of Aix-la-chapelle, 186. armies of, invade Pomerania, 247. is included in the treaty of Nimeguen, 264.

Sweyn, king of Denmark, in conjunction with Olave, king of Norway, invades England, i. 94. takes up his quarters in Southampton, ib. ſoon after Olave's departure, he evacuates the kingdom, with his followers, 95. invades England again, 100. a treaty of peace is purchaſed, by payment of one hundred thouſand pounds, 101. he dies, 102.

Swiſs, confederates with the dutchy of Milan, and incite the Milaneſe to revolt from France, iii. 82. enters France with a formidable army, but are bought off by large preſents, 90. retain their animoſity againſt the French, and take the reſtored duke of Milan under their protection, 102. are beaten by the French at Marignan, ib. diſguſt the duke of Milan, by their tyranny, 103. a great body of them is hired by the French king, and deſert his intereſt, 133.

T.

TANCRED, king of Meſſina, his fears of the cruſaders take ſhelter in his do... i. 336. his inſidious behaviour on that ... 337. it proves ineffectual, 338.

Tangiers, given by the king of P...al, Charles II. in dowry with a Port... 148.

Teneſts, nature of, v. 41.

Taxes, ſtate of, in the reign of Edw... creaſed by Edward III. at his p... impoſed, under the houſe of Lanca... ſed by Henry VII. without conſe... iii. 127. one grievous, impoſed ... dom, 316. ſtate of, in England, ... monwealth, vi. 122.

Taunton beſieged, v. 397. relieved, 398. ... again, ib. relieved again, 401.

Taylor, biſhop of Lincoln, refuſes to kneel at the celebration of maſs, in face of the parliament, and is violently thruſt out of the houſe, iii. 356.

——— doctor, accuſes Lambert, a ſchool-maſter, of hereſy, iii. 228. effect of this ſtep, ib. 229.

——— parſon of Hadley, his conſtancy in ſuffering, iii. 378.

Templars, knights, order of, baniſhed from France, ii. 269. the behaviour of their grand maſter, in a national ſynod in England, 279.

Temple, Sir William, preſident at Bruſſels, goes to the Hague, vi. 184. negotiates the triple league, 185. makes peace at Aix-la-chapelle, 186. is recalled, 205. his remonſtrance, 239. is again ſent abroad, 440. returns to England, 257. plans a peace, 258. in Holland, makes a conditional peace, 262. concludes a definitive treaty of peace at Nimeguen, 264. adviſes the king to nominate a new privy council, 300. retires from court, 313. his character as an author, 452.

Tenets and *Tenures*, military, firſt introduced into England, i. 101. in capite by knight's ſervice, nature of, 407.

Terouane, beſieged by the Engliſh, iii. 88. ſurrendered, 89. fortifications of, demoliſhed, ib. 90.

Tewkeſbury, battle of, ii. 408.

Texel, a ſea fight there, vi. 232. French conduct there, ib. victory of, doubtful, 233.

Thanes, what, and how diſtinguiſhed, i. 148.

Theft, how puniſhed among the Anglo-Saxons, i. 157. when made capital, iii. 246.

Theobald, archbiſhop of Canterbury, made legate of England, i. 258. his death, 271. effects of, ib.

v.6

Theodore, archbiſhop of Canterbury, calls a ſynod at Hatfield, i. 45. acts of, ib.
Tholouſe, count of, his territories invaded by Richard, ſon of Henry II. i. 323.
Thomas a Becket, hiſtory of, i. 271. made chancellor, ib. greatly aggrandized, 272. promoted to the ſee of Canterbury, 273. his behaviour on that occaſion, ib. he attacks the earl of Clare, and William of Eynsford, 274. by the king's order, is forced to abſolve William of Eynsford, 275. the then ſtate of eccleſiaſtic government, ib. a quarrel ariſes between the king and Becket, about the privileges of the church, 276. he oppoſes the king in a national ſynod, 277. is prevailed on to ſign the conſtitutions of Clarendon, 279. but repents of his compliance, ib. is condemned in a ſynod of prelates and barons, 281. conſults with his ſuffragans, about a demand of money made on him by the king, 282. his extraordinary behaviour thereon, 283. he leaves the kingdom, 284. his reception beyond the ſeas, 285. tranſactions between the pope and him, ib. his other conduct, 286. the uſe he makes of his legatine commiſſion, 287. he oppoſes a reconciliation between the king and the pope, 289. makes a compromiſe with the king, 290. his behaviour relative to the coronation of prince Henry, 291. his triumphal return into England, 292. he excommunicates prelates and others, ib. is aſſaſſinated at the altar, 294. canonized by the pope, 297. the puniſhment of his murderers, 318. his ſhrine is held in great veneration, iii. 221. how regarded by Henry VIII. 222. legend of. See *St. Thomas*.
Throcmorton, Sir John, tried, and condemned, iii. 366.
——— Sir Nicholas, tried, and acquitted, iii. 366. but re-committed to the Tower, ib. releaſed, 371. ambaſſador at Paris, diſcovers to Queen Elizabeth the hoſtile intentions of the French, iv. 425. in vain, makes applications to Mary Queen of Scots, for a ratification of the treaty of Edinburgh, 430. his converſation, when alone, with Mary Queen of Scots, 432. effect thereof, 433. orders Darnley, upon his allegiance, to appear in England, 460. joins in an application to Queen Elizabeth, to declare her ſucceſſor, 472. ſent again into Scotland, to mediate between the Queen and the inſurgents, 483. the purport of his remonſtrance on that occaſion, ib. 484. ſupports the mildeſt propoſals, and offers his miſtreſs as gurantee of the accommodation, 485.
Tillage, ſtate of, in the reign of Edward II. ii. 153. in the reign of Henry VIII. iii. 258.
Tindal, flies to Antwerp, iii. 186. how employed there, ib. how furniſhed with money to tranſlate the Scriptures, 187. how dangerous this work is to the Roman faith, ib.
Tirrel, Sir James, undertakes the murder of Edward V. and his brother, the duke of York, ii. 428. commits the murder, 429. is executed for another crime, iii. 58.
Tithes, firſt eſtabliſhed in England, i. 50. enlarged beyond the Levitical law, 51.
Toleration, diſputed of, by the miniſters of Queen Mary, iii. 373. reaſons for it, 374 to 376. againſt it, 376, 377. it is rejected, 377.
Tongue, his information, vi. 276.
Tonnage and *Poundage*, duties of, granted to Henry V. for life, ii. 310. to Richard III. for life, 435. hiſtory of, v. 33. rates of, altered, ib. remonſtrated againſt, 34. complained of again, 162. another remonſtrance againſt it, 176. ſtate of, under Charles I. 180. Barons, and others, and cuſtom-houſe officers, troubled about it, 186. it is made dependent on the pleaſure of parliament, 262. granted to king Charles II. for life, vi. 133. to James II. for the ſame term, 379.
Tonſtal, biſhop of London, afterwards of Durham, is ſent to Madrid, with propoſals for an invaſion of France, iii. 138. his contrivance to ſupply Tindal with money, when tranſlating the Scriptures, 187. oppoſes Cranmer in the convocation, 211. diſputes with Lambert in Weſtminſter hall, 229. is appointed one of the regency of Edward VI. 288. diſplaced from the council board, 295. character of, 339. thrown into the Tower, and a bill of attainder paſt in the houſe of peers againſt him, 340. which is rejected in the houſe of commons, ib. deprived of his biſhopric, 341. releaſed from the Tower, on Mary's acceſſion, 352. re-inſtated in his ſee, 353.
——— Sir Richard, carries to the French propoſals for an accommodation, iii. 24.
Torture, how uſual in Queen Elizabeth's reign, iv. 719.
Tory and *Whig*, when, and how theſe diſtinctions aroſe, vi. 316.
Toſti, duke of Northumberland, elder brother to Harold, his cruelties, i. 126. he flies to the court of Baldwin, earl of Flanders, 127. infeſts the coaſts of England, 134. defeated by Harold, and ſlain in battle, 135.
Tournaments. See *Knight*. one at Paris, in which the king is ſlain, iv. 415.
Tournay, a city in Flanders, deſcription of, ii. 178. cloſely beſieged by the Engliſh, ib. relieved by a negotiation, 179. beſieged, and taken, by Henry VIII. iii. 90. reſtored to France, 106.
Touton, battle of, ii. 386.
Towns, cautionary, bound to Queen Elizabeth, iv. 552. retained in her hands, greatly check the growing power of the Dutch, 662. delivered up by James I. v. 55.
——— maritime, ordered to equip ſhips, v. 152.
Townſend's extract of ſpeeches in the houſe, in Queen Elizabeth's reign, recapitulated, iv. 708 to 712.
Traquaire, earl of, intercepts a letter, v. 230. effects of, 231.

tory of them, 37. after the defeat of its prince Llewellyn, it is annexed to the Engliſh crown, 67. natives of, are obliged to make ſatisfaction for incurſions, 196. Glendour's inſurrection there, ii. 286. that rebel enters into a league with the earl of Northumberland, againſt Henry IV. 287. the great juriſdictions there, are aboliſhed, and authority of the king's courts extended into that principality, iii. 200. ſtate of its clergy under the republic, vi. 33.

Wales, prince of, Edward, eldeſt ſon of Edward III. is left guardian of the realm during his father's abſence in France, ii. 175. afterwards, in another journey, goes to France with his father, 192. is made a knight, 193. commands the firſt line of his father's forces at the battle of Crecy, 195. his gallant behaviour there, 198. the motto of his creſt, how, and on what occaſion there got, 199. his warlike operations at the head of an army in France, 209. he penetrates into the heart of France, 211. prepares for battle with the French king, 212. diſcomfits, and makes him a priſoner, 213. receives him courteouſly, 214. preſents his royal priſoner to his father in London, 215. reſtores the baniſhed king of Caſtile, 226. oppreſſes his ſubjects of the dutchy of Aquitaine, ceded to him by his father, 227. his reply to the ſummons of the French king, 229. his growing infirmities render him unfit for military ſervice, ib. his death, 230. and character, 231.

Waller, Edmund, his conſpiracy, v. 351. his puniſhment, 352.

——— Sir William, general in the parliament's army, character of, v. 342. and acts of valour, ib. he is routed at Roundway down, 345. re-employed, 353. defeats a party of the king's at Cherrington, 368. is repulſed at Cropey bridge, 372. joins Eſſex and Middleton, and attacks the king at Newbury, 373. regards with horror the ſcheme of the independents, and promotes a plan of accommodation, 376. reſigns his command, 380. enters into a conſpiracy againſt the protector, vi. 86.

Waller, poet, character of, vi. 127.

Wallingford-houſe, a cabal of, vi. 95.

Walſingham, countenances puritans, iv. 509. ambaſſador at Paris, diſcovers to Queen Elizabeth, the duplicity of that court, 541. is ordered to concert with the French ambaſſador, the terms of the marriage contract between the Queen and the duke of Anjou, 565. what information he receives before the terms are ſettled, 566, 567. how therein interrupted by the varying reſolutions of the Queen, 568. he diſcovers an extreme averſion to the marriage, 568. is ſent ambaſſador into Scotland, 575. diſcovers conſpiracies againſt Queen Elizabeth, 576. concludes a treaty at Edinburgh, 591. his advice to king James, then king of Scotland, 592. diſcovers Babington's conſpiracy, 596, 597. his politic behaviour to Babington, 598. urges an open trial of Queen Mary, 599. copies of Mary's letters, which he had intercepted, taken out of his office, and produced on her trial, 603. his character greatly relied on in that caſe, 605. ſpeech of, on Mary's trial, 607. the character that princeſs gives of him, ib. his judicious letter to Thurleſtan, after Mary's execution, 625. he oppoſes an improvement in the revenue, 730.

Walter, archbiſhop of Rouen, is appointed by Richard I. counſellor to Longchamp, but dares not produce his commiſſion, i. 341. is made juſticiary of the kingdom, in the room of Longchamp, 342. diſappoints pope John's treaſonable deſigns againſt Richard, 347. accompanies Queen Eleanor to Germany, when going to relieve Richard, 349.

Walton Church, the ſingular behaviour of a preacher there, vi. 8.

Waltheof, earl of, rebels againſt William the Conqueror, 177. ſubmits, 178. diſcovers in confeſſion to Lanfranc, a new conſpiracy of Norman barons, 188. afterwards goes to Normandy, and there diſcovers it to the Conqueror, 189. is put to death, 190.

Warbec, Perkin, hiſtory of, and reception from the dutcheſs of Burgundy, iii. 34. is ſent into Portugal, where he remains for a year, ib. aſſumes the name of Richard Plantagenet, and is avowed by the dutcheſs of Burgundy, and others, 35. and by many of the Engliſh nobility, 36. the impoſtor is diſcovered by Henry VII. 37. and many of his aſſociates in England executed on that account, ib. 38. lord Stanley executed on that account, 38. the effect of this execution on the nation, and on the other conſpirators, 39. he anchors on the coaſt with ſeveral followers, but dares not land, 40. goes to the court of Scotland with grand recommendations, 43. where he is married to lady Catherine Gordon, a near kinſwoman of James IV. ib. a Scots invaſion of England, in his favour, is repulſed, 47. is requeſted by the king to depart Scotland, 48. invades England, 49. is taken priſoner, together with his ſpouſe, 50. impriſoned, and breaks priſon, ib. taken and executed, 51.

Wardſhips, origin of, i. 410. a law regulating them, iii. 200. a full explanation of their nature, iv. 722. annulled, v. 16

Warham, archbiſhop of Canterbury, character of, iii. 98. he reſigns the great ſeal, which is entruſted with Wolſey, ib. he ventures to inform the king of Wolſey's uſurpations, 108. gives his opinion againſt the legality of the king's marriage, 153. his authority as co-legate with Cranmer in this affair, is revoked, 155. his death, 174.

Warrenne, earl of, joins prince Edward in ſupport of the royal cauſe, ii. 39. upon the loſs of the battle of Lewis, flies beyond the ſeas, 43. returns, and ſignaliſes himſelf againſt the Scots, 96. is made governor of Scotland, 97. marches againſt the Scots revolters, headed by Wallace, 109. is defeated, and

v.6

and forced to leave Scotland, 110. joins the Lancaſtrian party againſt Gavaſton, 131.

Warſau, battle of, vi. 63.

Warwic, is obliged to raiſe the ſiege of Montargis in France, ii. 332. appointed governor of all the French provinces a little before his death, 352.

——— another, condemned by the peers, but pardoned by the king, iii. 262.

——— another, one of the greateſt noblemen in the kingdom, iii. 361. ſtiled king-maker, 362. his numerous retainers, ib. is invited to court, but on the road, hearing his enemies deſigns againſt him, retires to his government of Calais, 375. comes back, but ſoon flies again to his government, 376. brings over to London a choice body of veterans, but is forced again to fly back to his government, 377. lands again in England, and in a battle at Northampton, takes the king, Henry VI. priſoner, ib. is defeated by the Queen at St. Albans, 381. and attainted, 383. jointly with Edward IV. defeats the Yorkiſts at Touton, 386. is ſent to Paris, to negotiate a marriage between the king and a princeſs of France, 393. is greatly diſguſted with the king's marriage with Jane Gray, 394. aſſociates with himſelf, the duke of Clarence, 395. continues in truſt under the king, 398. rebels againſt him, 399. on his withdrawing to France, is denied acceſs at Calais, 400. enters into a confederacy with the French king, 401. returns to England at the head of French forces, 402. becomes maſter of the kingdom, 403. cauſes Henry VI. to be proclaimed king, 404. marches to the North, to encounter Edward IV. 406. is ſlain at the battle of Barnet, 408.

——— impriſoned in the Tower, iii. 4. taken out, and led in proceſſion through the ſtreets of London, 14. executed, 52.

——— created, iii. 289. attends, and commands under Somerſet the protector, in the Scots invaſion, 300. is left there commander in chief, when the protector returns to London, 304. inflames the quarrel between the protector and his brother, lord Seymour, and bears the firſt rank among the protector's counſellors, 313. is ſent againſt an inſurrection in Norfolk, 323. meets with a junto at Ely-houſe, who aſſume the power of the council, and force Somerſet to reſign the protectorſhip, 327. now at the head of the council, re-admits Somerſet into it, 328. is embarraſſed with difficulties in the adminiſtration, 329. remains ſteady in promoting the reformation, and actuates a proſecution againſt Gardiner, 330. is created duke of Northumberland. See *Northumberland*.

——— ſon of the former, called by this title, is taken into cuſtody, iii. 351. but his life is ſpared, 352. in Queen Elizabeth's reign, makes himſelf maſter of Havre de Grace, iv. 455. capitulates and withdraws his army to England, 456. which brings over the plague with it, ib. is with others added to the privy-council, when the affair of Mary Queen of Scots comes before it, 498.

Warwic, a general in the parliament's army, regards with horror the ſcheme of the independents, v. 376. and reſigns his command, 380.

Weir, trial of, vi. 345.

Wentworth, Patil, his pathetic ſpeech in the houſe of commons, iv. 562.

——— Peter, his ſpeech in the houſe, breathing liberty, iv. 525. his premeditated harangue in that houſe, 555. queſtioned in the ſtar chamber on that ſubject, 556. reſtored to his liberty and ſeat in the houſe, ib. 557. queries of, touching liberty, 610. is committed to the Fleet, for indecent ſpeeches in the houſe, 654. releaſed, and how, 655.

——— Sir Thomas, his behaviour in the houſe, v. 163, 169. he is created earl Strafford, 192. See *Strafford*.

Weſſex, a kingdom formed in Britain, i. 37. hiſtory of, till the crown deſcends to Egbert, ib. to 40. lineage of that monarch, 41. in his reign, all the other kingdoms are united with this, 42.

Weſtminſter, a ſynod there, i. 253. which ſummons the king to appear before them, ib. further proceedings of, ib. 254. a great commotion between its inhabitants, and thoſe of London, ii. 9.

Weſtphalia, treaty of, vi. 62.

Wheat, low value of, in the reign of Henry I. i. 161. value of, in the reign of Henry III. ii. 55. price of, during a famine, 152. See *Victres*.

Whig and *Tory*. See *Tory* and *Whig*.

White, Thomas, his extraordinary good fortune in taking Spaniſh prizes, iv. 653.

Whitebread, trial of, vi. 306.

Whitelocke's account of the conferences at Uxbridge, v. 340. his ſpeech in the houſe of commons, previous to the new model, 379.

Wibba, ſon of Crida, founds the kingdom of Mercia, i. 33. See *Mercia*.

Wickliff, John, a ſecular prieſt, begins to preach reformation doctrines, ii. 276. is ſcreened from the proſecution of the biſhop of London, by the duke of Lancaſter, 277. dies of a palſy, 278. two of his moſt eminent diſciples are burnt in Germany, 320.

Walter, the Moneyleſs, who, i. 212. he becomes a leader of the cruſades, ib.

Widred, king of Kent, a hiſtory of his poſterity, i. 28.

Wild, ſerjeant, ſpeech of, in Laud's caſe, v. 387.

Wildred, biſhop of Landisferne, appeals to Rome, i. 43. the effect of this appeal, 44. his merits, 45.

William, duke of Normandy, his hiſtory, i. 99. he is ſucceeded by Richard his ſon, ib. the connexion of his family with the Engliſh crown, how formed, ib.

William, natural ſon of duke Richard, becomes duke of Normandy, i. 122. hiſtory of, ib. he viſits Edward the Confeſſor, who thinks of adopting him, and declaring him his ſucceſſor, 123. his negotiations with Harold, ſon and ſucceſſor of earl Godwin, about his ſucceſſion to the Engliſh crown, 124, 125. gives his daughter in marriage to Harold, 125. his meaſures are defeated with Harold, who now openly aſpires to the ſucceſſion, which is intended by Edward, to be diſpoſed of to the Norman, 127. on Edward's death, Harold, in contradiction to his engagement with the Norman, ſteps into poſſeſſion of the Engliſh throne, 128. which is inſtantly claimed by the duke of Normandy, and refuſed to be ſurrendered by Harold, 129. his reſolution thereon, how founded, to invade England, 130, 131. the encouragement he met with in this undertaking, from his neighbours, 132. his greateſt difficulty towards this enterpriſe, is got over, 133. an account of the duke's mighty fleet and army, 134. he encourages Toſti, Harold's elder brother, to infeſt the Engliſh coaſts, ib. his ſailors terrified with contrary winds, deſpair of ſucceſs, 135. his alacrity on landing in England, 136. the behaviour of his troops on that occaſion, 137. he gives battle to Harold, 138. routs his army, and ſlays him in battle, 139. the behaviour of his troops after the battle, 140. the conſternation of the Engliſh, occaſioned by this victory, 164. his meaſures after the battle, 165. he is deſired by the Engliſh nobility, to accept the crown, 166. he accepts it, and is crowned, ib. 167. a tumult happens at his coronation, 167. he receives the ſubmiſſion of the nobility preſent at his coronation, 168. his adminiſtration at the commencement of his reign, 169. carries with him into Normandy, the Engliſh nobility, 170. in his abſence, diſcontents ariſe among the Engliſh, ib. inſurrections follow, 171. he haſtens back to England, 172. quells the inſurrections there, 173. ſuppreſſes new inſurrections there, 178. cruelties of, 179. he introduces the feudal law into England, 180. endeavours to aboliſh the Engliſh language, 184. his exceſſive cruelties in England, 186. he ſuppreſſes a rebellion in Maine, a county of France, 187. during his abſence in France, his Norman barons conſpire againſt him, ib. he receives notice of this conſpiracy, from earl Waltheof's wife, 188. and from the earl, who came over to Normandy for that purpoſe, 189. he returns to England, and puniſhes the conſpirators, ib. returns to Normandy, 190. his proceedings there, and differences with the pope, 192. he reſides ſome years in Normandy, 193. his eldeſt ſon Robert rebels againſt him, 194. is reconciled to him, 195. and carried with him into England, ib. cauſes a new foreſt to be made at Wincheſter, 197. puniſhes his uterine brother, Odo, biſhop of Baieux, 198. makes war with France, ib. his death, 199. and immenſe gifts, 405.

William, ſirnamed Rufus, his acceſſion to the crown, i. 203. his character, 204. a conſpiracy is formed againſt him, which is ſuppreſſed, ib. 205. he grows tyrannical in England, 205. invades Normandy, 206. and comes to an accommodation with his brother, Robert, duke of Normandy, ib. aſſiſts Robert to reduce their younger brother, Henry, 207. detects a conſpiracy of his barons againſt him, and puniſhes the conſpirators, 208. obtains a mortgage of Normandy, 213. his indifference about religion, 214. diſpoſes of the primacy of Canterbury, to Anſelm, abbot of Bec in Normandy, ib. preys on the eccleſiaſtical benefices, 215. quarrels with Anſelm, 216. ſuppreſſes new inſurrections in Normandy, 217. is wounded there, ib. agrees for a mortgage of Guienne and Poictou, 215. is ſlain by accident, ib. character of, 219. a recapitulation of his moſt remarkable enterpriſes, ib.

——— only ſon of Henry I. is contracted to the daughter of Fulk, count of Anjou, i. 238. recogniſed ſucceſſor to the crown of England, 239. periſhes at ſea, 240. his ſentiments of the natives of England, ib.

——— of Eynsford, a military tenant of Henry II. is excommunicated without the king's conſent, i. 274. and by his order abſolved, 275.

——— king of Scotland, joins in a confederacy with the French king, and Henry II's ſon, againſt Henry II. i. 309. See *Scotland*.

——— prince of Orange, fixes his reſidence in the Low-Countries, iv. 548. an account of, and how engaged againſt the duke of Alva, 549. See *Orange*.

Williams, biſhop of Lincoln, his character, v. 200. his fate in the ſtar-chamber, 209.

——— another, his caſe, vi. 266.

Willis, Sir Richard, truſted by all the royaliſts, is corrupted by Cromwell, vi. 74. he diſcovers to the protector, the conſpiracies of the royaliſts, 86. ſerves the rump parliament in the ſame quality, 99.

Willoughby, lord, ſent to aid the French king, iv. 650.

——— Sir Robert, is created lord Brooke, iii. 9. commands in an expedition againſt Brittany, 27.

Wimbledon, viſcount, his expedition againſt Spain, v. 143.

Wincheſter, biſhop of, and cardinal, legitimated ſon of John of Gaunt, duke of Lancaſter, obtains from the parliament, the cuſtody of the perſon of Henry VI. a minor, ii. 323. his character, and diſputes with the duke of Gloceſter, 331. lands at Calais in France, with an army deſtined for a cruſade, 343. which he lends to his nephew the duke of Bedford, ib. in vain mediates a reconciliation between the dukes of Bedford and Burgundy, 347. by the protector's

tector's commiſſion, attends the congreſs at Arras, 348. leaves it, 349. prevails againſt the duke of Gloceſter in council, 553. connects himſelf with the Queen of Henry VI. 355. and with others, reſolves on the duke of Gloceſter's ruin, ib. ſurvives the duke of Gloceſter only ſix weeks, 356. his immenſe fortune, 383.

Wincheſter, biſhop of, ſecretary, favourite with Henry VIII. iii. 70. introduces Wolſey to the favour of the king, 85. reſigns the ſeals, and retires, 98.

Windebank, ſecretary of archbiſhop Laud, flies beyond the ſeas, v. 249.

Windham, Sir James, tried, condemned, and executed, iii. 58.

——— Mr. his behaviour to Charles II. after the battle of Worceſter, vi. 31.

Wine licences, a monopoly of them, granted by Queen Elizabeth, iv. 691. renewed by James I. v. 34.

Windſor Palace, when, and by whom built, ii. 235.

Wiſhart, a noted Scots reformer, hiſtory of, iii. 297. his execution, and prophecy concerning cardinal Beaton, 298. how fulfilled, ib. 299.

Wittenagemot, a Saxon court, i. 143. its conſtituent members, and power, 144 to 146.

Witchcraft and *Enchantments*, a ſtatute againſt them, iv. 453.

Wolf, king of Mercia, his hiſtory, i. 33. his tranſactions with the king of Northumberland, and death, 34.

Woolley, his influencing ſpeech in parliament, iv. 641.

Wolſey, a favourite of Henry VII. a hiſtory of him, iii. 84. is recommended to the favour of Henry VIII. by the biſhop of Wincheſter, 85. character of, 86. he gains the king's confidence, ib. is made archbiſhop of York, and permitted to unite with that ſee, the ſee of Durham, 97. his pride and avarice, ib. 98. he obtains the ſeals, 98. enjoys, without a rival, the king's favour, ib. is diſguſted at the French king, 103. effectually courted by him, 105. obtains for that monarch, reſtitution of Tournay, 106. is appointed legate of Rome, 107. and erects his legatine court, ib. appoints a perſon of a ſcandalous life, to be judge of that court, 108. grows more cautious in his behaviour, by reaſon of complaints brought againſt him to the king, ib. adviſes the king to agree to an interview with the French king, 110. is courted by the emperor in perſon, 111. who flatters him with the hope of the papal dignity, ib. he regulates the ceremonial obſerved at the meeting of the Engliſh and French kings, ib. attends the king in a viſit to the emperor, 113. where he is again flattered with the promiſe of the emperor's intereſt in his favour, in caſe of a vacancy in the papal chair, ib. mediates ineffectually, between the Emperor and the French king, 114, 115. his uncontroulable power in England, 115. he cauſes the duke of Buckingham to be forfeited, ib. is diſappointed of the papal chair, 123. is again flattered by the emperor, with the hope of that dignity, ib. his ſpeech in the houſe of commons, 128. is again diſappointed of the papacy, 129. influences the king to conclude a treaty with France againſt the Emperor, 134. inflames the king againſt the emperor, 137. and adviſes him to conclude a new treaty with France againſt the emperor, 138. receives a large preſent from the regent of France, 139. becomes generally odious, 140. and is reproved by the king, ib. a large revenue is ſtipulated for him out of Naples, if conquered, 145. he fortifies the king's ſcruples about his marriage, 151. is appointed, in conjunction with the archbiſhop of Canterbury, a commiſſioner to examine the validity of the king's marriage, 153. by a new commiſſion, Campeggio is joined with him in that affair, 155. the King and Queen preſent themſelves before Wolſey and Campeggio, ſitting in judgment, 157. procedure in that cauſe, till it is evoked to Rome, 158, 159. Wolſey foreſees the writ of evocation to be the fore-runner of his ruin, 159. his deſtruction is reſolved on by the king, and the great ſeal is taken from him, 160. his plate and furniture are ſeized, ib. a long charge is voted againſt him by the houſe of peers, 161. he is pardoned, and his plate and furniture are reſtored, 162. he is arreſted, in order to take his trial, 169. his dying advice to the conſtable of the Tower, ib. his death, 170.

Wool, a duty granted on exportation of, ii. 176. price of, in the reign of Edward III. 221. ſtaple of, fixed, 239. an aid in wool, granted to the king, 263. duties on exportation, granted to the king for life, 310.

Worceſter, battle of, vi. 29.

——— earl of, created, iii. 93.

——— marquis of, the laſt of the party of king Charles I. in England, v. 412.

Worſhip, public, a law regulating it, iii. 300. and againſt abſenters from it, iv. 643.

Wotton, doctor, Engliſh ambaſſador at Paris, concludes a peace with France, iv. 415. in Scotland, concludes a treaty with the French, whereby they evacuate Scotland, 427. character, and hiſtory of, 590. is ſent again into Scotland, and why, ib. returns haſtily, without taking leave of the Scots king, ib. 591.

Wounds, prices of, fixed, i. 157.

Wriotheſley, made chancellor of England, iii. 272. his extraordinary cruelty to a young lady, ſuffering for her religion, 273. his character, 288. he oppoſes the election of a protector, ib. is created earl of Southampton, 289. See *Southampton*.

Wyat, Sir Thomas, a curious letter ſent to him, concerning the diſpute between Henry VIII. and Lambert, iii. 229. he raiſes an inſurrection againſt Queen Mary of England, 362. which is ſuppreſſed, and he condemned, and executed, 363.

Wycherley, character of, vi. 451.

Y.

YELVERTON, a member of the houſe of commons, enforces in a ſtudied harangue, the principles of liberty, iv. 522, 523.

York City, ſtate of, at the conqueſt, i. 149. primate of, crowns the conqueror, 167. ſee of, declared ſubject to that of Canterbury, 183. county of, provides a guard for king Charles I. v. 325.

——— duke of, uncle of Richard II. his character, ii. 242. differs with his brother the duke of Lancaſter, 258. in the abſence of Richard II. he is left guardian of the realm, 267. joins his nephew's party, ib.

——— another, is appointed to ſucceed the duke of Bedford in his command in France, ii. 350. an account of his adminiſtration there, 351. reſigns the command to the earl of Warwic, 352. and on his death, reſumes it, ib. an account of his partizans, 362. he is abſent in Ireland, during Cade's inſurrection, 366. on his return, ſees the neceſſity of ſetting up his pretenſions to the crown, 368. the topics of his partizans, 369. the ſucceſs of his firſt armament, 372. he is made by the parliament, protector of the kingdom, 373. he takes the king priſoner at St. Albans, 374. is diveſted of his authority, by the houſe of peers, 375. demands the judgment on the houſe of peers, on the validity of his claim to the crown, 378. marches againſt the Queen in the North, 379. is defeated, and ſlain in battle, 380.

——— ſon of the former, defeats a party of the Queen's troops, headed by the earl of Pembroke, ii. 380. collects the remains of Warwic's army, and advances to London, 381. there aſſumes the name of king, and is promoted to the royal dignity, by a popular election, 382. See *Edward* IV.

——— ſon of Charles I. goes to York with his father, v. 321. viſits him at Reading, 426. makes his eſcape over ſea, 456. enters into the Spaniſh ſervice, vi. 84. returns with the king, 117. aſſumes the command of the fleet, as lord high admiral, ib. beats the Dutch fleet, commanded by Obdam and Tromp, 164. upon the dutcheſſes death, declares himſelf a roman catholic, 209. beats the Dutch fleet at Solebay, 217. is ſet aſide from being admiral, by the indulgence being revoked, 231. married to a princeſs of the houſe of Modena, 234. preſented by the earl of Shaftſbury, to the grand jury of Middleſex, as a popiſh recuſant convict, 317. a bill is brought into the houſe of commons, to exclude him from the ſucceſſion, 302. the excluſion bill is renewed in the houſe of commons, 320. paſt in that houſe, 324. rejected in the houſe of peers, ib. he is appointed a commiſſioner to a Scots parliament, 343. his adminiſtration in Scotland, 345. he is reſtored to the office of lord high-admiral, without taking the teſt, 367. ſucceeds to his brother in the throne, 373. levies the cuſtoms and exciſe, granted his brother, during life only, 374. calls a parliament, 376. his ſpeech in parliament, 377. he obtains for his life, the revenues ſettled on his brother, 379. and further ſupplies, ib. ſuppreſſes Monmouth's inſurrection, 382. cauſes him to be beheaded, 383. ſuffers great inhumanities to be committed, 384. becomes odious to the nation, 387. re-aſſembles his parliament, 388. declares his intention to purſue arbitrary meaſures, 389. anſwers an addreſs of his houſe of commons in a ſurly manner, ib. orders a feigned action to be brought againſt Sir Edward Hales, in order to try the diſpenſing power of the crown, 392. brings four popiſh lords into the privy-council, 396. lodges the ſupreme authority in Ireland, in the hands of a papiſt, ib. introduces a Jeſuit into his privy-council, 397. commands the Biſhop of London to ſuſpend doctor Sharp, for preaching againſt popery, 398. iſſues a commiſſion, for a high commiſſion court, 399. cauſes a ſuſpenſion to be pronounced in that court, againſt the biſhop of London and Dr. Sharp, ib. by a proclamation, ſuſpends all the penal laws, 403. puts papiſts in poſſeſſion of the ſovereign power in Ireland, 402. ſends an ambaſſador to Rome, and receives a nuntio from thence, 433. by mandate, recommends a friar to the degree of maſter of arts, in Magdalen-college, 405. expels the preſident of that college, and all the fellows but two, for diſobedience, 406. publiſhes a ſecond proclamation, ſuſpending all the penal laws, and orders it to be read in all the churches, 407. cauſes ſix biſhops to be impriſoned, for non-compliance, 408. orders all the reſt of the clergy to be proſecuted, 410. his Queen is brought to bed of a ſon, ſoon afterwards, named James, 411. he rejects the offers of France, to aſſiſt him againſt his ſubjects and the prince of Orange, 420. finds, by an experiment, that his army diſapproves of his meaſures, 422. he retracts all his meaſures, ib. his army deſerts to the prince of Orange, 425. he is deſerted by the princeſs Ann, and prince George, 426. ſends off the Queen, and the infant prince, to France, 429. withdraws from St. James's in the night time, ib. is ſeized at Feverſham, 430. returns to Whitehall, 431. ſets ſail for France, 432. character of, ib.

York, New, or New York, taken by the Engliſh, vi. 162. yielded to them by treaty, 177.

Z.

ZULESTEIN, commiſſion of, in England, vi. 417. his commiſſion from the Engliſh, to the prince of Orange, ib. the meſſage he carried from the prince of Orange, to king James II. 431.

FINIS.

v.6

DA30
H9
1762 b
v.6
Falco

551102